

Timothy Riese, Jeremy Bradley, Monika Schötschel, Tatiana Yefremova

# Mari

(марий йылме)



An Essential Grammar for International Learners

[DRAFT EDITION]

Vienna / Вена

2019

KONEEN SÄÄTIÖ

Release: 0.1

Date: 16 May 2019

This book is published under the **Creative Commons Attribution-Share Alike 3.0 Unported license**.

You are free:

**to Share** – to copy, distribute and transmit the work

**to Remix** – to adapt the work

Under the following conditions:

**Attribution** – You must attribute the work in the manner specified by the author or licensor (but not in any way that suggests that they endorse you or your use of the work).

**Share Alike** – If you alter, transform, or build upon this work, you may distribute the resulting work only under the same or similar license to this one.

With the understanding that:

**Waiver** – Any of the above conditions can be waived if you get permission from the copyright holder.

**Public Domain** – Where the work or any of its elements is in the public domain under applicable law, that status is in no way affected by the license.

**Other Rights** – In no way are any of the following rights affected by the license:

- Your fair dealing or **fair use** rights, or other applicable copyright exceptions and limitations;
- The author's **moral** rights;
- Rights other persons may have either in the work itself or in how the work is used, such as **publicity** or privacy rights.

**Notice** – For any reuse or distribution, you must make clear to others the license terms of this work. The best way to do this is with a link to this web page.

Версий: 0.1

Date: 16.05.2019

Тиде книга **Creative Commons Attribution-Share Alike 3.0 лицензий** дене лектеш.

Те яра кертыда:

**пайдаланаш** — ты изданийым возен налаш, шараш да вес еглан пуаш

**вашталташ (тыгаяк пашам ышташ)** — ты пашам шкендан кўлеш сомылланда келыштараш

Тыгай йодмашым шуктымеке:

**Атрибуций** — Те пашан шке лўмжым да авторжым лицензий семын ончыктышаш улыда (но автор-влакын тендан дене иктаж-могай кылым кучымышт ончыкталтшаш огыл).

**Йōным аралымыш (Share Alike)** — Те иктаж-мом вашталтеда, вестўрлемдеда але ты произведенийым тўнлан налыда гын, лектышыжым те произведенийысе гай але келшыше лицензий дене гына шаркален кертыда.

Да тидын годым умылен:

**Шōрымыш** – Права оза кōна гын, кўшнō ончыктымo кеч-могай йōн чаралт кертеш.

**Калыкын поянлыкше** — Ты произведений але тудын кеч-могай ужашыже тōртык почеш калыкын поянлыкшылан шотлалтеш гын, ты лицензий нигузеат тудын статусшым огеш иземде.

**Моло правда** — Ты лицензий нимoгай мoгыр гычынат тыгай правдам ок тўкō:

- Те эрыкан улыда шараш (fair dealing), але шкаланда парымым кычалде, (**fair use**), моло тўрлō вашлиялтше исключений-влакым але автор-влакын праваштым пудыртыде кучылташ;
- Автор-влакын **личный имущественный огыл** праваштым;
- Произведений дене кузе пайдаланымылан кōра моло-влакын правашт лoгaлaлт кертыт, мутлан, **калык ончылан** кучылтмо годым але шолып.

**Палдарымыш** — Вес еглан уэш кучылташ але шарашлан те произведенийын лицензий йодмашыж дене палдарышаш улыда. Эн сай йōн – тиде веб-лышташлан кылверым пуаш.

This document is a draft. Chapter 12 to 15 as well as appendices B to E are not yet included. We aim the first complete version of this textbook later in 2019. Please contact Jeremy Bradley ([jeremy.moss.bradley@univie.ac.at](mailto:jeremy.moss.bradley@univie.ac.at)) with question, suggestion, and feedback.



[www.mari-language.com](http://www.mari-language.com)

## Table of Contents

|          |  |    |
|----------|--|----|
| 1.       | Introduction.....  | 16 |
| 1.1.     | What is this book? .....   | 16 |
| 1.2.     | This book in the context of <a href="http://www.mari-language.com">www.mari-language.com</a> ..... | 16 |
| 1.3.     | Acknowledgements.....  | 20 |
| 1.4.     | Introductory remarks on Mari grammar .....   | 20 |
| 1.5.     | Phonetics, phonology, orthography .....  | 22 |
| 1.5.1.   | The Mari phoneme inventory .....   | 22 |
| 1.5.2.   | Notes on individual phonemes.....  | 23 |
| 1.5.3.   | Phonotactic restrictions .....   | 24 |
| 1.5.4.   | The contemporary Mari alphabet.....  | 26 |
| 1.5.5.   | Palatalization in Russian, palatalness in Mari.....  | 26 |
| 1.5.6.   | Word stress.....   | 31 |
| 1.5.7.   | Consonant alternation.....   | 34 |
| 1.5.8.   | Vowel harmony.....   | 36 |
| 1.5.9.   | Adaptation of Russian loan words .....   | 38 |
| 1.5.10.  | The Mari orthography of the 30s.....   | 40 |
| 1.6.     | Suffix types.....  | 42 |
| 1.6.1.   | H-suffixes (H for hyphen, e.g., plural - <i>влак</i> ) .....                                       | 43 |
| 1.6.2.   | E-suffixes (e.g., possessive suffix first person singular - <i>ем</i> ) .....                      | 43 |
| 1.6.3.   | A-suffixes (e.g., clitic - <i>ам</i> ‘and, also’) .....  | 44 |
| 1.6.4.   | Ы-suffixes (e.g., genitive - <i>ы</i> ).....   | 45 |
| 1.6.5.   | И-suffixes (e.g., inessive - <i>умЕ</i> ).....   | 47 |
| 1.6.6.   | N-suffixes (N for no thematic vowel – e.g., dative - <i>лан</i> ) .....                            | 48 |
| 1.6.7.   | S-suffixes (S for sibilant – e.g., imperative 3SG - <i>ЖЕ</i> : - <i>жЕ</i> ~ - <i>шЕ</i> ).....   | 50 |
| 1.6.8.   | Possessive suffix 3SG - <i>жЕ</i> ~ - <i>шЕ</i> ~ - <i>ыжЕ</i> ~ - <i>ж</i> .....                  | 50 |
| 1.6.9.   | Simple past I, 1 <sup>st</sup> conjugation, 1SG – 2SG – 3PL .....                                  | 52 |
| 1.6.10.  | Simple past I, 1 <sup>st</sup> conjugation, 3SG.....   | 52 |
| 1.6.11.  | Ø-suffixes (zero ending – e.g., connegative form).....   | 52 |
| 1.6.12.  | Some notes on newer Russian loan words and internationalisms.....                                  | 52 |
| 2.       | Nouns.....   | 55 |
| 2.0.     | General remarks.....   | 55 |
| 2.1.     | Number .....   | 55 |
| 2.1.1.   | Singular .....   | 55 |
| 2.1.2.   | Plural .....   | 57 |
| 2.1.2.1. | - <i>влак</i> .....  | 58 |
| 2.1.2.2. | - <i>шамыч</i> .....   | 58 |
| 2.1.2.3. | - <i>ла</i> .....  | 59 |
| 2.1.2.4. | Associative plural in - <i>мыт</i> .....   | 60 |
| 2.2.     | Possession.....  | 61 |
| 2.2.1.   | Possession with possessive suffix only.....  | 61 |
| 2.2.1.1. | Possessive suffixes: 1SG (- <i>ем</i> ), 2SG (- <i>ем</i> ) .....                                  | 61 |
| 2.2.1.2. | Possessive suffixes: 3SG (- <i>жЕ</i> ~ - <i>шЕ</i> ~ - <i>ыжЕ</i> ~ - <i>ж</i> ) .....            | 63 |
| 2.2.1.3. | Possessive suffixes: 1PL (- <i>на</i> ), 2PL (- <i>да</i> ) .....                                  | 63 |
| 2.2.1.4. | Possessive suffixes: 3PL (- <i>ум</i> ) .....  | 64 |
| 2.2.1.5. | Plurality of possession.....   | 65 |
| 2.2.2.   | Possession with possessive suffix and genitive of personal pronoun.....                            | 66 |
| 2.2.3.   | Possession with genitive of personal pronoun only.....   | 67 |
| 2.3.     | Case.....  | 68 |
| 2.4.0.   | General remarks .....  | 68 |
| 2.4.1.   | Nominative.....  | 69 |
| 2.4.1.1. | Suffix and suffix attachment .....   | 69 |

|          |  |     |
|----------|--|-----|
| 2.4.1.2. | Main functions .....                           | 69  |
| 2.4.1.3. | Auxiliary functions.....                       | 69  |
| 2.4.2.   | Accusative (- <i>м</i> ).....                  | 71  |
| 2.4.2.1. | Suffix and suffix attachment .....             | 71  |
| 2.4.2.2. | Main functions .....                           | 73  |
| 2.4.2.3. | Auxiliary functions.....                       | 74  |
| 2.4.3.   | Genitive (- <i>н</i> ).....                    | 74  |
| 2.4.3.1. | Suffix and suffix attachment .....             | 74  |
| 2.4.3.2. | Main functions .....                           | 76  |
| 2.4.3.3. | Auxiliary functions.....                       | 77  |
| 2.4.4.   | Dative (- <i>лан</i> ) .....                   | 78  |
| 2.4.4.1. | Suffix and Suffix Attachment.....              | 78  |
| 2.4.4.2. | Main functions .....                           | 79  |
| 2.4.4.3. | Auxiliary functions.....                       | 80  |
| 2.4.5.   | Inessive (- <i>умЕ</i> ).....                  | 82  |
| 2.4.5.1. | Suffix and Suffix Attachment.....              | 82  |
| 2.4.5.2. | Main functions .....                           | 83  |
| 2.4.5.3. | Auxiliary functions.....                       | 83  |
| 2.4.6.   | Illative (- <i>у(κЕ)</i> ).....                | 84  |
| 2.4.6.1. | Suffix and Suffix Attachment.....              | 84  |
| 2.4.6.2. | Main functions .....                           | 86  |
| 2.4.6.3. | Auxiliary functions.....                       | 87  |
| 2.4.7.   | Lative (- <i>ew</i> ).....                     | 88  |
| 2.4.7.1. | Suffix and Suffix Attachment.....              | 88  |
| 2.4.7.2. | Main functions .....                           | 89  |
| 2.4.7.3. | Auxiliary functions.....                       | 90  |
| 2.4.8.   | Comparative (- <i>ла</i> ).....                | 91  |
| 2.4.8.1. | Suffix and Suffix Attachment.....              | 91  |
| 2.4.8.2. | Functions.....                                 | 93  |
| 2.4.9.   | Comitative (- <i>ze</i> ).....                 | 94  |
| 2.4.9.1. | Suffix and Suffix Attachment.....              | 94  |
| 2.4.9.2. | Functions.....                                 | 95  |
| 3.       | Adjectives.....                                | 97  |
| 3.0.     | General remarks.....                           | 97  |
| 3.0.1.   | Apposition.....                                | 97  |
| 3.0.2.   | Nominalization of adjectives .....             | 98  |
| 3.0.3.   | Ellipsis.....                                  | 98  |
| 3.1.     | Adjectives with short and long forms .....     | 99  |
| 3.2.     | Comparison of adjectives .....                 | 101 |
| 3.2.1.   | Positive degree.....                           | 101 |
| 3.2.2.   | Comparative degree.....                        | 101 |
| 3.2.3.   | Superlative degree.....                        | 104 |
| 4.       | Quantifiers.....                               | 106 |
| 4.1.     | Cardinal numerals .....                        | 106 |
| 4.1.1.   | Formation: short and long forms.....           | 106 |
| 4.1.2.   | Usage: short and long forms.....               | 108 |
| 4.1.3.   | Suffixation of cardinal numerals.....          | 110 |
| 4.2.     | Ordinal numbers .....                          | 112 |
| 4.2.1.   | Formation of ordinal numbers .....             | 112 |
| 4.2.2.   | Usage of ordinal numerals.....                 | 113 |
| 4.2.3.   | Suffixation of ordinal numerals.....           | 114 |
| 4.3.     | Partitive numerals (fractions).....            | 115 |
| 4.4.     | Indefinite and approximative quantifiers ..... | 116 |
| 4.5.     | Collective numerals .....                      | 117 |
| 4.6.     | Group numerals.....                            | 119 |
| 4.7.     | Miscellaneous adverbial forms of numerals..... | 120 |
| 4.8.     | Date.....                                      | 121 |
| 4.8.1.   | Days of the week ( <i>кече</i> ).....          | 121 |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| 4.8.2. Months ( <i>тылзе</i> ) .....  | 122 |
| 4.8.3. Seasons ( <i>удалык жан</i> ) .....  | 123 |
| 4.8.4. Years ( <i>ий</i> ) .....  | 124 |
| 4.8.5. Decades ( <i>лу ий</i> ) .....   | 125 |
| 4.8.6. Centuries ( <i>курым</i> ) .....   | 126 |
| 4.8.7. Millennia ( <i>тўжемиий</i> ) .....  | 127 |
| 4.8.8. Month + day ( <i>числа</i> ) .....   | 128 |
| 4.8.9. Year + month .....   | 129 |
| 4.8.10. Year + month + day .....  | 130 |
| 4.8.11. Year + season .....   | 131 |
| 4.8.12. 'Last ...', 'next ...' .....  | 131 |
| 4.9. Time of day .....  | 132 |
| 4.10. Elementary arithmetic operations .....  | 134 |
| 5. Pronouns .....   | 136 |
| 5.1. Personal pronouns .....  | 136 |
| 5.1.1. Forms .....  | 136 |
| 5.1.2. Usage .....  | 136 |
| 5.1.2.1. 2SG, 2PL, formality .....  | 136 |
| 5.1.2.2. Pronoun dropping .....   | 137 |
| 5.1.2.3. Genitive forms .....   | 137 |
| 5.1.2.4. Plural forms for 'you and I', etc. ....                                      | 137 |
| 5.2. Demonstrative pronouns .....   | 137 |
| 5.2.1. Base forms .....   | 137 |
| 5.2.2. Inflected forms .....  | 139 |
| 5.2.3. Derived forms .....  | 140 |
| 5.3. Reflexive pronoun .....  | 142 |
| 5.3.1. Forms .....  | 142 |
| 5.3.2. Basic usages .....   | 143 |
| 5.3.3. Usage of the case-inflected forms .....  | 144 |
| 5.3.4. Derived forms .....  | 145 |
| 5.4. Reciprocal pronoun .....   | 146 |
| 5.5. Interrogative pronouns and adverbs .....   | 147 |
| 5.5.1. Notes on individual question words .....                                       | 149 |
| 5.5.2. Question words in clausal subordination .....                                  | 151 |
| 5.6. Negative pronouns and adverbs .....  | 151 |
| 5.7. Indefinite pronouns and adverbs .....  | 152 |
| 5.7.1. <i>кеч-, керек-</i> 'ever' .....   | 152 |
| 5.7.2. <i>ала-</i> 'some-' .....  | 153 |
| 5.7.3. <i>иктаж-</i> 'any-' .....   | 154 |
| 5.7.4. <i>(-)гынат</i> 'some-' .....  | 155 |
| 5.7.5. <i>ик(ме)</i> 'one', <i>веч(е)</i> 'other' .....                               | 156 |
| 5.7.6. Other indefinite pronouns .....  | 156 |
| 6. Postpositions .....  | 158 |
| 6.0. General remarks .....  | 158 |
| 6.0.1. Postpositions and possessive suffixes, postpositions and pronouns .....        | 160 |
| 6.0.2. Relationship between postpositions and case suffixes .....                     | 163 |
| 6.1. Simple postpositions .....   | 164 |
| 6.1.1. <i>вач(ын)</i> 'from, off; above, over; after; in spite of' .....              | 164 |
| 6.1.2. <i>вашеш</i> 'on/from the opposite side; before, on the eve; in answer' .....  | 165 |
| 6.1.3. <i>ваштапеш</i> 'towards; opposite; against; before, toward, on the eve' ..... | 165 |
| 6.1.4. <i>вече</i> 'in ... places' .....  | 165 |
| 6.1.5. <i>вереш</i> 'instead' .....   | 165 |

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| 6.1.6. <i>верч(ын)</i> 'for, for the sake of; because of, due to; instead of; about, of' | 166 |
| 6.1.7. <i>виса</i> 'about, around, roughly; as much as'                                  | 166 |
| 6.1.8. <i>водын</i> 'on the eve'   | 166 |
| 6.1.9. <i>вошт</i> 'over, across, through, via; up to, right up to, as far as'           | 166 |
| 6.1.10. <i>гай</i> 'like, as'  | 167 |
| 6.1.11. <i>гана</i> 'time(s)'  | 167 |
| 6.1.12. <i>годсек</i> 'since, beginning with'  | 168 |
| 6.1.13. <i>годым</i> 'during, at the time'   | 168 |
| 6.1.14. <i>гоч(ын)</i> 'over, across, through; during, throughout; using, via'           | 168 |
| 6.1.15. <i>гутлан</i> 'about, around (a time)'   | 168 |
| 6.1.16. <i>гутлаште</i> 'around, in the area; about, around, during, at (a time)'        | 168 |
| 6.1.17. <i>гыч(ын)</i> 'from, out of'  | 169 |
| 6.1.18. <i>дангыт</i> 'to, up to'  | 169 |
| 6.1.19. <i>дек(е)</i> 'to'   | 169 |
| 6.1.20. <i>ден(е)</i> 'with; by, at'   | 170 |
| 6.1.21. <i>деран</i> 'at, by'  | 172 |
| 6.1.22. <i>деч(ын)</i> 'from'  | 172 |
| 6.1.23. <i>еда</i> '(to/in) each, every'   | 174 |
| 6.1.24. <i>жапыште</i> 'over the course of'  | 174 |
| 6.1.25. <i>ияшын</i> 'at the age of'   | 174 |
| 6.1.26. <i>йотке</i> 'till, until, by; up to, as far as'                                 | 175 |
| 6.1.27. <i>йöre</i> 'together with, mixed together with'                                 | 175 |
| 6.1.28. <i>йөршан</i> 'together with, mixed together with'                               | 175 |
| 6.1.29. <i>йыр</i> 'around, round'   | 175 |
| 6.1.30. <i>келгыт</i> 'as deep as, up to'  | 175 |
| 6.1.31. <i>келшышын</i> 'in accordance with, going with'                                 | 175 |
| 6.1.32. <i>көра</i> 'for, for the sake of; because of, due to'                           | 176 |
| 6.1.33. <i>кужыт</i> 'as long as, having a certain length'                               | 176 |
| 6.1.34. <i>кумдык</i> 'all across, throughout; the size of, as big as'                   | 176 |
| 6.1.35. <i>кумдыкеш</i> 'all across, throughout'   | 176 |
| 6.1.36. <i>кут</i> 'the length of'   | 176 |
| 6.1.37. <i>кутынек</i> 'along'   | 177 |
| 6.1.38. <i>кутынъ</i> 'along'  | 177 |
| 6.1.39. <i>кутыш</i> 'of a certain length (spatial, temporal)'                           | 177 |
| 6.1.40. <i>кутышеш</i> 'along, the length of'  | 177 |
| 6.1.41. <i>кутышын</i> 'along'   | 177 |
| 6.1.42. <i>күжгыт</i> 'as thick as'  | 177 |
| 6.1.43. <i>күкшыт</i> 'as high as'   | 177 |
| 6.1.44. <i>күшеш</i> 'at expense of'   | 178 |
| 6.1.45. <i>лийын</i> 'as, being; because of, due to'                                     | 178 |
| 6.1.46. <i>лугыч(ын)</i> 'without interrupting, at the same time as'                     | 178 |
| 6.1.47. <i>лүмеш</i> 'in honor/the name of; because of, due to; for (someone)'           | 178 |
| 6.1.48. <i>манмаште</i> 'concerning, as regards, regarding, about'                       | 179 |
| 6.1.49. <i>марте</i> 'up to, as far as; till, until'                                     | 179 |
| 6.1.50. <i>мелын</i> 'facing, with one's face towards'                                   | 179 |
| 6.1.51. <i>мучашеш</i> 'at the end, on the tip'  | 179 |
| 6.1.52. <i>мучаште ~ мучашыште</i> 'at the end, on the tip'                              | 179 |
| 6.1.53. <i>мучко</i> 'across, through, around; down, along; the whole, all'              | 180 |
| 6.1.54. <i>мучкылан</i> 'for the whole, for the duration of, for the length of'          | 180 |
| 6.1.55. <i>наре</i> 'about, approximately, nearly, roughly, circa; as much as'           | 180 |
| 6.1.56. <i>негызеш</i> 'on ground of, on the basis of'                                   | 181 |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| 6.1.57. <i>нерген</i> ‘about, regarding’ .....  | 181 |
| 6.1.58. <i>ожно</i> ‘ago’ .....   | 181 |
| 6.1.59. <i>олмеш</i> ‘instead of’ .....   | 181 |
| 6.1.60. <i>ончыде</i> ‘in spite of’ .....   | 181 |
| 6.1.61. <i>осыгечын</i> ‘on the eve of’ .....   | 181 |
| 6.1.62. <i>начаш</i> ‘times’ .....  | 181 |
| 6.1.63. <i>пелен</i> ‘close to, near, beside’ .....                                     | 182 |
| 6.1.64. <i>поче</i> ‘in succession, in a row’ .....                                     | 182 |
| 6.1.65. <i>почела</i> ‘in succession, in a row’ .....                                   | 182 |
| 6.1.66. <i>почеш</i> ‘after, behind, following (spatial, temporal); according to’ ..... | 182 |
| 6.1.67. <i>семын</i> ‘like, as’ .....   | 183 |
| 6.1.68. <i>сынан</i> ‘having the shape, having the appearance’ .....                    | 183 |
| 6.1.69. <i>тич</i> ‘full of, filling (completely)’ .....                                | 184 |
| 6.1.70. <i>тореш</i> ‘opposite; across; opposed; crosswise’ .....                       | 184 |
| 6.1.71. <i>тўрысө</i> ‘on the edge, close to, near to’ .....                            | 184 |
| 6.1.72. <i>укеште</i> ‘in the absence of, for lack of, without’ .....                   | 184 |
| 6.1.73. <i>улмаште</i> ‘in presence of, if there is, if there are’ .....                | 184 |
| 6.1.74. <i>утла</i> ‘more than’ .....   | 184 |
| 6.1.75. <i>чоло</i> ‘about, approximately, roughly, around, circa’ .....                | 184 |
| 6.1.76. <i>шотеш</i> ‘for, as, instead of; on an account; at the expense of’ .....      | 185 |
| 6.1.77. <i>шотышто</i> ‘regarding, concerning; as, in the capacity of; among’ .....     | 185 |
| 6.1.78. <i>шумеш(ке)</i> ‘to, up to, to, as far as; till, until, up to, to’ .....       | 185 |
| 6.1.79. <i>шумлык</i> ‘because of, due to; as regards, concerning, about’ .....         | 185 |
| 6.2. Postpositions that form ‘families’ .....   | 185 |
| 6.2.1. <i>вел</i> ‘side; area’ .....  | 187 |
| 6.2.2. <i>воктел-</i> .....   | 187 |
| 6.2.3. <i>йымал</i> ‘bottom, foot, lower part; lower’ .....                             | 188 |
| 6.2.4. <i>кокла</i> ‘distance, gap’ .....   | 188 |
| 6.2.5. <i>кўргө</i> ‘inside, interior, inner part’ .....                                | 188 |
| 6.2.6. <i>кўдыл-</i> .....  | 189 |
| 6.2.7. <i>кыдал</i> ‘waist; middle’ .....   | 189 |
| 6.2.8. <i>лиш-</i> .....  | 189 |
| 6.2.9. <i>лонга</i> ‘thicket’ .....   | 190 |
| 6.2.10. <i>могыр</i> ‘body; side, direction’ .....                                      | 190 |
| 6.2.11. <i>мўндыр</i> ‘distant, faraway, remote’ .....                                  | 191 |
| 6.2.12. <i>ончыл</i> ‘front (noun, adjective)’ .....                                    | 191 |
| 6.2.13. <i>өрдыж</i> ‘side’ .....   | 191 |
| 6.2.14. <i>покшел</i> ‘middle, center (noun, adjective)’ .....                          | 192 |
| 6.2.15. <i>тора</i> ‘distant place, distance; distant, far, remote’ .....               | 192 |
| 6.2.16. <i>тура</i> ‘steep’ .....   | 193 |
| 6.2.17. <i>ўмбал</i> ‘top, surface’ .....   | 193 |
| 6.2.18. <i>шенгел</i> ‘backside, back; back, rear, hind’ .....                          | 193 |
| 6.3. Compound postpositions .....   | 193 |
| 6.3.1. <i>деч вара</i> ‘after’ .....  | 194 |
| 6.3.2. <i>деч гоч</i> ‘more than’ .....   | 194 |
| 6.3.3. <i>деч моло</i> ‘except for, other than’ .....                                   | 194 |
| 6.3.4. <i>деч ожно</i> ‘up to, till, until, before’ .....                               | 194 |
| 6.3.5. <i>деч ончыч</i> ‘before’ .....  | 195 |
| 6.3.6. <i>деч посна</i> ‘without; except for, but’ .....                                | 195 |
| 6.3.7. <i>деч утла(рак)</i> ‘more than’ .....   | 195 |
| 7. Verbs .....  | 196 |

|           |  |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| 7.0.      | General remarks and verbal stem.....   | 196 |
| 7.0.1.    | General remarks .....  | 196 |
| 7.0.2.    | Verbal stem.....   | 196 |
| 7.1.      | Finite verbs.....  | 198 |
| 7.1.0.    | General remarks .....  | 198 |
| 7.1.1.    | Indicative .....   | 201 |
| 7.1.1.1.  | Present (and future) tense .....   | 201 |
| 7.1.1.2.  | Simple Past Tense I .....  | 208 |
| 7.1.1.3.  | Simple Past Tense II .....   | 215 |
| 7.1.1.4.  | Compound Past Tense I.....   | 222 |
| 7.1.1.5.  | Compound Past Tense II.....  | 225 |
| 7.1.1.6.  | Compound Past Tense III.....   | 228 |
| 7.1.1.7.  | Compound Past Tense IV .....   | 230 |
| 7.1.2.    | Imperative.....  | 233 |
| 7.1.3.    | Desiderative .....   | 242 |
| 7.1.3.1.  | Desiderative Present .....   | 242 |
| 7.1.3.2.  | Desiderative Past I .....  | 247 |
| 7.1.3.3.  | Desiderative Past II.....  | 248 |
| 7.2.      | Non-finite verbal forms.....   | 250 |
| 7.2.0.    | General remarks .....  | 250 |
| 7.2.1.    | Infinitive in <i>-аш</i> .....   | 255 |
| 7.2.2.    | Necessitive infinitive in <i>-ман</i> .....  | 257 |
| 7.2.3.    | Active participle in <i>-шЕ</i> .....  | 259 |
| 7.2.4.    | Passive participle in <i>-МЕ</i> .....   | 260 |
| 7.2.5.    | Future-necessitive participle in <i>-шаш</i> .....                                   | 263 |
| 7.2.6.    | Negative participle in <i>-дыМЕ</i> .....  | 266 |
| 7.2.7.    | Affirmative instructive gerund (converb) in <i>-н</i> .....                          | 267 |
| 7.2.8.    | Negative gerund (converb) in <i>-де</i> .....  | 270 |
| 7.2.9.    | Gerund (converb) of prior action in <i>-мек(е)</i> .....                             | 272 |
| 7.2.10.   | Gerund (converb) of future action in <i>-меш(ке)</i> .....                           | 274 |
| 7.2.11.   | Gerund (converb) of simultaneous action in <i>-шыла</i> .....                        | 276 |
| 7.2.12.   | Nominalizations.....   | 278 |
| 7.3.      | Auxiliary verbs.....   | 278 |
| 7.3.1.    | The negation verb .....  | 278 |
| 7.3.2.    | Tense-marking auxiliaries.....   | 280 |
| 7.3.2.1.  | <i>улаш (-ам)</i> 'to be' → simple past tense II .....                               | 280 |
| 7.3.2.2.  | <i>тўғалаш (-ам)</i> 'to begin' → future .....                                       | 280 |
| 7.3.3.    | Modal auxiliaries denoting ability, etc.....   | 280 |
| 7.3.3.1.  | <i>керташ (-ам)</i> 'to be able to' .....  | 280 |
| 7.3.3.2.  | <i>мошташ (-ем)</i> 'to be able to' .....  | 280 |
| 7.3.3.3.  | <i>лияш (-ям)</i> 'to be, to become' → 'to be allowed' .....                         | 281 |
| 7.3.3.4.  | <i>толашаш (-ем)</i> 'to try, to strive' → improper, inadequate execution .....      | 281 |
| 7.3.3.5.  | <i>тўчаш (-ем)</i> 'to try, to attempt' → improper, inadequate execution.....        | 281 |
| 7.3.4.    | Modal auxiliaries denoting necessity, etc. ('to have to') .....                      | 282 |
| 7.3.4.1.  | <i>кўлаш (-ам)</i> 'to have to' .....  | 282 |
| 7.3.4.2.  | <i>верешташ (-ам)</i> 'to get, to catch' → 'to have to' .....                        | 283 |
| 7.3.4.3.  | <i>логалаш (-ам)</i> 'to get to, to find oneself (somewhere)' → 'to have to' .....   | 283 |
| 7.3.4.4.  | <i>возаш (-ам)</i> 'to lie down' → 'to have to' .....                                | 283 |
| 7.3.4.5.  | <i>пернаш (-ем)</i> 'to strike against' → 'to have to' .....                         | 283 |
| 7.3.4.6.  | <i>тўкнаш (-ем)</i> 'to touch (intr.)' → 'to have to' .....                          | 283 |
| 7.3.5.    | Aspectual auxiliaries.....   | 283 |
| 7.3.5.1.  | General remarks on aspectual auxiliary constructions.....                            | 283 |
| 7.3.5.2.  | <i>возаш (-ам)</i> 'to lie down' → resultative; added property; lying position ..... | 286 |
| 7.3.5.3.  | <i>илаш (-ем)</i> 'to live' → continuous .....                                       | 286 |
| 7.3.5.4.  | <i>кайаш (-ем)</i> 'to go' → ingressive, tangible result .....                       | 286 |
| 7.3.5.5.  | <i>кияш (-ем)</i> 'to lie' → durative; lying position.....                           | 286 |
| 7.3.5.6.  | <i>кодаш (-ам)</i> 'to stay' → resultative, evident result, excessive .....          | 287 |
| 7.3.5.7.  | <i>кодаш (-ем)</i> 'to leave (something)' → resultative, subject leaves .....        | 287 |
| 7.3.5.8.  | <i>колташ (-ем)</i> 'to send' → inchoative, momentary .....                          | 287 |
| 7.3.5.9.  | <i>кошташ (-ам)</i> 'to go' → durative; many locations .....                         | 288 |
| 7.3.5.10. | <i>кудалташ (-ем)</i> 'to throw, to cast' → resultative; impetuous, sudden .....     | 288 |



|           |  |     |
|-----------|--|-----|
| 7.3.5.11. | <i>кышкаш (-ем)</i> 'to throw, to cast' → resultative; impetuous, sudden; scattering     | 288 |
| 7.3.5.12. | <i>лекташ (-ам)</i> 'to go, to leave' → delimitative; unexpectedness                     | 288 |
| 7.3.5.13. | <i>лукташ (-ам)</i> 'to lead out' → exhaustive; creation of something                    | 289 |
| 7.3.5.14. | <i>мияш (-ем)</i> 'to go, to come' → gradual   | 289 |
| 7.3.5.15. | <i>налаш (-ам)</i> 'to take' → delimitative; autobenefactive                             | 289 |
| 7.3.5.16. | <i>ончаш (-ем)</i> 'to look' → momentary; activity is tried                              | 289 |
| 7.3.5.17. | <i>опташ (-ем)</i> 'to place (several items)' → iterative, large scale                   | 290 |
| 7.3.5.18. | <i>пуаш (-эм)</i> 'to give' → resultative; benefactive                                   | 290 |
| 7.3.5.19. | <i>пытараш (-ем)</i> 'to finish, to complete' → exhaustive                               | 290 |
| 7.3.5.20. | <i>пыташ (-ем)</i> 'to end, to stop (intr.)' → exhaustive; all participate               | 290 |
| 7.3.5.21. | <i>пышташ (-ем)</i> 'to put, to place, to lay' → resultative; lying position; in advance | 291 |
| 7.3.5.22. | <i>сенаш (-ем)</i> 'to win, to defeat' → exhaustive; 'to manage to'                      | 291 |
| 7.3.5.23. | <i>темаш (-ам)</i> 'to fill up (intr.)' → exhaustive, sufficient                         | 291 |
| 7.3.5.24. | <i>толаш (-ам)</i> 'to come' → gradual   | 291 |
| 7.3.5.25. | <i>шинчаш (-ам)</i> 'to sit down' → resultative; sitting position                        | 292 |
| 7.3.5.26. | <i>шинчаш (-ем)</i> 'to sit' → durative; sitting position                                | 292 |
| 7.3.5.27. | <i>шогалаш (-ам)</i> 'to stand up' → resultative; standing position                      | 292 |
| 7.3.5.28. | <i>шогалташ (-ем)</i> 'to place, to stand' → resultative; standing position              | 292 |
| 7.3.5.29. | <i>шогаш (-ем)</i> 'to stand' → durative, standing position                              | 293 |
| 7.3.5.30. | <i>шуаш (-ам)</i> 'to arrive, to reach' → exhaustive; attainment of a goal               | 293 |
| 7.3.5.31. | <i>шуаш (-эм)</i> 'to throw, to cast' → resultative; energetic, impetuous, sudden        | 293 |
| 7.3.5.32. | <i>шукташ (-ем)</i> 'to carry out, to fulfill' → exhaustive; 'to manage to'              | 293 |
| 7.3.5.33. | <i>шындаш (-ем)</i> 'to put, to place, to set' → resultative; sitting position           | 293 |
| 7.3.5.34. | <i>эрташ (-ем)</i> 'to lead, to take' → delimitative                                     | 294 |
| 7.3.6.    | Benefactive and autobenefactive auxiliaries  | 294 |
| 7.4.5.1.  | <i>пуаш (-эм)</i> 'to give' → benefactive; resultative                                   | 294 |
| 7.4.5.2.  | <i>налаш (-ам)</i> 'to take' → autobenefactive; delimitative                             | 295 |
| 7.4.5.3.  | <i>ончыкташ (-ем)</i> 'to begin' → benefactive (demonstrating)                           | 295 |
| 7.5.      | Verb of being  | 295 |
| 7.5.0.    | General remarks  | 295 |
| 7.5.1.    | Present tense  | 295 |
| 7.5.2.    | Simple past tense I  | 296 |
| 7.5.3.    | Simple past tense II   | 297 |
| 7.5.4.    | Compound past tense I–IV   | 298 |
| 7.5.5.    | Future   | 300 |
| 7.5.6.    | Imperative   | 301 |
| 7.5.7.    | Desiderative   | 301 |
| 7.5.8.    | Non-finite forms   | 302 |
| 7.5.9.    | Existential clauses  | 303 |
| 7.5.10.   | Locational sentences   | 305 |
| 7.5.11.   | Predicative possession ('to have')   | 305 |
| 8.        | Adverbs  | 307 |
| 8.0.      | General remarks  | 307 |
| 8.1.      | Temporal adverbs   | 307 |
| 8.1.1.    | Derivation of temporal adverbs   | 309 |
| 8.1.1.1.  | -н   | 309 |
| 8.1.1.2.  | -нек [-ñek]  | 310 |
| 8.1.1.3.  | -сек   | 311 |
| 8.2.      | Spatial adverbs  | 312 |
| 8.2.1.    | Non-compound spatial adverbs   | 312 |
| 8.2.2.    | Compound spatial adverbs   | 315 |
| 8.2.2.1.  | Compound spatial adverbs in -бал (-вал)  | 316 |
| 8.2.2.2.  | Compound spatial adverbs in -вел   | 316 |
| 8.2.2.3.  | Compound spatial adverbs in -йымал   | 318 |
| 8.3.      | Adverbs pertaining to language in -ла  | 318 |
| 8.4.      | Modal adverbs  | 319 |
| 8.4.1.    | Deadjectival modal adverbs in -н   | 319 |
| 8.4.2.    | Other modal adverbs  | 320 |
| 8.5.      | Comparison of adverbs  | 322 |
| 8.5.1.    | Positive degree  | 322 |
| 8.5.2.    | Comparative degree   | 322 |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| 8.5.3. Superlative degree .....   | 324 |
| 8.6. Descriptive words .....  | 325 |
| 8.6.1. Semantic categories .....  | 325 |
| 8.6.2. Form categories .....  | 326 |
| 8.6.3. Usage categories .....   | 326 |
| 9. Particles.....   | 328 |
| 9.0. General remarks.....   | 328 |
| 9.1. Emphatic clitics etc. orthographically attached to base words .....                        | 328 |
| 9.1.1. -ат.....   | 328 |
| 9.1.2. -ак.....   | 330 |
| 9.1.3. -с.....  | 331 |
| 9.1.4. -ла.....   | 331 |
| 9.1.5. Possessive suffix third person singular -жЕ ~ -шЕ ~ -ыжЕ ~ -ж.....                       | 332 |
| 9.2. Imperative clitics -ян, -я, orthographically attached to base word .....                   | 333 |
| 9.3. Imperative particles айда, айсма, and тек .....  | 333 |
| 9.4. Tense/evidentiality-marking particles ыле and улмаш .....                                  | 334 |
| 9.5. Other particles .....  | 337 |
| 9.5.1. а 'so, huh' .....  | 338 |
| 9.5.2. адак 'still, yet, more' .....  | 338 |
| 9.5.3. ала 'maybe, probably, could be; hardly, doubtful, who knows' .....                       | 338 |
| 9.5.4. ала-ала 'hardly, doubtfully, who knows' .....  | 339 |
| 9.5.5. ала мо 'probably, possibly, apparently' .....  | 339 |
| 9.5.6. (-)але '(emphatic particle); really' .....   | 339 |
| 9.5.7. але вара 'really, indeed, is it possible' .....  | 339 |
| 9.5.8. аман 'apparently, it looks like, it would seem; still, however' .....                    | 340 |
| 9.5.9. ане 'yes; so, well; isn't that so; why don't you...' .....                               | 340 |
| 9.5.10. анят 'perhaps, possibly, could be, maybe; hardly, I doubt it' .....                     | 340 |
| 9.5.11. вара 'well, then (emphatic particle)' .....   | 340 |
| 9.5.12. векаг 'probably, perhaps, it seems, I guess' .....                                      | 340 |
| 9.5.13. веле 'only, just; like, as though; so, just; more and more' .....                       | 341 |
| 9.5.14. вет 'so, indeed, well, as you know, really, you see; isn't it' .....                    | 341 |
| 9.5.15. витне 'apparently, evidently, looks like' .....   | 341 |
| 9.5.16. гай 'it seems, ... might, like' .....   | 341 |
| 9.5.17. гала 'indeed, really, again; not only' .....  | 342 |
| 9.5.18. гын 'as for ..., ... for one (emphatic, interrogative, contrastive)' .....              | 342 |
| 9.5.19. гына 'only, just; barely; rather, fairly; (emphatic particle)' .....                    | 342 |
| 9.5.20. гынат 'some, any; even' .....   | 342 |
| 9.5.21. да 'yes; so, well, indeed; yes?, right?, isn't it?; if only; (emphatic particle)' ..... | 343 |
| 9.5.22. да мо да 'and the like, and so on' .....  | 343 |
| 9.5.23. да монь 'and the like, and so on, and whatnot' .....                                    | 343 |
| 9.5.24. докан 'probably, perhaps, it seems; (emphatic particle)' .....                          | 343 |
| 9.5.25. дык 'well, so (emphatic particle)' .....  | 343 |
| 9.5.26. дыр 'probably, perhaps, it seems' .....   | 344 |
| 9.5.27. иже 'not until, only, only then; only, exclusively' .....                               | 344 |
| 9.5.28. ик 'roughly, about, circa, around' .....  | 344 |
| 9.5.29. иктаж 'roughly, about, circa, around' .....   | 345 |
| 9.5.30. икманаш 'in a word, in one word, in short' .....  | 345 |
| 9.5.31. ито 'even' .....  | 345 |
| 9.5.32. йора 'good, fine, okay' .....   | 345 |
| 9.5.33. керек 'at least, even; well, good, okay; all the same, makes no difference' .....       | 346 |
| 9.5.34. кернак(ак) 'really, truly, absolutely, definitely, for sure' .....                      | 346 |

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| 9.5.35. <i>кеч</i> 'I wish, if only; at least, if only' .....                                | 346 |
| 9.5.36. <i>коеш</i> 'it seems, looks like' .....   | 346 |
| 9.5.37. <i>конешне</i> 'of course, certainly, sure' .....                                    | 347 |
| 9.5.38. <i>кузе</i> 'what? come again?; how ... (strengthening)' .....                       | 347 |
| 9.5.39. <i>кунам</i> 'how, when (used in rhetorical questions)' .....                        | 348 |
| 9.5.40. <i>лаваса</i> 'sure, certainly, of course' .....                                     | 348 |
| 9.5.41. <i>лач(ак)</i> 'only, exclusively; isn't that so, isn't that right, isn't it' .....  | 348 |
| 9.5.42. <i>лиеш</i> '(denotes irreality, uncertainty); soon, shortly' .....                  | 348 |
| 9.5.43. <i>лийже</i> 'let's imagine, let's suppose, suppose' .....                           | 348 |
| 9.5.44. <i>ма</i> '(interrogative particle)' .....   | 349 |
| 9.5.45. <i>ман</i> 'well I never, how about that' .....                                      | 349 |
| 9.5.46. <i>мо</i> '(interrogative particle); really, isn't that so' .....                    | 349 |
| 9.5.47. <i>мо вара</i> 'so what, well, really, then' .....                                   | 349 |
| 9.5.48. <i>могай</i> 'what kind of, how (expressing doubt/denial, intensification)' .....    | 350 |
| 9.5.49. <i>-можо</i> 'what's ..., it's not about ..., who cares about ...' .....             | 350 |
| 9.5.50. <i>можыч</i> 'perhaps, maybe, possibly' .....  | 350 |
| 9.5.51. <i>моли</i> 'maybe, perhaps, aren't (you)' .....                                     | 351 |
| 9.5.52. <i>монь</i> 'and the like, and so on, and others, et cetera, etc.' .....             | 351 |
| 9.5.53. <i>-мочет</i> 'forgetting about ..., ignoring ...' .....                             | 351 |
| 9.5.54. <i>-моэт</i> 'forgetting about ..., ignoring ...' .....                              | 351 |
| 9.5.55. <i>мутлан</i> 'for example' .....  | 351 |
| 9.5.56. <i>на</i> 'okay, here, here you are, take it' .....                                  | 352 |
| 9.5.57. <i>наверне</i> 'probably, most likely, in all likelihood; certainly, for sure' ..... | 352 |
| 9.5.58. <i>неужели</i> 'really?, is it possible?' .....                                      | 352 |
| 9.5.59. <i>но</i> 'yes, uh-huh; exactly, precisely, indeed' .....                            | 352 |
| 9.5.60. <i>ну</i> 'really, quite; well, so; is that so, really; uh-huh' .....                | 353 |
| 9.5.61. <i>огыл</i> 'not' .....  | 353 |
| 9.5.62. <i>-огыла</i> 'it's just as well, well then, well' .....                             | 354 |
| 9.5.63. <i>очыни</i> 'probably, most likely, surely' .....                                   | 354 |
| 9.5.64. <i>пеш йӧра</i> 'very good, great' .....   | 354 |
| 9.5.65. <i>пожале</i> 'probably, very likely, most likely' .....                             | 354 |
| 9.5.66. <i>пожалуйста</i> 'please; by all means, go ahead; you're welcome' .....             | 355 |
| 9.5.67. <i>поро лий(за)</i> 'please' .....   | 355 |
| 9.5.68. <i>просто</i> 'just, simply, absolutely' .....                                       | 355 |
| 9.5.69. <i>пуйто</i> 'as if, it's like' .....  | 355 |
| 9.5.70. <i>разве</i> 'then (in rhetorical questions)' .....                                  | 355 |
| 9.5.71. <i>садак</i> 'all the same, makes no difference; after all, nonetheless' .....       | 355 |
| 9.5.72. <i>садыгак</i> 'all the same, makes no difference; after all, nonetheless' .....     | 355 |
| 9.5.73. <i>содыки</i> 'all the same, nevertheless, after all' .....                          | 356 |
| 9.5.74. <i>тевак</i> 'almost, nearly' .....  | 356 |
| 9.5.75. <i>теве</i> 'here, there, look, look here; almost, nearly' .....                     | 356 |
| 9.5.76. <i>тевыс</i> 'here, there, oh look, oh look here; almost, nearly' .....              | 357 |
| 9.5.77. <i>товат(ам)</i> 'really, truly, indeed, for sure, undoubtedly, no doubt' .....      | 357 |
| 9.5.78. <i>товро</i> 'of course, certainly, naturally; good, right, okay, fine' .....        | 357 |
| 9.5.79. <i>то-то</i> 'that's why, so that's why, there you are' .....                        | 357 |
| 9.5.80. <i>тугат</i> 'as it is, already, even without that' .....                            | 357 |
| 9.5.81. <i>туге</i> 'yes, true, right' .....   | 358 |
| 9.5.82. <i>туге вет</i> 'indeed, isn't it so' .....  | 358 |
| 9.5.83. <i>туге шол</i> 'indeed, that's how it is' .....                                     | 358 |
| 9.5.84. <i>тугеже</i> 'therefore, then, that means' .....                                    | 358 |
| 9.5.85. <i>тудо</i> 'well, of course (emphatic particle)' .....                              | 358 |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| 9.5.86. <i>тушто</i> 'there, here (expresses doubt, disdain, denial, objections)' .....     | 359 |
| 9.5.87. <i>тыге ~ тыгак</i> 'yes, really, indeed' .....                                     | 359 |
| 9.5.88. <i>уж</i> 'to be sure, indeed, certainly (emphatic particle)' .....                 | 360 |
| 9.5.89. <i>ужамат</i> 'as I see, as I can see, it's visible, it's apparent' .....           | 360 |
| 9.5.90. <i>ужат</i> 'see, you see, there you are, it turns out, apparently' .....           | 360 |
| 9.5.91. <i>уже</i> 'already, by now, yet' .....   | 360 |
| 9.5.92. <i>уке</i> 'no (negative answer to a question)' .....                               | 361 |
| 9.5.93. <i>уке шол</i> 'no (emphatically), not at all, unfortunately not' .....             | 361 |
| 9.5.94. <i>улыжат</i> 'only, no more than, in all, altogether' .....                        | 361 |
| 9.5.95. <i>уна</i> 'there, look there, here' .....  | 361 |
| 9.5.96. <i>чай</i> 'probably, apparently, presumably; after all' .....                      | 361 |
| 9.5.97. <i>чуч (гына)</i> 'almost, nearly' .....  | 362 |
| 9.5.98. <i>чылт</i> 'right, directly, just (by, etc.); just when; just, just like' .....    | 362 |
| 9.5.99. <i>чынак(ак)</i> 'really, indeed, truly, in fact, right' .....                      | 362 |
| 9.5.100. <i>чынжым(ак)</i> 'indeed, really, it's true, as a matter of fact, actually' ..... | 363 |
| 9.5.101. <i>шкет(ын)</i> 'only, just' .....   | 363 |
| 9.5.102. <i>шол</i> 'well, really, indeed (emphatic particle); unfortunately' .....         | 363 |
| 9.5.103. <i>шонет</i> 'it seems, it's like, it's as if' .....                               | 363 |
| 9.5.104. <i>э ~ эй</i> 'oh, oh how, oh and how' .....                                       | 363 |
| 9.5.105. <i>эн</i> 'most (superlative particle)' .....                                      | 363 |
| 9.5.106. <i>эсогыл</i> 'even' .....   | 364 |
| 9.5.107. <i>эре</i> 'more and more, increasingly, ever' .....                               | 364 |
| 9.5.108. <i>эртак</i> 'more and more, increasingly, ever' .....                             | 364 |
| 9.5.109. <i>ялт</i> 'just, quite (like); right, just, directly' .....                       | 364 |
| 10. Conjunctions.....   | 365 |
| 10.0. General remarks.....  | 365 |
| 10.1. List of conjunctions.....   | 365 |
| 10.1.1. <i>а</i> 'and, or'.....   | 365 |
| 10.1.2. <i>ала</i> 'sometimes ... sometimes; either ... or; now ... now; or' .....          | 365 |
| 10.1.3. <i>але</i> 'or' .....   | 365 |
| 10.1.4. <i>ато</i> 'otherwise, or else' .....   | 365 |
| 10.1.5. <i>вет</i> 'really, you see, you know' .....  | 365 |
| 10.1.6. <i>вот</i> 'there, here, and here' .....  | 365 |
| 10.1.7. <i>гын</i> 'if' .....   | 365 |
| 10.1.8. <i>гынат</i> 'even if' .....  | 365 |
| 10.1.9. <i>да</i> 'and' .....   | 365 |
| 10.1.10. <i>даже</i> 'even' .....   | 365 |
| 10.1.11. <i>ден</i> 'and' .....   | 365 |
| 10.1.12. <i>дык</i> 'if' .....  | 365 |
| 10.1.13. <i>если</i> 'if' .....   | 366 |
| 10.1.14. <i>зато</i> 'but, on the other hand' .....   | 366 |
| 10.1.15. <i>и</i> 'and' .....   | 366 |
| 10.1.16. <i>ито</i> 'and that, and even' .....  | 366 |
| 10.1.17. <i>керек</i> 'even if' .....   | 366 |
| 10.1.18. <i>кеч</i> 'even if' .....   | 366 |
| 10.1.19. <i>коли</i> 'if' .....   | 366 |
| 10.1.20. <i>кузе</i> 'how' .....  | 366 |
| 10.1.21. <i>кунам</i> 'when' .....  | 366 |
| 10.1.22. <i>кунар(е)</i> 'how many, how much' .....   | 366 |
| 10.1.23. <i>куш(ко)</i> '(to) where' .....  | 366 |
| 10.1.24. <i>кушан</i> 'where' .....   | 366 |

|          |   |     |
|----------|---|-----|
| 10.1.25. | <i>кушто</i> 'where' .....  | 366 |
| 10.1.26. | <i>ма</i> 'whether, if' .....   | 366 |
| 10.1.27. | <i>манын</i> 'that; so that, in order to' .....                               | 366 |
| 10.1.28. | <i>молан манаш гын</i> 'because' .....  | 367 |
| 10.1.29. | <i>мыняр(е)</i> 'how many, how much' .....                                    | 367 |
| 10.1.30. | <i>ни</i> 'neither ... nor' .....   | 367 |
| 10.1.31. | <i>но</i> 'but' .....   | 367 |
| 10.1.32. | <i>ны</i> 'neither ... nor' .....   | 367 |
| 10.1.33. | <i>потомушто</i> 'because' .....  | 367 |
| 10.1.34. | <i>пуйто</i> 'as if, as though; that' .....                                   | 367 |
| 10.1.35. | <i>раз</i> 'if, since' .....  | 367 |
| 10.1.36. | <i>садлан</i> 'therefor, thus' .....  | 367 |
| 10.1.37. | <i>садлан верчын</i> 'therefor, thus' .....                                   | 367 |
| 10.1.38. | <i>садлан көра</i> 'therefor, thus' .....                                     | 367 |
| 10.1.39. | <i>садлан лийын</i> 'therefor, thus' .....                                    | 367 |
| 10.1.40. | <i>санден(е)</i> 'therefor, thus' .....                                       | 367 |
| 10.1.41. | <i>так</i> 'as soon as, when, the moment' .....                               | 367 |
| 10.1.42. | <i>теве</i> 'now ... now, sometimes ... sometimes' .....                      | 368 |
| 10.1.43. | <i>тек</i> 'though, even if' .....  | 368 |
| 10.1.44. | <i>то</i> 'then; now ... now, sometimes ... sometimes' .....                  | 368 |
| 10.1.45. | <i>только</i> 'but, only' .....   | 368 |
| 10.1.46. | <i>тугак</i> 'so, like that, just like that' .....                            | 368 |
| 10.1.47. | <i>туге гын</i> 'in that case, if that is so' .....                           | 368 |
| 10.1.48. | <i>туге гынат</i> 'nevertheless, yet, still, however, in spite of this' ..... | 368 |
| 10.1.49. | <i>тыгак</i> 'also, too, as well' .....                                       | 368 |
| 10.1.50. | <i>я</i> 'or' .....   | 368 |
| 11.      | Word formation .....  | 369 |
| 11.0.    | Introductory remarks .....  | 369 |
| 11.1.    | Onomatopoeia .....  | 369 |
| 11.2.    | Composition .....   | 369 |
| 11.2.1.  | Basic principles .....  | 369 |
| 11.2.2.  | Nominal compounds .....   | 371 |
| 11.2.3.  | Adjectival compounds .....  | 372 |
| 11.2.4.  | Verbal compounds .....  | 372 |
| 11.2.5.  | Adverbial compounds .....   | 372 |
| 11.3.    | Conversion .....  | 373 |
| 11.3.1.  | Adjective-to-noun conversion .....  | 373 |
| 11.3.2.  | Noun-to-adjective conversion .....  | 374 |
| 11.3.3.  | Renominalization of genitive forms .....                                      | 375 |
| 11.3.4.  | Noun-to-verb conversion .....   | 375 |
| 11.3.5.  | Adjective-to-verb conversion .....  | 376 |
| 11.3.6.  | Verb-to-verb conversion (conjugation class shift) .....                       | 376 |
| 11.4.    | Reduplication .....   | 376 |
| 11.5.    | Nominal derivation .....  | 377 |
| 11.5.1.  | Vocative forms .....  | 377 |
| 11.5.2.  | Denominal/deverbal agent noun suffix <i>-зЕ</i> .....                         | 377 |
| 11.5.3.  | Denominal agent noun suffix <i>-чЕ</i> .....                                  | 378 |
| 11.5.4.  | Denominal purposive/quality suffix <i>-лык</i> .....                          | 378 |
| 11.5.5.  | Denominal purposive suffix <i>-аш</i> .....                                   | 379 |
| 11.5.6.  | Denominal collective suffix <i>-ер</i> .....                                  | 379 |
| 11.5.7.  | Denominal quality suffix <i>-м</i> .....                                      | 379 |

|  |     |
|--|-----|
| 11.5.8. Deverbal action suffix (nominalizer) - <i>маш</i> .....      | 379 |
| 11.5.9. Deverbal privative suffix - <i>дымаш</i> .....               | 380 |
| 11.5.10. Deverbal resultative suffix - <i>ш</i> .....                | 381 |
| 11.5.11. Deverbal resultative suffix - <i>мыш</i> .....              | 381 |
| 11.6. Adjectival derivation .....                                    | 382 |
| 11.6.1. Denominal possessive derivational suffix - <i>ан</i> .....   | 382 |
| 11.6.2. Denominal possessive derivational suffix - <i>лЕ</i> .....   | 383 |
| 11.6.3. Relational suffix - <i>сЕ</i> .....                          | 383 |
| 11.6.4. Denominal relational suffix - <i>аш</i> .....                | 384 |
| 11.6.5. Privative suffix - <i>дымЕ</i> .....                         | 385 |
| 11.6.6. Denominal purposive suffix - <i>лык</i> .....                | 385 |
| 11.6.7. Approximative suffix - <i>алге</i> .....                     | 386 |
| 11.7. Verbal derivation .....  | 387 |
| 11.7.1. Denominal derivational suffix - <i>л</i> .....               | 387 |
| 11.7.2. Denominal translative suffix - <i>аң</i> .....               | 388 |
| 11.7.3. Translative suffix - <i>лан</i> .....                        | 388 |
| 11.7.4. Denominal translative suffix - <i>ем</i> .....               | 388 |
| 11.7.5. Denominal translative suffix - <i>ешт</i> .....              | 389 |
| 11.7.6. Denominal translative suffix - <i>з</i> .....                | 389 |
| 11.7.7. Denominal factitive suffix - <i>т</i> ~ - <i>д</i> .....     | 389 |
| 11.7.8. Deverbal frequentative suffix - <i>л</i> .....               | 389 |
| 11.7.9. Deverbal frequentative suffix - <i>ед</i> .....              | 390 |
| 11.7.10. Deverbal frequentative suffix - <i>кал</i> .....            | 390 |
| 11.7.11. Deverbal frequentative suffix - <i>ешт</i> .....            | 390 |
| 11.7.12. Deverbal reflexive suffix - <i>алт</i> .....                | 391 |
| 11.7.13. Deverbal causative suffix - <i>кт</i> .....                 | 392 |
| 11.7.14. Deverbal causative suffix - <i>т</i> ~ - <i>д</i> .....     | 394 |
| 11.7.15. Deverbal causative suffix - <i>тар</i> ~ - <i>дар</i> ..... | 395 |
| 11.7.16. Deverbal momentary suffix - <i>алт</i> .....                | 395 |
| 11.7.17. Deverbal momentary suffix - <i>ал</i> .....                 | 395 |
| 11.8. Adverbial derivation .....                                     | 397 |
| 12. The sentence and its constituents .....                          | 398 |
| 12.1. General remarks .....  | 398 |
| 12.2. The constituents of simple sentences .....                     | 398 |
| 12.3. The order of constituents and adverbials .....                 | 398 |
| 12.4. Sentence types .....   | 398 |
| 12.4.1. Declarative sentences (statements) .....                     | 398 |
| 12.4.2. Interrogative sentences (questions) .....                    | 398 |
| 12.4.2.1. Alternative questions .....                                | 398 |
| 12.4.2.2. Constituent questions .....                                | 398 |
| 12.4.3. Imperative sentences (commands, orders) .....                | 398 |
| 12.4.4. Exclamative sentence .....                                   | 398 |
| 13. Phrases .....  | 399 |
| 13.1. Verb phrase .....  | 399 |
| 13.2. Noun phrase .....  | 399 |
| 13.3. Adjective phrase .....   | 399 |
| 13.4. Postpositional phrase .....                                    | 399 |
| 13.5. Coordination of phrases .....                                  | 399 |
| 14. Clausal coordination .....                                       | 400 |
| 14.1. Juxtaposition .....  | 400 |
| 14.2. "Overt" coordination .....                                     | 400 |

|   |     |
|---|-----|
| 15. Clausal subordination.....  | 401 |
| 15.0. General remarks.....  | 401 |
| 15.1. Nominal clauses.....  | 401 |
| 15.2. Relative clauses .....  | 401 |
| 15.2.1. Relative participles.....   | 401 |
| 15.2.2. Finite relative clauses with relative pronouns.....                                   | 401 |
| 15.2.2.1. Constructions of the type <i>Kə ... / Mo ... , mydo ...</i> .....                   | 401 |
| 15.2.2.2. Constructions of the type <i>kydo + noun ... , mydo + noun ...</i> .....            | 401 |
| 15.2.2.3. Postposed relative clauses referring to full nouns in the superordinate clause..... | 401 |
| 15.3. Conditional clauses .....   | 401 |
| 15.4. Concessive clauses .....  | 401 |
| 15.5. Causal clauses.....   | 401 |
| 15.6. Consecutive clauses .....   | 401 |
| 15.7. Final clauses.....  | 401 |
| 15.7.1. Finite final clauses .....  | 401 |
| 15.7.2. Non-finite final clauses with the infinitive in <i>-aw</i> .....                      | 402 |
| 15.7.2.1. <i>-aw + Dative -лан</i> .....  | 402 |
| 15.7.2.2. <i>-aw + манын</i> .....  | 402 |
| 15.7.3. Non-finite final clauses with the future-necessitive participle in <i>-uaw</i> .....  | 402 |
| 15.7.3.1. Future-necessitive participle in <i>-шаш + dative in -лан</i> .....                 | 402 |
| 15.7.3.2. Future-necessitive participle in <i>-шаш + манын</i> .....                          | 402 |
| 15.7.4. Final constructions with postpositions.....   | 402 |
| 15.8. Comparative clauses.....  | 402 |
| A. Exercise key.....  | 403 |
| A.1. Introduction.....  | 403 |
| A.2. Nouns.....   | 409 |
| A.3. Adjectives.....  | 425 |
| A.4. Quantifiers .....  | 428 |
| A.5. Pronouns .....   | 433 |
| A.6. Postpositions .....  | 437 |
| A.7. Verbs.....   | 441 |
| A.8. Adverbs.....   | 484 |
| A.9. Particles .....  | 487 |
| A.10. Conjunctions.....   | 492 |
| A.11. Word formation.....   | 493 |
| A.12. The sentence and its constituents .....   | 501 |
| A.13. Phrases.....  | 502 |
| A.14. Causal coordination .....   | 503 |
| A.15. Causal subordination .....  | 504 |
| B. Inventory of suffixes (by type).....   | 506 |
| C. Inventory of suffixes (reverse-sorted) .....   | 506 |
| D. Inventory of prefixes.....   | 506 |
| E. Thematic glossary .....  | 506 |

## 1. Introduction

### 1.1. What is this book?

The aim of our website [www.mari-language.com](http://www.mari-language.com) is to provide both native speakers of Mari as well as those learning Mari as a foreign language essential tools hitherto either unavailable or inadequate in modern terms. For Mari learners the textbook *Онай мари́й йылме* is now by far the most extensive and up-to-date work extant. This book, *Mari – An Essential Grammar for International Learners*, is the first learner’s grammar written for students of Mari and thus unique in its field.

What are the goals of this book? How is it structured? And for whom is it intended?

**Target Group:** This book is written for all those who are learning Mari as a foreign language, but as it is a learner’s grammar and not a basic textbook, primarily for those who have already acquired some knowledge of Mari grammar and a basic Mari vocabulary. Thus, it is ideally suited for all those who have worked through the textbook *Онай мари́й йылме* or at least a good portion of it.

**Goals:** This book intends to consolidate the grammatical knowledge of Mari already acquired by learners, as well as to enlarge and expand on it. Thus, not only the grammar covered in *Онай мари́й йылме* is presented again and practiced, but much supplementary material is provided in order for students to gain a thorough and comprehensive understanding of Mari grammatical structures.

**Structure:** The book begins with an introductory chapter devoted for the most part to phonology and orthography and closes with chapters on syntax. The bulk of the book is made up of chapters dealing with the morphology of the Mari language. These morphological chapters are devoted to the various parts of speech.

In all cases the grammar is presented in concise language, utilizing illustrative example sentences in Mari with an English translation and followed by exercises on the individual points.

As this book is aimed at learners, the authors did not orient themselves towards specific theories of grammar, but focused exclusively on one practical aim: providing students of Mari with a necessary tool that they can use to consolidate and widen their grasp of Mari grammar.

**Varieties of Mari:** As all languages, Mari is subject to considerable variation, depending on the dialectal and sociolinguistic background of its speakers. As is characteristic for a language existing in a minority situation, code switching and code mixing is typical for spoken Mari – in this case primarily with Russian, the dominant majority language. This book concerns itself with the Meadow Mari standard language, and does not aim to describe these aspects of spoken Mari.

### 1.2. This book in the context of [www.mari-language.com](http://www.mari-language.com)

The resource at hand exists within the framework of our web portal [www.mari-language.com](http://www.mari-language.com). Since its launch in 2010, we have provided an ever-increasing repository of materials aiming to make the Mari language more accessible to a wider audience. All materials published on our website – including the one at hand – are published under a Creative Commons license, meaning that you are free to share, multiply, and rework all our materials for non-profit purposes, under the condition that we are attributed for our work.

The section at hand will give a brief overview of the materials found on our site, aiming to illustrate how they can be used in combination with the resource at hand optimally. A general overview of the materials can be found at [www.mari-language.com](http://www.mari-language.com); each individual resource can also be found under its own subdomain (e.g., [dict.mari-language.com](http://dict.mari-language.com) for the Mari-English



dictionary). Further instructions and documentation on the individual resources can be found on the respective sites.

### Онай мари́й йы́лме: A Comprehensive Introduction to the Mari Language

This textbook, found at [omj.mari-language.com](http://omj.mari-language.com), with its 40 chapters spanning 771 pages and accompanying audio materials aims to give self-learners with no prior knowledge of Mari a first foothold in literary Mari. It covers productive Mari morphology in its entirety and dedicates notable attention to syntactic and semantic topics.



Figure 1: Emma Yakimova and Galina Krylova record audio materials for Онай мари́й йы́лме<sup>1</sup>

It can be understood as a solid basis for the resource at hand: readers that have successfully worked their way through this textbook, or at least sizable parts of it, can be assumed to have a sufficient comprehension of Mari to make good use of the resource at hand.

### Mari-English Dictionary

With its 42,560 headwords and 82,740 subentries, including 10,750 set phrases, this dictionary, found at [dict.mari-language.com](http://dict.mari-language.com), is the most comprehensive lexical resource on Mari published to date.

## Mari-English Dictionary

[Reset](#) | [Instructions](#) | [Morphological Analyzer](#)

|   |   |   |
|---|---|---|
| <input type="text"/>  | <input type="button" value="Search"/>   | <input checked="" type="radio"/> Mari → English <input type="radio"/> Mari ← English <input type="radio"/> Mari ⇄ English |
| Search:   | <input checked="" type="radio"/> Whole Words <input type="radio"/> All Matches <input type="checkbox"/> Search Subentries         |   |
| Stress, Palatalness:  | <input checked="" type="radio"/> Extra Characters (•, ') <input type="radio"/> Bold/Italics <input type="radio"/> Do Not Annotate |   |
| Orthography:  | <input checked="" type="radio"/> Cyrillic <input type="radio"/> UPA <input type="radio"/> IPA                                     |   |
| Ordering:   | <input checked="" type="radio"/> Alphabetical <input type="radio"/> Reverse   |   |
| а б в г д е ё ж з и й к л м н о п р с т у ф х ц ч ш щ ъ ы ь э ю я |   |   |

Figure 2: The user interface of the Mari-English Dictionary

### A Learner's Grammar of Mari

The resource at hand, found at [grammar.mari-language.com](http://grammar.mari-language.com).

<sup>1</sup> Picture by Jeremy Bradley, 2010.



Figure 3: The authors of this book in 2017

### Paradigm Generator

Our Mari paradigm generator can be found at [paradigm.mari-language.com](http://paradigm.mari-language.com). Users can generate inflected forms of any verb or noun here.

#### Case Suffixes

|              |           |
|--------------|-----------|
| Nominative:  | вуй       |
| Genitive:    | вуйын     |
| Dative:      | вуйлан    |
| Accusative:  | вуйым     |
| Comparative: | вуйла     |
| Comitative:  | вуйге     |
| Inessive:    | вуйышто   |
| Illative:    | вуйыш(ко) |
| Lative:      | вуеш      |

#### Possessive Suffixes

|      |       |
|------|-------|
| 1SG: | вуем  |
| 2SG: | вуёт  |
| 3SG: | вуйжо |

Figure 4: Excerpt of paradigm generator's output for вуй 'head'

### Mari in Computing

The data provided at [tech.mari-language.com](http://tech.mari-language.com) aims to provide assistance in the use of Mari in computing. Solutions for common problems are discussed in detail; keyboard layouts and fonts can be downloaded. If you wish to type in Mari on your computer, you can consult this section of our website.

|         |   |     |   |   |   |   |   |   |   |   |     |   |           |
|---------|---|-----|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|-----|---|-----------|
| ~       | 1 | 2   | 3 | 4 | 5 | 6 | 7 | 8 | 9 | 0 | ь   | ъ | Backspace |
| Tab     | я | ш   | е | р | т | ы | у | и | о | п | ў   | ж | Enter     |
| Caps    | а | с   | д | ф | г | ч | й | к | л | ӧ | '   | \ |           |
| Shift   | ӧ | з   | х | ц | в | б | н | м | , | . | /   |   | Shift     |
| Control |   | Alt |   |   |   |   |   |   |   |   | Alt |   | Control   |

Figure 5: One possible keyboard layout for Mari

### Morphological Analyzer

This resource, found at [morph.mari-language.com](http://morph.mari-language.com), allows users to have words or entire sentences of Mari analyzed, with individual words split up into their morphemes – the base lexical items, and suffixes attached to them.

|              |                            |                  |                  |
|--------------|----------------------------|------------------|------------------|
| Эчан         | телевизорым                | ончаш            | йӧрата.          |
| Эчан         | телевизор -ым              | онч -аш          | йӧрат -а         |
| Эчан         | телевизор -м               | ончо -аш         | йӧрате -а        |
| <i>Echan</i> | <i>television.set</i> -ACC | <i>look</i> -INF | <i>love</i> -3SG |
| na           | no -case                   | vb2 -inf         | vb2 -pers        |

Figure 6: Analysis of the sentence Эчан телевизорым ончаш йӧрата. 'Echan likes to watch television.'

If you find yourself unable to analyze some of the example sentences provided in the resource at hand, you can use the morphological analyzer as an aid.

### Transcription tools

The transcription and transliteration tools at [transcribe.mari-language.com](http://transcribe.mari-language.com) offer transcriptions and transliterations between different writing systems used for Mari, and eight other languages of the Russian Federation. More rudimentary aids are offered for a wide range of other languages, as well as a universal diacritic helper for Latin and Cyrillic orthographies. The tools found here can, for example, be used to transcribe Mari text from Cyrillic into the Uralic Phonetic Alphabet (UPA) or the International Phonetic Alphabet (IPA), for example:

| Cyrillic                                | → | UPA                                     | IPA                                     |
|---|---|---|---|
| Ик тымык ото уло мемнан элыште,         |   | ik tāmēk oto ulo memnan elāšte,         | ik tɯmɯk oto ulo memnan elɤʃte,         |
| Шога tudo ото кугу ер серыште.          |   | šoga tudo oto kugu jer serāšte.         | ʃoga tudo oto kugu jer serɤʃte.         |
| Тушто ладыра деч ладыра пушенге кушкеш. | → | tušto ladāra deč ladāra pušenge kuškeš. | tušto ladɤra deɕ ladɤra puʃenɤe kuʃkeʃ. |
| Тушто мотор деч мотор саска шочеш.      |   | tušto motor deč motor saska šočeš.      | tušto motor deɕ motor saska ʃoɕeʃ.      |

### The Mari Corpus

A corpus of Mari literary texts is under construction, and will be published at [corpus.mari-language.com](http://corpus.mari-language.com).

### Hill Mari – Meadow Mari – English Dictionary: Reading Hill Mari through Meadow Mari

We are in the process of creating resources dealing with the second Mari literary norm, Hill Mari. At [hm-dict.mari-language.com](http://hm-dict.mari-language.com), users will soon find an expansion upon the Mari-English Dictionary (currently still under construction). Hill Mari lexemes are linked up with their cognates and semantic counterparts in Meadow Mari; their various facets of meaning were translated into English; Hill Mari example sentences are provided with both Meadow Mari and English translations. The resulting resource can be used either in translations from Hill Mari to Meadow Mari, or to contrast Hill Mari lexical items with those of Meadow Mari.

At [rh.mari-language.com](http://rh.mari-language.com), users can find a textbook which contrasts the two literary norms of Mari, with the aim of giving students with a working understanding of Meadow Mari the ability to access texts written in the Hill Mari literary norm.

### 1.3. Acknowledgements

First and foremost, we would like to thank the Kone Foundation for allotting us the grant necessary, 'The Mari Web Project: Phase 2', to make this resource happen. Timothy Riese and Jeremy Bradley would like to thank their respective universities, the University of Vienna and the Ludwig Maximilian University of Munich, for allowing them to invest such a sizable amount of their working hours into this undertaking.

We would also like to thank the Austrian Science Fund (FWF) for funding the predecessor project to this one, P22786-G20 'Mari-English Dictionary'. This project would not have been possible without the preliminary work carried out in that project.

The book at hand and its structure was to a large degree inspired by the Hungarian learners' grammar *Ungarische Übungsgrammatik* (to appear) Timothy Riese compiled together with Katalin Blaskó. We would like to thank his co-author, and everyone else that assisted them in the creation of this resource, for their contribution.

We would like to thank Aleksey Kozlov for an important insight regarding the usage of past tenses in Mari.

### 1.4. Introductory remarks on Mari grammar

In this section a short, by necessity arbitrary list of some characteristic features of the Mari language is presented. Note that these features are not necessarily uniquely Mari, but are shared to a greater or lesser extent with other languages in the sense of genetic heritage (Mari as a Uralic language), typological relatedness (Mari as an agglutinative language) and areal features held in common with other languages of the Volga-Kama region.

Mari is a morphologically rich language. Suffixes are widely used to express grammatical meaning. As is characteristic for agglutinative languages, in principle each grammatical morpheme corresponds to one specific function and vice versa. However, this classification is based on the general tendencies of the language and is not an exclusive categorization valid in all instances.

Mari is a nominative-accusative language in which the nominative is the case of the SUBJECT in finite clauses while the case of the DIRECT OBJECT is the accusative.

In the Mari language, there is no grammatical GENDER and there are no NOUN CLASSES – that is to say, the inflected forms of a noun can be derived unambiguously from the base form (the nominative singular).

The CASE system consists of four grammatical cases – the (unmarked) nominative, genitive, accusative, and dative –, and three local cases – illative (to where), lative (where ~ to where) and inessive (where). In addition, there are two marginal cases – comitative and comparative. Thus, the threefold system of local expressions (conveying movement towards, no movement, and

movement from, respectively) is not complete here. To express movement from, the postposition *зыч* can be used. Also, local adverbs and postpositions usually have a distinct form for each of the three parts of the system.

As for NUMBER, singular and plural are distinguished. However, the plural is not always marked overtly – singular forms are encountered quite often, if the plural meaning can be derived from the context. After numerals, only singular forms are used.

The FINITE VERB has morphologically different forms for each person, singular and plural, respectively. Personal pronouns as subjects are optional and can be omitted (i.e., Mari is a PRO-DROP language).

Every verb is assigned to one of two CONJUGATION CLASSES, known generally as the first and second conjugations. In many cases, different endings occur in the two conjugation classes. There are no overt semantic factors determining the conjugation class of a verb: learners of Mari must simply learn which class a verb belongs to.

There is no inflectional future tense in Mari; the present tense can also be used to express future actions; in addition, an analytical future can be formed with the verb *тўналаш* 'to begin'. Mari has two synthetic and four periphrastic past tenses. The usage of the past tenses is among other factors determined by EVIDENTIALITY, i.e., the grammatical expression of the source of information (direct vs. indirect).

Finite verb forms do not differ as regards voice (i.e., active vs. passive), but two of the participles can convey this notion and are therefore called active and passive participles, respectively. As concerns mood, Mari morphology distinguishes between indicative, imperative and DESIDERATIVE – a mood to express the intention to do something. There is also a special infinite form used to convey that something has to be done, the NECESSITIVE INFINITIVE.

In Mari, non-finite verb forms play an important role. Apart from two INFINITIVES, Mari has four PARTICIPLES and five GERUNDS. They are widely used, also in ways that correspond to the use of finite clauses in English.

One very typical feature of Mari is the usage of one of the five gerunds (the gerund in *-н*) in so-called auxiliary constructions. Here the gerund and an auxiliary verb form a unit which can only be meaningfully understood and translated if one knows that the gerund carries the main lexical content of the pairing, while the auxiliary (often finite) verb adds a grammatical value of some sort: aspectual (*йӱратен шындаш (-ем)* '(lit.) loving place' → 'to fall in love'), directional (*чонгештен каяш (-ем)* '(lit.) flying leave' → 'to fly away'), benefactive (*умылтарен нуаш (-эм)* '(lit.) explaining give' → 'to explain (something) to someone').

The basic constituent order, i.e., the word order in clauses in which no element is especially emphasized, is subject-object-verb (SOV). Not only nominal objects precede the finite verb, but also non-finite verbal constructions (e.g., gerundial constructions) that correspond to subordinate clauses in English. Adjectives, and participial constructions functioning as attributes, generally precede the noun they modify. Furthermore, Mari uses POSTPOSITIONS rather than PREPOSITIONS – they are placed after their reference word rather than before it.

Mari has no ARTICLES. In certain contexts, the NUMERAL *ук* 'one' functions as a non-definite DETERMINER. DEMONSTRATIVE PRONOUNS can mark the noun they precede as an entity that is already known to the listener/reader, but also certain CLITICS and possessive suffixes – mainly those of the 2<sup>nd</sup> and 3<sup>rd</sup> person singular – can be used to express definiteness.

In constructions conveying possessive relations (e.g., 'my bicycle'), the possessor is generally marked by POSSESSIVE SUFFIXES attached to the possession. In addition, the possessor can be expressed by a noun or personal pronoun in the genitive case, preceding the possession.

Mari has no verb meaning “to have”. Instead, the verb *улаш* ‘to be’ is used together with the possessive construction described above: *Мыйын акам уло*. ‘I have an older sister.’ (Literally: ‘My older sister exists.’) NEGATION is expressed using an inflected negative verb together with the connegative form of the main verb: *толам* ‘I come’ ~ *ом тол* ‘I don’t come’.

The verb ‘to be’ is generally omitted in the third person singular in sentences of the type ‘A = B’ (i.e., as a COPULA). *Тудо тунуктышо*. ‘He/she is a teacher.’ In the other persons, however, it is obligatory.

## 1.5. Phonetics, phonology, orthography

### 1.5.1. The Mari phoneme inventory

The following consonant phonemes can be distinguished in the modern Mari literary language. The symbols used here are those of the Finno-Ugric Transcription which will be used in this book when transcriptions are necessary. Transcriptions in the International Phonetic Alphabet (IPA) are given in parentheses when the IPA value of a consonant differs from the value in Finno-Ugric Transcription.

|             |           | Bilabial | Labiodental | Alveolar | Postalveolar | Palatal | Velar |
|-------------|-----------|----------|-------------|----------|--------------|---------|-------|
| Stop        | Voiceless | p        |             | t        |              |         | k     |
|             | Voiced    | b        |             | d        |              |         | g     |
| Fricative   | Voiceless |          | f           |          |              |         | χ (x) |
|             | Voiced    |          | v           |          |              |         |       |
| Sibilant    | Voiceless |          |             | s        | š (ʃ)        |         |       |
|             | Voiced    |          |             | z        | ž (ʒ)        |         |       |
| Affricate   |           |          |             | c (t͡s)  |              | č (t͡ɕ) |       |
| Nasal       |           | m        |             | n        |              | ɲ (ɲ)   | ŋ     |
| Lateral     |           |          |             | l        |              | l' (ɭ)  |       |
| Trill       |           |          |             | r        |              |         |       |
| Approximant |           |          |             |          |              | j       |       |

Note that this table omits Russian palatalized consonants found in some loan words, i.e., /tʲ/ (IPA /tʲ/), /dʲ/ (IPA /dʲ/), /sʲ/ (IPA sʲ), /šʲ/ (IPA /ɕ/), /zʲ/ (IPA /zʲ/), and /rʲ/ (IPA /rʲ/). Also note that the realization of /ɲ/ and /l'/ differs between Russian and Mari: In Russian, these are palatalized sounds (IPA /nʲ/, /lʲ/) – they are alveolar sounds with palatalization occurring as a co-articulation – while in Mari, they are true palatal sounds (IPA /ɲ/, /ɭ/), with the palatum as their place of articulation.

The definitions and approximate values of the consonant phonemes are:

- p: voiceless bilabial stop, like English p (*spark*)
- b: voiced bilabial stop, like English b (*ball*)
- k: voiceless velar stop, like English c (*scar*) or k (*skin*)
- g: voiced velar stop, like English g (*good*)
- t: voiceless alveolar stop, like English t (*star*)
- d: voiced alveolar stop, like English d (*duck*)
- f: voiceless labiodental fricative, like English f (*father*)
- v: voiced labiodental fricative, like English v (*vase*)
- s: voiceless alveolar sibilant, like English s (*sun*)
- z: voiced alveolar sibilant, like English z (*zoo*)
- š: voiceless postalveolar sibilant, like English sh (*show*)
- ž: voiced postalveolar sibilant, like English s in *leisure, measure*
- χ: voiceless velar fricative, like German ch (*machen* ‘to do’)

- j: palatal approximant, like English y (*yard*)  
 c: voiceless alveolar affricate, like English ts (*cats*)  
 č: voiceless alveolo-palatal affricate, similar to English ch (*church*)  
 m: bilabial nasal, like English m (*man*)  
 n: alveolar nasal, like English n (*no*)  
 ñ: palatal nasal, like Hungarian ny (*nyúl* 'rabbit'), similar to English ny (*canyon*)  
 ŋ: velar nasal, like English ng (*song*)  
 l: alveolar lateral approximant, like English l (*like*)  
 l': palatal lateral approximant, like Italian gli (*figlio* 'son')  
 r: alveolar trill, like Italian r (*terra* 'earth')

The vowel phonemes of Mari are – again given in Finno-Ugric Transcription, with IPA values in parentheses when these differ:

|              | Front     |         | Central   |         | Back      |         |
|--------------|-----------|---------|-----------|---------|-----------|---------|
|              | Unrounded | Rounded | Unrounded | Rounded | Unrounded | Rounded |
| <b>Close</b> | i         | ü (y)   |           |         |           | u       |
| <b>Mid</b>   | e         | ö (ø)   | ê (ɤ)     |         |           | o       |
| <b>Open</b>  |           |         |           |         | a (ɑ)     |         |

Note that the value of vowel sounds can differ in Russian loan words. Also note that Mari does not have any diphthongs – when two vowels follow one another, a syllable boundary can be assumed between them (e.g., *myam* /mu|am/ 'I find', *may* /ta|u/ 'thank you'). Also note that Mari does not distinguish between long and short vowels.

The definitions and approximate values of the vowel phonemes are:

- i: close unrounded front vowel, like i in German or Latin, or English ea in *easy*  
 u: close rounded back vowel, like u in German or Latin, or English oo in *moon*  
 ü: close rounded front vowel, like German ü (*müde* 'tired') or French u (*tu* 'you')  
 a: open unrounded back vowel, like a in German or Latin, or English a in *father*  
 o: mid rounded back vowel, like o in German or Latin, or English o in *more*  
 e: mid unrounded front vowel, like e in German or Latin, or English e in *end*  
 ö: mid rounded front vowel, like German ö (*möglich* 'possible') or French eu (*peur* 'fear')  
 ê: mid unrounded central vowel, reduced vowel similarly to the English reduced vowel that is denoted in different ways (*alone, lemon, heaven*).

### 1.5.2. Notes on individual phonemes

/e/, /o/, /ö/: When these sounds occur in the final position, they are generally unstressed (as regards exceptions, see below in 1.5.6 – page 31). When unstressed in the final position, they are reduced in pronunciation. The extent of this reduction, ranging from very slight to very strong, is subject to variation in spoken Mari.

/ê/: This reduced vowel is rather labile. Its realization is subject to great variation in spoken Mari and seemingly appears and disappears at times. This variation can also be observed when comparing literary texts from different eras, as different orthographic norms have treated this vowel sound differently. On many occasions where the sound does not appear in the standard language (e.g., */mlande/* 'land', */sravoč/* 'key'), an */ê/* does appear in speech for many speakers (*/mêlande/*, */sêravoč/*). On the other hand, in many occasions where */ê/* is present in the standard language (e.g., */čodêra/* 'forest', */kajêše/* 'going'), it is not realized by many speakers (*/čodra/* 'forest', */kajše/* 'going').

/f/, /x/, /c/: These sounds predominantly occur in Russian loan words.

**Voiced fricatives:** Historically, Mari had three voiced fricative phonemes: /β/, /ɣ/ and /δ/. These had two realizations each, depending on their environment: they were generally realized as fricatives [β], [ɣ], and [δ], but after homorganic nasals (i.e., sharing a place of articulation) /m/, /ŋ/, and /n/, they would be realized as voiced stops [b], [g], and [d]:

| Sound | Example            | Nasal + ...      | Example                 |
|-------|--------------------|------------------|-------------------------|
| /β/   | <i>βer</i> 'place' | /m/ + /β/ → [mb] | <i>šūmbel</i> 'darling' |
| /ɣ/   | <i>kuɣu</i> 'big'  | /ŋ/ + /ɣ/ → [ng] | <i>teŋge</i> 'ruble'    |
| /δ/   | <i>tiδe</i> 'this' | /n/ + /δ/ → [nd] | <i>mlande</i> 'land'    |

The historical pronunciation of these sounds is encountered only rarely today: [β] has generally been replaced by [v]; /b/ is perceived as an independent phoneme; the sounds [ɣ] and [δ] are mainly realized as [g] and [d] in all positions.

### 1.5.3. Phonotactic restrictions

As in any language, there are restrictions to which combinations of sounds are permissible in Mari. This section will only outline some of the most fundamental ones. Note that some of these restrictions might not apply to Russian loanwords. While older Russian loan words might be adapted to satisfy Mari pronunciation rules; this is not necessarily the case for younger loan words.

- The sounds /b/, /g/, /d/, /ʒ/, /z/, and /ŋ/ generally do not occur in word-initial position. In cases where, outside of Russian loanwords, the graphemes ←r→ and ←d→ occur in the first position, this is due to peculiarities in Mari orthography discussed below in 1.5.7 – page 34. As regards the word /ʒap/ 'time', this word is assumed to have lost a vowel in the initial position (the form /iʒap/ can be encountered in dialects).
- The sounds /v/, /b/, /g/, and /d/ do not occur in word-final position.

As regards consonant clusters:

- Consonant clusters do not generally occur in word-initial position. In the few cases where they do (e.g., /rveze/ 'young man', /ške/ 'self; own', /preze/ 'calf', /sravoč/ 'key', /mlande/ 'land'), the recent loss of a vowel can be assumed; dialectal forms can still be found including these (/ə̌rveze/, /ə̌ške/, /pə̌reze/, /sʉ̌ravoč/, /mə̌lande/).
- There are restrictions as regards consonant clusters word-internally: some clusters occur within a stem (e.g., /rv/, as in /türvö/ 'lip'), others arise only as a result of suffixation and compounding (e.g., /nv/, as in the compound /punvuj/ 'dandelion' ← /pun/ 'hair, fluff' + /vuj/ 'head'), and many conceivable consonant combinations do not occur at all (e.g., \*/nt/).
- Only select consonant clusters occur syllable-finally: /lt/, /št/, /kš/, /pš/, /rš/, /rt/, /ps/, /rž/, /rl/.
- Geminate (i.e., long) consonants only occur as a result of suffixation and compounding (e.g., /nə̌lle/ 'forty' ← /nə̌l/ 'four' + /lu/ 'ten').

One practical implication of the rules detailed above is that some consonant clusters that are valid word-internally (/nč/, /kt/, /šk/, /čk/) are simplified when they occur syllable-finally: /nč/ → /č/, /kt/ → /k/, /šk/ → /š/, /čk/ → /č/. This occurs for example in the case of the imperative forms (2<sup>nd</sup> person singular and plural) of first-conjugation verbs containing these clusters in their verbal stem, e.g., *lektaš* 'to leave' (verbal stem *lekt-*) → *lek!* ~ *leksa!* 'leave!'. Simplification rules of this sort do not exist for other consonant clusters. This topic will be revisited in 7.0.2 – page 196.

As will be discussed in 7.0.2 – page 196 – the verbal stem (which generally serves as the imperative) of a verb can be derived from the infinitive by removing the ending /-aš/ in the case of first-conjugation verbs, and by removing the ending /-aš/ and adding a vowel-harmonic /-e/, /-o/, or /-ö/ in the case of second-conjugation verbs. As a result, language learners can know when



for example seeing the infinitive /urgaš/ 'to sew' that this is a second-conjugation verb: the consonant combination /rg/ cannot occur in final position; hence, the verbal stem cannot be \*/urg-/ (with an imperative \*/urg/). The verbal stem must be /urgo-/ (with an imperative /urgo/), a verbal stem of the second conjugation. Note that this method does not work in the case of the consonant clusters subject to simplification detailed above.

1.1. Which of these infinitives must belong to verbs of the second conjugation, due to phonotactic restrictions?

1. *jamdâlaltaš* 'to prepare oneself'
2. *sovaš* 'to slap'
3. *jüaš* 'to drink'
4. *puštaš* 'to kill'
5. *lektaš* 'to leave'
6. *mondaš* 'to forget'
7. *kâlmaš* 'to freeze up'
8. *tolaš* 'to come'
9. *šortaš* 'to cry'
10. *čarnaš* 'to cease'

### 1.5.4. The contemporary Mari alphabet

The Mari alphabet is based on the Cyrillic alphabet in its Russian variant and consists of 36 letters. Three of these do not occur in the Russian alphabet (ö, ѳ, Һ) and several letters are primarily used in writing Russian loan words (ё, ф, х, ы, у). The system of palatalization in Mari differs greatly from that in Russian and will be discussed separately below. Capitalization generally follows the same rules in Mari as it does in English: The first word of a sentence, and proper names, are capitalized. The letters Һ, ѳ and ь do not occur in word-initial position, and thus only occur in their upper-case forms in all-caps texts.

| Letter | Phonetic value                            |
|--------|---|
| А а    | /a/                                       |
| Б б    | /b/                                       |
| В в    | /v/                                       |
| Г г    | /g/                                       |
| Д д    | /d/                                       |
| Е е    | /e/; /je/ (see below in 1.5.5 – page 26)  |
| Ё ё    | /o/; /jo/ (see below in 1.5.5 – page 26)  |
| Ж ж    | /ž/                                       |
| З з    | /z/                                       |
| И и    | /i/                                       |
| Й й    | /j/                                       |
| К к    | /k/                                       |
| Л л    | /l/ ~ /l'/ (see below in 1.5.5 – page 26) |
| М м    | /m/                                       |
| Н н    | /n/ ~ /n'/ (see below in 1.5.5 – page 26) |
| (Һ) Һ  | /ɲ/                                       |
| О о    | /o/                                       |
| Ö ö    | /ö/                                       |
| П п    | /p/                                       |
| Р р    | /r/                                       |
| С с    | /s/                                       |
| Т т    | /t/                                       |
| У у    | /u/                                       |
| ӱ ӱ    | /ü/                                       |
| Ф ф    | /f/                                       |
| Х х    | /x/                                       |
| Ц ц    | /c/                                       |
| Ч ч    | /č/                                       |
| Ш ш    | /š/                                       |
| Щ щ    | /š'/                                      |
| (Ъ) Ъ  | hard sign (see below in 1.5.5 – page 26)  |
| Ы ы    | /ə/ (in Russian loans /i/ – IPA /i/)      |
| (Ь) Ь  | soft sign (see below in 1.5.5 – page 26)  |
| Э э    | /e/ (see below in 1.5.5 – page 26)        |
| Ю ю    | /u/; /ju/ (see below in 1.5.5 – page 26)  |
| Я я    | /a/; /ja/ (see below in 1.5.5 – page 26)  |

### 1.5.5. Palatalization in Russian, palatalness in Mari

The relationship between the graphemes ←э→ and ←е→, ←а→ and ←я→, and ←у→ and ←ю→ – pairs of graphemes indicating the same vowel value respectively (/e/, /a/, /u/) – and the function

of the soft sign ←Ь→ and ←ъ→, can only be appreciated with an understanding of the Russian Cyrillic alphabet, on which the Mari alphabet is based. Specifically, one must understand how the Russian orthography handles palatalization, a ubiquitous phenomenon in Russian. In the interest of comprehensibility, this chapter will first introduce the phenomenon of palatalization as it is found in Russian, and as it is handled by the Russian orthography, and will then introduce how this orthography was adapted for Mari. All Russian words used for illustrative purposes here are also used as loanwords in Mari. Some finer aspects of Russian pronunciation not directly relevant to Mari orthography are not taken into consideration in the transcriptions; more detailed information on the pronunciation of Russian words can easily be found in Russian grammar books or on the Internet.

For most (but not all) consonants, Russian distinguishes between a non-palatalized (in Russian terminology ‘hard’) and palatalized (in Russian terminology ‘soft’, in scientific publications ‘iotated’) variants: /t/ ~ /tʲ/, /s/ ~ /sʲ/, etc. If a consonant is palatalized or not is often indicated by the vowel sign that follows it.

Russian language has ten vowel symbols that make up five pairs, consisting of one ‘softening’ and one ‘hardening’ vowel symbol each:

|                    |   |   |   |   |   |
|--------------------|---|---|---|---|---|
| <b>‘hardening’</b> | а | э | ы | о | у |
| <b>‘softening’</b> | я | е | и | ё | ю |

Which letter of a pair is used is determined more by the nature of the sound preceding a vowel than by the sound of the vowel itself (though some differences exist here too, especially in the case of *ы* ~ *у*). When the ‘softening’ vowel signs are used after a consonant, this consonant is palatalized. When the ‘hardening’ vowel signs are used after a consonant, the consonant is not palatalized, e.g.: *магазин* /*maɡaʒin*/ ‘shop’ vs. *мятеж* /*ˈmatʲeʒ*/ ‘mutiny’.

When the ‘softening’ vowel signs are used in other positions – at the beginning of a word, after the soft sign *ь* and hard sign *ъ* (see below), after a second vowel – they signify that the sound /j/ precedes the vowel sound. The following table illustrates these oppositions on the example of Russian loan words in Mari. The relevant parts of the words given as examples are underlined. In the following tables, the symbol # indicates a word boundary, an uppercase V a vowel (or letter representing a vowel) of choice, an uppercase C a consonant (or letter representing a consonant) of choice and C’ a palatalized consonant of choice. (If C is contrasted with C’, C can be understood to indicate a non-palatalized consonant.) In this nomenclature, #\_ is used to indicate cases in which the letter in question occurs in the initial position, C\_ when it occurs after a consonant, etc.

| 'hardening'  | 'softening'             | #_  | Ь_; Ь_   | V_  | C_  |
|--------------|-------------------------|---|--|---|---|
| <b>а /a/</b> |                         | <u>а</u> втобус<br>/avtobus/<br>'bus'           | -  | ради <u>а</u> тор<br>/rad'iator/<br>'radiator'    | та <u>к</u> си<br>/taksi/<br>'taxi'           |
|              | <b>я /ja/; /'a/</b>     | <u>я</u> кут<br>/jakut/<br>'Yakut'              | и <u>таль</u> ян<br>/ital'jan/<br>'Italian'              | ба <u>я</u> н<br>/bajan/<br>'button<br>accordion' | ля <u>п</u> сус<br>/l'apsus/<br>'blunder'     |
| <b>э /e/</b> |                         | <u>э</u> пос<br>/epos/<br>'epos'                | -  | по <u>э</u> зий<br>/po'ežij/<br>'poetry'          | <u>мэ</u> м<br>/mem/<br>'mam'                 |
|              | <b>е /je/; /'e/</b>     | <u>е</u> герь<br>/jegeř/<br>'hunter'            | об <u>ъ</u> ект<br>/objekt/<br>'object'                  | по <u>е</u> зд<br>/pojezd/<br>'train'             | не <u>й</u> лон<br>/nejlon/<br>'nylon'        |
| <b>ы /i/</b> |                         | -   | -  | -   | науч <u>н</u> ый<br>/naučnij/<br>'scientific' |
|              | <b>и /i/; /'i/</b>      | ин <u>т</u> ерес<br>/int'eřes/<br>'interest'    | -  | га <u>и</u> тян<br>/gait'an/<br>'Haitian'         | ли <u>т</u> р<br>/litr/<br>'liter'            |
| <b>о /o/</b> |                         | <u>о</u> азис<br>/oazis/<br>'oasis'             | поч <u>таль</u> он<br>/počtal'on/<br>'letter<br>carrier' | ра <u>д</u> ио<br>/rad'io/<br>'radio'             | Мо <u>р</u> мон<br>/Mormon/<br>'Mormon'       |
|              | <b>ё /jo/; /'o/</b>     | <u>ё</u> лко<br>/jolko/<br>'new year's<br>tree' | ко <u>п</u> ьё<br>/kopjo/<br>'lance'                     | за <u>ё</u> м<br>/zajom/<br>'loan'                | самол <u>ё</u> т<br>/samol'ot/<br>'airplane'  |
| <b>у /u/</b> |                         | ун <u>и</u> таз<br>/unitaz/<br>'toilet bowl'    | -  | аудио<br>/aud'io/<br>'audio'                      | му <u>с</u> кул<br>/muskul/<br>'muscle'       |
|              | <b>ю /ju/;<br/>/'u/</b> | ю <u>м</u> ор<br>/jumor/<br>'humor'             | нью <u>т</u> он<br>/njuton/<br>'newton'                  | у <u>ю</u> т<br>/ujut/<br>'comfort'               | му <u>з</u> икл<br>/m'uzikl/<br>'musical'     |

When palatalization cannot be marked by using the 'softening' vowel signs after a consonant – i.e., when said consonant is at the end of a word, followed by a second consonant, or followed by an *o* in some cases (the usage of *ě* in Russian is restricted) – the soft sign *ь* is used.

When a soft or hard sign precedes the 'softening' vowel signs *я*, *е*, *ё*, and *ю*, the vowel sound is preceded by the sound /j/. In these cases, the soft and hard signs, not the following vowel sign, determine the character of the preceding consonant. This is to say that the soft and hard sign indicate a 'break' in the word of sorts: The vowel sign that follows it is pronounced as it would be in word-initial position; the consonant that precedes it is not influenced in its pronunciation by the following vowel sign.

| 'hardening' | 'softening' | _#                             | C_C                      | _/j/                                 | _o   |
|-------------|-------------|--------------------------------|--------------------------|--------------------------------------|--|
| Ь           |             | -                              | -                        | адъютант<br>/adjutant/<br>'adjutant' | -  |
|             | Ь           | кабелѣ<br>/kab'el'/<br>'cable' | алѣт<br>/al't/<br>'alto' | италѣян<br>/ital'jan/<br>'Italian'   | почталѣон<br>/počtal'on/<br>'letter carrier' |

To summarize:

|              | Example | Transcription | Translation    |
|--------------|---------|---------------|----------------|
| C + V        | пост    | /post/        | position, post |
| C' + V       | утюг    | /ut'ug/       | flatiron       |
| C + /j/ + V  | адѣктив | /adjekt'iv/   | adjective      |
| C' + /j/ + V | статѣя  | /stat'ja/     | article        |

As can be seen, palatalization is generally predictable in Russian orthography.

1.2. Write the following Russian words used in Mari, given here in transcription, in Cyrillic.

1. *magnat* 'magnate'
2. *t'enor* 'tenor'
3. *trotuar* 'sidewalk'
4. *makijaž* 'make-up'
5. *d'jakon* 'deacon'
6. *t'el'efon* 'telephone'
7. *ekvator* 'equator'
8. *ijuń* 'June'
9. *jeŋrejtor* 'corporal'
10. *sjezd* 'congress'

Marking of palatalness and /j/ in Mari: Mari only has a distinction as regards palatalness in two cases: /n/ ~ /ń/, /l/ ~ /l'/. The manner in which the Russian system was adopted in Mari to indicate a palatal pronunciation of these consonants differs from vowel to vowel. Some rules that apply in Russian do not apply in Mari: while in Russian *u* is used after palatalized consonants and *ы* after non-palatalized consonants, the Mari vowel signs *u* and *ы* can both occur after palatal and non-palatal consonants, and should be considered fully independent of one another.

For /a/ (*a* ~ *я*) and /u/ (*y* ~ *ю*), the system was taken over consistently: the usage of the 'softening' vowel sign implies palatal pronunciation of the preceding consonant. In all other positions (word-initially, after soft signs and hard signs, after vowels), the vowel signs are used as they are in Russian.

| 'hardening'  | 'softening'         | #_                          | Ь_; Ъ_                               | V_                               | C_                                     |
|--------------|---------------------|-----------------------------|--------------------------------------|----------------------------------|--|
| <b>a /a/</b> |                     | а́ча<br>/ač̑a/<br>'father'  | -                                    | муа́ш<br>/muɑ́ʃ/<br>'to find'    | ту́мна<br>/tum̑na/<br>'owl'            |
|              | <b>я /ja/; /'a/</b> | я́нда<br>/janda/<br>'glass' | вў́дъя́жга<br>/vüdjɑ́ʒga/<br>'reed'  | ка́яш<br>/kajɑ́ʃ/<br>'to go'     | па́рня<br>/paȓña/<br>'finger'         |
| <b>y /u/</b> |                     | у́ш<br>/uʃ/<br>'mind'       | -                                    | тау́<br>/tau/<br>'thank you'     | лу́<br>/lu/<br>'ten'                   |
|              | <b>ю /ju/; /'u/</b> | Ю́л<br>/lul/<br>'Volga'     | йы́ръю́ж<br>/jêrjuʒ/<br>'atmosphere' | омы́ю<br>/omêju/<br>'drowsiness' | лю́бык<br>/l'uvêk/<br>'messy (person)' |

In the case of /e/, the vowel signs э and е behave as their Russian counterparts when they do not follow consonant signs. If, however, the vowel /e/ follows a consonant, only the grapheme *e* is used. As Mari only differentiates between a palatal and non-palatal pronunciation in the case of /n/ ~ /ń/ and /l/ ~ /l'/, this exclusive usage of *e* after consonants is generally unambiguous (e.g., *те́нге* /teŋge/ 'ruble', as /t/ and /g/ cannot be palatalized in Mari). Ambiguity does however occur in the case of л and н: *не* /ńe/ ~ /ne/, *ле* /l'e/ ~ /le/. This means that in these cases the correct pronunciation cannot be derived from the orthography. In the introduction to this grammar, orthographically invisible palatal pronunciation is indicated by an accent mark: *н'* /ń'/, *л'* /l'/. This is not a feature of Mari orthography and will not be included in subsequent chapters of this book.

|                              | #_                       | Ь_; Ъ_                        | V_                              | C_   |
|------------------------------|--------------------------|-------------------------------|---------------------------------|--|
| <b>э /e/</b>                 | э́р<br>/er/<br>'morning' | -                             | шуэ́м<br>/šuem/<br>'I throw'    | -  |
| <b>е /je/;<br/>/e/; /'e/</b> | е́р<br>/jer/<br>'lake'   | по́ръе́н<br>/pörjêŋ/<br>'man' | шуе́м<br>/šujem/<br>'I stretch' | не́де<br>/nele/<br>'difficult'<br><br>не́де<br>/nel'e/<br>'s/he swallowed' |

The vowel /i/ is consistently realized by the letter *u*. After consonants, the same rules apply as did in the case of /e/: the usage of *u* does not generally cause ambiguity, but palatal pronunciation of a preceding н and л is not indicated in orthography: *ни* /ńi/ ~ /ni/, *ли* /l'i/ ~ /li/.

|                    | #_                        | Ь_; Ъ_ | V_ | C_   |
|--------------------|---------------------------|--------|----|--|
| <b>и /i/; /'i/</b> | и́ме<br>/ime/<br>'needle' | -      | -  | ни́й<br>/nij/<br>'bast'<br><br>ни́гö<br>/ńigö/<br>'nobody' |

The other vowel sounds – /o/, /ö/, /ü/, /ê/ – are only represented by one vowel sign each in Mari (o ö ü ê). Palatal pronunciation of н and л preceding these is marked with the soft sign; the sound /j/ preceding these vowels is marked with the letter *й*.

|              | #_                                    | V_   | C_                               | /j/_                                    | /ń/_ /l'/_   |
|--------------|---------------------------------------|--|----------------------------------|---|--|
| <b>ы</b> /ə/ | ыр<br>/əɾ/<br>'kopeck'                | ш <u>у</u> ым<br>/ʃuəm/<br>'I reached'             | ш <u>ы</u> м<br>/ʃəm/<br>'seven' | й <u>ы</u> л<br>/jəl/<br>'earthworm'    | вы <u>н</u> ь <u>ы</u> к<br>/vəńə́k/<br>'broom'            |
| <b>о</b> /o/ | о <u>л</u> ык<br>/olək/<br>'meadow'   | ш <u>к</u> е <u>о</u> я<br>/ʃkeoja/<br>'willfully' | к <u>о</u> л<br>/kol/<br>'fish'  | й <u>о</u> л<br>/jol/<br>'foot, leg'    | ш <u>у</u> г <u>ы</u> н <u>ь</u> о<br>/ʃugəńo/<br>'cudgel' |
| <b>ö</b> /ö/ | ö <u>р</u> ыш<br>/örəʃ/<br>'mustache' | -  | к <u>ö</u><br>/kō/<br>'who'      | й <u>ö</u> ра<br>/jōra/<br>'good, fine' | ш <u>ö</u> рт <u>н</u> ь <u>ö</u><br>/sörtńō/<br>'gold'    |
| <b>ÿ</b> /ü/ | ÿй<br>/ÿj/<br>'butter'                | паш <u>а</u> ÿзгар<br>/pašaÿzgar/<br>'tool'        | м <u>ÿ</u> й<br>/mÿj/<br>'honey' | й <u>ÿ</u> р<br>/jÿr/<br>'rain'         | -  |

If no vowel follows a palatal consonant, the soft sign is used as well, e.g.: *сугынь* /sugəń/ 'blessing', *когыньна* /kogəńna/ 'the two of us'.

Note that the different manner in which palatalization, or the sound /j/, is marked in Mari depending on what vowel sound – if any – follows causes changes in orthography when one vowel is replaced by another in declination, conjugation or derivation, or when a vowel is deleted or added. These orthographic forms are, however, consistent with Mari orthography; it is especially evident in transcription that no irregularities actually occur here:

|                           |                                 |
|---------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <i>аваÿ</i> /avaj/ 'mom': | <i>аваÿын</i> /avajə́n/ 'mom's' |
| <i>аваем</i>              | /avajem/ 'my mom'               |
| <i>аваят</i>              | /avajət/ 'also mom'             |

### 1.3. Write the following words, given here in transcription, in Cyrillic.

1. *maneš* 's/he says'
2. *mańe* 's/he said'
3. *mańəm* 'I said'
4. *vij* 'power'
5. *vijan* 'powerful'
6. *vijem* 'my power'
7. *puem* 'I give'
8. *ješ* 'family'
9. *en* 'the most'
10. *orjeŋ* 'fiancée'

### 1.5.6. Word stress

Stress in Mari is not bound to a certain syllable, but as a general rule falls on the last full vowel of the word. Full vowels are all vowels apart from a) the vowel *ы* /ə/ and b) unstressed *e*, *o*, and *ö* in word-final position. (These vowels are almost always unstressed in the final position. Certain words and suffixes exist that contain stressed variants of these vowels in the final position, these will be discussed as they occur.) In word-final position unstressed *e*, *o*, and *ö* are slightly reduced in pronunciation and alternate with *ы* when a suffix is added, e.g., *мыдо* /tudo/ 'he/she/it' – *мудым* /tudəm/ 'him/her/it (accusative)'. Stress will be indicated by bolding in the rest of this introduction, but will not be indicated in later sections.

Some examples in which the stress follows regular patterns:

a) The last vowel in the word is a full vowel:

|                      |                          |                            |
|----------------------|--------------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>ышташ</i> 'to do' | <i>уна</i> 'guest'       | <i>чувааш</i> 'Chuvash'    |
| <i>увер</i> 'notice' | <i>күтү</i> 'herd'       | <i>кузу</i> 'big'          |
| <i>түрпүй</i> 'lark' | <i>мотор</i> 'beautiful' | <i>пеледеш</i> 'it blooms' |

b) The last vowel in a word is *ы* and the stress falls on an earlier syllable:

|                          |                          |                             |
|--------------------------|--------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <i>чӧгым</i> 'hammer'    | <i>түвыр</i> 'shirt'     | <i>пошкырм</i> 'Bashkir'    |
| <i>толым</i> 'they come' | <i>сугынь</i> 'blessing' | <i>кугым</i> 'size, volume' |
| <i>олым</i> 'straw'      | <i>немыч</i> 'German'    | <i>пеледым</i> 'they bloom' |

c) The word has an unstressed *-e/-o/-ö* in the final position, the stress falls on an earlier syllable:

|                       |                                |                              |
|-----------------------|--------------------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>теле</i> 'winter'  | <i>имне</i> 'horse'            | <i>чытыдыме</i> 'unbearable' |
| <i>шудо</i> 'grass'   | <i>шольо</i> 'younger brother' | <i>туныктышо</i> 'teacher'   |
| <i>шӱдӧ</i> 'hundred' | <i>шӱльӧ</i> 'oats'            | <i>шӱдымшӧ</i> 'hundredth'   |

If a word contains only reduced vowels (only *ы*, or *ы* with *e*, *o*, or *ö* in word-final position), stress falls on the first syllable.

|                                 |                             |                                |
|---------------------------------|-----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>йылме</i> 'tongue; language' | <i>йылмыдыме</i> 'mute'     | <i>пызырыктыш</i> 'oppression' |
| <i>йыжын</i> 'joint'            | <i>тыгыде</i> 'small, fine' | <i>ыльым</i> 'I was'           |
| <i>чыве</i> 'chicken'           | <i>лывыжге</i> 'withered'   | <i>ынде</i> 'now'              |

#### 1.4. Mark the stress in the following words.

1. *шӧрын* 'slantwise'
2. *пече* 'fence'
3. *коча* 'grandfather'
4. *тӱналтыш* 'beginning'
5. *тулартыше* 'matchmaker'
6. *торешлык* 'woof, weft (in textile working)'
7. *шошо* 'spring'
8. *ынже* 's/he should not'
9. *ваштапеш* 'towards; against'
10. *йӧсӧ* 'difficult'

Deviations from the regular stress patterns established above do occur:

a) Some lexical items unpredictably contain a stressed *e*, and more rarely an *o* or *ö*, in word-final position:

|                            |                      |                         |
|----------------------------|----------------------|-------------------------|
| <i>шерге</i> 'comb'        | <i>посто</i> 'cloth' | <i>вашке</i> 'quickly'  |
| <i>нӧркӧ</i> 'brace drill' | <i>тенге</i> 'ruble' | <i>эше</i> 'yet, still' |

In the case of some words, alternative stress patterns are encountered: *уке* ~ *уке* 'no; is not', *марте* ~ *марте* 'until'.

b) A number of suffixes ending in *-e* are always stressed:

- The comitative case ending *-ge* (see 2.4.9 – page 94): *еш* 'family' → *ешге* 'with the family'
- The negative gerund ending *-de* (see 7.2.8 – page 270): *нале-* 'to know' → *налыде* 'without knowing'
- The adverbial suffix *-e* 'into ... parts' (see 4.7 – page 120): *кокым* 'two' → *кокыме* 'in two'

c) A number of suffixes containing full vowels are not stressed:

- The plural ending *-влак* (see 2.1.2.1 – page 58), when it occurs on its own: *ӱдыр* 'girl' → *ӱдыр-влак* 'girls' (but *ӱдыр-влакын* 'of the girls').



- The ending *-за* ~ *-са* of the imperative 2PL (see 7.1.2 – page 233): *мол* ‘come’ → *молза* ‘come!’
- The comparative case suffix *-ла* (see 2.4.8 – page 91): *кайык* ‘bird’ → *кайыкла* ‘like a bird’
- The clitics *-я* and *-ян* (see 9.2 – page 333): *ыште-я* ~ *ыште-ян* ‘oh do (it)’

d) A number of suffixes containing full vowels are subject to alternation and are sometimes stressed and sometimes not:

- The dative case suffix *-лан* (see 2.4.4 – page 78): *йолташ* ‘friend’ → *йолташлан* ~ *йолташлан* ‘to the friend’
- The endings of the first and second person plural in the simple past tense I (see 7.1.1.2 – page 208): *возо-* ‘to write’ → *возышна* ~ *возышна* ‘we wrote’, *возышда* ~ *возышда* ‘you wrote’, *луд-* ‘to read’ → *лудна* ~ *лудна* ‘we read’, *лудда* ~ *лудда* ‘you read’
- The endings of the first and second person plural in the simple past tense II (see 7.1.1.3 – page 215) in the case of second-conjugation verbs: *ыште-* ‘to do’ → *ыштенна* ~ *ыштенна* ‘we did’, *ыштенда* ~ *ыштенда* ‘you did’
- Possessive suffixes of the first and second person, singular and plural (see 2.2.1.3 – page 63): *ыштымекем* ~ *ыштымекем* ‘after I did (it)’, *ыштымекет* ~ *ыштымекет* ‘after you did (it)’, *ыштымекына* ~ *ыштымекына* ‘after we did (it)’, *ыштымекыда* ~ *ыштымекыда* ‘after you did (it)’, *йолыштына* ~ *йолыштына* ‘on our feet’, etc.
- The clitic *-ак* (see 9.1.2 – page 330): *неш* ‘very’ → *нешак* ~ *нешак*

e) Numerous (but not all, see below in 1.5.9 – page 38) Russian loanwords maintain Russian word stress.

|                                    |                          |                          |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>жалобо</i> ‘complaint’          | <i>трактор</i> ‘tractor’ | <i>роза</i> ‘rose’       |
| <i>редакций</i> ‘editorial office’ | <i>лётчик</i> ‘pilot’    | <i>Австрий</i> ‘Austria’ |
| <i>предприятий</i> ‘enterprise’    | <i>глобус</i> ‘globe’    | <i>выбор</i> ‘option’    |

They do so even when suffixes that generally are stressed are attached to them: *трактором* ‘my tractor’.

f) In compounds, the stress generally falls on the second word, even if it does not contain any full vowels.

|                             |                          |                                 |
|-----------------------------|--------------------------|---------------------------------|
| <i>шагат</i> ‘clock, watch’ | + <i>йылме</i> ‘tongue’  | = <i>шагатйылме</i> ‘pendulum’  |
| <i>лат-</i> ‘-teen’         | + <i>шымше</i> ‘seventh’ | = <i>латшымше</i> ‘seventeenth’ |

This does not pertain to compounds orthographically realized with a hyphen. Here, both elements retain their stress:

|                     |                       |                            |
|---------------------|-----------------------|----------------------------|
| <i>ача</i> ‘father’ | + <i>ава</i> ‘mother’ | = <i>ача-ава</i> ‘parents’ |
|---------------------|-----------------------|----------------------------|

Stress units that exceed orthographic boundaries: In many cases, elements separated orthographically (through a space – e.g., *йолташ дене* ‘with a friend’ – or through a hyphen – e.g., *йолташ-влак* ‘friends’) form a unit as regards stress, the stress only falls on one of the two words. Some situations in which this happens:

- Verbal negation (see 7.3.1 – page 278) – the negative verb is stressed and the connegative is not: *ом мол* ‘I don’t come’, *ум мол* ‘don’t come’, etc.
- The particle *ыле* in compound past tenses (see 9.3 – page 333) is not stressed: *ыштем ыле* ‘I used to do’, *ом ыште ыле* ‘I didn’t use to do’, etc.
- In auxiliary constructions (see 7.3.5 – page 283), the gerund is not stressed: *лудын кайышым* ‘I got scared’.
- Postpositions (see 6.1 – page 164) with the vowels *о*, *а*, and *и* are generally stressed while others are not: *чодыра гоч* ‘through the forest’, but *чодыра деке* ‘to the forest’.

- The plural suffix *-влак* (see 2.1.2.1 – page 58) is not stressed, when it occurs on its own: *йолташ-влак* ‘friends’. When further suffixes are attached to it, it has an independent stress from its host word: *йолташ-влакна* ‘our friends’.
- Prefixes used to form indefinite pronouns (see 5.7 – page 152), such as *ала-*, *иктаж-*, *керек-*, and *кеч-* are not stressed: *ала-кӧ* ‘someone’.
- When the suffix *-зынат* is attached to interrogative pronouns to form indefinite pronouns, the pronominal stem is not stressed: *кӧ-зынат* ‘someone’.
- A number of postposed particles (see 9.5 – page 337) are not stressed: *толеш дыр* ‘s/he is probably coming’, *толеш мо?* ‘is s/he coming?’

### 1.5.7. Consonant alternation

Numerous processes of consonant alternation occur in Mari. While some of these are orthographically marked, others are not.

Obstruents (stops and fricatives) in the final position: Orthographically unmarked alternation affects *ð* in the syllable-final position. In Russian loan words, voiced obstruents are generally subject to terminal devoicing.

In Mari, *ð* is pronounced /d/ when it occurs between vowels. When it occurs in the syllable-final position – i.e., it is followed by a consonant and also when it is the last letter of the word, it is pronounced /t/, but is still written *ð*.

*куð* /kit/ ‘hand’ ~ *куðлан* /kitlan/ ‘to the hand’ ~ *куðем* /kidem/ ‘my hand’  
*лӱð!* /lüt/ ‘fear!’ ~ *лӱðшӧ* /lütšö/ ‘afraid’ ~ *лӱðеш* /lüdeš/ ‘s/he is afraid’

Compare this with *m*, which is always pronounced as /t/ also between vowels:

*кут* /kit/ ‘whale’ ~ *кутлан* /kitlan/ ‘to the whale’ ~ *кутем* /kitem/ ‘my whale’  
*кошт!* /košt/ ‘go!’ ~ *коштшо* /koštšo/ ‘going’ ~ *коштеш* /košteš/ ‘s/he goes’

As regards Russian loan words, the voiced consonants *б*, *в*, *з*, and *ð* (the first three of which do not occur in the final position in Mari words) are, in accordance with Russian pronunciation rules, devoiced in word-final position as well as in the syllable-final position (when followed by a consonant):

*куб* /kup/ ‘cube’ → *кублан* /kuplan/ ‘to the cube’, *кубем* /kubem/ ‘my cube’  
*лев* /l’ef/ ‘lion’ → *левлан* /l’eflan/ ‘to the lion’, *левем* /l’eyem/ ‘my lion’  
*флаг* /flak/ ‘flag’ → *флаглан* /flaklan/ ‘to the flag’, *флагем* /flagem/ ‘my flag’  
*код* /kot/ ‘code’ → *кодлан* /kotlan/ ‘to the code’, *кодем* /kodem/ ‘my code’

#### 1.5. Transcribe the following word forms.

1. *куд* ‘six (short form)’
2. *кудыт* ‘six (long form)’
3. *кудло* ‘sixty’
4. *пеледше* ‘blooming’
5. *вӱдлан* ‘for water’
6. *крабет* ‘your crab’
7. *фаготем* ‘my bassoon’
8. *швед* ‘Sweden’
9. *утюгла* ‘like a flatiron’
10. *гидна* ‘our tourist guide’

Alternation with *з*: In the following words, intervocalic /z/ alternates with /č/ or /t/ in syllable-final position – i.e., word-finally or before consonants). This alternation is orthographically marked:

*возаш* /vozaʃ/ 'to lie down' ~ *воч* /voč/ 'lie down!' ~ *вочна* /vočna/ 'we lay down'  
*визыт* /vizât/ 'five (long form)' ~ *вич* /vič/ 'five (short form)' ~ *вумле* /vitle/ 'fifty'.

Note that this is not a productive process. For example, *ч* does not alternate with *з* in nominal declension:

*ноч* /poč/ 'tail' → *ночлан* /počlan/ 'to the tail', *ночеш* /počeš/ 'into the tail'

Orthographically unmarked alternation /d/ ~ /t/, /g/ ~ /k/: A number of suffixes use the letter *ð* or *z* as their first letter in writing, e.g., the ending of the negative gerund *-ðe* and the comitative case suffix *-ze*. While the letter representing the voiced variant (*ð*, *z*) is consistently used in orthography, its voiceless counterpart is pronounced after obstruent consonants (stops, fricatives, sibilants, affricates): *пале-* /pale-/ 'to know' → *палыðe* /palâðe/ 'without knowing', but *нушм-* /pušt-/ 'to kill' → *нушмðe* /puštðe/ 'without killing'; *вуй-ноч* /vuj-poč/ 'head and tail' → *вуйðe-ночðe* /vujge-počðe/ 'completely (lit. with head and tail)'.

1.6. Transcribe the following derived words, or word forms.

1. *совлаге* 'also the spoons'
2. *луйде* 'without being'
3. *ешге* 'with the (whole) family'
4. *лўмдаш* 'to name'
5. *лўддымө* 'fearless'

This alternation occurs over orthographic word boundaries: numerous postpositions, conjunctions, and particles that in orthography start with a *z* or *ð* (e.g., *зыч(ын)* 'from, out', *ðене* 'with', *зын* 'if', *да* 'and', *зына* 'only, just', *дыр* 'perhaps, it seems') in pronunciation are subject to this variation: *ола зыч* /ola gâč/ 'from town', but *мут зыч* /mut kâč/ 'from a word'; *Елу да Ануk* /Jelu ða Anuk/ 'Yelu and Anuk', but *Ануk да Елу* /Anuk ða Jelu/ 'Anuk and Yelu'; *мый зына* /tâj gâna/ 'only you', but *мылат зына* /tâlat kâna/ 'only for you'.

1.7. Transcribe the following postpositional phrases into Finno-Ugric Transcription.

1. *мый денем* 'with me'
2. *порт ðеке* 'to the house'
3. *йолташем ðене* 'with my friend'
4. *йоча-влак ðене* 'with the friends'
5. *вўд зыч* 'from the water'

Voiceless stops in compounds: If the first element of a compound (see 11.2 – page 369) ends in a vowel or voiced consonant, *n*, *k*, and *m* in the initial position of the compound's second element often (but not always) become *в*, *з*, and *ð* both in pronunciation and in orthography:

*ни-* 'no-' + *кө* 'who' = *низө* 'nobody'  
*сура* 'bolt, bar' + *ноч* 'tail' = *срагоч* 'key'  
*вуй* 'head' + *торык* 'curd cheese' = *вуйðорык* 'brain'

But:

*лум* 'snow' + *пеледыш* 'flower' = *лумпеледыш* 'snowdrop'

Assimilation: In a number of consonant clusters, REGRESSIVE ASSIMILATION takes place: the first consonant adapts itself to the second, either partially (by voice, by place of articulation) or totally. This is not indicated in orthography:

| Cluster     |              | Example              |                    |                   |
|-------------|--------------|----------------------|--------------------|-------------------|
| Orthography | Assimilation | Orthography          | Transcription      | Translation       |
| жт          | žt → št      | кур <u>ж</u> талаш   | kurš <u>t</u> alaš | to run (freq.)    |
| зт          | zt → st      | те <u>н</u> гызтүслө | teŋəstüslö         | aquamarine        |
| жш          | žš → šš      | во <u>ж</u> шо       | voššö              | his/her/its root  |
| зш          | zš → sš      | кагаз <u>ш</u> е     | kagašše            | his/her/its paper |
| вк          | βk → pk      | сов <u>в</u> калаш   | sop <u>k</u> alaš  | to slap (freq.)   |
| гк          | gk → kk      | пог <u>г</u> калаш   | pok <u>k</u> alaš  | to gather (freq.) |
| нч          | nč → ŋč      | шин <u>ч</u> а       | ši <u>ŋ</u> ča     | eye               |

1.8. The following transcribed Mari words and word forms include orthographically unmarked assimilation. How are these realized in orthography?

1. *âlâštaš* 'to kindle'
2. *lukkalaš* 'to mix (freq.)'
3. *moŋča* 'bathhouse, sauna'
4. *negâšše* 'its foundation'
5. *kümâššö* 'his/her dish'

### 1.5.8. Vowel harmony

Literary Mari cannot be said to have RADICAL VOWEL HARMONY – i.e., vowel harmony within word stems. While certain phonotactic restrictions apply to which vowels occur in the non-first syllable, vowels of the first and subsequent syllables need not agree as regards any of their fundamental parameters (see 1.5.1 – page 22 – for the classification of vowels). However, unstressed word-final *-E* (see 1.5.2 – page 23) does agree with the preceding full vowel according to (certain) rules generally applying to suffix vowels; see below.

Mari does have SUFFIXAL VOWEL HARMONY: a number of suffixes have different (unstressed and reduced) suffix vowels depending on the base word they are attached to. The last full vowel (see above in 1.5.6 – page 31) determines the nature of the suffix vowel. If it is an unrounded vowel – *u, e, a* – the suffix vowel will be *-e*. If the final vowel of a stem is unrounded, a further distinction occurs between front vowels and back vowels: after the front rounded vowels *ÿ* and *ö*, the suffix vowel is *-ö*. After the back rounded vowels *y* and *o* the suffix vowel is *-o*. If a word does not contain any full vowels – i.e., if the stressed vowel is *ɨ* – the suffix vowel *-e* is used. Note that in compounds, the final word determines the nature of the suffix vowel: for example, *тулйылме* 'flame' (← *тул* 'fire' + *йылме* 'tongue') demands the suffix vowel *-e*, rather than *-o*.

In summation (excluding alternative orthographic realizations of vowel sounds):

|           | Front             | Back      |
|-----------|-------------------|-----------|
| Unrounded | и, е, а, (ы) → -e |           |
| Rounded   | ÿ, ö → -ö         | y, o → -o |

For example, the ending of the active participle (see 7.2.3 – page 259) *-uE* – an uppercase *-E* in this book will denote a vowel-harmonic vowel:

| Last full vowel in stem |            | Verbal stem               | Active participle                        |
|-------------------------|------------|---------------------------|--|
| Characteristics         | Vowel      |                           |  |
| Unrounded               | <i>u</i>   | <i>cume-</i> 'to suffice' | <i>с<u>и</u>тыш<u>е</u></i> 'sufficient' |
|                         | <i>e</i>   | <i>кече-</i> 'to hang'    | <i>к<u>е</u>чыш<u>е</u></i> 'hanging'    |
|                         | <i>a</i>   | <i>нале-</i> 'to know'    | <i>н<u>а</u>лыш<u>е</u></i> 'knowing'    |
|                         | <i>(ы)</i> | <i>ныте-</i> 'to end'     | <i>н<u>ы</u>тыш<u>е</u></i> 'ending'     |
| Rounded, front          | <i>ÿ</i>   | <i>тÿлө-</i> 'to pay'     | <i>тÿлыш<u>ө</u></i> 'paying'            |
|                         | <i>ö</i>   | <i>тöчө-</i> 'to try'     | <i>тöчыш<u>ö</u></i> 'trying'            |
| Rounded, back           | <i>y</i>   | <i>вучо-</i> 'to wait'    | <i>в<u>у</u>чыш<u>о</u></i> 'waiting'    |
|                         | <i>o</i>   | <i>чонго-</i> 'to build'  | <i>ч<u>о</u>нгыш<u>о</u></i> 'building'  |

Due to the reduced pronunciation of unstressed final *-E*, the distinction between these sounds in pronunciation can be very slight in modern language – in the case of some speakers it is not discernible.

1.9. Add the inessive suffix *-(ы)шмE* (see 2.4.5 – page 82) to the following nouns. (The *ы* occurs after consonants, but not after vowels).

1. *наша* 'work'
2. *мут* 'word'
3. *пöрт* 'house'
4. *пöлем* 'room'
5. *чöгым* 'hammer'

Note that when the final full vowel of a word is not the stressed vowel – as applies in the case of numerous loan words and place names – it is the last full vowel, not the stressed vowel that determines the vowel-harmonic realization of the suffix.

| Nominative |         | Inessive                     |            |
|------------|---------|------------------------------|------------|
| Марбург    | Marburg | Марб <u>у</u> ргыш <u>тö</u> | In Marburg |
| Тамсалу    | Tamsalu | Тамсал <u>у</u> ш <u>тö</u>  | In Tamsalu |
| Цюрих      | Zurich  | Ц <u>ү</u> рихыш <u>те</u>   | In Zurich  |

1.10. Add the inessive suffix *-(ы)шмE* to the following international place names.

1. *Мюнхен* 'Munich'
2. *Гамбург* 'Hamburg'
3. *Вильнюс* 'Vilnius'
4. *Сомбатхей* 'Szombathely'
5. *Маарду* 'Maardu'

As regards the reduced final *-e/-o/-ö* within stems mentioned above, this final unstressed and reduced vowel agrees with the rest of the stem according to the same rules that apply to the choice of a suffix vowel:

| Last full vowel in stem |            | Example                               |
|-------------------------|------------|---------------------------------------|
| Characteristics         | Vowel      |                                       |
| Unrounded               | <i>u</i>   | <i>т<u>и</u>д<u>е</u></i> 'this'      |
|                         | <i>e</i>   | <i>н<u>е</u>л<u>е</u></i> 'difficult' |
|                         | <i>a</i>   | <i>к<u>а</u>ч<u>е</u></i> 'young man' |
|                         | <i>(ы)</i> | <i>л<u>ы</u>в<u>е</u></i> 'butterfly' |
| Rounded, front          | <i>ÿ</i>   | <i>р<u>ÿ</u>д<u>ö</u></i> 'center'    |
|                         | <i>ö</i>   | <i>ÿ<u>ö</u>ц<u>ö</u></i> 'difficult' |
| Rounded, back           | <i>y</i>   | <i>т<u>у</u>м<u>о</u></i> 'oak tree'  |
|                         | <i>o</i>   | <i>м<u>у</u>н<u>о</u></i> 'egg'       |

Numerous Russian loan words have been adapted to better correspond to the rules of Mari pronunciation by having their unstressed final vowel replaced with a vowel-harmonically appropriate vowel – see below in 1.5.9 – page 38.

### 1.5.9. Adaptation of Russian loan words

A large number of Russian loan words (including a vast body of international words) are used in modern Mari. In many cases, they have been adapted to conform more closely with Mari pronunciation and spelling rules. One can roughly distinguish between old loan words that have been heavily adapted (in some cases beyond recognition), younger loan words that have been slightly adapted, and some younger loan words that have not been adapted at all as regards their orthographic realization. Verbs must be handled as a separate category, as unlike nouns, adjectives, adverbs, particles, etc., verbal stems must occur with some sort of inflectional marking, be it finite or non-finite.

Old loan words: A number of old Russian loan words in Mari have been significantly adapted. In some cases, the meaning has changed as well. Numerous Russian loan words in Mari represent an earlier or dialectal form of Russian – some words that exist in Mari as loan words are no longer found in contemporary literary Russian.

| Russian       | Mari      | Translation   |
|---------------|-----------|---------------|
| запас         | шапаш     | supply        |
| внук / внучка | уныка     | grandchild    |
| хоть          | кеч       | even if       |
| чуть          | чуч       | just a little |
| крестьянин    | кресаньык | peasant       |
| будто         | пуйто     | as if         |

Adaptation of newer Russian loan words (vowel harmony): word-final *-a* (*-я*) is often unstressed in Russian. As detailed above in 1.5.6 – page 31 – this is not typical in Mari: as a full vowel, *a* would generally be stressed. In some older loan words, stress has shifted to the final syllable: *машина* ‘car’ (Russian: *машина*), *книга* ‘book’ (Russian: *книга*). For many newer and less frequently used loan words, the final vowel is often replaced with *-e* or *-(ь)о*, depending on which letter vowel harmony (see above in 1.5.8 – 36) demands. Note that this can result in unmarked palatalization if the letter combination *-ля* or *-ня* is replaced by *-ле* or *-не*. Also note that it is the last full vowel of the stem that determines the vowel-harmonic vowel – in Russian loan words, this is not necessarily the stressed vowel (e.g., Russian *логика* ‘logic’ → Mari *логикэ*).

As Russian does not have the rounded front vowels *ɥ* and *ø*, *-ø* does not occur here.

| Last full vowel in stem, last vowel |         |          | Example           |                                  |                |
|-------------------------------------|---------|----------|-------------------|----------------------------------|----------------|
| Characteristics                     | Vowels  |          |                   |                                  |                |
|                                     | Russian | Mari     | Russian           | Mari                             | Translation    |
| Unrounded                           | и ... а | и ... е  | ви <u>з</u> а     | ви <u>з</u> е                    | visa           |
|                                     | и ... я | и ... е  | ви <u>ш</u> ня    | ви <u>ш</u> не /... <u>ñe</u> /  | cherry         |
|                                     | е ... а | е ... е  | те <u>м</u> а     | те <u>м</u> е                    | topic          |
|                                     | е ... я | е ... е  | ке <u>г</u> ля    | ке <u>г</u> ле /... <u>l'e</u> / | skittles       |
|                                     | а ... а | а ... е  | фа <u>з</u> а     | фа <u>з</u> е                    | phase          |
|                                     | а ... я | а ... е  | ба <u>р</u> ыня   | ба <u>р</u> ыне /... <u>ñe</u> / | baroness       |
|                                     | ы ... а | ы ... е  | лы <u>ч</u> ка    | лы <u>ч</u> ке                   | badges of rank |
|                                     | ы ... я | ы ... е  | ды <u>н</u> я     | ды <u>н</u> е /... <u>ñe</u> /   | melon          |
| Rounded, back                       | у ... а | у ... о  | ху <u>н</u> та    | ху <u>н</u> то                   | junta          |
|                                     | у ... я | у ... ьо | ку <u>х</u> ня    | ку <u>х</u> ньо                  | kitchen        |
|                                     | о ... а | о ... о  | фо <u>р</u> ма    | фо <u>р</u> мо                   | form           |
|                                     | о ... я | о ... ьо | торго <u>в</u> ля | торго <u>в</u> льо               | commerce       |

In other cases, the letter *-a* is omitted. This categorically happens in the case of Russian words ending in unstressed *-pa*, and sporadically in other cases.

| Russian     | Mari       | Translation |
|-------------|------------|-------------|
| сфера       | сфер       | sphere      |
| текстура    | текстур    | texture     |
| конъюнктура | конъюнктур | conjecture  |
| газета      | газет      | newspaper   |

Likewise, the letter *-o* is in many words replaced by *-e* in word-final position (especially in the case of words ending in the frequent Russian ending *-ство*): Russian *министерство* 'ministry' → Mari *министерстве*, Russian *повидло* 'jam' → Mari *повидле*.

**Adaptation of newer Russian loan words (gender endings):** Since Mari has no grammatical gender, endings denoting gender in Russian words are often disregarded in loaning. Specifically, this affects words ending in *-ия* /-ija/ and *-ие* /-ije/ in Russian that are loaned to Mari without the final /-a/ or /-e/ denoting gender, resulting in truncated stems in Mari words ending in *-уй* /-ij/. Russian masculine words ending in *-уй* are not altered.

| Russian   |                    | Mari               | Translation |
|-----------|--------------------|--------------------|-------------|
| Gender    | Word               |                    |             |
| Masculine | рабо <u>ч</u> ий   | рабо <u>ч</u> ий   | worker      |
| Feminine  | зоолог <u>и</u> я  | зоолог <u>и</u> й  | zoology     |
| Neuter    | сочинен <u>и</u> е | сочинен <u>и</u> й | essay       |

When Russian adjectives are used in Mari, either the nominative singular masculine (ending in *-ый*, *-ий*, or *-ой*) is used or the adjective ending (*-ный*, *-ной*, *-ский*, *-овый*, *-овой*) is removed completely, or the Russian noun from which the adjective is derived is used in place of the adjective. Modern style guidelines suggest avoiding Russian endings when possible.

| Russian                 | Mari                    |            | Translation |
|-------------------------|-------------------------|------------|-------------|
|                         | Long                    | Shortened  |             |
| шко <u>ль</u> ный       | шко <u>ль</u> ный       | школ       | school      |
| отпуск <u>но</u> й      | отпуск <u>но</u> й      | отпуск     | vacation    |
| совет <u>ск</u> ий      | совет <u>ск</u> ий      | совет      | Soviet      |
| стилист <u>ич</u> еский | стилист <u>ич</u> еский | стилистике | stylistic   |
| участк <u>ов</u> ый     | участк <u>ов</u> ый     | участке    | divisional  |
| курсов <u>ой</u>        | курсов <u>ой</u>        | курс       | course      |

It is also in some cases possible to replace the Russian adjective ending with a Mari counterpart (see 11.6.3 – page 383), e.g., *школьный* ‘school’ → *школысо*.

Verbs: See 11.7.1 – page 387.

Loan words that are not adapted: A number of Russian words are not adapted orthographically at all. These include: 1) words ending in a stressed vowel in Russian, 2) words ending in multiple vowels, 3) words ending in -ье, 4) words ending in an unstressed final -e or -o that violates the rules of vowel harmony, 5) an unpredictable set of nouns ending in unstressed -a (though foreign geographical names ending in an unstressed -a behave like this categorically).

|    | Russian             | Mari                | Translation   |
|----|---------------------|---------------------|---------------|
| 1) | рококо <u>о</u>     | рококо <u>о</u>     | rococo        |
|    | портмо <u>н</u> е   | портмо <u>н</u> е   | purse         |
| 2) | ради <u>о</u>       | ради <u>о</u>       | radio         |
|    | кака <u>о</u>       | кака <u>о</u>       | cocoa         |
| 3) | Заполя <u>р</u> ье  | Заполя <u>р</u> ье  | polar regions |
|    | пятибо <u>р</u> ье  | пятибо <u>р</u> ье  | pentathlon    |
| 4) | концерт <u>и</u> но | концерт <u>и</u> но | concertino    |
|    | ко <u>ф</u> е       | ко <u>ф</u> е       | coffee        |
| 5) | Польша <u>а</u>     | Польша <u>а</u>     | Poland        |
|    | эра <u>а</u>        | эра <u>а</u>        | era, age      |

As regards the inflection of these words, see below in 1.6 – page 42.

#### 1.5.10. The Mari orthography of the 30s

Until 1938, Mari made use of an orthography that different significantly from the contemporary orthography. Different variations existed; the latest alphabet prior to the reform of 1938 (to which the modern orthography traces its roots) was as follows:



| Standard | Italics      | Phonetic value |
|----------|--------------|----------------|
| А а      | <i>А а</i>   | /a/            |
| Б б      | <i>Б б</i>   | /b/            |
| В в      | <i>В в</i>   | /β/ ~ /v/      |
| Г г      | <i>Г г</i>   | /ɣ/ ~ /g/      |
| Д д      | <i>Д д</i>   | /δ/ ~ /d/      |
| Ж ж      | <i>Ж ж</i>   | /ʒ/            |
| З з      | <i>З з</i>   | /z/            |
| И и      | <i>И и</i>   | /i/            |
| Й й      | <i>Й й</i>   | /j/            |
| К к      | <i>К к</i>   | /k/            |
| Л л      | <i>Л л</i>   | /l/ ~ /l'/     |
| М м      | <i>М м</i>   | /m/            |
| Н н      | <i>Н н</i>   | /n/ ~ /n'/     |
| (H) H    | <i>(H) H</i> | /ŋ/            |
| О о      | <i>О о</i>   | /o/            |
| Ö ö      | <i>Ö ö</i>   | /ö/            |
| П п      | <i>П п</i>   | /p/            |
| Р р      | <i>Р р</i>   | /r/            |
| С с      | <i>С с</i>   | /s/            |
| Т т      | <i>Т т</i>   | /t/            |
| У у      | <i>У у</i>   | /u/            |
| Û û      | <i>Û û</i>   | /ü/            |
| Ф ф      | <i>Ф ф</i>   | /f/            |
| Х х      | <i>Х х</i>   | /x/            |
| Ц ц      | <i>Ц ц</i>   | /c/            |
| Ч ч      | <i>Ч ч</i>   | /č/            |
| Ш ш      | <i>Ш ш</i>   | /š/            |
| Ы ы      | <i>Ы ы</i>   | /ə/            |
| (b) Ъ    | <i>(b) Ъ</i> | soft sign      |
| Э э      | <i>Э э</i>   | /e/            |

As can be seen, there is an almost reliable 1:1 relationship between graphemes and sounds in this orthography – only the soft sign does not have a value of its own; it was used as a marker of palatalness. Palatal consonants were consistently marked in this orthography, regardless of the vowel (if any) following them: /j/ → *й*, /n'/ → *нъ*, /l'/ → *лъ*. As a consequence, the alphabet also did not have to make use of the “soft” vowel signs *я*, *е*, *ё*, and *ю* at all, nor did it of the hard sign *ѐ*. Vowel sounds were consistently realized by the same grapheme: /e/ → *э*, /a/ → *а*, etc. This gives Mari texts from this era – many of which can now be found in online repositories such as [fennougrica.kansalliskirjasto.fi](http://fennougrica.kansalliskirjasto.fi) (the Fenno-Ugrica collection of the National Library of Finland, containing a vast body of Mari literary texts from the 1920s and 1930s) – a very distinctive look in comparison to modern texts. Some examples:

| Mari (before 1938) | Mari (after 1938) | Translation    |
|--------------------|-------------------|----------------|
| йал                | ял                | village        |
| арньа              | арня              | week           |
| мийэн              | миен              | s/he went      |
| ыльэ               | ыле               | s/he was       |
| йүмо               | юмо               | god            |
| польус             | полюс             | pole           |
| дэн                | ден               | and            |
| нэлэ               | неле              | difficult      |
| нэльэ              | неле              | s/he swallowed |

Illustrated on the example of a newspaper headline from January 1924 (note that Lenin's name is realized in Russian orthography):

| Mari (before 1938)  | Mari (after 1938)  | Translation   |
|---|--|---|
| Тўнѡ ѱмбал шэмэр<br>калыкын пагалымѡ,<br>йоратымѡ<br>вуйлатышыжѡ<br>ВЛАДИМИР ИЛЬИЧ<br>ЛЕНИН укѡ лийѡ. | Тўня ўмбал шемер<br>калыкын пагалыме,<br>йоратыме<br>вуйлатышыже<br>ВЛАДИМИР ИЛЬИЧ<br>ЛЕНИН уке лие. | The esteemed and<br>beloved leader of the<br>workers of the world,<br>VLADIMIR ILYICH<br>LENIN, has died. |

While later orthographic reforms have happened (e.g., in 1972, 1992, 2011), the changes in these have been comparatively superficial, and have pertained mostly to the orthographic realization of Russian loan words.

1.11. The following words are given in the Mari orthography of the 1930s. What are they in modern orthography?

1. тэлэ 'winter'
2. тунэмшэ 'student'
3. йанлык 'wild animal'
4. йэн 'person'
5. имньэ 'horse'

## 1.6. Suffix types

With very few exceptions, all suffixes belonging to productive Mari morphology – nominal and verbal, inflectional or derivational – can be assigned to one of very few SUFFIX TYPES based on how they connect to their base words. This section gives a comprehensive overview how suffixes representing these classes connect to different types of stems – seven suffix types are introduced and illustrated based on a frequently used representative of the type, and the handful of suffixes with highly idiosyncratic behavior that cannot be assigned to these will be mentioned (though not discussed in detail here). The suffix type labels introduced in this chapter (H, E, A, Ы, Ш, N, S) will be used throughout the grammar at hand.

It should be noted that a lot of the perceived irregularity occurring in suffixation is due to orthographic peculiarities surrounding the realization of the phonemes /j/, /ɲ/, and /l/ in Mari Cyrillic orthography. That is to say, the perceived irregularity only occurs in orthography, but not in pronunciation. Orthographic peculiarities of this sort will be illustrated by examples in this section, but not discussed explicitly here – for a comprehensive discussion of the principles of Mari orthography, see 1.5.5 – page 26.

For vowel harmonic vowels – signified by an upper-case *E* here – see 1.5.8 – page 36.

The lexemes utilized in this chapter are generally not compounds and adhere to the general rules of Mari word stress, see 1.5.6 – page 31. For the handling of newer loan words that do not adhere to usual stress patterns, see below in 1.6.12 – page 52; in compounds, one must remember that the vowel-harmonic vowel is determined by the last component (as discussed in 1.5.6 – page 31). Verbal suffixes discussed in this section are generally attached to the verbal stem (see 7.0.2 – page 196).

Appendix B – page 506 – assigns all suffixes of productive Mari morphology, inflectional and derivational, to the suffix types defined and illustrated in this chapter.

### 1.6.1. H-suffixes (H for hyphen, e.g., plural *-влак*)

#### Connecting the suffix to a base form

This suffix is attached to the base form with a hyphen. The noun is not orthographically modified in any way when the plural suffix is added; no vowel reduction occurs: *лудшо* ‘reader’ → *лудшо-влак* ‘readers’.

### 1.6.2. E-suffixes (e.g., possessive suffix first person singular *-ем*)

This suffix is realized as *-ем*, *-эм*, and *-м*; the alternation between the first two listed forms is purely orthographic and will not be treated in detail here. As the first form is by far the most common variant, it is generally (and in this grammar consistently) used as a shorthand reference to the suffix with all its alternating forms.

#### Connecting the suffix to a base form

This suffix is realized as:

- /-m/ (*-м*) after stems ending in stressed /-a/ or /-e/.

|       |             |                |
|-------|-------------|----------------|
| ката  | ‘footwear’  | ката <u>м</u>  |
| пырня | ‘log, beam’ | пырня <u>м</u> |
| шопке | ‘aspen’     | шопке <u>м</u> |
| куэ   | ‘birch’     | куэ <u>м</u>   |

In some cases, stem-final /-a/ is preserved before E-suffixes, e.g., *йытыра* ‘clean’ + translative derivational suffix *-ем* (see 11.7.4 – page 388) → *йытыраэмаш* (*-ам*) ‘to be cleaned’.

- /-em/ (*-ем* ~ *-эм*) in all other cases. Unstressed final /-e/, /-o/, and /-ö/ of the base word is deleted by this suffix.

|         |            |                  |
|---------|------------|------------------|
| лем     | 'broth'    | лем <u>ем</u>    |
| луй     | 'marten'   | лу <u>ем</u>     |
| сугынь  | 'blessing' | сугын' <u>ем</u> |
| сату    | 'goods'    | сату <u>эм</u>   |
| ю       | 'magic'    | ю <u>эм</u>      |
| кўтў    | 'herd'     | кўтў <u>эм</u>   |
| духи    | 'perfume'  | духи <u>эм</u>   |
| пальто  | 'coat'     | пальто <u>эм</u> |
| лаке    | 'hole'     | лаке <u>ем</u>   |
| кудо    | 'hut'      | куде <u>м</u>    |
| рўдō    | 'center'   | рўде <u>м</u>    |
| туйо    | 'sickly'   | ту <u>ем</u>     |
| имн'е   | 'horse'    | имн' <u>ем</u>   |
| мугыльо | 'bump'     | мугыл' <u>ем</u> |
| кўртньō | 'iron'     | кўртн' <u>ем</u> |

1.12. Attach the possessive suffix first person singular *-ем* to the following stems.

1. йолташ 'friend'
2. шуэ 'ant hill'
3. теле 'winter'
4. шерге 'comb'
5. такси 'taxi'
6. варен'е 'jam'
7. ава 'mother'
8. авай 'mom'
9. кўртньō 'iron'
10. июль 'July'

1.13. What is the base form of the given suffixed words?

1. акам 'my elder sister'
2. ватем 'my wife'
3. тенгем 'my ruble'
4. вургемем 'my clothing'
5. мутем 'my word'
6. арням 'my week'
7. кукуэм 'my cuckoo'
8. шўл'ем 'my oats'
9. апрелем 'my April'
10. марием 'my husband'

### 1.6.3. A-suffixes (e.g., clitic *-am* 'and, also')

This suffix is realized as *-am*, *-ям*, and *-m*; the alternation between the first two listed forms is purely orthographic. As the first form is by far the most common variant, it is generally (and in this grammar consistently) used as a shorthand reference to the suffix with all its alternating forms.

#### Connecting the suffix to a base form

This suffix is realized as:

- /-t/ after stems ending in /-a/.

|       |             |                |
|-------|-------------|----------------|
| ката  | 'footwear'  | ката <u>т</u>  |
| пырня | 'log, beam' | пырня <u>т</u> |

- /-am/ (-am ~ -ям) in all other cases. Unstressed final /-e/, /-o/, and /-ö/ of the base word is deleted by this suffix.

|         |            |                  |
|---------|------------|------------------|
| шопке   | 'aspen'    | шопке <u>ат</u>  |
| куэ     | 'birch'    | куэ <u>ат</u>    |
| лем     | 'broth'    | лем <u>ат</u>    |
| луй     | 'marten'   | луй <u>ят</u>    |
| сугынь  | 'blessing' | сугынь <u>ят</u> |
| сату    | 'goods'    | сату <u>ат</u>   |
| ю       | 'magic'    | ю <u>ат</u>      |
| күтү    | 'herd'     | күтү <u>ат</u>   |
| духи    | 'perfume'  | духи <u>ат</u>   |
| пальто  | 'coat'     | пальто <u>ат</u> |
| лаке    | 'hole'     | лаке <u>ат</u>   |
| кудо    | 'hut'      | куда <u>т</u>    |
| рүдө    | 'center'   | рүда <u>т</u>    |
| туйо    | 'sickly'   | туя <u>т</u>     |
| имн'е   | 'horse'    | имня <u>т</u>    |
| мугыльо | 'bump'     | мугыля <u>т</u>  |
| күртньö | 'iron'     | күртня <u>т</u>  |

1.14. Attach the clitic -am 'and, also' to the following stems.

1. йолташ 'friend'
2. шуэ 'ant hill'
3. шерге 'expensive'
4. шерге 'comb'
5. такси 'taxi'
6. варен'е 'jam'
7. ава 'mother'
8. авай 'mom'
9. күртньö 'iron'
10. июль 'July'

1.15. What is the base form of the given suffixed words?

1. мутат 'also the word'
2. шуэат 'also the ant hill'
3. вуят 'also the head'
4. тоштат 'also the old (one)'
5. апрелят 'also April'
6. кугуат 'also the big (one)'
7. колят 'also the mouse'
8. жюриат 'also the jury'
9. киндат 'also the bread'
10. когылят 'also the pie'

#### 1.6.4. Ы-suffixes (e.g., genitive -н)

This suffix is realized as -н after vowels and as -ын after consonants. The -ы- is a thematic vowel necessitated by pronunciation and is not included in shorthand references to suffixes of this type.

### Connecting the suffix to a base form

This suffix is:

- *-н* after vowels. Unstressed final *-e*, *-o*, and *-ö* of the base word are reduced and become *-ы*. In older sources, some alternation can be found in the case of monosyllabic stems ending in *-y*, *-ÿ*, and *-ю*: here, a thematic *-ы-* occurred on occasion, e.g., *ю* ‘magic’ → *юн* ~ *юын*. Modern stylistic guidelines discourage the usage of a thematic vowel here.

|         |             |                   |
|---------|-------------|-------------------|
| ката    | ‘footwear’  | ката <u>н</u>     |
| пырня   | ‘log, beam’ | пырня <u>н</u>    |
| шопке   | ‘aspen’     | шопке <u>н</u>    |
| куэ     | ‘birch’     | куэ <u>н</u>      |
| сату    | ‘goods’     | сату <u>н</u>     |
| ю       | ‘magic’     | ю <u>н</u>        |
| күтү    | ‘herd’      | күтү <u>н</u>     |
| духи    | ‘perfume’   | духи <u>н</u>     |
| пальто  | ‘coat’      | пальто <u>н</u>   |
| лаке    | ‘hole’      | лак <u>ы</u> н    |
| кудо    | ‘hut’       | куд <u>ы</u> н    |
| рүдө    | ‘center’    | рүд <u>ы</u> н    |
| туйо    | ‘sickly’    | туй <u>ы</u> н    |
| имн’е   | ‘horse’     | имн <u>ы</u> н    |
| мугыльо | ‘bump’      | мугыль <u>ы</u> н |
| күртньö | ‘iron’      | күртн <u>ы</u> н  |

- *-ын* after consonants.

|        |            |                  |
|--------|------------|------------------|
| лем    | ‘broth’    | лем <u>ын</u>    |
| луй    | ‘marten’   | луй <u>ын</u>    |
| сугынь | ‘blessing’ | сугынь <u>ын</u> |

When *н*-suffixes are used in verbal inflection, both finite and infinite, a thematic *-ы-* is obligatory after verbal stems ending in consonants, e.g., *шу-* ‘to arrive’ + *-т* (indicative present third person plural) → *шуым* ‘they arrive’ (not \**шут*); *шу-* + *-н* (gerund) → *шуын* ‘arriving’ (not \**шун*).

1.16. Attach the genitive suffix *-н* to the following stems.

1. *йолташ* ‘friend’
2. *шуэ* ‘ant hill’
3. *теле* ‘winter’
4. *шерге* ‘comb’
5. *такси* ‘taxi’
6. *варен’е* ‘jam’
7. *ава* ‘mother’
8. *авай* ‘mom’
9. *күртньö* ‘iron’
10. *июль* ‘July’

## 1.17. What is the base form of the given suffixed words?

1. *метрон* 'of the metro'
2. *кочан* 'of a grandfather'
3. *пошкудын* 'of a neighbor'
4. *рушарнян* 'of a Sunday'
5. *еңын* 'of a person'
6. *мыйын* 'my'
7. *нунын* 'their'
8. *поянын* 'of a rich person'
9. *туныктышын* 'of a teacher'
10. *ешын* 'of a family'

1.6.5. III-suffixes (e.g., inessive *-umE*)

This suffix generally behaves like a II-suffix, but is subject to idiosyncratic behavior when it is attached to polysyllabic words ending in *-ш*: here, a HAPLOLOGY can (but does not have to) occur; the sound combination *-шыш-* (consisting of the *-ш* of the base word, the thematic vowel *-ы-*, and the *-ш-* of the suffix) can be reduced and become *-ш-*: *йöратымаш* 'love' → *йöратымаште* ~ *йöратымашыште*. However, only the long form is used in the case of bisyllabic words ending in *-ыш*, and also some longer words ending in *-ыш*: *пöлыш* 'help' → *пöлышшто*, *пеледыш* 'flower' → *пеледышште* (but, e.g., *пычкемыш* 'darkness' → *пычкемыште* ~ *пычкемышште*).

Connecting the suffix to a base form

This suffix is:

- *-umE* after vowels. Unstressed final *-e*, *-o*, and *-ö* of the base word are reduced and become *-ы*. In older sources, some alternation can be found in the case of monosyllabic stems ending in *-y*, *-ÿ*, and *-ю*: here, a thematic *-ы-* occurred on occasion, e.g., *ю* 'magic' → *юшто* ~ *юышто*. Modern stylistic guidelines discourage the usage of a thematic vowel here

|         |             |                    |
|---------|-------------|--------------------|
| ката    | 'footwear'  | ката <u>ште</u>    |
| пырня   | 'log, beam' | пырня <u>ште</u>   |
| шопке   | 'aspen'     | шопке <u>ште</u>   |
| куэ     | 'birch'     | куэ <u>ште</u>     |
| сату    | 'goods'     | сату <u>што</u>    |
| ю       | 'magic'     | ю <u>што</u>       |
| күтү    | 'herd'      | күтү <u>штö</u>    |
| духи    | 'perfume'   | духи <u>ште</u>    |
| пальто  | 'coat'      | пальто <u>што</u>  |
| лаке    | 'hole'      | лак <u>ыште</u>    |
| кудо    | 'hut'       | куд <u>ышто</u>    |
| рүдö    | 'center'    | рүд <u>ыштö</u>    |
| туйо    | 'sickly'    | туй <u>ышто</u>    |
| варен'е | 'jam'       | варен <u>ыште</u>  |
| мугыльо | 'bump'      | мугыль <u>ышто</u> |
| күртнө  | 'iron'      | күртн <u>ыштö</u>  |

- *-ыumE* after consonants. After polysyllabic stems in *-ш*, the haplology discussed above can occur.

|           |            |   |
|-----------|------------|---|
| лем       | 'broth'    | лем <u>ыште</u>                             |
| вуй       | 'head'     | вуй <u>ышто</u>                             |
| сугынь    | 'blessing' | сугынь <u>ышто</u>                          |
| уш        | 'mind'     | уш <u>ышто</u>                              |
| йöратымаш | 'love'     | йöратымаш <u>ыште</u> ~ йöратымаш <u>те</u> |

1.18. Attach the inessive suffix *-umE* to the following stems.

1. *йодыш* 'question'
2. *шуэ* 'ant hill'
3. *кече* 'sun; day'
4. *шерге* 'comb'
5. *такси* 'taxi'
6. *варен'е* 'jam'
7. *пу* 'wood'
8. *еш* 'family'
9. *кўртньö* 'iron'
10. *июль* 'July'

1.19. What is the base form of the given suffixed words?

1. *олмаште* 'in an apple'
2. *толмаште* 'in an arrival'
3. *чодыраште* 'in the forest'
4. *вуйышто* 'in the head'
5. *Норвегийыште* 'in Norway'
6. *арняште* 'in a week'
7. *шудышто* 'in the grass'
8. *кидыште* 'in a hand'
9. *шўльыштö* 'in oats'
10. *июньышто* 'in June'

#### 1.6.6. N-suffixes (N for no thematic vowel – e.g., dative *-лан*)

##### Connecting the suffix to a base form

This suffix is invariably *-лан*; it is never preceded by a thematic vowel. Unstressed final *-e*, *-o*, and *-ö* of the base word are reduced and become *-ы*.



|         |             |                   |
|---------|-------------|-------------------|
| ката    | 'footwear'  | ката <u>лан</u>   |
| пырня   | 'log, beam' | пырня <u>лан</u>  |
| шопке   | 'aspen'     | шопке <u>лан</u>  |
| куэ     | 'birch'     | куэ <u>лан</u>    |
| сату    | 'goods'     | сату <u>лан</u>   |
| ю       | 'magic'     | ю <u>лан</u>      |
| күтү    | 'herd'      | күтү <u>лан</u>   |
| духи    | 'perfume'   | духи <u>лан</u>   |
| пальто  | 'coat'      | пальто <u>лан</u> |
| лаке    | 'hole'      | лакы <u>лан</u>   |
| кудо    | 'hut'       | куды <u>лан</u>   |
| рүдө    | 'center'    | рүды <u>лан</u>   |
| туйо    | 'sickly'    | туйы <u>лан</u>   |
| имн'е   | 'horse'     | имны <u>лан</u>   |
| мугыльо | 'bump'      | мугылы <u>лан</u> |
| күртньө | 'iron'      | күртны <u>лан</u> |
| лем     | 'broth'     | лем <u>лан</u>    |
| луй     | 'marten'    | луй <u>лан</u>    |
| сугынь  | 'blessing'  | сугынь <u>лан</u> |

When N-suffixes are attached to verbal stems, a number of stem simplifications or stem changes occur for phonotactic reasons – without the insertion of a vowel or the deletion or change of a consonant, invalid consonant clusters would occur. For example, the negative gerund in *-де*:

| Rule   | Example |               |               |
|--------|---------|---------------|---------------|
| чк → ч | кочк-   | 'to eat'      | коч <u>де</u> |
| шк → ч | мушк-   | 'to wash'     | муш <u>де</u> |
| нч → ч | шинч-   | 'to sit down' | шин <u>де</u> |
| кт → к | лект-   | 'to leave'    | лек <u>де</u> |
| з → ч  | воз-    | 'to lie down' | воч <u>де</u> |

1.20. Attach the dative suffix *-лан* to the following stems.

1. *йолташ* 'friend'
2. *шуэ* 'ant hill'
3. *шереге* 'expensive'
4. *шереге* 'comb'
5. *такси* 'taxi'
6. *варен'е* 'jam'
7. *ава* 'mother'
8. *авай* 'mom'
9. *күртньө* 'iron'
10. *июль* 'July'

## 1.21. What is the base form of the given suffixed words?

1. *нашалан* 'for/to work'
2. *тунемшылан* 'for/to the student'
3. *лулан* 'for/to the bone'
4. *туллан* 'for/to the fire'
5. *айдемылан* 'for/to the person'
6. *менгылан* 'for/to a pillar'
7. *тенгелан* 'for/to a ruble'
8. *имнылан* 'for/to the horse'
9. *вуйлан* 'for/to the head'
10. *апрельлан* 'for/to April'

## 1.6.7. S-suffixes (S for sibilant – e.g., imperative 3SG -ЖЕ: -жЕ ~ -шЕ)

Connecting the suffix to a base form

This suffix is generally -жЕ and generally behaves like a N-Suffix – see above – but becomes -шЕ after verbal stems ending in the obstruent consonants – i.e., plosives, fricatives, sibilants, affricates (*п, б, т, д, к, з, ф, в, х, с, ж, ц, ч*, see 1.5.1 – page 22). This alternation between the consonants that are one another's counterparts as regards voice is referred to by an uppercase Ж in our shorthand notation. Likewise, Ж: ж ~ ч.

After vowels (that end all verbal stems of the second conjugation, and some of the first conjugation) and sonorant consonants (in the case of some verbs of the first conjugation), it remains – жЕ. The same phonotactically motivated stem simplifications and changes that affect N-suffixes affect this suffix as well.

| Conjugation class | Stem ends in ...                          | Example |             |                     |
|-------------------|---|---------|-------------|---------------------|
| 2                 | Unstressed -е, -о, -ө                     | ыште-   | 'to do'     | ЫШТЫЖЕ              |
|                   | Stressed -у, -ү                           | шу-     | 'to arrive' | ШУЖО                |
|                   | Sonorant consonant                        | тол-    | 'to come'   | ТОЛЖО               |
|                   | Obstruent consonant                       | луд-    | 'to read'   | ЛУДШО               |
| 1                 | Obstruent consonant<br>(with stem change) | чк → ч  | кочк-       | 'to eat' КОЧШО      |
|                   |   | шк → ч  | мушк-       | 'to wash' МУШШО     |
|                   |   | нч → ч  | шинч-       | 'to sit down' ШИЧШЕ |
|                   |   | кт → к  | лект-       | 'to leave' ЛЕКШЕ    |
|                   |   | з → ч   | воз-        | 'to lie down' ВОЧШО |

It should be noted that as regards their pronunciation, N-suffixes starting in *з* and *д* technically belong to this group as well: orthographically unmarked alternation between /g/ and /k/, and /d/ and /t/ respectively, occurs here. For example, the negative gerund in -де (*мол-* 'to come' → *молде* /tolde/, but *лект-* 'to leave' → *лектде* /lekde/) or the comitative in -ге (*йоча* 'child' → *йочаге* /jočage/, but *еш* 'family' → *ешге* /jesge/). For more information on this alternation, see 1.5.7 – page 34.

## 1.6.8. Possessive suffix 3SG -жЕ ~ -шЕ ~ -ыжЕ ~ -ж

This suffix (see 2.2.1.2 – page 63) behaves similar to an N-Suffix – see above – but is subject to some variation. In some, but not all, cases, it has a short form -ж. The explanations below will mention when the suffix has this short form, but will not discuss when the short form is used – this will be discussed in the section concerning itself with the usage of this suffix.

Connecting the suffix to a base form

This suffix is:

- *-жЕ* after vowels. Unstressed final *-Е* of the base word are reduced and become *-ы*. Here the possessive suffix has a short form *-ж*.

|         |             |                                      |
|---------|-------------|--------------------------------------|
| ката    | 'footwear'  | ката <u>же</u> ~ ката <u>ж</u>       |
| пырня   | 'log, beam' | пырня <u>же</u> ~ пырня <u>ж</u>     |
| шопке   | 'aspen'     | шопке <u>же</u> ~ шопке <u>ж</u>     |
| куэ     | 'birch'     | куэ <u>же</u> ~ куэ <u>ж</u>         |
| сату    | 'goods'     | сату <u>жо</u> ~ сату <u>ж</u>       |
| ю       | 'magic'     | ю <u>жо</u> ~ ю <u>ж</u>             |
| күтү    | 'herd'      | күтү <u>жө</u> ~ күтү <u>ж</u>       |
| духи    | 'perfume'   | духи <u>же</u> ~ духи <u>ж</u>       |
| пальто  | 'coat'      | пальто <u>жо</u> ~ пальто <u>ж</u>   |
| лаке    | 'hole'      | лаке <u>же</u> ~ лаке <u>ж</u>       |
| кудо    | 'hut'       | куды <u>жо</u> ~ куды <u>ж</u>       |
| рүдө    | 'center'    | рүды <u>жө</u> ~ рүды <u>ж</u>       |
| туйо    | 'sickly'    | туйы <u>жо</u> ~ туйы <u>ж</u>       |
| имн'е   | 'horse'     | имны <u>же</u> ~ имны <u>ж</u>       |
| мугыльо | 'bump'      | мугыльы <u>жо</u> ~ мугыльы <u>ж</u> |
| күртньө | 'iron'      | күртньы <u>жө</u> ~ күртньы <u>ж</u> |

- *-жЕ* after sonorant consonants – i.e., nasals, laterals, trills, approximants (see 1.5.1 – page 22: *м, н, ң, нь, л, ль, р, ь*, and also *рь* in Russian loan words). Here the possessive suffix does not however have a short form.

|         |            |                   |
|---------|------------|-------------------|
| лүм     | 'name'     | лүм <u>жө</u>     |
| йөн     | 'method'   | йөн <u>жө</u>     |
| енг     | 'person'   | енг <u>же</u>     |
| сугынь  | 'blessing' | сугынь <u>жо</u>  |
| эл      | 'country'  | эл <u>же</u>      |
| шаль    | 'shawl'    | шаль <u>же</u>    |
| вүр     | 'blood'    | вүр <u>жө</u>     |
| вуй     | 'head'     | вуй <u>жо</u>     |
| октябрь | 'October'  | октябрь <u>же</u> |

- *-шЕ* after obstruent consonants other than *ш* – i.e., plosives, fricatives, sibilants, affricates (see 1.5.1 – page 22: *п, т, д, к, с, з, ж, ч*, and in Russian loan words also *б, г, ф, в, х, ц, щ*, and palatalized variants of a number of obstruent consonants). Here, too, the possessive suffix does not have a short form.

|       |             |                 |
|-------|-------------|-----------------|
| туп   | 'back'      | туп <u>шо</u>   |
| мут   | 'word'      | мут <u>шо</u>   |
| кид   | 'hand, arm' | кид <u>ше</u>   |
| ак    | 'price'     | ак <u>ше</u>    |
| пырыс | 'cat'       | пырыс <u>ше</u> |
| кагаз | 'paper'     | кагаз <u>ше</u> |
| вож   | 'root'      | вож <u>шо</u>   |
| поч   | 'tail'      | поч <u>шо</u>   |
| раб   | 'slave'     | раб <u>ше</u>   |
| флаг  | 'flag'      | флаг <u>ше</u>  |
| миф   | 'myth'      | миф <u>ше</u>   |
| плащ  | 'raincoat'  | плащ <u>ше</u>  |
| степь | 'steppe'    | степь <u>ше</u> |

- *-ыжE* after *-ш*, with *-ыж* existing as a short form. Especially in spoken language, one can however also encounter the form *-шE* here (without a short form).

|     |          |                        |
|-----|----------|------------------------|
| еш  | 'family' | ешыже ~ ешыж ~ ешше    |
| уш  | 'mind'   | ушыжо ~ ушыж ~ ушшо    |
| ӱпш | 'smell'  | ӱпшыжӧ ~ ӱпшыж ~ ӱпшшӧ |

1.22. Attach the possessive suffix third person singular to the following stem. Give all possible variants, where multiple variants exist.

1. *ава* 'mother'
2. *шүэ* 'ant hill'
3. *кече* 'sun; day'
4. *шерже* 'comb'
5. *лум* 'snow'
6. *шот* 'use, benefit'
7. *рож* 'hole'
8. *йолташ* 'friend'
9. *кӱртньӧ* 'iron'
10. *июль* 'July'

1.23. What is the base form of the given suffixed words?

1. *верже* 'his/her place'
2. *изаже* 'his/her elder brother'
3. *шуйже* 'his/her silver'
4. *йӱдшӧ* 'his/her night'
5. *йылмыже* 'his/her tongue'
6. *ожсыжо* 'his/her stallion'
7. *пушыжо* 'his/her boat'
8. *кӱртньыжӧ* 'his/her iron'
9. *пальтож* 'his/her overcoat'
10. *йӧратымышыж* 'his/her love'

### 1.6.9. Simple past I, 1<sup>st</sup> conjugation, 1SG – 2SG – 3PL

See 7.1.1.2 – page 208.

### 1.6.10. Simple past I, 1<sup>st</sup> conjugation, 3SG

See 7.1.1.2 – page 208.

### 1.6.11. Ø-suffixes (zero ending – e.g., connegative form)

See 7.1.0 – page 198.

### 1.6.12. Some notes on newer Russian loan words and internationalisms

#### Nouns in -e and -o

A number of Russian and international nouns do not experience the reduction and deletion of final unstressed vowels that characteristically occurs in indigenous vocabulary, and in the case of older loan words.

Such words include – illustrated with the genitive in *-н*, and the possessive suffix first person singular *-ем*:

- Word ending on multiple vowels:

|       |         |                |                 |
|-------|---------|----------------|-----------------|
| аудио | 'audio' | аудион         | аудио <u>эм</u> |
| видео | 'video' | видео <u>н</u> | видео <u>эм</u> |

Also for example: *радио* 'radio', *стерео* 'stereo', *трио* 'trio'.

- Words ending in -ье:

|           |                 |                    |                     |
|-----------|-----------------|--------------------|---------------------|
| поместье  | 'estate'        | поместье <u>н</u>  | поместье <u>эм</u>  |
| Заполярье | 'polar regions' | Заполярье <u>н</u> | Заполярье <u>эм</u> |

Also for example: *поместье* 'estate', *пятиборье* 'pentathlon', *ущелье* 'gorge'.

- Words ending in an unstressed final -e or -o that violates the rules of vowel harmony, and that are indeclinable in Russian:

|         |           |                  |                   |
|---------|-----------|------------------|-------------------|
| вето    | 'veto'    | вето <u>н</u>    | вето <u>эм</u>    |
| караоке | 'karaoke' | караоке <u>н</u> | караоке <u>эм</u> |

Also for example: *евро* 'Euro', *кофе* 'coffee', *танго* 'tango'.

### Nouns in -a

Numerous (but by no means all) Russian loan words, internationalisms, and place names ending in an unstressed final -a are subject to orthographically marked vowel reduction and deletion that usually only affects -e, -o, and -ö – exemplified by the genitive in -н, and the possessive suffix first person singular -ем:

|         |             |                  |                  |
|---------|-------------|------------------|------------------|
| Вена    | 'Vienna'    | Вены <u>н</u>    | Вене <u>м</u>    |
| невежда | 'ignoramus' | невежды <u>н</u> | невежде <u>м</u> |

Also for example: *Рига* 'Riga', *серa* 'sulfur'.

For reasons that are not entirely transparent, other words ending in an unstressed -a are not subject to the same reduction, e.g., *роза* 'rose' → *розан*. The Mari-English dictionary found at [dict.mari-language.com](http://dict.mari-language.com) indicates if a final unstressed -a should be reduced or not.

1.24. The following list shows nouns, and suffixed forms of the same nouns. Is the suffix attached to the base word ( a ) the possessive suffix first person singular -ем (an E-suffix) ( b ) the accusative suffix -м (an I-suffix), or ( c ) both/either?

1. *иза* 'elder brother' → *изам*
2. *күзö* 'knife' → *күзем*
3. *менге* 'column' → *менгем*
4. *пече* 'fence' → *печем*
5. *пу* 'wood' → *пум*
6. *чия* 'paint' → *чиям*
7. *метро* 'metro' → *метром*
8. *туй* 'louse' → *туйем*
9. *кү* 'stone' → *күэм*
10. *изу* 'small (one)' → *изуэм*

1.25. The following list shows nouns, and suffixed forms of the same nouns. Is the suffix attached to the base word ( a ) the possessive suffix second person singular *-em* (an E-suffix), ( b ) the enclitic particle *-am* 'and' (an A-suffix), or ( c ) both/either?

1. *ний* 'dog' → *ният*
2. *лудо* 'duck' → *лудет*
3. *ателье* 'atelier' → *ательет*
4. *парня* 'finger' → *парнят*
5. *ний* 'bast' → *ниет*
6. *стиль* 'style' → *стилят*
7. *шудо* 'grass' → *шудат*
8. *пасу* 'field' → *пасуат*
9. *омса* 'door' → *омсат*
10. *бюро* 'office' → *бюроат*

1.26. The following list shows nouns, and suffixed forms of the same nouns. Is the suffix attached to the base word ( a ) the adjective derivational suffix *-ан* 'with' (an A-suffix), ( b ) the genitive *-н* (an bl-suffix), or ( c ) both/either?

1. *ваче* 'shoulder' → *вачын*
2. *йоча* 'child' → *йочан*
3. *ту* 'gland' → *туан*
4. *ий* 'ice' → *иян*
5. *сагыл'е* 'hook' → *сагыл'ын*
6. *кече* 'sun' → *кечан*
7. *перке* 'abundance' → *перкен*
8. *коя* 'fat' → *коян*
9. *ен* 'person' → *енан*
10. *енга* 'sister-in-law' → *енган*

1.27. Complete the following table.

| English      | Nominative  | PX1SG<br><i>-ем</i> | Clitic <i>-am</i><br>'and, also' | Genitive<br><i>-н</i> | Inessive<br><i>-шмЕ</i> | PX1PL<br><i>-на</i> |
|--------------|-------------|---------------------|----------------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|---------------------|
| 'oak'        | <i>тумо</i> |                     |                                  |                       |                         |                     |
| 'work'       |             | <i>пашам</i>        |                                  |                       |                         |                     |
| 'anthill'    |             |                     | <i>шуэат</i>                     |                       |                         |                     |
| 'metro'      |             |                     |                                  | <i>метрон</i>         |                         |                     |
| 'stereo'     |             |                     |                                  |                       | <i>стереошто</i>        |                     |
| 'gold'       |             |                     |                                  |                       |                         | <i>шортньына</i>    |
| 'shampoo'    |             |                     |                                  |                       |                         | <i>шампуньна</i>    |
| 'coffee'     |             |                     |                                  |                       | <i>кофеште</i>          |                     |
| 'the Arctic' |             |                     |                                  | <i>Заполярьен</i>     |                         |                     |
| 'Austria'    |             |                     | <i>Австрият</i>                  |                       |                         |                     |
| 'coming'     |             | <i>толмашем</i>     |                                  |                       |                         |                     |
| 'Riga'       | <i>Рига</i> |                     |                                  |                       |                         |                     |

## 2. Nouns

### 2.0. General remarks

Suffixation: In keeping with the agglutinative character of the Mari language, a large number of nominal suffixes can be attached to Mari nouns. If we disregard derivational suffixes (see 11 – page 369) as well as clitics (see 9– page 328), these suffixes can be assigned to one of three categories as regards their basic function/meaning: number suffixes, possessive suffixes, and case suffixes. Since the lack of a number suffix implies singular number and the lack of a case suffix implies the nominative case, the only optional category here is that of possessivity. In other words, a Mari noun will always show number and case while possessivity is nonobligatory.

|              |  |
|--------------|--|
| йоча         | child (nominative singular)                            |
| йоча-влак    | children (nominative plural)                           |
| йочалан      | to the child (dative singular)                         |
| йоча-влаклан | to the children (dative plural)                        |
| йочам        | my child (nominative singular + possessive suffix 1SG) |
| ...          | ...  |

The ordering of the nominal suffixes in a word can present difficulties, since there are alternative orderings if a noun has suffixes from two or three of the nominal categories listed above. The individual possibilities will be discussed below.

Definiteness/indefiniteness: These categories are far more weakly defined in Mari than in English. Mari does not use either a definite or an indefinite article. The word *мут* 'word' can thus be translated as 'word, 'a word, or 'the word' as context requires.

Animacy/inanimacy: A category relevant for Mari nouns in numeral and case suffixation is that of animacy/inanimacy. Animate nouns refer to people or animals and inanimate nouns refer to all else. Inanimate nouns can be used in all noun cases, whereas animate nouns only rarely occur in local cases. This category will be revisited whenever structurally relevant.

### 2.1. Number

Mari differentiates between two numbers, singular and plural. The plural can be formed with various suffixes, while the singular has no ending, i.e., a noun without a plural suffix is grammatically (although not necessarily semantically, see below) in the singular.

#### 2.1.1. Singular

There are several similarities as well as differences as regards the usage of the singular in Mari and in English.

1. Singularia tantum in both Mari and English: Many Mari nouns are generally used only in the singular with their counterparts in English also typically appearing only in the singular. These are for the most part proper names, place names, abstract nouns (e.g., *тазалык* 'health'), mass nouns (e.g., *йӱ* 'butter'), or nouns designating natural phenomena (e.g., *лунс* 'dew').

2. Singular in Mari, plural in English: In many cases, Mari uses nouns in the singular where English would demand the plural. As a tendency, Mari avoids using grammatically plural forms when the semantic plurality is implied for other reasons – when semantic plurality is understood from the context, it is not necessary to use plural forms.

In the following table, the noun *серыш* 'letter' is grammatically and syntactically singular in sentence 1), while in sentence 2) it is grammatically and syntactically plural. In sentences 3) to 5), the word *серыш* occurs in a grammatically singular form, but plural semantics are understood from context.

|    |   |  |
|----|---|--|
| 1) | Серыш толын.                                | A <u>letter</u> came.                                      |
| 2) | Серыш-влак толыныт.                         | <u>Letters</u> came.                                       |
| 3) | Кок <u>серыш</u> толын.                     | Two <u>letters</u> came.                                   |
| 4) | Серыш толеден.                              | <u>Letters</u> came. (repeatedly)                          |
| 5) | Почтальон – тиде <u>серышым</u> кондышо ег. | A letter carrier is someone that delivers <u>letters</u> . |

The most important and common cases where Mari uses grammatically singular forms in spite of semantic plurality are:

a) Singular after numerals and quantifiers: After a number the noun remains in the singular: *ик урем* 'one street', *кок пачер* 'two apartments', *кум ушкал* 'three cows', *ныл икшыве* 'four children', *вич ер* 'five lakes', etc. The same applies to quantifiers such as *мыняр* 'how much/how many?', *шуко* 'much/many', *шагал* 'little/few': *мыняр ний?* 'how many dogs?', *шуко ний* 'many dogs', *шагал ний* 'few dogs'.

If these constructions function as subjects, the finite verb is conjugated in the singular as well.

|                                   |                                  |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Пырыс шöрым <u>йöэш</u> .         | The cat <u>drinks</u> milk.      |
| Кум пырыс шöрым <u>йöэш</u> .     | Three cats <u>drink</u> milk.    |
| Пырыс-влак шöрым <u>йöйт</u> .    | The cats <u>drink</u> milk.      |
| Тунемше школыш <u>кая</u> .       | The pupil <u>goes</u> to school. |
| Шуко тунемше школыш <u>кая</u> .  | Many pupils <u>go</u> to school. |
| Тунемше-влак школыш <u>каят</u> . | The pupils <u>go</u> to school.  |

On occasion, plural suffixes do occur after quantifiers: *кок öдыр-влак* 'two girls', *шуко студент-влак* 'many students' This is discouraged by prescriptive grammarians.

b) Pair nouns: Mari typically uses pair nouns in the singular only. Such nouns are for example: *кид* 'hand/hands', *кем* 'boot/boots', *шинча* 'eye/eyes', *ече* 'ski/skis', *пылыш* 'ear', *пиж* 'mitten/mittens'.

|                               |                                     |
|-------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <u>Кидетым</u> мушкынат?      | Have you washed your <u>hands</u> ? |
| <u>Шинчам</u> начар ужеш.     | I've got poor <u>eyesight</u> .     |
| Мерагын <u>пылышыже</u> кужу. | The rabbit's <u>ears</u> are long.  |

To refer to one item in the paired group the words *ик* 'one' (and *веч* 'other') and *нел* 'half' can be used, or one can refer specifically to the left or right item of a pair.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Пел шинчам</u> дене пеш начар ужам.                            | I see very poorly on <u>one eye</u> .   |
| Öдырын <u>пел кидыштыже</u> мотор кидшол.                         | The girl has a beautiful bracelet <u>on her wrist</u> .   |
| <u>Пурла йолыштыжо</u> йошкар носки, <u>шола йолыштыжо</u> канде. | S/he's got a red sock <u>on his/her right foot</u> and a blue one <u>on his/her left foot</u> . |
| <u>Ик кидыштем</u> сумка, <u>веч кидыштем</u> комдо.              | There's a bag <u>in one of my hands</u> and a basket <u>in my other hand</u> .                  |

If one wishes to explicitly refer to both elements of a pair, the word *кок* 'two' can be used in the sense of 'both', often in combination with the clitic *-am* (see 9.1.1 – page 328) and the comitative ending *-ge* (see 2.4.9 – page 94).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Кок шинчамат</u> коршта, икте веле огыл. ~ | <u>Both my eyes</u> hurt, not just one. |
| <u>Кок шинчамге</u> коршта, икте веле огыл.   |   |

If one attaches plural suffixes to nouns denoting paired items, it is understood to refer to several pairs of the item in question: *кем-влак* '(pairs of) boots. If one wishes to refer to several pairs of something, the word *мужыр* 'pair' is used: *ныл мужыр кем* 'four pairs of shoes'.



c) **Collective nouns:** To a much greater degree in Mari than in English a noun can appear in the singular when in context it is clear that more than one is meant.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Пазарыште таче <u>олмам</u> налым.         | I bought <u>apples</u> at the market today. |
| Катялан сылне <u>пеледышым</u> пӧлекленыт. | Katya was given beautiful <u>flowers</u> .  |
| Пушенге гыч <u>дышташ</u> йога.            | <u>Leaves</u> are falling from the tree.    |
| Тыште <u>колым</u> кучаш огеш лий.         | You can't catch <u>fish</u> here.           |
| Мый <u>кишке</u> деч ом лӱд.               | I'm not afraid of <u>snakes</u> .           |

Note also that Mari has a propensity towards using (grammatically singular) collective nouns, often formed by compounding, where English uses plural forms, e.g.: *ача-ава* 'parents (lit. father-mother)', *кӱмыж-совла* 'dishes (lit. dish-spoon)'. This compounding strategy will be reviewed in 11.2.2 – page 371.

d) **Predicative nouns:** Nouns in the predicate are not put into the plural even if the subject bears a plural suffix.

|                                   |                                 |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Ме <u>тунемше</u> улына.          | We are <u>students</u> .        |
| Те <u>марий</u> улыда?            | Are you <u>Maris</u> ?          |
| Йолташем-влак <u>мурызо</u> улыт. | My friends are <u>singers</u> . |

3. **Noun in singular, verb in plural:** On occasion, a grammatically singular noun that refers to a group of sorts (e.g., *калык* 'people', *кӱмӱ* 'herd', *еш* 'family'), or pair nouns/collective nouns discussed above, co-occur with plural forms of verbs. In these cases, singular verbal forms are however also possible, and recommended by prescriptive grammarians.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Кӱтӱ</u> мӱндыр олыкышто кочкын <u>коштыт</u> ~ <u>коштеш</u> . | <u>The herd is grazing</u> on a distant field. |
| <u>Шинчаже</u> <u>ылыжыч</u> ~ <u>ылыже</u> .                      | <u>His/her eyes lit up</u> .                   |
| Шелше гыч <u>мӱкш</u> <u>лектыт</u> ~ <u>лектеш</u> .              | <u>Bees are coming out</u> of the crack.       |

2.1. Insert the fitting noun in the singular. The options are given below.

- Нелеш ида нал, кызыт мыняр ...?  
– Нылыт.
- Тиде ... шерге мо? Мош шога?
- Тендан дене чодыраште ... ила мо?
- Нуно ... улыт: кевытыште пашам ыштат.
- Уремыште ... лумеш.  
(кем, лум, ужалыше, шагат, маска)
- Мемнан зоопаркыште 3 ... уло.
- Йолташем-влак Тартушто илат. Нуно ... улыт.
- Олыкышто ... пеш шуко. Ик шагатыште 10 литрым погенна.
- «Ромео ден Джульетта» пьесе мо нерген?  
– ... нерген.
- Уремыште йӱштӧ, кид кылма, садлан ... кӱлеш.  
(снеге, эстон, йӧратымаш, пижерге, пире)

### 2.1.2. Plural

The following suffixes can be used to form the plural of Mari nouns: *-влак*, *-шамыч*, *-ла*, and *-мыт*. Although all four of these suffixes express a plurality of some sort, they are only partially interchangeable. The suffixes *-влак* and *-шамыч* have the same function and distribution, but differ in frequency. The suffix *-ла* has the same basic function as *-влак* and *-шамыч* but differs

from them in distribution and frequency. The suffix *-мым* differs from the other three in function, distribution and frequency.

### 2.1.2.1. *-влак*

**Attachment to stem:** H-suffix (see 1.6.1 – page 43). This suffix is unstressed.

**Function:** The major function of *-влак* is to mark the normal additive plural: that is to say, plural forms of this type refer to a homogenous group: *нӧрм-влак* 'houses' refers to a group where every element is a *нӧрм* 'house'. The suffix *-влак* can, however, also be used like *-мым* to denote the associative plural (see discussion below in 2.1.2.4 – page 60).

**Distribution:** The suffix *-влак* can be used in all cases and with all possessive suffixes, though it is comparatively unusual in combination with some case suffixes. These tendencies will be discussed in the sections on the individual cases.

**Frequency:** This plural suffix is by far the most widely used plural suffix in literary Mari.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Студент-влак экзаменлан тунемыт.         | The <u>students</u> are studying for the exam. |
| Мыйын родо-влак Пошкырт кундемаште илат. | My <u>relatives</u> live in Bashkortostan      |
| Уремыште пий-влак опат.                  | <u>Dogs</u> are barking outside.               |
| Кудывечыште машина-влак шогат.           | <u>Cars</u> are parked in the yard.            |
| Марий книга-влак кушто улыт?             | Where are the Mari <u>books</u> ?              |

### 2.2. Form the plural in *-влак* of the following nouns.

1. ял
2. ола
3. рвезе
4. ўдыр
5. йылме

### 2.3. Is it necessary to put the italicized word in the plural, using the suffix *-влак*, to express semantic plurality? Which verbal form is appropriate?

1. Турист... унагудышто ила/илат.
2. Изам-влак спортсмен... улеш/улыт.
3. Катян кидше ... кылма/кылмат.
4. Шуко ен... англичанла кутыра/кутырат.
5. Йоча... кудывечыште модеш/модыт.
6. Пакчаштына мӧр... кӱэш/кӱыт.
7. Марий Элыште пеш яндар энер... йога/йогат.
8. Тиде арняште онгай концерт... лиеш/лийыт.
9. Ленан йолжо... коршта/корштат.
10. Стадионышто куд йоча... куржталеш/куржталыт.

### 2.1.2.2. *-шамыч*

**Attachment to stem:** H-suffix (see 1.6.1 – page 43). This suffix is stressed.

**Function:** The major function of *-шамыч* is to mark the normal additive, homogeneous plural. It can, however, also be used like *-мым* to denote the associative plural (see discussion below in 2.1.2.4 – page 60).

**Distribution:** The suffix *-шамыч* can be used in all cases and with all possessive suffixes, though it is comparatively unusual in combination with some case suffixes. These tendencies will be discussed in the sections on the individual cases.

**Frequency:** The only difference between *-шамыч* and *-влак* lies in their frequency. The suffix *-влак* is used far more frequently in Mari than *-шамыч*. The two suffixes are native to different dialects. As a result, generally speaking, individual speakers of Mari will prefer one of these plural suffixes or the other, based on their background.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Йыван финн-угор йылме-шамычым тунемеш.                           | Yyvan is studying <u>Finno-Ugric languages</u> .                 |
| Пырыс-шамыч куш каеныт?  | Where have <u>the cats</u> gone?                                 |
| Нине пӱрт-шамыч мотор улыт.                                      | <u>These houses</u> are beautiful.                               |
| 8-ше мартыште пӱрӱен-шамыч ӱдырамаш-шамычлан пеледышым пӱлеклат. | On March 8 <sup>th</sup> , <u>men</u> give <u>women</u> flowers. |

2.4. Form the plural in *-шамыч* of the following nouns.

1. туныктышо
2. пий
3. омса
4. ӱстел
5. ужалыше

2.1.2.3. *-ла*

**Attachment to stem:** N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48). This suffix is not to be confused with the (unstressed) comparative case suffix *-ла* (see 2.4.8 – page 91), the adverbial suffix *-ла* (see 8.3 – page 318), or the clitic *-ла* (see 9.1.4 – page 331).

**Function:** Just like *-влак* and *-шамыч* the suffix *-ла* is used to form the normal additive homogeneous plural, but whereas *-влак* and *-шамыч* rarely occur instead of *-мым* to denote the associative plural, *-ла* cannot be utilized in this function.

**Distribution:** The major difference between *-влак* and *-шамыч* on the one hand and *-ла* on the other lies in the distribution of the latter. The suffix *-ла* is most typically attached to inanimate nouns with a local meaning when these nouns are used in a local case (inessive, illative, lative) or stands before a postposition, e.g., *насу* ‘field’ → *насулаште* ‘in the fields’, *насулаш(ке)* ‘(in)to the fields’, *насулаш* ‘in/into the fields’, *насула гыч* ‘from the fields’. More rarely, it can be employed in the nominative and accusative cases.

Only the possessive suffixes of the third person (see 2.2.1.2 – page 63, and 2.2.1.4 – page 64) are attached to plural forms using this suffix. When third-person possessive suffixes occur, they as a rule are used in their determinative function (see [...] – page [...]).

**Frequency:** Due to its restricted scope the suffix *-ла* does not occur nearly as frequently as *-влак* (*-шамыч*), but it is by no means rare, presenting in addition a stylistic alternative to the other plural suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Нине яллаште марий-влак илат.                  | Maris live <u>in these villages</u> .                          |
| Турист-влак Марий Элышке йот элла гычат толыт. | Tourists come to Mari El <u>from other countries as well</u> . |
| Эчан онгай кафелашке кошташ йӱрата.            | Echan likes going <u>to interesting cafés</u> .                |
| Пытартыш кечылаште начар малем.                | I’ve not been sleeping well <u>the last few days</u> .         |
| Фильмыште 1960-шо ийлам ончыктат.              | <u>The 1960s</u> are shown in the film.                        |

2.5. Form the plural in *-ла* from the following nouns in a local case.

1. пакчаште
2. тылзыште
3. кўварышке
4. курымышко
5. уремыште

2.6. Form the plural in *-ла* from the given noun, in the illative or inessive, as appropriate.

1. Тиде книга лудшо-влакым 1980-ше ... (ий) пörтылта.
2. «Марий Эл» ансамблын ... (концерт) шуко калык коштеш.
3. Кунам, могай ... (тылзе) Марий Элышке кудалаш эн сай?
4. Марий ... (интернет-лаштык) мо нерген возат?
5. Могай финн ... (ола) те мыланна каяш темледа?

#### 2.1.2.4. Associative plural in *-мым*

Attachment to stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

Function: The suffix *-мым* contrasts strongly with the other plural suffixes in that it is not used to denote an additive, homogenous plural, but rather an associative, heterogenous plural. Where for example *нөрм-влак* refers to a set whose members are all *нөрм* (*нөрм* + *нөрм* + *нөрм*, etc.), the form *Петямым* does not mean *Петя* + *Петя* + *Петя*, etc. but rather ‘*Петя* and other people associated with *Петя*’. Here *Петя* is the focal referent, all other members of the set are associates.

The focal referent of the plural in *-мым* can be a proper (given or family) name (e.g., *Серге* → *Сергемым* or *Санаев* → *Санаевмым*) or kin names (e.g., *ава* ‘mother’ → *авамым*, *изай* ‘older brother’ → *изаймым* – see 2.4.1.3 – page 69 – as regards kin names). A possessive suffix can be attached to the kin name and precede the plural suffix (*ачашт* ‘their father’ → *ачаштмым*). The exact translation of a noun + *-мым* will depend on the context. Thus, *Санаевмым* could mean ‘the Sapayevs, Sapayev and his family, Sapayev and those with him’, *Сергемым* ‘Серге and his family, Серге and those with him, Серге and his friends’, *авамым* ‘my mother and her group, my mother and those with her’.

Distribution: The associative plural in *-мым* can be marked for case, but as it generally refers to animate nouns, it does not as a rule occur in local cases. The ordering of suffixes is always *-мым* + case ending. Possessive suffixes are only attached to these plural forms in determinative meanings (see [...] – page [...]).

Frequency: Due to the semantic restrictions for the focal referent the plural in *-мым* is far less common than the other plural suffixes, but it is by no means rare.

|                                    |  |
|------------------------------------|--|
| <u>Эчукмыт</u> кунам толыт?        | When are <u>Echuk</u> and <u>his family</u> coming?              |
| <u>Акаймыт</u> пачерым налыныт.    | <u>My big sister</u> and <u>her family</u> bought a flat.        |
| <u>Кокажмыт</u> Юл воктене илат.   | <u>His/her aunt</u> and <u>his/her family</u> live by the Volga. |
| <u>Ивановмытын</u> кум йочашт уло. | <u>The Ivanovs</u> have three children.                          |
| Тый <u>шолычмытлан</u> полшет мо?  | Do you help <u>your brother</u> and <u>his family</u> ?          |

2.7. The noun given in parentheses should either receive the plural suffix *-влак*, or the associative plural suffix *-мым*. Which one is appropriate?

1. ... (Аня) машинам ужалат.
2. «Майатул» фестивальыште финн-угор ... (театр) шке мастарлыкштым ончыктат.
3. Ончыч шукын йочалан Саша лўмым пуэныт. Тендан классыште ... (Саша) мынярын лийыныт?
4. Ижевскышке ... (Васлий) дене пырля кудалына.
5. Ойлат, пуйто ... (ава) утларак эргышт-влакым йōратат.

*-влак/-шамыч = -мым*: Note that it is also possible, albeit rare, to use the more usual plural suffix(es) to form an associative plural, e.g., *Сапаев-влак/Сапаев-шамыч ~ Сапаевмым*.

## 2.2. Possession

To indicate possession on a noun Mari uses three strategies: a) a possessive suffix attached to the noun (*йочам* 'my child'), b) a personal pronoun in the genitive case preceding the noun marked with a possessive suffix (*мыйын йочам*), c) a personal pronoun in the genitive case preceding the noun which is not followed by a possessive suffix (*мыйын йоча*). These strategies will be discussed below in this order.

Adnominal possessive constructions involving two or more nouns (e.g., *Елун эргыже* 'Yelu's son', *Серген ўдыржō* 'Serge's daughter', *Елу ден Серген йочашт* 'Yelu and Serge's child') will be discussed below (.

### 2.2.1. Possession with possessive suffix only

The primary indication of possession in Mari nouns takes place with possessive suffixes added to the noun. In this case the noun is considered the possession and the possessive suffix expresses the possessor. There are separate possessive suffixes for the three grammatical persons and the two numbers (singular and plural), in all a total of six:

|            | лўм 'name' |
|------------|------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | лўмем      |
| <b>2Sg</b> | лўмет      |
| <b>3Sg</b> | лўмжō      |
| <b>1Pl</b> | лўмна      |
| <b>2Pl</b> | лўмда      |
| <b>3Pl</b> | лўмышт     |

The plurality of the possessed is expressed with the usual number suffixes (see 2.1.2 – page 57) and will be discussed separately below.

Note that the possessive suffixes also have additional, secondary functions, which, however, will be discussed under other headings (e.g., vocative under 2.4.1.3 – page 69, determining function under [...] – page [...]). Possessive suffixes can be attached to parts of speech other than nouns, e.g., postpositions (see chapter 6 – page 158) and some gerunds (see 7.2 – page 250). In this chapter, the focus will lie on their usage with nouns, as markers of possession.

#### 2.2.1.1. Possessive suffixes: 1SG (-ем), 2SG (-ем)

Attachment to stem: E-suffixes (see 1.6.2 – page 43).

|                            |                                  |
|----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <u>Авам туныктышо.</u>     | <u>My mother</u> is a teacher.   |
| <u>Лүмем Йыван.</u>        | <u>My name</u> is Yyvan.         |
| <u>Шочмо йылмем марий.</u> | <u>My mother tongue</u> is Mari. |
| <u>Лүмет кузе?</u>         | What's <u>your name</u> ?        |
| <u>Пашат кузе кая?</u>     | How's <u>your work</u> going?    |

2.8. Attach the possessive suffix first and second persons singular to the following stems.

1. кид
2. кўтў
3. коля
4. ача
5. родо
6. шўжар
7. кўзё
8. кече
9. вуй
10. метро

After the possessive suffix first person singular, the accusative suffix -м is on occasion dropped: *изамым* ~ *изам* 'my elder brother (accusative)'.

**Kinship Terms:** In the case of a small number of kinship terms there are alternate possessive suffixes for the first and second persons singular. Of the words belonging to this group, almost all end in an unstressed -Е which then becomes -ы before the possessive suffix -м (first person singular) and -ч (second person singular). In the case of чўчў 'uncle' the stressed final vowel remains before the endings -м/-ч. Note that with all these words possessive suffixation is also possible using the 'regular' forms, in other words, the usage of the alternative forms is not obligatory. The irregular forms are, however, far more common in usage. Note in addition that alternative possessive suffixes are to be found exclusively in the first and second persons singular, i.e., in all other persons no corresponding alternative forms exist.

|         | 1SG                | 2SG                | Translation                                |
|---------|--------------------|--------------------|--|
| вене    | веным (венем)      | веныч (венет)      | son-in-law                                 |
| оньо    | оньым (онем)       | оньыч (онет)       | father-in-law                              |
| чўчў    | чўчўм (чўчўэм)     | чўчўч (чўчўэт)     | (maternal) uncle                           |
| чўчўньё | чўчўньым (чўчўнєм) | чўчўньыч (чўчўнет) | aunt, maternal uncle's wife                |
| шешке   | шешкым (шешкем)    | шешкыч (шешкет)    | daughter-in-law                            |
| шольо   | шольым (шолем)     | шольыч (шолет)     | (younger) brother                          |
| эрге    | эргым (эргем)      | эргыч (эргет)      | son  |
| нудо    | нудым (нудем)      | нудыч (нудет)      | sister-in-law<br>(spouse's younger sister) |

|                                    |   |
|------------------------------------|---|
| <u>Оньюм ялыште ила.</u>           | <u>My father-in-law</u> lives in the countryside. |
| <u>Шешкым школышто пашам ышта.</u> | <u>My daughter-in-law</u> works in a school.      |
| <u>Веным программист.</u>          | <u>My son-in-law</u> is a programmer.             |
| <u>Чўчўч мыняр ияш?</u>            | How old is <u>your uncle</u> ?                    |
| <u>Чўчўньыч кушеч улеш?</u>        | Where's <u>your aunt</u> from?                    |

2.9. Attach the possessive suffix first person singular to the following kinship terms. If it has alternative forms, give both.

1. ўдыр
2. эрге
3. иза
4. шольо
5. шўжар

2.10. Attach the possessive suffix second person singular to the kinship term in parentheses after the sentence. If it has alternative forms, give both.

1. ... Москошто тунемеш мо? (уныка)
2. ... мыйым школышто туныктен. (чўчў)
3. ... финнла сайын кутыра. (вате)
4. ... тыланда полша мо? (шешке)
5. ... пеш ушан айдеме. (вене)

### 2.2.1.2. Possessive suffixes: 3SG (-жЕ ~ -шЕ ~ -ыжЕ ~ -ж)

Regarding the attachment of this suffix to base forms, see 1.6.8 – page 50.

|                                       |   |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| <u>Коваже</u> тамле подкогыльым ышта. | <u>His/her grandmother</u> makes tasty dumplings. |
| <u>Эргыже</u> футболла модеш.         | <u>His/her son</u> is playing football.           |
| <u>Пийже</u> киярымат кочкеш.         | <u>His/her dog</u> will even eat cucumbers.       |
| <u>Пырыше</u> колым йўрата.           | <u>His/her cat</u> likes fish.                    |
| <u>Йолташыже</u> гитар дене шокта.    | <u>His/her friend</u> plays the guitar.           |

2.11. Attach the possessive suffix third person singular to the following stems.

1. кид
2. йол
3. шўргө
4. шинча
5. нер
6. пылыш
7. туп
8. ваче
9. шўм
10. парня

2.12. Attach the possessive suffix third person singular to the noun in parentheses and insert into the sentence.

1. ... шеме да кудыр. (ўп)
2. ... Юл воктене верланен. (ял)
3. ... шуко йылмым пала. (туныктышо)
4. ... кужу, но онгай. (книга)
5. ... тошто: эркын пашам ышта. (компьютер)
6. ... неле лийын. (ылыш)
7. ... кугу да мотор. (пўрт)
8. ... музыкант: пианино дене шокта. (пошкудо)
9. ... Озангыш илаш куснен. (шўжар)
10. ... школыш коштеш. (йоча)

### 2.2.1.3. Possessive suffixes: 1PL (-на), 2PL (-да)

Attachment to stem: N-suffixes (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

|                                  |  |
|----------------------------------|--|
| <u>Олана</u> пеш у жарге.        | <u>Our city</u> is very green.                     |
| <u>Ешна</u> кугу: шымытын улына. | <u>Our family</u> is large: there are seven of us. |
| <u>Ўдырна</u> эмлызылан тунемеш. | <u>Our daughter</u> is studying to be a doctor.    |
| <u>Эргыда</u> кушто ила?         | Where does <u>your son</u> live?                   |
| <u>Телефон номерда</u> могай?    | What is <u>your phone number</u> ?                 |

2.13. Attach the possessive suffixes of the first and second persons plural to the following stems.

1. коча
2. чўчў
3. шольо
4. йолташ
5. пий
6. паша
7. университет
8. мланде
9. эл
10. пачер

2.14. Attach the possessive suffix first or second person singular to the noun in parentheses and insert into the sentence. The suffix to be chosen is indicated with 1PL or 2PL.

1. Марий Эл ... чодыралан поян. (республик, 1PL)
2. Эн кугу ... – тиде Юл. (энгер, 1PL)
3. Шочмо ... могай? (йылме, 2PL)
4. ... кузе маналтеш? (рўдола, 2PL)
5. Калык ... могай? (кочкыш, 2PL)

#### 2.2.1.4. Possessive suffixes: 3PL (-um)

Attachment to stem: Ы-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Акашт</u> кызыт Карелийыште кана.            | <u>Their elder sister</u> is currently on a holiday in Karelia. |
| <u>Вуйлатышышт</u> пенсийыш кая.                | <u>Their boss</u> is retiring.                                  |
| <u>Ўдырышт</u> интернет-журналлан статьям воза. | <u>Their daughter</u> writes articles for a web journal.        |
| <u>Палымышт</u> – уста сўретче.                 | <u>Their acquaintance</u> is a talented artist.                 |
| <u>Унашт</u> тортым конден.                     | <u>Their guest</u> brought a cake.                              |

It should be noted that this suffix always indicates plurality of the possessor (their), but if implied by context it can be understood to indicate plurality of possession as well.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Профессор-влак <u>ватышт</u> дене толыныт.        | The professors came with <u>their wives</u> .             |
| Эвика ден Эчукын <u>унашт</u> ўстелтўрыштў шинчат | Evika and Echuk's <u>guests</u> are sitting at the table. |



2.15. Attach the possessive suffix third person plural to the following stems.

1. сурт
2. кудо
3. кудывече
4. пакча
5. таве
6. монча
7. конга
8. пӧлем
9. устел
10. пӱкен

2.16. Attach the possessive suffix third person plural to the noun in parentheses and insert into the sentence.

1. ... кугу огыл. (ял)
2. ... яндар. (урем)
3. ... почмо. (капка)
4. ... пеледеш. (олмапу)
5. ... начар. (паренге)

2.17. Add all possessive suffixes to the following stems.

1. лӱм
2. йылме
3. паша
4. еш
5. пӧрт
6. ава
7. марий
8. вате
9. удыр
10. йолташ

2.18. Add a possessive suffix to the italicized noun in the following sentences. The appropriate possessive suffix is indicated in parentheses after the sentence.

1. *Пӧлек* мылам пеш шерге. (2SG)
2. *Пеледыш* моторын пеледеш. (3SG)
3. *Туныктышо* онгай урокым эртара. (1PL)
4. *Книга* мо нерген? (2PL)
5. *Иза* ача-авалан чот полша. (3PL)
6. *Шольо* физик лияш шона. (1SG)
7. *Шӱжар* яра жапыште мом ышташ йӧрата? (2SG)
8. *Имне* писын кудалеш. (1PL)
9. *Пырыс* шӧрым огеш коч. (3SG)
10. *Пий* йоча-влак дене модаш йӧрата. (1SG)

#### 2.2.1.5. Plurality of possession

As seen above, the persons and plurality of the possessor is expressed by the choice of possessive suffix. To express the plurality of the possession the usual number suffixes *-влак* and *-шамыч* are employed. (Possession is not customarily expressed on plural forms using *-ла* and *-мым*.) As regards the ordering of the possessive and the number suffixes, there are two possibilities, as seen in the following table: a) the possessive suffix (Px) attaches to the noun, followed by the number suffix (Nx), b) the number suffix (Nx) attaches to the noun and the possessive suffix (Px) is attached to the number suffix. The ordering Px + Nx is more common.

| Px + Nx      | Nx + Px      |
|--------------|--------------|
| пөртем-влак  | пөрт-влакем  |
| пөртет-влак  | пөрт-влакет  |
| пөртшө-влак  | пөрт-влакше  |
| пөртна-влак  | пөрт-влакна  |
| пөртда-влак  | пөрт-влакда  |
| пörтышт-влак | пөрт-влакышт |

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Йочам-шамыч</u> студент улыт.             | <u>My children</u> are (university) students.   |
| Тылат <u>йолташет-влак</u> йынгыртенит.      | <u>Your friends</u> called you.                 |
| <u>Родыжо-шамыч</u> Пошкырт кундемыште илат. | <u>His/her relatives</u> live in Bashkortostan. |
| <u>Унада-влак</u> кунам толыт?               | When are <u>your guests</u> coming?             |

2.19. Attach all possessive suffixes and the plural suffix *-влак* in this order to the following nouns.

1. сумка
2. тувыр
3. пырыс
4. пошкудо
5. шергаш

2.20. Attach the plural suffix *-влак* and all possessive suffixes in this order to the following nouns.

1. пий
2. ручка
3. туныктышо
4. йодыш
5. вашмут

2.21. Insert a noun with possessive and plural suffixes into the following sentences. The person of the possessor and the suffix order to be used are given after the sentence in parentheses.

1. ... студент конференцийыш кудалыт. (тунемше, 1PL, -влак)
2. ... сумкаште кият. (тетрадь, -влак, 3SG)
3. ... шерге улыт. (мутер, 2PL, -шамыч)
4. ... конкурсышто сеҗеныт. (книга, 3PL, -влак)
5. ... сылне да оҥай улыт. (почеламут, -шамыч, 2SG)
6. ... тыланда келшат мо? (муру, -влак, 1SG)
7. ... тестыште кушто улыт? (йонгылыш, 1PL, -влак)
8. ... писын да сайын кусареныт. (кусарызе, -шамыч, 3PL)
9. ... кызыт ола тоштерыште улыт. (паша, 3SG, -влак)
10. ... кажне тылзын толыныт. (серыш, -влак, 2PL)

### 2.2.2. Possession with possessive suffix and genitive of personal pronoun

The second strategy to express possession in a noun is with the usage of a possessive suffix as described in 2.3.1., but with the addition of the corresponding personal pronoun in the genitive case directly before the suffixed noun. The genitive forms of the personal pronouns are as follows:

|            |        |
|------------|--------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | мыйын  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | тыйын  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | тудын  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | мемнан |
| <b>2Pl</b> | тендан |
| <b>3Pl</b> | нунын  |

For example:

|            | ола 'city'   |
|------------|--------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | мыйын олам   |
| <b>2Sg</b> | тыйын олат   |
| <b>3Sg</b> | тудын олаже  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | мемнан олана |
| <b>2Pl</b> | тендан олада |
| <b>3Pl</b> | нунын олашт  |

These forms are synonymous and interchangeable with forms using only possessive suffixes. One must, however, use these forms if the possessor is stressed or contrasted:

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Тиде <u>мыйын оксам</u> , тыйын огыл.     | This is <u>my money</u> , not yours.      |
| Тиде <u>мемнан пачерна</u> , тендан огыл. | This is <u>our apartment</u> , not yours. |
| <u>Мыйын йолташем</u> – палыме сүртече.   | <u>My friend</u> is a famous artist.      |
| Тендан <u>эргыда-влак</u> ешан улыт мо?   | Do <u>your sons</u> have families?        |
| Тудын <u>марийже</u> почеламутым воза.    | <u>Her husband</u> is writing poems.      |
| Теве тыште <u>мемнан пöртна</u> .         | Here is <u>our house</u> .                |
| Тыйын <u>ешет</u> кугу мо?                | Is <u>your family</u> big?                |

2.22. Add the genitive forms of the personal pronouns to the following nouns with a possessive suffix.

1. туныктышыжо
2. жапем
3. пашада
4. элна
5. ялышт
6. авада
7. илышет
8. лүмда
9. пошкудына
10. кокат

2.23. Insert the nouns given in parentheses using the appropriate genitive forms of the personal pronouns and the possessive suffixes as indicated.

1. ... мош шога? (мөр, 2PL)
2. ... ола деч тора. (пакча, 3PL)
3. ... кок пöлеман. (пачер, 1SG)
4. ... начарын ончыкта. (телевизор, 3PL)
5. ... манси йылмым шымла. (ўдыр, 1PL)
6. Вашке ... лектеш. (статья, 3SG)
7. ... пудырген. (компьютер, 1SG)
8. ... программистлан пашам ышта мо? (марий, 2SG)
9. ... пеш виян. (театр, 2PL)
10. Нелеш ида нал, тиде ... (вер, 1PL)

### 2.2.3. Possession with genitive of personal pronoun only

The third (comparatively rare) strategy to indicate possession in a noun is to use the genitive form of the personal pronoun before the noun to which no possessive suffix is added. The possessor is thus expressed through the genitive form only.

|            |            |
|------------|------------|
|            | ола 'city' |
| <b>1Sg</b> | мыйын ола  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | тыйын ола  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | тудын ола  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | мемнан ола |
| <b>2Pl</b> | тендан ола |
| <b>3Pl</b> | нунын ола  |

### 2.3. Case

#### 2.4.0. General remarks

Mari makes use of an extensive case system to mark the grammatical functions of the nouns. In this book, in accordance with the prevailing opinion of modern researchers, nine cases will be differentiated: nominative, accusative, genitive, dative, inessive, illative, lative, comparative and comitative.

| Name                           | Suffix | Interrogative(s)                                       | Example                          |
|--------------------------------|--------|--|----------------------------------|
| Nominative<br>2.4.1 – page 69  | -      | мо? 'what?'<br>кө 'who?'                               | пöрт<br>'house'                  |
| Accusative<br>2.4.2 – page 71  | -м     | мом? 'what? (obj.)'<br>көм? 'whom?'                    | пöртым<br>'the house (obj.)'     |
| Genitive<br>2.4.3 – page 74    | -н     | мон? 'of what?'<br>көн? 'whose?'                       | пöртын<br>'of the house'         |
| Dative<br>2.4.4 – page 78      | -лан   | молан? '(for) what?; why?'<br>көлан? '(to/for) whom?'  | пöртлан<br>'for the house'       |
| Inessive<br>2.4.5 – page 82    | -штЕ   | кушто? 'where?'  | пöртыштö<br>'in the house'       |
| Illative<br>2.4.6 – page 84    | -ш(кЕ) | куш(ко)? '(to) where?'                                 | пöртыш(кö)<br>'into the house'   |
| Lative<br>2.4.7 – page 88      | -еш    | кушан? 'where?; (to) where?'                           | пöртеш<br>'in(to) the house'     |
| Comparative<br>2.4.8 – page 91 | -ла    | мола? 'like what?'<br>көла? 'like whom?'               | пöртла<br>'like the house'       |
| Comitative<br>2.4.9 – page 94  | -ге    | моге? 'with all of what?'<br>көге? 'with all of whom?' | пöртге<br>'with the whole house' |

These cases can be further subdivided as follows:

1. Grammatical cases (= nominative, accusative, genitive, dative). These serve above all, but not exclusively, to mark the syntactic role of a noun in a sentence.
2. Local cases (= inessive, illative, lative). These serve above all, but not exclusively, to form local adverbials. Note that in Mari the local cases answer the questions 'where?' or 'where to?' and that there is no specific case answering the question 'from where'. To express the latter various postpositions are employed, see chapter 6 – page 158.
3. Other cases (= comparative, comitative). These serve above all, but not exclusively, to form other adverbials than local ones.

In the following, each case suffix will be treated separately. First, questions of suffix form and suffix attachment will be discussed. Regarding the form of the suffix and its attachment to a noun reference will be made to the appropriate section of the introduction (1.6. Affix types) in which details are given. After this, further suffixation is treated in the following order: 1) case suffix + number suffix, 2) case suffix + possessive suffix, 3) case suffix + number suffix + possessive suffix.

Subsequently, questions pertaining to the usage of the case suffix are examined. Here, the distinction is made between ‘main functions’ and ‘auxiliary functions’. It should be borne in mind that this distinction is of necessity arbitrary and serves practical purposes only.

### 2.4.1. Nominative

#### 2.4.1.1. Suffix and suffix attachment

There is no nominative case suffix, the stem of the Mari noun being at the same time the form of the noun in the nominative. The attachment of numeral and possessive suffixes to nouns in the nominative is discussed above (2.2.2., 2.3.1.). If a numeral or possessive suffix is attached to a noun in the nominative case, the resulting noun is still in the nominative case and can be used in the same way as nominative forms bearing no suffix.

#### 2.4.1.2. Main functions

##### 1. Sentence subject

|                                     |   |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| <u>Эвика</u> моторын мура.          | <u>Evika</u> sings beautifully.               |
| <u>Эчан</u> сайын тунемеш.          | <u>Echan</u> studies well.                    |
| <u>Ачат</u> кузе ила?               | How's <u>your father</u> doing (lit. living)? |
| <u>Акам</u> 20 ияш.                 | <u>My elder sister</u> is 20 years old.       |
| <u>Йолташем-влак</u> марла кутырат. | <u>My friends</u> speak Mari.                 |

2.24. Insert the fitting noun. The options are given below.

1. Тиде ... портрет жанрым йӧрата.
2. ... кевытыште пашам ышта.
3. Тиде ... марий морфологий нерген воза.
4. Тиде ... итальян йылме дене мура.
5. ... у романым сера.

(йылмызе, возышо, фотосүретче, мурызо, ужалыше)

##### 2. Predicative nominal

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Васлий – <u>аспирант</u> .                                | Vasliy is a <u>postgraduate student</u> .                  |
| Йошкар-Ола – <u>мотор ола</u> .                           | Yoshkar-Ola is a <u>beautiful city</u> .                   |
| Мый <u>эмлызе</u> улам.                                   | I'm a <u>doctor</u> .                                      |
| Ме <u>йолташ</u> улына.                                   | We're <u>friends</u> .                                     |
| Сергей Чавайн ден Валентин Колумб <u>марий поэт</u> улыт. | Sergey Chavayn and Valentin Kolumb are <u>Mari poets</u> . |

2.25. Insert the fitting noun. The options are given below.

1. Иван Ямбердов – ... Сүретше-влак марий тематикан улыт.
2. Андрей Эшпай лумло ... лийын: музыкым возен.
3. Валериан Васильев ... лийын: марий йылмым, фольклорым шымлен.
4. Майоров-Шкетан ... лийын: шуко драмым возен.
5. Йыван Кырля лумло ... лийын. Тудо икымше Совет йукан кинофильмыште модын.

(актёр, композитор, шымлызе, возышо, сүретче)

#### 2.4.1.3. Auxiliary functions

##### 1. Complement of a postposition

The nominal complement of a postposition usually is in the nominative case, see 6.0.1 – page 160.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Университетышке мый метро дене кудалыштам. | I go to university by <u>metro</u> .            |
| Маркус Финляндий гыч.                      | Markus is from <u>Finland</u> .                 |
| Марий йылме нерген мом шонеда?             | What do you think of <u>the Mari language</u> ? |

## 2. Nominal modifier

Nouns in the nominative case are often used as nominal modifiers, e.g., *илыш* 'life' → *илыш йолташ* 'spouse; significant other', see 11.3.2 – page 374.

## 3. Agent of infinitive forms

Nouns in the nominative case can be used as the agents of various constructions with participles and gerunds, see 7.2 – page 250.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Жаң эртыме семын чыла начар мондалтеш.            | As <u>time</u> goes by, all bad things are forgotten.       |
| Уна-влак толмешке, кас кочкишым ямдылен шуктыман. | Before <u>the guests</u> come, (we) need to prepare dinner. |

## 4. Object of infinitive forms

The nominative case can be used as the object of an infinitive verb form. In these cases, the object is generally in the singular, and has no possessive suffix or preceding attribute. It is understood to be indefinite, and must immediately precede the non-finite form. Apart from certain common phrases – e.g., *кол кучаш (-ем)* 'to fish, to catch fish', *пу рюаш (-эм)* 'to cut firewood', *шудо солаш (-ем)* 'to mow hay', *чай ййаш (-ам)* 'to drink tea', *мөр ногаш (-ем)* 'to pick strawberries' – it is not common; the accusative can always be used to mark the object instead – *колым кучаш (-ем)*, etc.

## 5. Adverbial expressing length of time

Nouns in the nominative can, in combination with a quantifier, be used as adverbials to express the length of time (*how long?*).

|   |  |
|---|--|
| «Пошкудем» передаче <u>ик шагат</u> кая.        | The broadcast “My neighbor” lasts <u>one hour</u> .    |
| Марий ялыште ме <u>кок кече</u> лийынна.        | We were in a Mari village <u>two days</u> .            |
| Марий кенез университет <u>кум арня</u> шуйнен. | The Mari Summer University lasted <u>three weeks</u> . |
| Марий йылмым те <u>мыняр ий</u> тунемыда?       | <u>How many years</u> have you been studying Mari?     |

The nouns *секунд* 'second', *минут* 'minute', *шагат* 'hour', *кече* 'day', *тылзе* 'month', *уй* 'year', *луий* 'decade', *шүдий* 'century', *тўжеми* 'millennium' can be used like this as well.

## 6. Vocative

Nouns in the nominative can be used as a vocative, i.e., as expressions of direct address.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Йоча-влак, айста уремыш лектына!           | <u>Children</u> , let's go outside!               |
| Рвезе-шамыч, ўдыр-шамычым ончыко колтыза!  | <u>Boys</u> , let the girls go to the front!      |
| Айста, шерге уна-влак, ўстелтöрыш шинчына! | Let's sit down at the table, <u>dear guests</u> ! |
| Йыван, поро лий, мылам полшо!              | <u>Yyvan</u> , please help me!                    |

**Kinship terms:** A number of kinship terms have distinct vocative forms. Here two groups must be distinguished. The noun *шольо* 'younger brother' can take vocative forms from both groups.

Group 1: The ending *-й* is attached to the members of this group to form vocatives.

|        |   | Vocative   |
|--------|---|------------|
| ава    | mother  | авай, авий |
| ака    | (elder) sister; aunt (parent's younger sister)  | акай       |
| ача    | father  | ачай, ачий |
| енга   | sister-in-law (elder brother's wife)  | енгай      |
| иза    | (elder) brother; uncle (father's younger brother)                                     | изай       |
| кова   | grandmother   | ковай      |
| кока   | aunt (mother's or father's elder sister)  | кокай      |
| коча   | grandfather   | кочай      |
| кугыз  | uncle (mother's or father's elder brother)  | кугызай    |
| курска | brother-in-law (elder sister's husband);<br>uncle (parent's younger sister's husband) | курскай    |
| чүчү   | uncle (mother's younger brother)  | чүчүй      |
| шольо  | (younger) brother   | шольай     |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Авай</u> , тый чайым але кофем йүат?   | <u>Mom</u> , do you want tea or coffee?                 |
| <u>Ковай</u> , мелна рецептым мылам пуэт? | <u>Grandma</u> , will you give you your pancake recipe? |
| <u>Чүчүй</u> , айда кол кучаш каена!      | <u>Uncle</u> , let's go fishing!                        |

The above-mentioned forms in *-й* are not only used as vocatives, but can be also used in all other functions of the nominative case, e.g., *авай* '1. Mother!, 2. mother'. The vocative forms in *-й* can be inflected: they can take case suffixes (*авайлан* 'to mother') and possessive suffixes (*аваем* 'my mother').

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Акай</u> , кунам уналыкеш толат?    | <u>Sister</u> , when will you come for a visit? |
| <u>Акай</u> Москошто ила.              | <u>(My) sister</u> lives in Moscow.             |
| <u>Кочай</u> , а тый маскам ужынат мо? | <u>Grandpa</u> , did you see a bear?            |
| <u>Кочай</u> сай сонарзе лийын.        | <u>Grandpa</u> was a good hunter.               |

Group 2: The possessive suffix of the first person singular is attached to the members of this group to form vocatives. Depending on the individual kinship term it can be the usual *-ем* or the form *-ым* only found in certain kinship terms (see 2.2.1.1 – page 61).

|         |   | Vocative |
|---------|---|----------|
| вате    | wife  | ватем    |
| вене    | son-in-law; brother-in-law (younger sister's husband)   | венгым   |
| марий   | husband   | марием   |
| шешке   | daughter-in-law; sister-in-law (younger brother's wife) | шешкым   |
| шольо   | (younger) brother                                       | шольым   |
| шүжар   | (younger) sister  | шүжарем  |
| уныка   | grandchild  | уныкам   |
| үдыр    | daughter  | үдырем   |
| эрге    | son   | эргым    |
| чүчүньо | aunt (mother's younger brother's wife)                  | чүчүньым |

## 2.4.2. Accusative (-м)

### 2.4.2.1. Suffix and suffix attachment

Attachment to stem: *bl*-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45).

2.26. Form the accusative of the following nouns.

1. кинде
2. вўд
3. муно
4. ўй
5. шөр
6. олма
7. пўрө
8. печене
9. мелна
10. когыльо

Order of accusative suffix and number suffixes: When used together, the ordering is number suffix + accusative suffix: *nörm* 'house' → *nörm-влакым*, *маска* 'bear' → *маска-влакым*.

2.27. Form the accusative plural of the following nouns.

1. пире
2. рывыж
3. пўчө
4. пий
5. комбо
6. чыве
7. имне
8. ушкал
9. сөсна
10. каза

Order of accusative suffix and possessive suffixes: When used together, the ordering is possessive suffix + accusative suffix.

|            | пөрт 'house' | маска 'bear' |
|------------|--------------|--------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | пөртем       | маскамым     |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пөртет       | маскатым     |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пөртшым      | маскажым     |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пөртнам      | масканам     |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пөртдам      | маскадам     |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пөртиштым    | маскаштым    |

2.28. Attach all possessive suffixes and the accusative suffix to the following two nouns.

1. ава
2. ўдыр

Order of accusative suffix, possessive suffix and number suffix: When co-occurring, there are two possible orderings: 1. number suffix (Nx) + possessive suffix (Px) + accusative suffix, 2. possessive suffix (Px) + number suffix (Nx) + accusative suffix. In both cases the accusative suffix is the last element.



|            | пöрт 'house'   |                | маска 'bear'    |                |
|------------|----------------|----------------|-----------------|----------------|
|            | Nx + Px + Acc. | Px + Nx + Acc. | Nx + Px + Acc.  | Px + Nx + Acc. |
| <b>1Sg</b> | пöрт-влакемым  | пöртем-влакым  | маска-влакемым  | маскам-влакым  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пöрт-влакетым  | пöртет-влакым  | маска-влакетым  | маскат-влакым  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пöрт-влакшым   | пöртшö-влакым  | маска-влакшым   | маскаже-влакым |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пöрт-влакнам   | пöртна-влакым  | маска-влакнам   | маскана-влакым |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пöрт-влакдам   | пöртда-влакым  | маска-влакдам   | маскада-влакым |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пöрт-влакыштым | пöртышт-влакым | маска-влакыштым | маскашт-влакым |

2.29. Attach all possessive suffixes, the plural suffix *-влак* and the accusative suffix to the noun *йолташ* 'friend', using both ordering patterns.

#### 2.4.2.2. Main functions

1. The main function of the accusative case is to mark the direct object of a verb.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мый <u>шоколадым</u> йöратем.              | I love <u>chocolate</u> .                      |
| Салика <u>унам</u> вуча.                   | Salika is waiting <u>for a guest</u> .         |
| Ме <u>финн-угор йылме-влакым</u> тунемына. | We are studying <u>Finno-Ugric languages</u> . |
| Тудо <u>статьяжым</u> воза.                | S/he is writing <u>an article</u> .            |
| Те <u>марий грамматикум</u> шымледа.       | You are researching <u>Mari grammar</u> .      |

2.30. Put the word in parentheses into the accusative and insert it into the sentence.

1. Таче ме кол ... кочкина. (шöр)
2. Те ... йöыда мо? (сыра)
3. Ковам ... шолта. (подкогыльо)
4. Эргым, кевытыште ... нал. (мöй)
5. Тудо ... моторын сöретла. (пöртöс)
6. Нуно марий ... колышташ йöратат. (муро)
7. Мый тыйын ... ом пале. (вате)
8. Ме марий ... шымлена. (тöвыра)
9. Тый ... колат мо? (куку)
10. Каваште ... ужат мо? (тылзе)

2.31. Insert the fitting noun in the accusative. The options are given below.

1. Альбертина Иванова – поэтессе: тудо ... воза.
2. Тимофей Евсеев этнограф лийын. Тудо марий ... шымлен.
3. Йолташем – вегетарианец: тудо ... огеш коч.
4. Женя – спортсмен: тудо ... ок шупш.
5. Эчук – полиглот: тудо шуко ... пала.

(шыл, йылме, почеламут, йöла, тамак)

6. Те кушто ... ыштеда?
7. Те марий ... вашлийында мо? Тудден марла кутыренда мо?
8. Те ... ончаш йöратеда мо?
9. Те кызыт могай ... лудыда?
10. Те «вуйдорык» ... умыледа мо?

(телевизор, книга, мут, паша, ең)

### 2.4.2.3. Auxiliary functions

#### 1. Adverbial expressing length of time or distance

Nouns in the accusative can be used as adverbials to express the length of time (*how long?*) or distance (*how far?*). For lengths of time, the nominative is often used instead – see 2.4.1 – page 69 – while for distances, usage of the accusative is typical.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Студент-влакна <u>ик тылзым</u> ялыште иленят да йылме материалым погеныт. | Our students spent <u>a month</u> in the countryside and collected language material. |
| Чўчўм <u>вич ийым</u> Сургутышто пашам ыштен.                              | My uncle worked in Surgut <u>for five years</u> .                                     |
| Галя каже кечын <u>кандаш менгым</u> школышко йолын коштын.                | Galya walked <u>eight kilometers</u> to school every day.                             |
| Кызыт спортсмен-влак <u>витле метрым</u> ийшаш улыт.                       | Now the athletes need to swim <u>50 meters</u> .                                      |

#### 2. Adverbial expressing point of time

In a number of (lexicalized) cases a noun in the accusative indicates a point of time. We find this with seasons and the times of day.

|         |           |                        |
|---------|-----------|------------------------|
| шошо    | шошым     | spring → in spring     |
| кенжеж  | кенжежым  | summer → in summer     |
| шыже    | шыжым     | fall → in fall         |
| теле    | телым     | winter → in winter     |
| кечывал | кечывалым | noon → at noon         |
| йўд     | йўдым     | night → at night       |
| пелйўд  | пелйўдым  | midnight → at midnight |

2.32. Insert the fitting noun in the accusative. The options are given below.

1. ... мланде паша тўналеш.
2. Акам кум ... йотэлыште илен.
3. ... лум лумеш.
4. Мый таче пелмарафоным, 20 ..., куржынам.
5. Тый ... омым ужат мо?

(менге, идалык, йўд, теле, шошо)

#### 3. Separative marker

The unproductive separative marker *-ым* is formally identical with the accusative suffix. Its usage is highly restricted, being used with the words *вел* 'side; region, area', *могыр* 'body; side, direction' and in compound adverbs of space using *-бал/-вал*, *-вел* and *-йымал* (see 8.2.2.)

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Чодыра велым</u> маска толеш.            | A bear is coming <u>from the forest</u> .                |
| <u>Какшан велым</u> салют йўк шокта.        | You can hear fireworks coming <u>from the Kokshaga</u> . |
| <u>Теңыз могырым</u> мардеж пуалеш.         | The wind is blowing <u>from the sea</u> .                |
| <u>Ик могырым</u> , мый тендан дене келшем. | <u>On the one hand</u> , I agree with you.               |

### 2.4.3. Genitive (-н)

#### 2.4.3.1. Suffix and suffix attachment

Attachment to stem: *л*-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45).

2.33. Form the genitive of the following nouns.

1. пакча
2. паренге
3. вишне
4. шудо
5. куэ
6. мөр
7. ковышта
8. пеледыш
9. трай
10. мланде

Order of genitive suffix and numeral suffixes: When used together, the ordering is number suffix + genitive suffix: *nörm* 'house' → *nörm-влакын*, *маска* 'bear' → *маска-влакын*.

2.34. Form the genitive plural of the following nouns.

1. йоча
2. рвезе
3. ўдыр
4. родо
5. уна
6. йолташ
7. палыме
8. тунуктышо
9. студент
10. вуйлатыше

Order of genitive suffix and possessive suffixes: When used together, the ordering is possessive suffix + genitive suffix.

|            | пөрт 'house' | маска 'bear' |
|------------|--------------|--------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | пөртемьн     | маскамын     |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пөртетын     | маскатын     |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пөртшын      | маскажын     |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пөртнан      | масканан     |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пөртдан      | маскадан     |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пөртыштын    | маскаштын    |

2.35. Attach all possessive suffixes and the genitive suffix to the following two nouns.

1. ака
2. шўжар

Order of genitive suffix, possessive suffix and number suffix: When co-occurring, there are two possible orderings: 1. number suffix (Nx) + possessive suffix (Px) + genitive suffix, 2. possessive suffix (Px) + number suffix (Nx) + genitive suffix. In both cases the genitive suffix is the last element.

|            | пӧрт 'house'   |                | маска 'bear'    |                |
|------------|----------------|----------------|-----------------|----------------|
|            | Nx + Px + Acc. | Px + Nx + Acc. | Nx + Px + Acc.  | Px + Nx + Acc. |
| <b>1Sg</b> | пӧрт-влакемын  | пӧртем-влакын  | маска-влакемын  | маскам-влакын  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пӧрт-влакетын  | пӧртет-влакын  | маска-влакетын  | маскат-влакын  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пӧрт-влакшын   | пӧртшӧ-влакын  | маска-влакшын   | маскаже-влакын |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пӧрт-влакнан   | пӧртна-влакын  | маска-влакнан   | маскана-влакын |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пӧрт-влакдан   | пӧртда-влакын  | маска-влакдан   | маскада-влакын |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пӧрт-влакыштын | пӧртышт-влакын | маска-влакыштын | маскашт-влакын |

2.36. Attach all possessive suffixes, the plural suffix *-влак* and the genitive suffix to the noun *уна* 'guest', using both ordering patterns.

#### 2.4.3.2. Main functions

##### 1. Possessor in adnominal possessive structures

In possessive constructions (see also 2.2 – page 61), the possessor is in the genitive while the possessed bears a possessive suffix of the third person, singular or plural, depending on if the possessor is in the singular or plural.

Singular possessor:

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Изамын</u> лӱмжӧ Ольош.                              | <u>My elder brother's</u> name is Olyosh.                               |
| <u>Ольошын</u> шочмо йылмыже – мари йылме.              | <u>Olyosh's</u> mother tongue is Mari.                                  |
| <u>Марий Элын</u> рӱдолаже – Йошкар-Ола.                | The capital <u>of Mari El</u> is Yoshkar-Ola.                           |
| <u>Икымше мари почеламутын</u> авторжо – Сергей Чавайн. | The author <u>of the first Mari poem</u> (was) Sergey Chavayn.          |
| <u>Йошкар-Олан</u> ик эн тӱн уремже – Чавайн бульвар.   | One of the main streets <u>of Yoshkar-Ola</u> is the Chavayn Boulevard. |

Plural possessor:

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Нине книга-влакын</u> авторышт Валентин Колумб. | The author <u>of these books</u> is Valentin Kolumb. |
| <u>Йолташем-шамычын</u> пӧртышт пеш кугу.          | <u>My friends'</u> house is very big.                |
| <u>Оля ден Колян</u> авашт школышто пашам ышта.    | <u>Olya and Kolya's</u> mother works in a school.    |

The possessor in the genitive precedes the possessed in the overwhelming majority of cases. Inversion is possible, but stylistically marked: *ӱмылжӧ варадын* 'shadow of the hawk'.

It is possible for the possessed of one possessive construction to be the possessor of another, leading to a chain of genitive forms: *туныктышын марижын ручкаже* 'the pen of the teacher's husband'.

As regards the renominalization of genitive forms (e.g., *мыйын* 'my ...' → 'mine, my one'), see 11.3.3 – page 375.

2.37. Form adnominal possessive constructions with the following pairs of nouns, following the pattern *туныктышо, лўм → туныктышын лўмжӧ*.

1. возышо, роман
2. поэт, ылыш
3. мурызо, йўк
4. сўретче, кид
5. йоча, модыш
6. йолташ, пӧлек
7. ўдыр, телефон
8. пошкудо, пачер
9. кова, ял
10. ача, паша

2.38. Form adnominal possessive constructions with the pairs of nouns given below and insert them into the appropriate sentences.

1. ... у да мотор
2. ... сай оксам конда.
3. ... кўчык да шеме.
4. ... 5 градус шокшо.
5. ... пеш тамле.

(юж, температур; рвезе, ўп; ўдыр, вургем; кова, мелна; бизнесъен, фирме)

6. .. журналист-влак дене вашлийын.
7. ... мылам чот полшен.
8. ... олесе олимпиадыште икымше верым налын.
9. Экзаменыште ... неле лийын.
10. ... онгай декорацийым ямдылен.

(ава, кангаш; туныктышо, йодыш; эл, президент; театр, сўретче; школ, тунемше)

## 2. Possessive adverbial

A noun in the genitive can be used as a possessive adverbial in the sense 'X belongs to Y' or 'X is Y's'.

|                             |   |
|-----------------------------|---|
| Тиде книга <u>Вӧдырын</u> . | This book <u>belongs to Vӧdyr</u> .           |
| Тиде машина <u>изамын</u> . | This car <u>belongs to my elder brother</u> . |

### 2.4.3.3. Auxiliary functions

#### 1. Complement of a postposition

The nominal complement of a postposition can be in the genitive case, see 6.0.1 – page 160.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Авай <u>тыйын</u> верч ойгыра.                | Mother is worried about <u>you</u> .             |
| <u>Мемнан</u> деч посна концертым огыт тўнал. | They won't start the concert without <u>us</u> . |
| <u>Тудын</u> деч серыш толын.                 | A letter came from <u>him/her</u> .              |

#### 2. Agent of infinitive forms

Nouns in the genitive case can be used as the agents of various constructions with participles and gerunds, see 7.2 – page 250.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Ачайын</u> пенсийыш лекмекеже, кок ий эртен.     | Two years have passed since <u>father</u> retired.     |
| <u>Йолташмын</u> войзымо фотожо конкурсышто сенген. | The picture <u>my friend</u> took won the competition. |

**Instructive forms:** Note that the genitive is homonymous with the adverbial (instructive) suffix in -н (see 8.4.1 – page 319): *йол* 'foot; leg' → *йолын* 'of the foot' (genitive) ~ 'on foot' (instructive).

### 2.4.4. Dative (-лан)

#### 2.4.4.1. Suffix and Suffix Attachment

Attachment to stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

2.39. Form the dative of the following nouns.

1. еш
2. марий
3. вате
4. эрге
5. ўдыр
6. иза
7. шольо
8. ака
9. чўчў
10. чўчўньо

Order of dative suffix and number suffixes: When used together, the ordering is number suffix + dative suffix: *пөрт* 'house' → *пөрт-влаклан*, *маска* 'bear' → *маска-влаклан*.

2.40. Form the dative plural of the following nouns.

1. пашазе
2. ургызо
3. ужалыше
4. сўретче
5. бизнесъенг
6. шанчыенг
7. йылмызе
8. кусарызе
9. эмлызе
10. мурызо

Order of dative suffix and possessive suffixes: When used together, the ordering can be either possessive suffix (Px) + dative suffix, or dative suffix + possessive suffix (Px). The ordering Dat + Px is preferentially used in the first and second person plural, while in other persons, the ordering Px + Dat is more commonly used. In the following overview, the more commonly used forms are given in bold.

|            | пөрт 'house'     |                  |
|------------|------------------|------------------|
|            | Px + Dat         | Dat + Px         |
| <b>1Sg</b> | <b>пөртемлан</b> | пөртланем        |
| <b>2Sg</b> | <b>пөртетлан</b> | пөртланет        |
| <b>3Sg</b> | <b>пөртшылан</b> | пөртланже        |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пөртналан        | <b>пөртланна</b> |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пөртдалан        | <b>пөртланда</b> |
| <b>3Pl</b> | <b>пөртыштан</b> | пөртланышт       |

2.41. Attach all possessive suffixes and the dative suffix to the following two nouns.

1. пий
2. пырыс

Order of dative suffix, possessive suffix and number suffix: When all used together, there are two possible orderings: 1. possessive suffix (Px) + number suffix (Nx) + dative suffix, 2. number suffix (Nx) + possessive suffix (Px) + dative suffix. In both cases the dative suffix is the last element. The

first ordering (Px + Nx + Dat.) is more commonly used. In the first and second person plural, the ordering can also be number suffix (Nx) + dative suffix + possessive suffix (Px).

|            | пöрт 'house'    |                |                |
|------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------|
|            | Px + Nx + Dat.  | Nx + Dat. + Px | Nx + Px + Dat. |
| <b>1Sg</b> | пöртом-влаклан  | -              | пöрт-влакемлан |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пöртет-влаклан  | -              | пöрт-влакетлан |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пöртшö-влаклан  | -              | пöрт-влакшылан |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пöртна-влаклан  | пöрт-влакланна | пöрт-влакналан |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пöртда-влаклан  | пöрт-влакланда | пöрт-влакдалан |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пöртышт-влаклан | -              | пöрт-влакыштан |

2.42. Attach all possessive suffixes, the plural suffix *-влак* and the dative suffix to the noun *ял* 'village', using both ordering patterns.

#### 2.4.4.2. Main functions

##### 1. Indirect object

The dative is the general case used to denote indirect and secondary objects.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Аня <u>шүжаржылан</u> СМС-ым воза.       | Anya wrote <u>her</u> little sister a text message.   |
| Ава <u>йочаже-влаклан</u> йомакым лудеш. | The mother reads a fairy tale <u>to her</u> children. |
| Рвезе <u>ўдырлан</u> пеледышым пуа.      | The boy gives <u>the</u> girl flowers.                |

2.43. Put the word in parentheses into the dative and insert it into the sentence.

1. Кўсотышто марий калык тўрлö ... кумалеш. (юмо)
2. Мый ... ом ўшане. (синоптик-влак)
3. ... четлыкым кычалам. (попугай)
4. Изи ... курчакым налынам. (ўдырем)
5. Лотерейыште ... ик миллион тенгем кучыктеныт. (сенгыше)
6. Тый ... кунам кочкаш пуэнат? (комбо)
7. ... кугу таум каласем. (ачам)
8. Кова ... тукумышт нерген каласкала. (уныка-влакше)
9. Марла тунемше финн студент марий ... интервьюм пуэн. (журналист-влак)
10. Вара ту финн ... интернетыште шукын возеныт. (студент)

2.44. Insert the fitting noun in the dative. The options are given below.

1. Ача ... у модышым пöлеклен.
2. Валя автобусышто шонго ... верым пуа.
3. Вozyшо ... автографым пуа.
4. Туныктышо ... у темым умылтара.
5. Изи рвезе ... серышым воза.

(студент-влак, кува, эргыже, Йўштö Кугыза, лудшыжо-влак)

6. Гид ... Козьмодемьянским ончыкта
7. «Марий Эл» радиошто ... тўрлö онай конкурсым эртарат.
8. «Сайвер» ательеште ... марий вургемым ургат.
9. «Мари» рестораныште ... команмелна ден подкогыльым кочкаш темлат.
10. Марий кенжеж университетыште ... «Чоныштем илет» телесериалым ончыктеныт.

(уна-влак, тунемше-влак, артист-влак, турист-влак, колыштшо-влак)

2.4.4.3. Auxiliary functions1. Predicative adverbial as essive

The dative can be used to indicate a state of being, an existence in a state or capacity, often corresponding to English 'as something/someone'.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Палымем <u>дизайнерлан</u> пашам ышта.                | My acquaintance works <u>as a designer</u> .               |
| Пöтырым <u>пеш ушан айдемылан</u> шотлат.             | People consider Pötyr <u>a very smart person</u> .         |
| Иван Петровичым <u>фирме вуйлатышылан</u> шогалтеныт. | Ivan Petrovich was appointed <u>the head of the firm</u> . |

2.45. Insert the fitting noun in the dative. The options are given below.

1. Мый тиде кевытыште визымше ий ... ыштем.
2. Петровым ялыште уста ... шотлат: пöртыштö ремонтным ышташ эре тудым ўжит.
3. Катям маркетинг шотышто ... шогалтеныт.
4. Иванов – кугу опытан политик. Тений тудым уэш ... сайленыт.
5. Йот йылме-влакым тунемаш эре йöратенам, садлан кызыт ... пашам ыштем.

(депутат, менеджер, кусарызе, чоңышо, ужалыше)

2. Dative with causative verbs

In connection with a causative verb in *-км*, the dative indicates who is intended or ordered to do something, see 11.7.13 – page 392.

Туныктышо студент-влаклан тестым возыкта.

The teacher has the students write a test.

3. Temporal adverbial

The dative can be used in temporal constructions to express how long, until when, for which point in time, at which point in time something happens.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Озангышке автобус <u>куд шагатлан</u> тарвана. | The bus to Kazan leaves <u>at six o'clock</u> .                    |
| Эрлалан Шкетан театрыш кок билетым налым.      | I bought two tickets for the Shketan Theater <u>for tomorrow</u> . |
| <u>Каслан</u> мом кочкаш ыштет?                | What will you make <u>for dinner</u> ?                             |
| Эстонийыш <u>кок арнялан</u> кудалына.         | We are travelling to Estonia <u>for two weeks</u> .                |

2.46. Insert the fitting noun in the dative. The options are given below.

1. Эрвина, ... планет могай? Айда кинош каена!
2. Марий озавате-влак ... киярым, помидорым, понгым шинчатат.
3. А мылам, ўдыр-влак, ... ноутбукым пöлекленыт.
4. «Салика» спектакль шуматкечын ... тўңалеш.
5. Вашке канышыш лектам. ... тенгыз деке мяшш шонем.

(теле, кум арня, рушарня, У ий, ныл шагат)

4. Purposive adverbial

The dative can be used to express purpose.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ивук кевытышке <u>киндылан</u> каен.         | Ivuk went to the store <u>for bread</u> .           |
| Йолташем деке <u>книгалан</u> пурышым.       | I dropped in on my friend <u>for a book</u> .       |
| Тудо кызыт <u>статьялан</u> материалым пога. | S/he is collecting material <u>for an article</u> . |

5. Causal adverbial

The dative can be used to express the cause of something.



|                                 |   |
|---------------------------------|---|
| <u>Пөлекетлан</u> чот куаненан. | I was very happy <u>about the present</u> .     |
| <u>Осал мутшылан</u> ит сыре.   | Don't be angry <u>about his/her bad words</u> . |

#### 6. Degree of comparison

The dative case is used when one wishes to express to which degree a comparison applies (e.g., 'by three meters, by four years'), see 3.2.2 – page 101.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Иза шольыж деч <u>ныл ийлан</u> кугурак.            | The elder brother is older than the younger brother by four years.                          |
| Мұшыл ер Яльчик ер деч <u>шым метрлан</u> келгырак. | Müshyl yer (Russian <i>Морской Глаз</i> ) is <u>seven meters deeper</u> than Lake Yal'chik. |

#### 7. Adverbial of regard

The dative case can be used to indicate specific characteristics, traits and features with regard to which people or things differ.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Марий кундем <u>чодыралан, ерлан да энгерлан</u> поян. | Mari lands are rich in forests, lakes, and rivers. |
| Марий калык <u>пашалан</u> тале.                       | The Maris are industrious (lit. nimble at work).   |

#### 8. In necessitive constructions

The dative is used to indicate the person having to do something in necessitive constructions with the necessitive infinitive *-ман* (see 7.2.2 – page 257) or with the verb *кўлаш (-ам)* 'to be necessary; to have to'.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Эвалан</u> да <u>Робинлан</u> марий мурым да куштымашым тунемман. | <u>Eva</u> and <u>Robin</u> need to learn Mari songs and dances. |
| <u>Анналан</u> марий ялым шке шинча дене ужалш кўлеш.                | <u>Anna</u> must see a Mari village with her own eyes.           |

#### 9. Complement of a postposition

The nominal complement of some postpositions can be in the dative case, see 6.0 – page 158.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Черлан</u> верч таче университетыш каен омыл.    | I didn't go to university today because of <u>(my) illness</u> . |
| <u>Оксалан</u> көра тудо Москошко пашам ышташ каен. | S/he went to work in Moscow because of <u>the money</u> .        |

2.47. Insert the fitting noun in the dative. The options are given below.

1. Тунемше-влак кенегеж ... чот куанат.
2. Йоча-влак ... тортым ыштыктат.
3. ... грамматикым сайын умылаш кўлеш.
4. Те кунам ... докладым ямдыледа?
5. Козьмодемьянск Йошкар-Ола деч ик ... веле тоштырак.

(йылмызе, ий, каныш, конференций, авашт)

6. Ёдырем, пошкудо деке ... миен тол.
7. Чемоданем кўлешан деч вич ... нелырак.
8. Оля ... у тувырым ургыкта.
9. Эстон-влак ... пеш мастар улыт.
10. ... историйым сайын палыман.

(археолог, килограмм, коваже, шинчал, муро)

### 2.4.5. Inessive (-umE)

#### 2.4.5.1. Suffix and Suffix Attachment

Attachment to stem: III-suffix (see 1.6.5 – page 47).

2.48. Form the inessive of the following nouns.

1. ял
2. корно
3. ола
4. вокзал
5. трамвай
6. унагудо
7. пöрт
8. аптеке
9. тоштер
10. кевыт

Order of inessive suffix and number suffixes: When used together, the ordering is number suffix (usually -ла, see 2.1.2.3 – page 59) + inessive suffix: *пöрт* 'house' → *пöртлаште*, *книга* 'book' → *книгалаште*.

2.49. Form the inessive plural of the following nouns, using the plural suffix -ла.

1. урем
2. площадь
3. кўвар
4. кафе
5. кочмывер
6. книгагудо
7. театр
8. почто
9. школ
10. черке

Order of inessive suffix and possessive suffixes: When used together, the ordering is inessive suffix + possessive suffix.

|            | пöрт 'house' | книга 'book' |
|------------|--------------|--------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | пöртыштем    | книгаштем    |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пöртыштет    | книгаштет    |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пöртыштыжö   | книгаштыже   |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пöртыштына   | книгаштына   |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пöртыштыда   | книгаштыда   |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пöртыштышт   | книгаштышт   |

2.50. Attach all possessive suffixes and the inessive suffix to the following two nouns.

1. пачер

2. сумка

Order of inessive suffix, possessive suffix and number suffix: When the plural suffix -ла is used, possessive suffixes are usually omitted; the possessor is indicated by a pronoun in the genitive: *мыйын книгалаште* 'in my books', *тыйын книгалаште* 'in your books', etc.

When rarely the plural suffix -влак is used in the inessive, two different arrangements are possible: 1. possessive suffix (Px) + number suffix (Nx) + inessive suffix, 2. number suffix (Nx) +

inessive suffix + possessive suffix (Px): *книгам-влакыште* ~ *книга-влакыштем* 'in my books', etc.

2.51. Attach the plural suffix *-ла* and the inessive suffix to the noun *серыш* 'letter', indicating the possessor with a pronoun in the genitive.

### 2.4.5.2. Main functions

#### 1. Local adverbial

The inessive expresses where someone or something is, where an action takes place. Note that in this basic function the inessive case is not normally used with animate nouns, with which postpositions can instead be utilized, e.g., *йоча* 'child' → *йоча көргыштө* 'in the child', see 6.2.5 – page 188.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Ме <u>Морко районышто</u> <u>Унчо ялыште</u> илена.       | We live in <u>the Morko (Russian Морки) District, in the village of Uncho (Russian Шоруньжа).</u> |
| <u>Ешыштына</u> визытын улына: ача, ава, кок акам да мый. | There are five of us <u>in our family</u> : my father, my mother, two elder sisters, and me.      |
| <u>Кудывечыштыда</u> пеш яндар.                           | It's very clean <u>in your courtyard</u> .  |
| <u>Мончаште</u> шокшо.                                    | It's hot <u>in the bathhouse</u> .  |
| <u>Күсотышто</u> кумалтышым эртарат.                      | Prayer ceremonies are carried out <u>in the sacred grove</u> .                                    |

2.52. Put the word in parentheses into the inessive and insert it into the sentence.

1. Йыван Кырля «Путёвка в жизнь» ... тўн рольым модын. (кино)
2. ... вич профессионал театр уло. (Йошкар-Ола)
3. ... шуко марий ила. (Сибирь)
4. ... марий йылмым туныктеныт. (Японий)
5. Марий ... монгол шомак-влакат улыт. (йылме)
6. Те могай финн-угор ... лийында? (кундем-влак)
7. ... мом ончаш, мом эскераш йöратет? (йот эл-влак)
8. Тый ... шуко жапым эртарет? (интернет)
9. Те ... чонештеда мо? (омо)
10. Кузе шонеда, ... илыш уло мо? (Марс)

2.53. Insert the fitting noun in the inessive. The options are given below.

1. Йолташем-влак кокымшо арня ... канат.
2. Акамын йөкшö мотор – тудо ... мура.
3. Эмлызе ... пашам ышта.
4. Юля ресторан-влакым огеш йöрате – ... веле кочкеш.
5. Серге ... куржталеш.

(эмлымвер, парк, Египет, мөнгö, хор)

6. Шыжым ... калык понгым пога.
7. ... яра вер уло мо?
8. ... маска-влак велосипед дене кудалыштыт.
9. ... вирус уло.
10. Кенжежым ме ... йөштылына.

(цирк, Юл, чодыра, компьютерет, унагудыда)

### 2.4.5.3. Auxiliary functions

#### 1. Temporal adverbial

The inessive can be used to indicate at which point of time something takes place, see 4.8.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Шокшо кечылаште</u> ме ерыште йўштылына.            | On <u>hot days</u> , we swim in the lake.                 |
| <u>Тиде арняште</u> экзамен-влак тўналыт.              | Exams start <u>this week</u> .                            |
| <u>Июльышто</u> ме марий кенез университетеште лийына. | We will be at the Mari Summer University <u>in July</u> . |

In addition, the inessive can express a period of time within which a certain action will take place.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ренато <u>ик ийыште</u> марла сайын тунем шуктен.  | Renato learned Mari well <u>over the course of a year</u> .                                    |
| <u>Кок шагатыште</u> марий озавате салатым, шўрым, подкогыльым да мелнам ямдылен шуктен. | <u>In two hours</u> , the Mari housewife managed to make salad, soup, dumplings, and pancakes. |

2.54. Insert the fitting noun in the inessive. The options are given below.

1. Библий почеш Юмо тўням куд ... ыштен.
2. Вес ... авам пенсийыш лектеш.
3. Веруш таче мален огыл: ик ... «Элнет» романым лудын лектын.
4. Яра ... тый мом ышташ йўратет?
5. .. марий-влак Шорыкйол пайремым пайремлат.

(жап, йўд, кече, январь, ий)

## 2. Constructions expressing quantity

In constructions indicating how many members of a certain group are affected, a noun in the inessive can express the group as a whole.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Иванов, кузе <u>вич заданийыште</u> нылытым йонгылыш ыштен кертат?            | Ivanov, how could you do four <u>of five assignments</u> wrong?       |
| <u>100 егыште</u> 67 веле марла кутыра.                                       | <u>Of 100 people</u> , only 67 speak Mari.                            |
| <u>Индеш студентыште</u> нылытше коми йылмым, а визытше ханты йылмым тунемеш. | <u>Of the nine students</u> , four study Komi, and five study Khanty. |

## 3. Predicative adverbial as essive

A noun in the inessive can be used as a predicative adverbial in an essive sense with regard to profession, post, rank, etc.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Миклай кызытат <u>тарзыште</u> коштеш.                        | Miklay is still <u>a farmhand</u> today.                                      |
| Метрийын озанлыкше кугу: кум егым <u>полышкалышыште</u> куча. | Metriy's business is big: he has three people employed <u>as assistants</u> . |

2.55. Insert the fitting noun in the inessive. The options are given below.

1. Йочададым карантинлан петыреныт: 85 ... 50-же черле.
2. Кугезе кочам латвич ий ... коштын, сарыштат лийын
3. Эчан – ушан рвезе: 100 ... 98-лан чын вашештен.
4. Экзамен пеш йёсö лийын: 20 ... кандашын веле тудым сайын кученыт.
5. Чўчўм вич ий йўдвелне ... илен.

(тунемше, салтак, пашаенг, йоча, йодыш)

## 2.4.6. Illative (-ш(кE))

### 2.4.6.1. Suffix and Suffix Attachment

Attachment to stem: the short form is an ill-suffix -ш (see 1.6.4 – page 45), the long form is a III-suffix -шкE (see 1.6.5 – page 47)

Note that the illative case suffix has a long and a short form which are distinguished by the presence or absence of *-ке/-ко/-кӧ* after the element *-ш*. Long form: *-шке/-шко/-шкӧ* (*-ышке/-ышко/-ышкӧ*); short form: *-ш* (*-ыш*). There is no semantic difference between the long and short forms. To a great degree they can be used interchangeably, with the short forms being more typical of colloquial speech. If further suffixes should be attached to a word (possessive suffixes, clitics), the long form must be used.

2.56. Form the illative (long form) of the following nouns.

1. чодыра
2. пасу
3. корно
4. курык
5. таве
6. вӱд
7. кудо
8. тӱнзык
9. леведыш
10. пече

2.57. Form the illative (short form) of the following nouns.

1. пачер
2. омса
3. кухньо
4. ванный
5. ўстел
6. лампе
7. пӱкен
8. вазе
9. пырдыж
10. окна

2.58. Transform the long form of the illative case suffix into the short form.

1. Юлышко
2. Москошко
3. куэшке
4. пасушко
5. пӱяшке

2.59. Transform the short form of the illative case suffix into the long form.

1. пӧлемыш
2. капкаш
3. метрош
4. киндыш
5. мӧнгыш

Order of illative suffix and plural suffixes: When used together, the ordering is number suffix (usually *-ла*, see 2.1.2.3 – page 59) + illative suffix. Both the long and the short forms can be used: *пӧрт* ‘house’ → *пӧртлашке* ~ *пӧртлаш*, *книга* ‘book’ → *книгалашке* ~ *книгалаш*.

2.60. Form the illative plural (both short and long forms) of the following nouns, using the plural suffix *-ла*.

1. сумка
2. серыш
3. фото
4. күсен
5. рож
6. ручка
7. корно
8. такси
9. кафе
10. унагудо

Order of illative suffix and possessive suffixes: When used together, the ordering is illative suffix + possessive suffix. The possessive suffix is always attached to the long form of the suffix.

|            | пөрт 'house' | книга 'book' |
|------------|--------------|--------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | пörтышкем    | книгашкем    |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пörтышкет    | книгашкет    |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пörтышкыжө   | книгашкыже   |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пörтышкына   | книгашкына   |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пörтышкыда   | книгашкыда   |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пörтышкышт   | книгашкышт   |

2.61. Attach all possessive suffixes and the illative suffix to the following two nouns.

1. школ
2. шинча

Order of illative suffix, possessive suffix and number suffix: When the plural suffix *-ла* is used, possessive suffixes are usually omitted; the possessor is indicated by a pronoun in the genitive: *мыйын кнугалашке* ~ *мыйын кнугалаш* 'into my books', *тыйын кнугалашке* ~ *тыйын кнугалаш* 'into your books', etc.

When rarely the plural suffix *-лак* is used in the illative, two different arrangements are possible: 1. possessive suffix (Px) + number suffix (Nx) + illative suffix, 2. number suffix (Nx) + illative suffix + possessive suffix (Px): *книга-лакышкем* ~ *книгам-лакыш(ке)* 'in my books', etc.

2.62. Attach the plural suffix *-ла* and the inessive suffix to the noun *күсен* 'pocket', indicating the possessor with a pronoun in the genitive.

#### 2.4.6.2. Main functions

##### 1. Local adverbial

The illative case is used to express direction to something, into something. Note that in this basic sense the illative case is not normally used with animate nouns, with which postpositions can instead be utilized, e.g., *йоча* 'child' → *йоча көргыш(кө)* 'in the child', see 6.2.5 – page 188.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ме Йошкар-Олашке кудалына.               | We're driving to Yoshkar-Ola.                  |
| Те мари йылме курсышко коштыда.          | You are going to a Mari language course.       |
| Кастене мый киношко каем.                | I'm going to the movie theater in the evening. |
| Тый рок-концертлашке кошташ йöратет мо?  | Do you like going to rock concerts?            |
| Йолташем экспедицийышке каяш ямдылалтеш. | My friend is preparing to go on an expedition. |

In addition, the illative case can also be used to indicate directionality, not expressly 'to or into something', but rather 'in the direction of, towards something' or in a terminative sense, 'as far as, up to something'.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Окнам <u>Чавайн бульварыш</u> лектеш.  | My window faces <u>Chavayn Boulevard</u> .  |
| Спортсмен <u>сай результатыш</u> шуын. | The athlete achieved <u>a good result</u> . |

2.63. Put the word in parentheses into the illative and insert it into the sentence.

1. Йоча-влак ... ошкылыт. (школ)
2. Пошкудем ... куржеш. (паша)
3. Самолёт ... чонешта. (Ханты-Мансийск)
4. «Лев Толстой» лўман поезд ... кудалеш. (Хельсинки)
5. У корно 150 ... шуын. (менге)
6. Галя ... онча, марийжым вуча. (корно)
7. Рушарнян ме ... каена. (зоопарк)
8. Аня ... кошташ йōрата. (опер)
9. Балконна Петров ... лектеш. (урем)
10. Акам ... киярлан кая. (пазар)

2.64. Insert the fitting noun in the illative. The options are given below.

1. Эн ончыч ... кок пий чонештен: Белка ден Стрелка.
2. Мый ийын ом мошто – ... пураш лўдам.
3. Орина – музеолог. Тудо чўчкыдын ... коштеш.
4. Ачай футболым ончаш ... коштеш.
5. Спорт комментатор: «Мече лачак ... чонештен пурен. Гол!!!»

(тоштер-влак, стадион, капка, космос, вўд)

6. Унагудын окнаже-влак ... лектыт.
7. Олма ... огыл, а Ньютон ўмбаке камвозын.
8. Рестораныште: «Официант! ... карме логалын».
9. Пōртын акше лу миллион ... шуын.
10. Бутерброд ... эре ўян могыр дене камвозеш.

(тенге, кўмыжем, мланде, тенгыз, кўвар)

### 2.4.6.3. Auxiliary functions

#### 1. Temporal adverbial

The illative case can be used to form temporal adverbials to express entry into a new time period or in a terminative sense, as far as, up to a point in time. Note also the constructions with a repetition of a noun, where the noun is followed first by the postposition *гыч* and then is used in the illative case, e.g.: *уй гыч уйыш(ке)* 'from year to year' or *мылзе гыч мылзыш(ке)* 'from month to month'.

|                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| Ковам <u>шымле ийыш</u> тошкалын. | My grandmother has turned <u>seventy</u> . |
| Жап <u>кечывалыш</u> лишемеш.     | It's getting <u>close to noon</u> .        |
| Игече <u>телыш</u> вончен.        | The weather is becoming <u>wintery</u> .   |

#### 2. Translative

The illative case is used to express into what/whom, to what/whom somebody or something is transformed, turned into, made.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Вуверкува ўдырым <u>пырысыш</u> савырен.                                   | The witch turned the girl <u>into a cat</u> .   |
| Алхимик-влак тыглай металлм <u>шөртньыш</u> савырынешт ыле.                | Alchemists wanted to turn common metals <u>into gold</u> .  |
| Ольгам йöратен шындымеке, Васлий пессимист гыч <u>оптимистыш</u> савырнен. | After falling in love with Olga, Vasliy turned from a pessimist into an optimist.                                   |
| Университетым тунем пытарымеке, йорло рвезе <u>айдемыш</u> лектын.         | After finishing university, the young man made it in the world (lit. went <u>among the people</u> ).                |
| Коваже тудым куштен, туныктен да <u>айдемыш</u> луктын.                    | His/her grandmother brought him up and set him/her up in the world (lit. brought him/her <u>among the people</u> ). |

2.65. Insert the fitting noun in the illative. The options are given below.

1. Игече эркын ... тошкалеш: лум шула, кече шокшынрак ырыкта.
2. Ик йомакыште ужава сылне ... савырнен.
3. Витя майыште 14 ... вончен да паспортым налын.
4. Миша йолташем – уста пианист. Тудо вашке лўмлö ... лектын.
5. А кызыт те пален налыда, кузе тошто тувырым у ... савыраш.

(ий, шошо, блузко, принцессе, ег)

6. Олаште марий-влак вашке ... савырнат, марий йылмым мондат.
7. Йöратымаш мыйын илышым ... савырен: иканаште чыла сай лийын.
8. Ольошым пазарыште ондаленыт, ... луктыныт.
9. Ивук 30-шо ... тошкалын.
10. Урокна ... лишемын.

(окмак, руш, йомак, мучаш, идалык)

## 2.4.7. Lative (-ew)

### 2.4.7.1. Suffix and Suffix Attachment

Attachment to stem: E-suffixes (see 1.6.2 – page 43).

Note that in the case of nouns ending in stressed /-a/ or /-e/ the lative form is homonymous with the short form of the illative: *ола* 'city' → *олаш* (lative or short illative), but *олашке* (long illative), *шонке* 'aspen' → *шонкеш* (lative or short illative), but *шонкешке* (long illative).

2.66. Form the lative of the following nouns.

1. йол
2. вуй
3. ваче
4. кастрюль
5. салма
6. кў
7. метро
8. куэ
9. ото
10. мөнгö

Order of lative suffix and number suffixes: When used together, the ordering is number suffix + lative suffix: *nöpm* 'house' → *nöpm-влакеш*, *книга* 'book' → *книга-влакеш*.



2.67. Form the lative plural of the following nouns.

1. сумка
2. мешак
3. пырдыж
4. пўкен
5. полко
6. окна
7. кудывече
8. ял
9. корно
10. автобус

Order of lative suffix and possessive suffixes: When used together, the ordering is lative suffix + possessive suffix.

|     | пөрт 'house' | книга 'book' |
|-----|--------------|--------------|
| 1Sg | пөртешем     | книгашем     |
| 2Sg | пөртешет     | книгашет     |
| 3Sg | пөртешыже    | книгашыже    |
| 1Pl | пөртешна     | книгашна     |
| 2Pl | пөртешда     | книгашда     |
| 3Pl | пөртешышт    | книгашышт    |

2.68. Attach all possessive suffixes and the lative suffix to the following two nouns.

1. кўсен
2. сумка

Order of lative suffix, possessive suffix and number suffix: When all used together, there are two possible orderings: 1. possessive suffix (Px) + number suffix (Nx) + lative suffix, 2. number suffix (Nx) + lative suffix + possessive suffix (Px).

|            | пөрт 'house'   |                | книга 'book'   |                 |
|------------|----------------|----------------|----------------|-----------------|
|            | Px + Nx + Lat  | Nx + Lat + Px  | Px + Nx + Lat  | Nx + Lat + Px   |
| <b>1Sg</b> | пөртем-влакеш  | пөрт-влакешем  | книгам-влакеш  | книга-влакешем  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пөртет-влакеш  | пөрт-влакешет  | книгат-влакеш  | книга-влакешет  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пөртшө-влакеш  | пөрт-влакешыже | книгаже-влакеш | книга-влакешыже |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пөртна-влакеш  | пөрт-влалешна  | книгана-влакеш | книга-влакешна  |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пөртда-влакеш  | пөрт-влакешда  | книгада-влакеш | книга-влакешда  |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пөртышт-влакеш | пөрт-влакешышт | книгашт-влакеш | книга-влакешышт |

2.69. Attach all possessive suffixes, the plural suffix *-влак* and the lative suffix to the noun *окна* 'window', using both ordering patterns.

### 2.4.7.2. Main functions

#### 1. Local adverbial

The lative case is used to express directionality, movement to something, into something. It differs from the illative case in three important respects: 1) It is used far less frequently than the illative. 2) Whereas the illative can be used very freely in connection with verbs indicating motion into/to/towards, the lative occurs typically with only a smaller number of such verbs. 3) In many cases the English equivalent of the Mari form does not answer the question 'where to?', but rather 'where?' The individual verb employed and the government of its English equivalent will determine whether a translation in answer to 'where to?' or 'where' is appropriate. For example,

the Mari verb *кодаш* (-ам) 'to remain' is typically used governing a noun in the lative case, whereas the equivalent English verb 'to remain' is used to express 'where?'.

Note that in this basic sense the illative case is not normally used with animate nouns, with which postpositions can instead be utilized, e.g., *йоча* 'child' → *йоча көргеш* 'in(to) the child', see 6.2.5 – page 188.

Some typical verbs often used together with the lative are *кодаш* (-ам) 'to remain, to stay', *кодаш* (-ем) 'to leave (something)', *шинчаш* (-ам) 'to sit down', *шочаш* (-ам) 'to be born', *сакаш* (-ем) 'to hang up, to hang on', *пышташ* (-ем) 'to put, to place', *кушкаш* (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)', *шындаш* (-ем) 'to put, to place', *онташ* (-ем) 'to place (several items)', *верандаш* (-ем) 'to place, to arrange', *нижаш* (-ам) 'to stick, to get stuck', *нижыкташ* (-ем) 'to fix, to fasten'.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ковам <u>Тойметсола ялеш кресаньык ешеш шочын.</u>   | My grandmother was born <u>in the village of Toymetsola into a peasant family.</u> |
| <u>Кўан курыкеш</u> пушенте кушкын.                  | A tree grew on the <u>stony hill.</u>  |
| Сумкатым <u>пүкенеш</u> пыште да <u>диванеш</u> шич. | Put your bag <u>on the chair</u> and sit down <u>on the couch.</u>                 |
| Айда тиде сүретым <u>пырдыжеш</u> сакена.            | Let's hang this picture <u>up on the wall.</u>                                     |
| Аля <u>тошто пачерешак</u> илаш кодын.               | Alya continued living <u>in her old flat.</u>                                      |

In many cases, both the illative and the lative cases can be used with a verb. Examples with verbs from above: *диванеш* ~ *диваныш(ке)* *шинчаш* (-ам) 'to sit down on a couch', *мешакеш* ~ *мешакыш(ке)* *пышташ* (-ем) 'to put into a sack', *пырдыжеш* ~ *пырдыжыш(ке)* *сакаш* (-ем) 'to hang /something/ on the wall'. Examples with other verbs: *сареш* ~ *сарыш(ме)* *колаш* (-ем) 'to die in war', *йолеш* ~ *йолыш(ке)* *чияш* (-ем) 'to put something on one's feet'.

There are also a number of idiomatic expressions that require the lative, e.g., *вuwеш налаш* (-ам) 'to be offended' (← *вуй* 'head'), *тынеш пураш* (-ем) 'to be baptized' (← *тын* 'faith, belief', *чонеш* *нижаш* (-ам) (← *чон* 'heart, soul') 'to touch someone's heart'.

2.70. Insert the fitting noun in the lative. The options are given below.

1. ... ида нал, каласен кертыда, кызыт мыняр шагат?
2. Турист-влакым «Сайвер» ... веранденыт.
3. Петя экзаменым начарын кучен, садлан шымше ... кодын.
4. Унагудышто ик уна ... «Ида тургыжландаре» табличкым коден.
5. Машина корно ... шогалын

(класс, түр, вуй, унагудо, омсаже)

6. Аня ... у мотор кемым чиен.
7. Валя Ванян ... пижын.
8. Ме «1-ше аптеке» ... воленна.
9. Ачам Морко ... шочын-кушкын.
10. Кова уныкажлан шўрым эн кугу ... оптен.

(остановко, чонжо, кўмыж, кундем, йолжо)

### 2.4.7.3. Auxiliary functions

#### 1. Causal adverbial

A noun in the lative can indicate the cause for an action or even more generally, under what circumstances the action takes place.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Йоча-влак <u>йўреш</u> нōреныт.           | The children got soaked <u>in the rain</u> .                    |
| Ночко вургем <u>кечеш</u> писын кошкен.   | Wet clothes dry quickly <u>in the sun</u> .                     |
| Эрдене <u>будильник йўкеш</u> помыжалтым. | I woke up <u>to the sound of an alarm clock</u> in the morning. |

## 2. Temporal adverbial

A noun in the lative can express a period of time in which something (repeatedly) takes place. In this function, the dative – see 2.4.4 – page 78 – can also be used.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Таза айдеме <u>минутеш</u> 16–20 гана шўлалта. | A healthy person breathes 16–20 times <u>a minute</u> . |
| Тый <u>кечеш</u> мыняр гана кочкат?            | How many times <u>a day</u> do you eat?                 |
| Экспедицийышке <u>кок тылзеш</u> каена.        | We're going on an expedition <u>for two months</u> .    |

## 3. Predicative adverbial

A noun in the lative can be used to indicate how someone or something is regarded, for what they are held.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Илышыштем кажне айдемым <u>туныктышеш</u> ужам. | In my life, I see everybody <u>as a teacher</u> . |
| Ивук пийжым <u>эн сай йолташеш</u> шотла.       | Ivuk considers his dog <u>his best friend</u> .   |

## 4. Means of transport

A noun in the lative can express by what means something is transferred, relocated, or undergoes a change.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Кокам <u>кок сумкашыже</u> ялысе шōрым, торыкым, ўмбалым конден. | My aunt brought milk, curds, and cream from the village <u>in her two bags</u> . |
| Йошкар-Олашке <u>автобусеш</u> толынна.                          | We came to Yoshkar-Ola <u>by bus</u> .   |
| Тулеш кўктымō паренге пеш тамле.                                 | Potatoes cooked <u>in fire</u> are tasty.  |

2.71. Insert the fitting noun in the lative. The options are given below.

1. Унагудо гыч вокзалыш ... каенам.
2. ... кок гана ме еш дене иктаж-кушко канаш коштына.
3. Кугу ... мелна когарген.
4. Йўштō Кугыза ... йоча-влаклан пōлекым конден.
5. Тый шкендым пиалан ... ужат?

(тул, мешакше, ег, такси, ий)

## 2.4.8. Comparative (-ла)

### 2.4.8.1. Suffix and Suffix Attachment

Attachment to stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48). This suffix is unstressed, and is not to be confused with the stressed plural suffix *-ла* (see 2.1.2.3 – page 59), the adverbial suffix *-ла* (see 8.3 – page 318), or the clitic *-ла* (see 9.1.4 – page 331).

2.72. Form the comparative of the following nouns.

1. пире
2. меранг
3. маска
4. шордо
5. пүчө
6. имне
7. шопке
8. пий
9. куку
10. лыве

Order of comparative suffix and number suffixes: When used together, the ordering is number suffix + comparative suffix: *nöpm* 'house' → *nöpm-влакла*, *книга* 'book' → *книга-влакла*.

2.73. Form the comparative plural of the following nouns.

1. йоча
2. рвезе
3. ўдыр
4. родо
5. куэ
6. пўнчө
7. тумо
8. кож
9. коля
10. чыве

Order of comparative suffix and possessive suffixes: When used together, two orderings are possible: 1) possessive suffix (Px) + comparative suffix, or 2) comparative suffix + possessive suffix (Px). The first suffix ordering is much more common.

|            | пöрт 'house' |           |
|------------|--------------|-----------|
|            | Px + Comp    | Comp + Px |
| <b>1Sg</b> | пöртемла     | пöртлам   |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пöртетла     | пöртлат   |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пöртшыла     | пöртлаже  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пöртнала     | пöртлана  |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пöртдала     | пöртлада  |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пöртыштла    | пöртлашт  |

2.74. Attach all possessive suffixes and the comparative suffix to the following two nouns, using the arrangement Px + Comp.

1. ўдыр
2. кова

Order of comparative suffix, possessive suffix and number suffix: When co-occurring, there are two possible orderings: 1. possessive suffix (Px) + number suffix (Nx) + comparative suffix, 2. number suffix (Nx) + comparative suffix + possessive suffix (Px).

|            | пöрт 'house'   |                |
|------------|----------------|----------------|
|            | Px + Nx + Comp | Nx + Px + Comp |
| <b>1Sg</b> | пöртем-влакла  | пöрт-влакемла  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пöртет-влакла  | пöрт-влакетла  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пöртшö-влакла  | пöрт-влакшыла  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пöртна-влакла  | пöрт-влакнала  |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пöртда-влакла  | пöрт-влакдала  |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пöртышт-влакла | пöрт-влакыштла |

2.75. Attach all possessive suffixes, the plural suffix *-влак* and the comparative suffix to the noun *подо* 'relative', using the ordering Px + Nx + Comp.

#### 2.4.8.2. Functions

##### 1. Similitive adverbial

The comparative case is used to express similarity, likeness and can usually be translated into English as 'like something/someone', 'as something/someone'. The object/person with which a noun in the comparative is compared can be used in varying syntactic functions in the sentence: subject, object, etc.

An alternative construction is the usage of a postposition such as *зай* 'like, as' (see 6.1.10 – page 167) or *семын* 'like, as' (see 6.1.67 – page 183).

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Жап <u>кайыкла</u> писын чонгешта.                     | Time flies as quickly <u>as a bird</u> .   |
| Тый <u>агытанла</u> кычкырен моштет мо?                | Can you crow <u>like a rooster</u> ?   |
| Анна Петровна рвезе дене <u>аважла</u> порын кутыра.   | Anna Petrovna speaks kindly with the boy <u>like his mother</u> .                |
| Тыгай пиаллан нуно <u>йоча-влакла</u> куаненит.        | They were as happy <u>as children</u> about this stroke of luck.                 |
| Ивановмыт <u>пошкудышт-влакла</u> интернетым пуртенит. | <u>Like their neighbors</u> , the Ivanovs got themselves an Internet connection. |

2.76. Insert the fitting noun in the comparative case. The options are given below.

1. Пошкудем дене эн сай ... келшен илена.
  2. Васлий ... талын иеш.
  3. Маша ... тамлын мелнам кўэштнеже.
  4. Марина ... чоян онча.
  5. Микале ... нелын ошкылеш.
- (кол, рывыж, маска, коваже, йолташ)
6. Циркыште тигр изи ... мече дене модеш.
  7. Шўжарем ... сылнын мура.
  8. Катя ... футболла моднеже.
  9. Йöратыдем, пычкемыш йўдым ... мылам волгалтет.
  10. Кристи ... кушташ тунемнеже.

(шўшпык, тылзе, пырыс, марий-влак, рвезе-влак)

##### 2. Predicative adverbial with verbs of sensory perception

With certain verbs of sensory perception such as *чучаш* (-ам) 'to seem, to appear', *кояш* (-ям) 'to seem, to appear, to look like, to resemble', *кончаш* (-ем) 'to appear, to look like', *шокташ* (-ем) 'to sound', *ўншаш* (-ем) 'to smell', a noun in the comparative expresses how/as what something or someone appears, whom or what something or someone resembles.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Тиде курык <u>малыше</u> <u>янлык</u> ла коеш.     | This mountain looks <u>like a sleeping animal</u> .              |
| Йоча годсо жапем <u>сылне омыла</u> чучеш.         | My childhood seems <u>like a beautiful dream</u> .               |
| Тудын илышыже пеш оңай, <u>кинофильм</u> ла конча. | His/her life is very interesting, it seems <u>like a movie</u> . |
| Эстон йылме мылам <u>мурыла</u> шокта.             | Estonian sounds <u>like song</u> to me.                          |
| Тый <u>аватла</u> але <u>ачатла</u> коят?          | Do you look <u>like your mother</u> or <u>your father</u> ?      |

2.77. Insert the fitting noun in the comparative case. The options are given below.

1. Ончал, тебе ту пыл ош ... коеш.
2. Духиэт ... тамлын ўпша.
3. Тиде вер тыгай мотор! ... чучеш.
4. Вепс шомак-влак тылатат финн ... шоктат?
5. Нимучашдыме чодыра ужар... конча

(мут-влак, тенгыз, имне, йомак, пеледыш)

6. Виноэт оңай таман: виноград ... чучеш.
7. Тиде венгр мелодий марий ... шокта.
8. Витя чурийже дене ... коеш.
9. Дыне сай, шере логалын: ... ўпша.
10. Пўртда пеш поян: ... коеш.

(полат, кочаже, сем, сок, мўй)

## 2.4.9. Comitative (-ze)

### 2.4.9.1. Suffix and Suffix Attachment

Attachment to stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48). This suffix is stressed.

2.78. Form the comitative of the following nouns.

1. ола
2. ял
3. родо
4. чўчў
5. чўчўньў
6. вате
7. марий
8. йоча
9. йолташ
10. палыме

Order of comitative suffix and number suffixes: When used together, the ordering is number suffix + comitative suffix: *nўрт* 'house' → *nўрт-влак*зе, *книга* 'book' → *книга-влак*зе.

2.79. Form the comitative plural of the following nouns.

1. кўмыж
2. совла
3. кўзў
4. вилке
5. кастрюль

Order of comitative suffix and possessive suffixes: When used together the ordering is possessive suffix (Px) + comitative suffix.

|            | еш 'family'     |
|------------|-----------------|
|            | <b>Px + Com</b> |
| <b>1Sg</b> | ешемге          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | ешетге          |
| <b>3Sg</b> | ешыжге          |
| <b>1Pl</b> | ешнаге          |
| <b>2Pl</b> | ешдаге          |
| <b>3Pl</b> | ешыштге         |

2.80. Attach all possessive suffixes and the comitative suffix to the noun *подо* 'relative'.

Order of comitative suffix, possessive suffix and number suffix: When co-occurring, there are two possible orderings: 1. possessive suffix (Px) + number suffix (Nx) + comitative suffix, 2. number suffix (Nx) + possessive suffix (Px) + comitative suffix.

|            | пөрт 'house'         |                      |
|------------|----------------------|----------------------|
|            | <b>Px + Nx + Com</b> | <b>Nx + Px + Com</b> |
| <b>1Sg</b> | пөртем-влакге        | пөрт-влакемге        |
| <b>2Sg</b> | пөртет-влакге        | пөрт-влакетге        |
| <b>3Sg</b> | пөртшө-влакге        | пөрт-влакшыге        |
| <b>1Pl</b> | пөртна-влакге        | пөрт-влакнаге        |
| <b>2Pl</b> | пөртда-влакге        | пөрт-влакдаге        |
| <b>3Pl</b> | пөртышт-влакге       | пөрт-влакыштге       |

2.81. Attach all possessive suffixes, the plural suffix *-влак* and the comitative suffix to the noun *йолташ* 'friend', using the ordering Px + Nx + Com.

#### 2.4.9.2. Functions

##### 1. Comitative adverbial

The comitative case denotes accompaniment and can usually be translated as 'with, together with, in company with'. It often occurs in coordinated expressions with two juxtaposed nouns, each of which bears the comitative suffix.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Салатлан паренгым <u>шўмге</u> шолтыза.        | Cook the potatoes <u>with their peels</u> for the salad.                   |
| Понгым <u>вожге</u> ида кўрө, кўзө дене пўчса. | Don't pluck mushrooms out <u>by their roots</u> ; cut them with a knife.   |
| Сумкажым <u>документге, оксаге</u> шолыштыныт. | His/her bag was stolen, <u>together with his/her documents and money</u> . |
| Пачерыштым нуно <u>мебельге</u> ужаленыт.      | They sold their flat <u>together with the furniture</u> .                  |
| Ивановмыт театрыш <u>йочаштге</u> толыныт.     | The Ivanovs came to the theater <u>together with their children</u> .      |

2.82. Insert the fitting noun in the comitative. The options are given below.

1. Пөръен-влак вашлиймашыш ... толыныт.
2. Компьютерым ... налыда гын, ме тыланда смартфоным яра пуэна.
3. Циркысе пашаен-влак ... эл мучко кудалыштыт.
4. Вареньым ышташ вишньым ... налза.
5. Ме Наташалан пеледыш аршашым ... пөлекленна.

(кичке, принтер, вазе, ватышт, янлык-влак)

6. Тиде онгай кафешке уна-влак ... толын кертят.
7. Эн ончыч ушкал шылым ... шолтыза.
8. Англичан йылме дене тунемме книгаг ... луктыт.
9. Мемнан пошкудо-влак шке мландыштым ... ужалат.
10. Студент-влак ... экспедицийыш кудалыныт.

(лу, туныктышышт-влак, диск, пырысышт, пöрт)

## 2. 'all of ...', 'the whole of ...'

The comitative case can also express totality, that all elements of a group or the entire entity is involved in the action. In such cases, a noun (or in coordinated expressions) nouns can fulfill various syntactic functions, such as subject, object, local adverbial, temporal adverbial.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Эрла <u>ныл группыге</u> экзаменым возат.                       | <u>All four groups</u> are writing their exam tomorrow.                |
| Школ спектакльыште <u>йочаге, кугыенге</u> модыт.               | <u>Both children and grownups</u> are acting in the school play.       |
| Гена <u>лу заданийге</u> сайын ыштен.                           | Gena did <u>all ten assignments</u> well.                              |
| Лев Толстойын «Сар да тыныс» романжым <u>ныл томге</u> лудынам. | I read <u>all four volumes</u> of Lev Tolstoy's novel "War and Peace". |
| <u>Уремге, площадьге</u> ола пайрем эрта.                       | The city celebration is taking place <u>on streets and squares</u> .   |
| Нина пöрт йыр, <u>ныл могырге</u> , пеледышым шынден.           | Nina planted flowers around the house, <u>on all four sides</u> .      |
| Авам <u>йүдге-кечыге</u> пашам ышта.                            | My mother works <u>day and night</u> .                                 |

## 2.83. Put the noun in parentheses into the comitative case and insert into the sentence.

1. Вич ий ончыч ... олаш кусенна. (еш)
2. Тиде аптеке ... почмо. (кече-йүд)
3. Классыште 25 ... марла кутыра. (тунемше)
4. Пайрем годым ..., ... уна шуко лийын. (пöрт, кудывече)
5. Йогор лу ... иканаште кочкын. (мелна)



### 3. Adjectives

#### 3.0. General remarks

**Non-congruence:** The typical usages of an adjective are as a modifier to a noun that it precedes, or as a predicative. In these position the adjective does not agree with the noun, i.e., there is no AGREEMENT between adjective and noun. The noun itself can be in the nominative or it can be used with nominal suffixes (plural suffixes, case suffixes, possessive suffixes), clitics, or even derivational suffixes, but these suffixes are attached only to the noun, never to the adjective, e.g.:

|  |                                    |
|--|------------------------------------|
| 'picture'  | сүрет                              |
| 'beautiful picture'                                  | <u>сылне</u> сүрет                 |
| 'beautiful pictures' (plural)                        | <u>сылне</u> сүрет-влак            |
| 'to the beautiful picture' (dative)                  | <u>сылне</u> сүретлан              |
| 'my beautiful picture' (possessive suffix 1SG)       | <u>сылне</u> сүретем               |
| 'and the beautiful picture' (clitic 'and; also')     | <u>сылне</u> сүретат               |
| 'having a beautiful picture' (adjectival derivation) | <u>сылне</u> сүретан               |
| This picture is beautiful.                           | Тиде сүрет <u>сылне</u> .          |
| These pictures are beautiful.                        | Нине сүрет-влак <u>сылне</u> улыт. |

This also holds true when a noun in the nominative case is used as a modifier (see 11.3.2 – page 374), for example:

|  |                         |
|--|-------------------------|
| 'spouse; significant other (lit. life friend)'       | <u>илыш</u> йолташ      |
| 'spouses' (plural)                                   | <u>илыш</u> йолташ-влак |
| 'to the spouse' (dative)                             | <u>илыш</u> йолташлан   |
| 'my spouse' (possessive suffix 1SG)                  | <u>илыш</u> йолташем    |
| 'and the spouse' (clitic 'and; also')                | <u>илыш</u> йолташат    |
| 'having a spouse' (possessive adjectival derivation) | <u>илыш</u> йолташан    |

**Adjectives + nominal suffixes:** In the following cases, however, an adjective is not used as an attribute before a noun. In these instances, adjectives can be used with the nominal suffixes appropriate for the respective situation.

##### 3.0.1. Apposition

With APPPOSITION we mean a certain arrangement of words with a noun or noun phrase being followed by another noun or noun phrase referring to the same thing. This second noun phrase can also be an adjective. In such cases it must have the same suffixes that the preceding noun has. An example of apposition from English: *I live in the house over there, (in) the big one* (instead of *I live in the big house over there*).

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тиде ўдырым, <u>шемалгым</u> , мый сайын палем.  | This girl, <u>the dark-haired one</u> , I know well.              |
| Шўжаретлан, <u>москосылан</u> , саламым каласе.  | Give my regards to your little sister, <u>the one in Moscow</u> . |
| Теве тиде пўлемыште, <u>кугушто</u> , мый малем. | I'll sleep in this room, <u>the big one</u> .                     |
| Мый пўртым, <u>изим</u> , чонем.                 | I'm building a house, <u>a small one</u> .                        |

Note that if an adjective has a short and a long form (see 3.1 – page 99), the long form is used in apposition.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Пеледышыш, <u>йошкаргыш</u> , вўдым ит опто. | Don't pour water on the flowers, <u>the red ones</u> .           |
| Пайремлан тувырым, <u>ошым</u> , налнем.     | I want to buy a shirt, <u>a white one</u> , for the celebration. |

3.1. Insert the adjective given in parentheses after the sentence, inflected appropriately.

1. Акам ту пörтыштö, ... , ила. (изи)
2. Пöлекым пакетышке, ... , пыштен кертыда? (ужар/ужарге)
3. Йолташемлан, ... , серышым возем. (Марий Элысе)
4. Уремыште йүштö. Йолашым, ... , чий. (күжгö)
5. Кевытыште киндым, ... , нал. (шем/шеме)

### 3.0.2. Nominalization of adjectives

Nouns can be formed from adjectives in varying ways, see 11.5 – page 377. It is, however, possible for certain adjectives to be used in a sentence as nouns, in which case they can be used with all nominal suffixes. This can also be observed on occasion in English: *old* (adj.) → *the old* (noun), *good* (adj.) → *the good* (noun), *white* (adj.) → *white* (noun). It is, however, a more productive process in Mari: often in appropriate translations of Mari adjectives used nominally, the English word *one* should be used: *interesting* (adj.) → *the interesting one* (noun). Generally speaking, adjectives encountered with nominal endings (case suffixes, possessive suffixes, plural suffixes) are interpreted as nouns.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Порын</u> вийже <u>осалым</u> сенга.   | The power of <u>good</u> defeats <u>evil</u> .   |
| Сўаныште <u>самырык-влакат</u> , <u>шонго-влакат</u> куштеныт.                  | At the wedding, both <u>the young</u> and <u>the old</u> danced.   |
| Пöлекым чылалан пуэныт: <u>изи-влаклан</u> модышым, <u>кугу-влаклан</u> книгам. | Everybody got presents: <u>the children</u> (lit. <u>small ones</u> ) toys, and <u>the adults</u> (lit. <u>big ones</u> ) books. |
| <u>Моторем</u> кызыт тораште, тудлан серышым возем.                             | <u>My sweetheart</u> (lit. <u>beautiful one</u> ) is far away now, I am writing him/her a letter.                                |
| Вўдын <u>келгыже</u> тыште могай?   | What is the <u>depth</u> of the water here?  |

Note that if an adjective has a short and a long form (see 3.1 – page 99) the long form is used in nominalization.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Стендальын романже « <u>Йошкарге ден шеме</u> » маналтеш. | Stendhal's novel is called " <u>The Red and the Black</u> ". |
|---|--|

3.2. Insert the adjective or adjectives given in parentheses after the sentence, inflected appropriately.

1. ... чыла ум йöратат. (самырык-влак)
2. ... ялыште канаш келша. (оласе-влак)
3. Тый ... йöратат мо? (шере)
4. ... оксаже шуко, а ... шагал (поян, нужна)
5. ... шуко ит кошт: черланен кертат. (йүштö)

### 3.0.3. Ellipsis

With ELLIPSIS one means the omission of one or more words that are not necessary for comprehension. When a noun is left out, an adjective can refer back to a previous occurrence of it, as in the English sentence: *What kind of wine would you like? Red or white?* (instead of *Red wine or white wine?*) The adjective will then assume the suffixes which otherwise would be present on the noun.

Кок пачерна уло: кугуракыште ача-авана илат, изиракыште ме шўжарем дене илена.

We have two flats: our parents live in the larger one, my sister and I live in the smaller one.

Снегын акше түрлө: чодырасын шергырак, сад-пакчасын шулдырак.

Strawberries have different prices: the forest ones are more expensive; the garden ones are cheaper.

Note that if an adjective has a short and a long form (see 3.1 – page 99) any nominal suffixes are added to the long form.

Кузе шонет, могай сумкам сайрак налаш: шемым але ужаргым?

What do you think, which bag should I buy: the black one or the green one?

Тиде туфльо могай тувырлан утларак келшен толеш: йошкаргылан але ошылан?

Which shirt do these shoes go better with: the red one or the white one?

3.3. Insert the adjective or adjectives given in parentheses after the sentence, inflected appropriately.

1. Рисым могай вўдыш пышташ кўлеш: ... але ...? (йўштө, шокшо)
2. Акам дене ик пörтыштак илена: тудо пычкемыш могырышто, а мый ... (волгыдо)
3. Кузе шонет, могай пеледышын пушыжо тамлырак: ... але ...? (йошкарге, ошо)
4. У телефоным налаш кызыт оксам уке, садланак ... кучылтам. (тошто)
5. Кужу йолашлан 3000 тенгем түленам, а ... 2000 тенгем. (кўчык)

### 3.1. Adjectives with short and long forms

In Mari there is a small group of adjectives that have both a short and a long form. Many of these denote colors.

Colors:

| Short form | Long form | Translation |
|------------|-----------|-------------|
| йoшкар     | йoшкарге  | red         |
| oш         | oшo       | white       |
| сaндал     | сaндалге  | rosy, pink  |
| ужар       | ужарге    | green       |
| шем        | шeмe      | black       |
| сap        | сapе      | yellow      |

Other adjectives:

| Short form | Long form | Translation       |
|------------|-----------|-------------------|
| кoшар      | кoшарге   | pointed, sharp    |
| нoжыл      | нoжылге   | tender, gentle    |
| тўж        | тўжö      | pregnant (animal) |
| кaкap      | кaкapге   | bruised           |
| сöрaл      | сöрaлe    | beautiful         |

**Usage of the short and long forms:** The two forms have the same meaning, but are used differently in sentences. Generally, the short form is used when the adjective is an attribute before a noun. The long form is used in all other cases, including usage as a predicative adjective, in elliptical or appositional constructions, or when nominalized. Therefore, only the long form takes case suffixes, plural suffixes, possessive suffixes, and the comparative degree suffix *-пак*.

This rule applies more strongly to adjectives denoting colors (with the exception of *cape* 'yellow'). In the case of other adjectives (and *cape*), the long form is also encountered in attributive function. That is to say, in the attributive position, both forms can be used interchangeably, e.g.: *нoжыл*

*йөратымаш ~ ныжылге йөратымаш* 'tender love'. In the case of *сөрал ~ сөрале* 'beautiful', both forms can be encountered in both positions, though as a trend, the long form is more common in the predicative position, and the short form more common in other positions.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мылам таче <u>йошкар</u> розам пөлекленыт.         | I got a <u>red</u> rose today.         |
| Мылам таче розам пөлекленыт,<br><u>йошкаргым</u> . | I got a rose today, <u>a red one</u> . |
| Петя <u>шем</u> машина дене кудалыштеш.            | Petya drives a <u>black</u> car.       |
| Петян машинаже <u>шеме</u> .                       | Petya's car is <u>black</u> .          |
| <u>Ужар</u> шинчан пырысем уло.                    | I have a <u>green</u> -eyed cat.       |
| Пырысемын шинчаже <u>ужарге</u> .                  | My cat's eyes are <u>green</u> .       |

Note that the usage of short and long forms parallels the usage of the short and long forms of the cardinal numbers (see 4.1 – page 106), and of other quantifiers (e.g., *мыняр ~ мыняре* 'how much, how many').

|  |  |
|--|--|
| 3.4. Insert the appropriate form of the adjective given in parentheses. If case suffixes are appropriate, add these as well. |  |
| 1. Марий калык поснак ... тўсым йөрата. (ош/ошо)   |  |
| 2. Кенжежым шудо ..., а шыжым нарынче. (ужар/ужарге)   |  |
| 3. ... неран туфлым кызыт огыт чий. (кошар/кошарге)  |  |
| 4. Тиде мурым, тыгай ..., кажне эрдене колыштам. (ныжыл/ныжылге)   |  |
| 5. Телым уремыште чыла ... . (ош/ошо)  |  |
| 6. Китай календарь почеш 2017-ше ий – тиде ... агытанын ийже. (йошкар/йошкарге)  |  |
| 7. Тиде курчак мотор огыл: нерже пеш ... . (кошар/кошарге)   |  |
| 8. Тыйын ... костюмет уло мо? (шем/шеме)   |  |
| 9. Тый ... чайым йўат а'ле шемым? (ужар/ужарге)  |  |
| 10. Мый вином ... гына йөратем. (йошкар/йошкарге)  |  |

Note in addition the following words which have short and long forms, but which differ from the adjectives listed above in that the relationship between the short and long form is not quite as predictable.

1. *нел ~ неле*: The short form is an adjective 'half (a)', the long form is typically a noun or is used as an attribute in the sense of 'half, semi-, near, partly, partially, partial'.

*нел*: *нел шагат* 'half an hour'  
*нел тылзе* 'half-moon'  
*нел кило* 'half a kilo'

*неле*: *иктат неле* 'one and a half'  
*неле йўшō* 'half-drunk'  
*неле порсын* 'near silk'  
*неле чал* 'partly gray'

2. *вес ~ весе*: The short form is used attributively in the sense 'different; other, another; next, following'. The long form is used in all other cases, e.g., as a predicative adjective, but also in the sense of a pronoun or noun 'the other (one(s)); something different'.

*вес*: *вес шонымаш* 'different opinion'  
*вес сер* 'other shore'  
*вес лышташ* 'next page'

*весе*: *весе-влак* 'the others'  
*Тиде чылт весе.* 'That is completely different.'

Мый тидым ом нал, весе налже. 'I won't take this, someone else should take it.'  
Иктаж-мом весым каласен кертам? 'Do you have anything else to say?'

### 3.2. Comparison of adjectives

In addition to and based on the positive degree of adjectives, Mari also forms a comparative and a superlative degree. Comparative and superlative forms of adverbs are formed by the same general principles, see 8.5 – page 322.

#### 3.2.1. Positive degree

The positive degree of adjectives is unmarked. Note also the following constructions of equivalency:

##### 1. (*just*) *as ... as ...*

Here, the postposition *гай* 'as, like' (see 9.5.16 – page 341) is used. The clitic *-ак* (see 9.1.2 – page 330) can be attached to this postposition for the sake of emphasis.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ўдыр лүдмыж дене <u>пор гай ошо</u> лийын. | In her fear, the girl went <u>white as chalk</u> .  |
| Ивук <u>ачаж гаяк тале</u> .               | Ivuk is just <u>as skilled as his father</u> .      |
| Марий калык <u>мүкш гай пашаче</u> .       | The Mari people are <u>as industrious as bees</u> . |
| Ануш <u>Эчан гай кугу</u> огыл.            | Anush is not <u>as big as Echan</u> .               |

3.5. Form constructions of equivalency based on the given sentence and the word given in parentheses, following the example: *Изам вяян (маска)*. → *Изам маска гай вяян*.

1. Шинчат канде (кава).
2. Нуно чоя улыт (рывыж).
3. Эвика ушан кушкеш (аваже).
4. Тазалыкда пенгыде лийже (тумо).
5. Илышда шере лийже (мүй).

##### 2. *of the same ...*

Note the construction with *ик* 'one' followed by a noun marked with the derivational suffix *-ан* (see 11.6.1 – page 382). This construction is used to show that a property applies to several objects to the same degree. Instead of *ик*, *икгай* 'of the same type' can be used as well.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Нине ручка-влак <u>ик/икгай кужытан</u> улыт. | These pens are <u>of the same length</u> . |
| Нине машина-влак <u>ик/икгай тусан</u> улыт.  | These cars are <u>of the same color</u> .  |
| Ме <u>ик/икгай ийготан</u> улына.             | We're <u>of the same age</u> .             |

3.6. Insert constructions of equivalency into the following sentences, using the noun given in parentheses.

1. Классыштына кум ... рвезе уло (фамилий).
2. Эрге ден ачаже ... улыт (койыш).
3. Чемоданем-влак ... улыт (нелыт).
4. Тендан ужга-влакда ... улыт? (күжгыт)
5. Тыште чылан ... улына (права).

#### 3.2.2. Comparative degree

The comparative form of adjectives is formed with the stressed suffix *-пак*, an N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

| Positive      | Comparative | Translation |
|---------------|-------------|-------------|
| сай           | сайрак      | good        |
| мотор         | моторрак    | beautiful   |
| ужар ~ ужалге | ужаргырак   | green       |
| шокшо         | шокшырак    | warm        |
| шуко          | шукырак     | much, many  |
| шагал         | шагалрак    | little, few |

Note that this suffix can also be used to indicate a lesser intensity of the quality in question (*узирак капан* 'short; of small stature' ← *кан* 'body').

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Тиде книга <u>оңайрак</u> .                         | This book is <u>more interesting</u> .                                 |
| Тендан пөртда кугу, а мемнан эшеат <u>кугурак</u> . | Your house is big, but ours is <u>bigger</u> yet.                      |
| Эрла игече <u>сайрак</u> лиеш гын, ялышке кудалына. | If the weather is <u>better</u> tomorrow, we'll go to the countryside. |
| Телылан <u>шокшырак</u> вургемым налаш кўлеш.       | You have to buy <u>warmer</u> clothes for winter.                      |
| Тиде шўр <u>шинчаланрак</u> .                       | This soup is <u>a bit salty</u> .                                      |

### 3.7. Form the comparative of the following adjectives.

1. изи
2. неле
3. йўштө
4. шем/шеме
5. лавыран
6. кужу
7. ош/ошо
8. яндар
9. куштылго
10. поян
11. кўчык
12. йошкар/йошкарге
13. поро
14. нужна
15. кугу

### 3.8. Put the words in parentheses into the comparative degree.

1. Марий Элыште теле йўштө, а Карелийыште эшеат (йўштө).
2. (Шулдо) телефоным кушто налаш лиеш?
3. Кузе шонет, ош але йошкар вино (тамле)?
4. Кузе шонет, Изи але Кугу Какшан (кужу)?
5. (Неле) заданийым ышташ (оңай).

**Object of comparison:** When using the comparative degree of an adjective, one very often includes the point of reference. Here English uses the word *than*, e.g., something/somebody is bigger/better/whiter *than* something/somebody else. In Mari two common constructions are used, both involving the postposition *деч* 'of, from' (see 6.1.22 – page 172). There is no overt difference between the two structures as regards their meaning or distribution.

1. *деч* + *-пак*: The postposition *деч* follows the object of comparison. The adjective is in the comparative degree (*-пак*).

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Йошкар-Ола <u>Волжск</u> <u>деч</u> <u>кугурак</u> . | Yoshkar-Ola is <u>larger than</u> Volzhsk.     |
| Ануш <u>Эчан</u> <u>деч</u> <u>изирак</u> .          | Anush is <u>smaller than</u> Echan.            |
| Кенжежым кече <u>йӱд</u> <u>деч</u> <u>кужурак</u> . | In summer, days are <u>longer than</u> nights. |
| Машина <u>трамвай</u> <u>деч</u> <u>писырак</u> .    | Cars are <u>faster than</u> trams.             |

2. деч without -рак: It is also possible to leave the adjective in the positive degree, i.e., without the suffix -рак. Although the adjective is formally in the positive degree, a comparative sense is given unequivocally by the postposition alone.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Лум <u>кагаз</u> <u>деч</u> <u>ошо</u> .                                   | Snow is <u>whiter than</u> paper.                         |
| Жап <u>кайык</u> <u>деч</u> <u>писе</u> .                                  | Time is <u>faster than</u> a bird.                        |
| Миклай <u>деч</u> <u>сай</u> <u>сӱретче</u> <u>олаштына</u> <u>укеат</u> . | There is no artist <u>better than</u> Miklay in our town. |

3.9. Form sentences with the words given. Example: *Йошкар-Ола, Волжск, кугу* → *Йошкар-Ола Волжск деч кугурак ~ кугу*.

1. Козьмодемьянск, Йошкар-Ола, тошто.
2. Шольо, иза, самырык.
3. Миллиардер, миллионер, поян.
4. Урал курык, Марий Элысе курык, кӱкшӱ
5. Ий, вӱд, куштылго.

3.10. Insert the fitting adjective in the comparative. The options are given below.

1. Инфляций дене чыла ... лийын.
2. Мый телым ом йӱрате: мылам ... игече келша.
3. Эрла шуко уна толеш – ... ӱстелым шындаш кӱлеш.
4. Йӱдвелне йӱд-влак ... улыт.
5. ... чайым йӱратет гын, сакырым ешаре.

(шере, кугу, шерге, волгыдо, шокшо)

6. Оксам кызыт шагал – ... сумкалан vele сита.
7. Омет шуэш гын, ... кофем йӱ.
8. Тиде йолаш тылат ... – кӱчыкемдаш кӱлеш.
9. Ивук пеш ушан: ... заданийымат чын ыштен.
10. Тиде фильм весе деч ...

(кужу, пенгыде, онгай, неле, шулдо)

Degree of comparison: If one wishes to express to which degree a comparison applies (e.g., 'by two meters', 'by two years'), the dative case is used.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Тудо Петер деч <u>кум сантиметрлан</u> <u>кужурак</u> .    | S/he is taller than Peter <u>by three centimeters</u> .              |
| Вайсу йыгыр шольыж деч <u>ду минутлан</u> <u>кугурак</u> . | Vaysu is older than his twin brother <u>by ten minutes</u> .         |
| Ик сӱснаже весе деч <u>пел центнерлан</u> <u>нелырак</u> . | One of the pigs is heavier than the other <u>by half a centner</u> . |

To express 'twice as', 'three times as', etc., the postpositions *пачаш* 'time, times' or *гана* 'time, times' can be used:

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Телефонет мыйын деч <u>кум пачаш/гана</u> <u>шергырак</u> <u>лийын</u> . | Your phone was three times as expensive as mine. |
| Эчан Ануш деч <u>кок пачаш/гана</u> <u>кугу</u> .                        | Echan is twice as old as Anush.                  |

For possibilities to express *more and more*, *much more*, etc. through adverbial constructions, see 8.4.2 – page 320. For possibilities to express *the ...-er*, *the ...-er*, *less ...*, *not as ...* (through pronominal constructions) see 5.2.3 – page 140.

### 3.2.3. Superlative degree

The superlative degree of adjectives is formed by placing the particle *эн* before the positive degree. This means that the suffix of the comparative degree *-пак* is not used in the superlative.

| Positive | Comparative | Superlative | Translation |
|----------|-------------|-------------|-------------|
| поро     | порырак     | эн поро     | good        |
| изи      | изирак      | эн изи      | small       |
| шокшо    | шокшырак    | эн шокшо    | warm, hot   |
| кужу     | кужурак     | эн кужу     | long        |
| шуко     | шукырак     | эн шуко     | much, many  |
| шагал    | шагалрак    | эн шагал    | little, few |

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Кызыт ме <u>эн куштылго</u> темым тунемына.                | We are currently studying <u>the easiest</u> subject.   |
| Мый гын шонем, команмелна – <u>эн тамле</u> марий кочкыш.  | I think komanmelnas (layered pancakes) are <u>the tastiest</u> Mari food.                       |
| Марий йылмыште тыланда мо <u>эн онгай</u> ?                | What is <u>the most interesting thing</u> in the Mari language for you?                         |
| Тиде темым <u>эн шагал</u> шымлыме.                        | This is <u>the least</u> researched topic.  |
| Йолташет-влак кокла гыч Прийт мылам <u>эн шагал</u> келша. | Of your friends, I like Priit <u>the least</u> .  |
| Мўшыл ер – Марий Элын ик <u>эн мотор</u> ерже.             | Mūshyl yer (Russian <i>Морской Глаз</i> ) is one of <u>the most beautiful</u> lakes in Mari El. |

3.11. Form the comparative and superlative degree of the following adjectives.

1. сылне
2. пушкыдо
3. начар
4. осал
5. шонго
6. шопо
7. кумда
8. йōсō
9. весела
10. кўрен

3.12. Insert the fitting adjective in the superlative. The options are given below.

1. Мыйын ... мурызын концертышкыже лу гана коштынам.
2. Тудо пеш палыме спортсмен: ... эллаштат тудын нерген колыныт.
3. Эн тамле, ... пакчасаска ден фруктым пазарыште веле налаш лиеш.
4. Юл энер ... верлаштыже тенгыз гай: вес серым ужаш ок лий.
5. Саню классыштына ... лийын: чылам пален, эре визытаным налын.

(кумда, тора, ушан, йōратыме, свежа)



6. Мутер-влак ... полкышто шогат.
7. Черле улат: мӱнгыштӱ кодаш тылат кызыт ... лиеш.
8. ... рвезе-влаклан эн неле чемоданым пуэныт.
9. Киндым мый эре ... кевытыште налам.
10. Ойлат, гепард тӱняште ... янлык.

(писе, лишыл, пайдале, кӱшыл, виян)

Alternative superlative constructions: One can also form superlative constructions of a sort by using the comparative, with *нигӧ* 'nobody' or *нимо* 'nothing' as the object of comparison: *нигӧ деч сай* ~ *сайрак* 'better than anyone (lit. nobody)', *нимо деч шерге* ~ *шергырак* 'more dear than anything (lit. nothing)'.

In a further construction with emphatic undertones, the postposition *деч* can be placed between two occurrences of the same adjective in the positive degree, e.g., *мотор* → *мотор деч мотор* 'the most beautiful'. This construction is especially encountered in poetic language.

Тушто мотор деч мотор пушенге кушкеш.

Сай деч сай илышым тыланем.

There the most beautiful trees grow.

I wish (you) the best (from) life.

## 4. Quantifiers

### 4.1. Cardinal numerals

#### 4.1.1. Formation: short and long forms

The numerals from 1 through 9 and larger numbers ending in 1–9 (11–19, 21–29, 31–39, etc.) possess two forms, commonly known as short and long forms. Ten and all its multiples (e.g., 20, 30, 40, 100, 110, 120, 360, 1000) have only one form.

1–10:

|           | Short form | Long form |
|-----------|------------|-----------|
| <b>1</b>  | ик         | икте      |
| <b>2</b>  | кок        | кокыт     |
| <b>3</b>  | кум        | кумыт     |
| <b>4</b>  | ныл        | нылыт     |
| <b>5</b>  | вич        | визыт     |
| <b>6</b>  | куд        | кудыт     |
| <b>7</b>  | шым        | шымыт     |
| <b>8</b>  | кандаш     | кандаше   |
| <b>9</b>  | индеш      | индеше    |
| <b>10</b> | лу         |           |

As regards the usage of *ук* (*me*) as a pronoun, see 5.7.5 – page 156. As regards the usage of *ук* as a particle, see 9.5.28 – page 344.

Alternative forms of 1, 2: in addition to the long forms given above, long forms *икым/иктым* for 1 and *коктым* for 2 can be encountered. These forms are used especially in counting, where *икте* is not used: *икым, кокым, кумым, нылым, ... ~ иктым, коктым, кумым, нылым, ...* ‘one, two, three, four, ...’. Note that *икым* and *кокым*, and *иктым* and *коктым*, are always used with one another here.

вич ~ визыт: Note the consonant alternation *ч ~ з*, see 1.5.7 – page 34.

11–19: These numerals consist of the element *лат-* (← *лу* ‘ten’ + *-ам* ‘and’, see 9.1.1 – page 328) and the corresponding short or long forms of the numerals 1–9.

|           | Short form | Long form  |
|-----------|------------|------------|
| <b>11</b> | латик      | латикте    |
| <b>12</b> | латкок     | латкокыт   |
| <b>13</b> | латкум     | латкумыт   |
| <b>14</b> | латныл     | латнылыт   |
| <b>15</b> | латвич     | латвизыт   |
| <b>16</b> | латкуд     | латкудыт   |
| <b>17</b> | латшым     | латшымыт   |
| <b>18</b> | латкандаш  | латкандаше |
| <b>19</b> | латиндеш   | латиндеше  |

лучко: For 15 there is an alternate and very commonly used form *лучко* corresponding both to the short form *латвич* as well as the long form *латвизыт*. As regards the usage of *лучко* in reference to a quarter of an hour when telling the time, see below in 4.9 – page 132.

Multiples of ten from 20–100: Ten and all its multiples have only one form. These numbers are historically compounds of the short forms of the numbers 2–9 + *лу* ‘ten’.

|            |          |
|------------|----------|
| <b>10</b>  | лу       |
| <b>20</b>  | коло     |
| <b>30</b>  | кумло    |
| <b>40</b>  | нылле    |
| <b>50</b>  | витле    |
| <b>60</b>  | кудло    |
| <b>70</b>  | шымле    |
| <b>80</b>  | кандашле |
| <b>90</b>  | индешле  |
| <b>100</b> | шүдө     |

*шымле, кандашле, индешле*: Note that previously the numerals *шымлу* '70', *кандашлу*, and *индешлу* '90' were used, forms which can still be encountered in older texts, and in spoken language.

*21–29, 31–39, ..., 91–99*: For these numbers ending in 1–9, the short or the long form of 1–9 is added, written separately, to the multiple of 10, e.g.:

|           | Short form    | Long form      |
|-----------|---------------|----------------|
| <b>21</b> | коло ик       | коло икте      |
| <b>32</b> | кумло кок     | кумло кокыт    |
| <b>43</b> | нылле кум     | нылле кумыт    |
| <b>54</b> | витле ныл     | витле нылыт    |
| <b>65</b> | кудло вич     | кудло визыт    |
| <b>76</b> | шымле куд     | шымле кудыт    |
| <b>87</b> | кандашле шым  | кандашле шымыт |
| <b>98</b> | индешле индеш | индешле индеше |

4.1. Write out the following numerals, if appropriate both the short and long forms.

- |       |        |
|-------|--------|
| 1. 27 | 6. 18  |
| 2. 65 | 7. 5   |
| 3. 14 | 8. 47  |
| 4. 9  | 9. 60  |
| 5. 90 | 10. 33 |

*101–199*: In these numerals, the word *шүдө* '100' is written separately. Numbers ending in 1–9 have a short and a long form; the multiples of ten have only one form, e.g.:

|            | Short form         | Long form           |
|------------|--------------------|---------------------|
| <b>101</b> | шүдө ик            | шүдө икте           |
| <b>120</b> | шүдө коло          |                     |
| <b>139</b> | шүдө кумло индеш   | шүдө кумло индеше   |
| <b>156</b> | шүдө витле куд     | шүдө витле кудыт    |
| <b>180</b> | шүдө кандашле      |                     |
| <b>199</b> | шүдө индешле индеш | шүдө индешле индеше |

*200, 300, ..., 900*: The multiples of 100 etc. are formed with the short form of the numerals 2–9 and *шүдө* '100' written as one word.

|            |            |
|------------|------------|
| <b>200</b> | кокшүдө    |
| <b>300</b> | кумшүдө    |
| <b>400</b> | нылшүдө    |
| <b>500</b> | вичшүдө    |
| <b>600</b> | кудшүдө    |
| <b>700</b> | шымшүдө    |
| <b>800</b> | кандашшүдө |
| <b>900</b> | индешшүдө  |

201–299, 310–399, ... 901–999: Apart from the multiples of 100 and 10, all elements are written separately, e.g.:

|            | Short form              | Long form                |
|------------|-------------------------|--------------------------|
| <b>201</b> | кокшүдө ик              | кокшүдө икте             |
| <b>560</b> | вичшүдө кудло           |                          |
| <b>723</b> | шымшүдө коло кум        | шымшүдө коло кумыт       |
| <b>840</b> | кандашшүдө нылле        |                          |
| <b>999</b> | индешшүдө индешле индеш | индешшүдө индешле индеше |

0, 1000, 1,000,000, 1,000,000,000: These numerals have only one form.

|                      |            |
|----------------------|------------|
| <b>0</b>             | нуль, ноль |
| <b>1000</b>          | тўжем      |
| <b>1,000,000</b>     | миллион    |
| <b>1,000,000,000</b> | миллиард   |

1001–: Numerals higher than 1000 are written as separate words in accordance with the forms given above, e.g.:

|                  | Short form  | Long form   |
|------------------|---|---|
| <b>1001</b>      | тўжем ик  | тўжем икте  |
| <b>56,487</b>    | витле куд тўжем нылшүдө<br>кандашле шым                       | витле куд тўжем нылшүдө<br>кандашле шымыт                       |
| <b>973,230</b>   | индешшүдө шымле кум тўжем кокшүдө кумло                       |   |
| <b>3,835,934</b> | кум миллион кандашшүдө кумло<br>вич тўжем индешшүдө кумло ныл | кум миллион кандашшүдө кумло<br>вич тўжем индешшүдө кумло нылыт |

4.2. Write out the following numerals, if appropriate both the short and long forms.

1. 320    2. 799    3. 1457    4. 11,638    5. 23,900,421

#### 4.1.2. Usage: short and long forms

The relationship between short forms and long forms of numerals is roughly equivalent to the relationship between short forms and long forms of adjectives (see 3.1 – page 99). Their respective usage is determined by their role in a sentence.

Short form: The short form is used as an attribute, i.e., before a noun as a quantifier. In this regard two things should be noted:

1. Modified noun in singular: If a noun is modified by a quantifier (numerals, but also other quantifiers such as *мыңар* 'how many', *шуко* 'many', see below in 4.4 – page 116) the noun remains in the singular, rather than being used in the plural. Examples: *ик пөрт* ~ *кандаш пөрт* 'one house ~ eight houses', *ик мўкш* ~ *вич мўкш* 'one bee ~ five bees', *ик тунемше* ~ *нылле кум тунемше* 'one pupil ~ forty-three pupils'. This is the same situation as with an adjective preceding and modifying a noun, see 3.0 – page 97.

Note in addition that if a noun modified by a numeral is the subject of a sentence, the predicate (verb) will be inflected in the singular.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Группыштына <u>кумло студент тунемеш.</u> | <u>Thirty students study</u> in our group.         |
| Пайремышке <u>кокшүдө уна толын.</u>      | <u>Two hundred guests came</u> to the celebration. |
| Тиде ялыште <u>түжем ең ила.</u>          | <u>A thousand people live</u> in this village.     |

2. **Invariability of the Short Form:** Various morphological endings can be attached to a noun modified by a preceding quantifier. These endings do not appear, however, on the quantifier. This is once again the same situation as with an adjective preceding and modifying a noun, see 3.0 – page 97.

|  |                    |
|--|--------------------|
| 'house'  | пөрт               |
| 'two houses'   | <u>кок</u> пөрт    |
| 'to the two houses' (dative)                           | <u>кок</u> пөртлан |
| 'my two houses' (possessive suffix 1SG)                | <u>кок</u> пөртем  |
| 'and the two houses' (clitic 'and; also')              | <u>кок</u> пөртат  |
| 'having two houses' (possessive adjectival derivation) | <u>кок</u> пөртан  |

4.3. In the following sentences replace the words in cursive with the words in parentheses. Pay attention to the necessary congruence in number in the predicate.

1. Марий театрыште тений у *спектакль-влак* лектыт. (кум у спектакль)
2. Вес ий гыч мемнан университет-ыште *йотэлысе студент-влак* тунемаш тўнгалыт. (шымле кандаш йотэлысе студент)
3. Марий Элыште *тўрлө калык-влак* илат. (шүдө лу тўрлө калык)
4. «Изи мөр пеледыш» конкурсыш *школ тунемше-влак* ушненыт. (тўжем вичшүдө школ тунемше)
5. Чавайн лўмеш книгагудышто *марий да руш книга-влак* аралалтыт. (миллион кокшүдө марий да руш книга).

**Long Form:** When a numeral is not used as an attribute preceding a noun, but independently, the long form is required. This occurs in the case of ellipsis or apposition, just as is to be seen with adjectives, see 3.1 – page 99.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| – Марий калыкын мыняр процентше<br>Марий Элыште ила?   | – What percentage of Mari people live in Mari El?  |
| – <u>Витле кумыт.</u>  | – <u>Fifty-three.</u>  |
| – Марий Элыште мыняр ер?   | – How many lakes are there in Mari El?   |
| – <u>Кудшүдө кандашле индеше.</u>  | – <u>Six hundred eighty-nine.</u>  |
| Вазыште роза пеледыш, <u>шымыт</u> , шога.   | Roses, <u>seven of them</u> , are standing in the vase.  |
| Йошкар-Олаште, тиде изи ола гынат, театр-влакат ( <u>нылыт</u> ), тоштер-влакат ( <u>кандаше</u> ), тўвыра полат-влакат ( <u>кумыт</u> ) улыт. | Yoshkar-Ola, while a small city, has theaters ( <u>four</u> ), museums ( <u>eight</u> ), and community centers ( <u>three</u> ). |

4.4. Insert the correct form of the cardinal numeral given in parentheses.

1. Йошкар-Олаште аэропорт уло мо? – Уло, ... (1)
2. Моско деч Йошкар-Ола марте мыняр километр? – ... (862)
3. Марий Элыште ... марий театр пашам ышта. (3)
4. Марий Элыште мыняр ола? – ... (4)
5. Моско гыч Йошкар-Олашке поезд ... шагат кудалеш. (15).
6. Марий Элыште чылаже мыняр энгер? – ... (476)
7. Марий фольклорышто могай числа чўчыкыдын вашлиялтеш? – ... (77)
8. Йошкар-Олаште троллейбуслан билет ... тенгем шога. (18)
9. Марий Элын эн кўкшў курыкшо ... метран. (279)
10. Тиде заданийым ... минут жапыште ыштенам. (10)

#### 4.1.3. Suffixation of cardinal numerals

As seen above, cardinal numerals used as attributes preceding a noun are invariable and remain unaffected by any endings added to the noun they modify. If, however, they are used independently, they can, within some restrictions (see below), be inflected in the same manner as nouns. Since the short forms are never used independently, it is only the long forms (and the multiples of ten which do not differentiate between short and long forms) that are affected.

Case suffixes (see 2.3 – page 68): In principle, all case suffixes can be attached to cardinal numbers. However, due to semantic restrictions, it is unusual to encounter some case suffixes attached to numbers (e.g., the comparative in *-ла*, see 2.4.8 – page 91), while other case suffixes are attached to numbers very frequently (e.g., the accusative in *-м*, see 2.4.2 – page 71, and the dative in *-лан*, see 2.4.4 – page 78).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| – Паренгтым мыняр килом налыда?   | – How many kilos of potatoes will you buy?  |
| – <u>Кудытым</u> .  | – <u>Six</u> .  |
| – Мыняр шагатлан вашлийына?   | – When should we meet?  |
| – Айда <u>латкумытлан</u> .   | – Let's say <u>at 1 PM</u> .  |
| Метрий Анялан 27 ияш лўмгечыжлан розам, <u>коло шымытым</u> , пўлеклен.             | Metriy gave Anya roses, <u>twenty seven of them</u> , for her 27 <sup>th</sup> birthday.                        |
| <u>Кокытышко шымытым</u> ушаш гын, индеше лиеш.                                     | If you add <u>seven and two</u> , you get nine.   |
| Теве вич изи шондык: <u>нылытыште</u> нимат уке, а <u>иктыштыже</u> шўртньў шергаш. | Here are five little chests: <u>in four</u> there is nothing, but <u>in one of them</u> there is a golden ring. |

4.5. Insert the appropriately case-inflected form of the cardinal numeral given in parentheses.

1. Тыланда мом? – Мылам теве тыгай откырым, ..., пожалуйста. (17)
2. Фирмыда паша планым тений мыняр процентлан шуктен? – ... (121)
3. Кастене эше кевытышке, ..., пурыман. (2)
4. Шкетан театрыште спектакль эрла мыняр шагатлан тўнгалеш? – ... (16)
5. Ялыштына 50 пўрт гыч ... интернет уло. (39)
6. Фейсбукушто 600 йолташем уло. Нунын кокла гыч ... йўршын ом пале. (193)
7. Пиццым мыняр ужашеш пўчкаш? – ... (4)
8. Школыштына кугурак класслаште, чылаже ..., марий йылме деч посна марий сылымутымат тунемит. (7)
9. Тиде специальностьыш тунемаш пураш мыняр балл кўлеш? – ... (245)
10. Тестыште мыняр йонгылышым ыштенат? – ... (8)

As genitive forms would otherwise be homonymous with collective numerals in *-н* (see below in 4.5 – page 117), the genitive is generally only attached to cardinal numbers marked for the possessive suffix third person singular: *кокытшын, кумытшын, нылытшын, визытшын, кандашыжын, индешыжын*.

Мемнан классыште чыла тунемшын математике дене сай оценке, кокытшын гына кумытан.

In our class, all the students have a good grade in math, only two have a C.

Кафедрыште кандаш туныктышын шке пўлемже уло, кумытшын уке.

At our department, eight teachers have an own room, only three do not.

**Plural suffixes** (see 2.1 – page 55): It is not conventional for cardinal numbers to take plural suffixes. The only exception is *миллион* ‘million’, which can be frequently encountered in the form *миллион-влак* ‘millions’.

Тиде сар жапыште миллион-влак коленит.

Millions died over the course of this war.

Тўвыралан тенийысе бюджет гыч миллион-влакым ойыренит.

Millions were allocated to culture in this year’s budget.

**Possessive suffixes** (see 2.2.1 – page 61): Only the possessive suffix of the third person (almost always singular) is regularly used in combination with cardinal numbers. When it is, it generally does not have a possessive function, but rather a determining one in which it indicates that the number in question refers to previously discussed items or people. It is especially common in this function when the number denotes only a subgroup of a previously discussed group of items or people – in this case, one might often add *of them* (*two of them, three of them*) in English.

Тиде лу книга гыч шымытше мыйын.

Of these ten books, seven are mine.

Тенгече ўстембалне коло тўжем тенге киен. Дужо кызыт кушто?

Yesterday there were twenty thousand rubles on the table. Where have ten of them gone?

Шўдў студент гыч колыжо гына сай результатым ончыктен.

Of a hundred students, only twenty showed good results.

Especially in colloquial language, possessive suffixes in possessive function are encountered. The numbers can refer to units of currency – rubles, dollars, etc.

Ныл тўжемет уло мо? Кўсын пуэн керат?

Do you have four thousand? Can you lend them to me?

**Derivational suffixes** (see 11 – page 369): A number of derivational suffixes can be attached to cardinal numbers to create new words, for example:

*қумыт* '3' → *қумытан* 'three-part' (possessive adjectival suffix *-ан*, see 11.6.1 – page 382)  
 → *қудыташ* 'number three' (relational nominal/adjectival suffix *-аш*, see 11.6.4 – page 384)

## 4.2. Ordinal numbers

### 4.2.1. Formation of ordinal numbers

Ordinal numbers are formed from cardinal numerals with the suffix *-мшЕ*, an *Ы*-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44), which is added to the short form. The variant added depends on vowel harmony and the final sound of the cardinal numerals. Note that if the cardinal number ends in *-м*, the shortened variant *-ше/-шо/-шө* is added: *қум* 'three' → *қумшо* 'third', *шым* 'seven' → *шымше* 'seventh', *тұжам* 'thousand' → *тұжамше* 'thousandth'. Note also the usage of the reduced vowel in *лу* 'ten' → *луымшо* 'tenth', and the consonant alternation in *вич* 'five' → *визымше* 'fifth' (see 1.5.7 – page 34).

In compound numbers, the ordinal suffix is only attached to the last element.

Cardinal and Ordinal Numbers 1–20:

| Cardinal number |           | Ordinal number   |               |
|-----------------|-----------|------------------|---------------|
| 1               | ик        | 1 <sup>st</sup>  | икымше        |
| 2               | кок       | 2 <sup>nd</sup>  | коқымшо       |
| 3               | қум       | 3 <sup>rd</sup>  | қумшо         |
| 4               | ныл       | 4 <sup>th</sup>  | нылымше       |
| 5               | вич       | 5 <sup>th</sup>  | визымше       |
| 6               | қуд       | 6 <sup>th</sup>  | қудымшо       |
| 7               | шым       | 7 <sup>th</sup>  | шымше         |
| 8               | кандаш    | 8 <sup>th</sup>  | кандашымше    |
| 9               | индеш     | 9 <sup>th</sup>  | индешымше     |
| 10              | лу        | 10 <sup>th</sup> | луымшо        |
| 11              | латик     | 11 <sup>th</sup> | латикымше     |
| 12              | латкок    | 12 <sup>th</sup> | латкоқымшо    |
| 13              | латқум    | 13 <sup>th</sup> | латқумшо      |
| 14              | латныл    | 14 <sup>th</sup> | латнылымше    |
| 15              | латвич    | 15 <sup>th</sup> | латвизымше    |
| 16              | латқуд    | 16 <sup>th</sup> | латқудымшо    |
| 17              | латшым    | 17 <sup>th</sup> | латшымше      |
| 18              | латкандаш | 18 <sup>th</sup> | латкандашымше |
| 19              | латиндеш  | 19 <sup>th</sup> | латиндешымше  |
| 20              | коло      | 20 <sup>th</sup> | колымшо       |



Examples for cardinal and ordinal numbers above 20:

|             |                                   |                          |                                     |
|-------------|-----------------------------------|--------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <b>21</b>   | коло ик                           | <b>21<sup>st</sup></b>   | коло икымше                         |
| <b>27</b>   | коло шым                          | <b>27<sup>th</sup></b>   | коло шымше                          |
| <b>30</b>   | кумло                             | <b>30<sup>th</sup></b>   | кумлымшо                            |
| <b>44</b>   | нылле ныл                         | <b>44<sup>th</sup></b>   | нылле нылымше                       |
| <b>55</b>   | витле вич                         | <b>55<sup>th</sup></b>   | витле визымше                       |
| <b>60</b>   | кудло                             | <b>60<sup>th</sup></b>   | кудлымшо                            |
| <b>86</b>   | кандашле куд                      | <b>86<sup>th</sup></b>   | кандашле кудымшо                    |
| <b>100</b>  | шўдö                              | <b>100<sup>th</sup></b>  | шўдымшö                             |
| <b>250</b>  | кокшўдö витле                     | <b>250<sup>th</sup></b>  | кокшўдö витлымше                    |
| <b>1000</b> | тўжем                             | <b>1000<sup>th</sup></b> | тўжемше                             |
| <b>5287</b> | вич тўжем кокшўдö<br>кандашле шым | <b>5287<sup>th</sup></b> | вич тўжем кокшўдö<br>кандашле шымше |

Written abbreviation: When writing, an abbreviated version using only the suffix variants *-ше/-шо/-шö* can be used. Roman numerals are used to denote numerals as well, without the indication of the suffix, and not followed by a period. For example: *икымше* ~ 1-*ше* ~ *I*, *кокимшо* ~ 2-*шо* ~ *II*, *луымшо* ~ 10-*шо* ~ *X*, *шўдымшö* ~ 100-*шö* ~ *C*.

первый: As an alternative to *икымше* 'first', the corresponding Russian word *первый* is often used.

Тенгече мемнан дене первый ~ икымше  
лум возын.

Yesterday the first snow fell around here.

**4.6. Write out the following ordinal numbers.**

- |                       |                     |                      |                      |                     |
|-----------------------|---------------------|----------------------|----------------------|---------------------|
| 1. 40 <sup>th</sup>   | 2. 79 <sup>th</sup> | 3. 4 <sup>th</sup>   | 4. 13 <sup>th</sup>  | 5. 71 <sup>st</sup> |
| 6. 1500 <sup>th</sup> | 7. 92 <sup>nd</sup> | 8. 136 <sup>th</sup> | 9. 650 <sup>th</sup> | 10. 1 <sup>st</sup> |

### 4.2.2. Usage of ordinal numerals

In Mari, the ordinal numerals are used as in English to indicate position or rank in a sequential order. Unlike English, Mari also uses ordinals in reference to specific years – i.e., 2017 is the 2017<sup>th</sup> year, etc.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Финляндийышке кызыт <u>4-ше</u> гана кудалам.                              | I'm now going to Finland for the <u>fourth</u> time.  |
| Финн-угор калык-влакын <u>VII</u> тўнямбал конгрессышт Лахти олаште эртен. | The 7 <sup>th</sup> World Congress of the Finno-Ugric Peoples took place in the city of Lahti.                    |
| Конкурсышто командына <u>11-шо</u> верымгына налын.                        | Our team only came in <u>11<sup>th</sup></u> in the contest.  |
| Акам тиде уремыштак <u>15-ше</u> пöртыштö ила.                             | My elder sister lives right in this street, in house number <u>15</u> (lit. the <u>15<sup>th</sup></u> house).    |
| Марий кечышот почеш, <u>2018-ше</u> ий – тиде шоншын идалыкше.             | According to the Mari calendar, <u>2018</u> (lit. the <u>2018<sup>th</sup></u> year) is the year of the hedgehog. |

## 4.7. Insert the number given in parentheses as an ordinal.

1. Йошкар-Олалан да Козьмодемьянсклан ... курымышто негызым пыштыме. (16)
2. Финн-угор студент-влакын ... тўнямбал конференцийышт (ИФУСКО) Йошкар-Олаште эртен. (XXII)
3. Икымше мари́й почеламутым... ийыште Сергей Чавайн возен. (1905)
4. Т. Евсеев лўмеш калыкле тоштер Совет уремыште ... номеран пўртыштў верлана. Тушто мари́й калыкын этнографийже нерген шукым пален налаш лиеш (153)
5. Мари́й тиште кечым ... декабрьште пайремлат. (10)

'the ... of ...': If one wishes to denote the ranking of something within a specified order (e.g., *the fifth child of seven*), the postpositions *гыч* 'from, out of' (see 6.1.17 – page 169) and *кокла гыч* 'from among' (see 6.2.4 – page 188) are used:

|  |                                      |
|--|--------------------------------------|
| <u>Кандаш йоча</u> кокла гыч тудо визымше. | S/he is the fifth of eight children. |
| <u>Кандаше</u> кокла гыч тудо визымше.     | S/he is the fifth of eight.          |
| <u>Ныл вашлиймаш гыч</u> тиде кокымшо.     | This is the second of four meetings. |
| <u>Нылыт гыч</u> тиде кокымшо.             | This is the second of four           |

As regards the usage of ordinal numbers in fractions, see 4.3 – page 115 – below.

## 4.2.3. Suffixation of ordinal numerals

Used attributively, modifying a subsequent noun, ordinal numerals are not inflected (see 3.0 – page 97). If, however, when they are used in an elliptic or appositional construction they assume nominal suffixes, with some restrictions (see below), which would be attached to the implied noun. Note that a case or possessive suffix is added only to the last element of compound ordinal numerals: *витле шымше* '57<sup>th</sup>' → *витле шымшылан* 'to the 57<sup>th</sup>', *латкудымшо* '16<sup>th</sup>' → *латкудымшыжо* 'his/her 16<sup>th</sup>'.

Case suffixes (see 2.3 – page 68): Ordinal numbers can be inflected for case.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Туныктышо: А кызыт кандашле визымше да индешле шымше заданийым ыштен нала.  | Teacher: 'And now do exercises <u>85</u> and <u>97</u> (lit the <u>85<sup>th</sup></u> and <u>97<sup>th</sup></u> exercises).'   |
| Тунемше-влак: Нелеш ида нал, могайым?   | Students: 'Sorry, which ones?'   |
| Туныктышо: <u>Кандашле визымшым</u> да <u>индешле шымшым</u> .  | Teacher: ' <u>85</u> and <u>97</u> (lit. <u>The 85<sup>th</sup></u> and <u>97<sup>th</sup></u> ).'   |
| Таня кандашымше пачашыште ила, а Аня <u>индешымшыште</u> .  | Tanya lives on the 8 <sup>th</sup> floor, and Anya on <u>the 9<sup>th</sup></u> .  |
| Конкурсшто сенгыше-влаклан тўрлў пўлекым кучыктенят: икымше верлан ноутбукым, <u>кокымшылан</u> – смартфоным, <u>кумшылан</u> – почётан грамотым. | The winners in the contest were given different prizes: the first place got a notebook computer, <u>the second</u> a smartphone, and <u>the third</u> an honorary diploma. |
| Вашлиймашна латкокимшо числаште лийшаш ыле, но вара тудым <u>коло кудымшышко</u> кусаренят.   | Our meeting should have been on the 12 <sup>th</sup> , but it was moved to <u>the 26<sup>th</sup></u> .  |

4.8. Insert the appropriately case-inflected ordinal of the number given in parentheses.

1. Телевизор дене могай каналым эн чўчкыдын ончет? – ... (10)
2. Те могай ийыште шочында? – ... (1981)
3. Теве тыште икымше классын кабинетше, а тушто – ... (2)
4. «Марий Эл Радион» хит-парадыштыже «Эн сылне улат» муро икымше верыш лектын, а мыйын йўратыме мурем ... волен каен. (14)
5. Акции! Вашкыза! Кажне латвизымше налшылан кевытна шоколадым пўлекла, а кажне ... шампанскийым. (48)

Plural suffixes (see 2.1 – page 55): The ordinal *икымше* '1<sup>st</sup>' occurs in combination with the plural suffix *-влак*, often in a somewhat figurative meaning:

икымше-влак кокла гыч икымше

the best of the best (lit. first of the first)

For other ordinal numbers, semantic constraints make the usage of plural suffixes unlikely.

Possessive suffixes (see 2.2.1 – page 61): Possessive suffixes can in principle be attached to ordinal number, though this is uncommon: it is generally clear from context whom the object under consideration belongs to, rendering the possessive suffix unnecessary.

The possessive suffix of the third person singular is regularly found attached to ordinal numbers in a determining function. It is especially commonly used when the ordinal number refers to an item that is part of a previously discussed group of items or people – in this case, one might often add *of them* (*the second of them*, *the third of them*) in English. Note that in this function, 'the first' and 'the second' are realized as *иктыже* 'the one' and *вesityже* 'the other', see [...] – page [...].

Школ концертышке уло классна ушнен:  
иктыже кушта, вesityже мур, кумшыжо  
фокусым ончыкта, нылымшыже  
почеламутым каласкала.

Our whole class has got involved in the school concert: one person is dancing, another is singing, a third one is doing magic tricks, the fourth is reciting a poem.

### 4.3. Partitive numerals (fractions)

Two competing systems are used to express partitive numerals, or fractions, in Mari. The first system is recommended by modern teaching materials, but the second system is encountered frequently as well.

System 1: Partitive numerals are formed with the (short) form of the cardinal numeral as the numerator and a denominator consisting of the (long) form of the cardinal numeral to which the suffix *-аш* is added (as regards the usage of this suffix as a derivational suffix, see 11.5.5 – page 379).

|             |                |
|-------------|----------------|
| <b>1/2</b>  | ик кокыташ     |
| <b>2/5</b>  | кок визыташ    |
| <b>3/7</b>  | кум шымыташ    |
| <b>4/9</b>  | ныл индешаш    |
| <b>5/10</b> | вич луаш       |
| <b>6/17</b> | куд латшымыташ |

With mixed numerals (combination of cardinal numeral and fraction) the short form of the cardinal numeral is followed by the word *мичмаш* 'whole' + the clitic *-ам* 'and' (see 9.1.1 – page 328) and then the fraction.

|                 |                                 |
|-----------------|---------------------------------|
| <b>1 2/3</b>    | ик тичмашат кок кумыташ         |
| <b>2 5/6</b>    | кок тичмашат вич кудыташ        |
| <b>9 3/8</b>    | индеш тичмашат кум кандашаш     |
| <b>39 1/4</b>   | кумло индеш тичмашат ик нылыташ |
| <b>120 2/10</b> | шүдө коло тичмашат кок луаш     |

4.9. Write out the following partitive and mixed numerals.

1. 3/6    2. 99/100    3. 4 1/3    4. 9 3/4    5. 99 9/10

System 2: Partitive numerals, or fractions, are also formed with the (short) form of the cardinal numeral as the numerator and an ordinal number to express the denominator. This parallels English usage.

|             |               |
|-------------|---------------|
| <b>1/3</b>  | ик кумшо      |
| <b>2/5</b>  | кок визымше   |
| <b>3/7</b>  | кум шымше     |
| <b>4/9</b>  | ныл индешымше |
| <b>5/10</b> | вич луымшо    |
| <b>6/17</b> | куд латшымше  |

The denominator can optionally be followed by the word *ужаш* 'part': *ик кудымшо ~ ик кудымшо ужаш* '1/6'.

With mixed numerals (combination of cardinal numeral and fraction) the short form of the cardinal numeral is followed by the word *тичмаш* 'whole' + the clitic *-am* 'and' (see 9.1.1 – page 328) and then the fraction.

|                 |                                 |
|-----------------|---------------------------------|
| <b>1 2/3</b>    | ик тичмашат кок кумшо           |
| <b>2 5/6</b>    | кок тичмашат вич кудымшо        |
| <b>9 3/8</b>    | индеш тичмашат кум кандашымше   |
| <b>39 1/4</b>   | кумло индеш тичмашат ик нылымше |
| <b>120 2/10</b> | шүдө коло тичмашат кок луымшо   |

пеле, чырык, осмушка: These words denote 1/2 (*пеле*), 1/4 (*чырык*), and 1/8 (*осмушка*) and can be used in place of *ик кокыташ/ик кокымшо*, *ик нылыташ/ик нылымше* and *ик кандашаш/ик кандашымше*. When these words are used in mixed numerals, the form *тичмашам* is not used. Rather, the long form of the whole number is used, and marked with the clitic *-am*. Note that the word *осмушка* is only rarely used. Examples:

|              |               |
|--------------|---------------|
| <b>3/4</b>   | кум чырык     |
| <b>1 1/2</b> | иктат пеле    |
| <b>5 1/4</b> | визытат чырык |

#### 4.4. Indefinite and approximative quantifiers

The most important quantifiers expressing an indefinite quantity are the following. Just as the cardinal numbers, they are followed by a noun in the singular and if used independently in elliptic or appositional constructions can occur with nominal suffixes. The word *икмыняр* also has a long form, *икмыняре*, which is used in non-attributive position.

|             |               |
|-------------|---------------|
| шуко        | many, much    |
| ятыр        | many, much    |
| шагал       | few, little   |
| икмыняр(е)  | several, some |
| южо         | some          |
| иктаж-мыняр | some, a few   |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Таче <u>ятыр у мутым</u> тунемынам.                   | I learned <u>many new words</u> today.                               |
| Йолташем пеш <u>шуко йылмым</u> пала.                 | My friend knows very <u>many languages</u> .                         |
| Экзамен марте <u>шагал жап</u> кодын.                 | <u>Little time</u> is left till the exam.                            |
| Японий гыч фотоэтым, <u>икмынярым</u> , ончыкто.      | Show your pictures from Japan, <u>a few of them</u> .                |
| Школлаште, <u>шукыштыжо</u> , карантиным увертареныт. | In the schools, <u>in many of them</u> , a quarantine was announced. |

**Numerals in sequence:** To express approximate numbers, two numerals – short or long cardinal numbers, collective numbers (see below in 4.5 – page 117) – can be used after each other. The interval is generally one (3–4), two (10–12), five (20–25), or ten (50–60).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Тиде пашам <u>вич-куд кече</u> гыч ыштен пытарем.                   | I will finish this work in <u>five or six days</u> .                  |
| Моско гыч Йошкар-Олашке автобус <u>латкок-латныл шагат</u> кудалеш. | The bus from Moscow to Yoshkar-Ola drives for <u>12 to 14 hours</u> . |
| – Тиде олаште мыняр кўвар?<br>– <u>Визыт-кудыт</u> .                | – How many bridges are there in this city?<br>– <u>Five or six</u> .  |
| Ме <u>латкокрытын-латкумытын</u> лийынна.                           | There were <u>12 or 13</u> of us.                                     |

Note that a more common possibility to express approximate amounts would be the usage of particles such as *иктаж* (see [...]) or postpositions such as *чоло* or *наре* (see 6.1.55 – page 180), all meaning ‘about, approximately’.

4.10. Insert the appropriate numbers given below (a–e) into the appropriate sentence.

1. Игече чот йўкшемда. Вес арнялан ... йўштым сōрат.
  2. Ялна изем толеш: кызыт ... гына илат.
  3. Туныктышем ... гынат, самырыкын коеш.
  4. Кризис жапыште чыла ... шергештын.
  5. Кенжежым ... тенгыз деке каяш шонена.
- a. 60–65 ияш
  - b. 10–12 кечылан
  - c. 30–35 градус
  - d. 10–15 пōртыштō
  - e. 70–80%-лан

#### 4.5. Collective numerals

**Formation:** So-called collective numerals can be formed by means of the adverbial (instructive) suffix in *-н* (see 8.4.1 – page 319), an *л*-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45) from the long forms of the cardinal numbers starting with two, as well as some indefinite quantifiers and pronouns. Note the form *коктын* from *кокым*.

|      | Cardinal Numeral | Collective Numeral |
|------|------------------|--------------------|
| 2    | кокыт            | коктын             |
| 3    | кумыт            | кумытын            |
| 4    | нылыт            | нылытын            |
| 5    | визыт            | визытын            |
| 6    | кудыт            | кудытын            |
| 7    | шымыт            | шымытын            |
| 8    | кандаше          | кандашын           |
| 9    | индеше           | индешын            |
| 10   | лу               | луын               |
| 11   | латикте          | латиктын           |
| 20   | коло             | колын              |
| 100  | шўдө             | шўдын              |
| 1000 | тўжем            | тўжемын            |

Also *лучко* '15' → *лучкын*. Collective numerals are not formed from *миллион* 'million' and higher numbers. Here the form *миллион дене* 'by the millions' can be encountered.

| Quantifier/Pronoun | Collective form | Translation                |
|--------------------|-----------------|----------------------------|
| мыняр(е)           | мынярын         | how much, how many         |
| шуко               | шукын           | much, many                 |
| ятыр               | ятырын          | much, many                 |
| шагал              | шагалын         | few, little                |
| чыла               | чылан           | all, everyone              |
| икмыняр(е)         | икмынярын       | some, a few                |
| иктаж-мыняр(е)     | иктаж-мынярын   | some, a few                |
| ала-мыняр(е)       | ала-мынярын     | some, a few                |
| кеч-мыняр(е)       | кеч-мынярын     | however much, however many |
| керек-мыняр(е)     | керек-мынярын   | however much, however many |
| мыняр(е)-гынат     | мынярын-гынат   | somewhat                   |

Note also the comparative forms *шукыракын* ~ *шукынрак* and *шагалракын* ~ *шагалынрак*.

**Usage:** Collective numerals are generally used to indicate that an action was carried out, or a state was held, by a group consisting of as many members as indicated by the numeral. The collective number can occur adverbially in addition to an explicitly stated nominal subject, or it can occur in sentences where the nominal subject is omitted. In either case, the verb is conjugated in the plural.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мемнан кундем гыч чылаже <u>шымытын</u> улына.       | There are <u>seven</u> of us from our region in total.             |
| Умылыза, те <u>коктынат</u> йонгылыш лийында.        | Understand, <u>both</u> of you were wrong.                         |
| <u>Колынат</u> тидын верч йўкленил.                  | <u>Twenty people</u> voted for this.                               |
| Концертыште <u>мынярын</u> лийынна, шонет?           | <u>How many</u> of us were there at the concert do you think?      |
| <u>Чылан</u> каеныт, <u>икмынярын</u> гына кодынна.  | <u>Everybody</u> left, only <u>a few</u> of us stayed.             |
| Кодшын деч таче <u>шукыракын</u> лекцийыште лийында? | Were there <u>more</u> of you at the lecture today than last time? |

4.11. Insert the collective form of the number, or of the indefinite quantifier/pronoun, given in parentheses after the sentence.

1. Ме ... сай йолташ улына. (4)
2. ... толыт гынат, вер ситышын лиеш. (кеч-мыняр)
3. ...ат автобус дене толынна. (2)
4. ... экзаменлан икытаным налыныт. (4)
5. Квалификацийым нӧлтымӧ курсышко ... возалтында? (чыла)
6. Те вучымо деч ... улыда. (шагалрак)
7. Балатон ерым ийын вончымашке уэш пеш ... возалтыныт. (шуко)
8. Пленныйым те ... эскерен ончаш тӱҥалыда. (3)
9. Вучымо залыште ... гына улыт. (3)
10. Тиде фирмыште иктаж ... пашам ыштена. (100)

#### 4.6. Group numerals

**Formation:** For numbers from two to five, there are special forms used in reference to groups consisting of this number of people. The base forms (*когынь*- '2', *кумынь*- '3', *нылынь*- '4' and *визынь*- '5') do not occur on their own, but are obligatorily coupled with a plural possessive suffix, and are only used with postpositions, or with the following three case suffixes: genitive, dative, and accusative. While the genitive and accusative forms are predictable, the dative forms of two and three are irregular. The forms of two are used quite frequently; the other forms are used increasingly rarely.

|   |     | Nominative | Accusative  | Genitive    | Dative       |
|---|-----|------------|-------------|-------------|--------------|
| 2 | 1PI | когыньна   | когыньнам   | когыньнан   | когылянна    |
|   | 2PI | когыньда   | когыньдам   | когыньдан   | когылянда    |
|   | 3PI | когыньышт  | когыньыштым | когыньыштын | когылянышт   |
| 3 | 1PI | кумыньна   | кумыньнам   | кумыньнан   | кумылянна    |
|   | 2PI | кумыньда   | кумыньдам   | кумыньдан   | кумылянда    |
|   | 3PI | кумыньышт  | кумыньыштым | кумыньыштын | кумылянышт   |
| 4 | 1PI | нылыньна   | нылыньнам   | нылыньнан   | нылыньналан  |
|   | 2PI | нылыньда   | нылыньдам   | нылыньдан   | нылыньдалан  |
|   | 3PI | нылыньышт  | нылыньыштым | нылыньыштын | нылыньыштлан |
| 5 | 1PI | визыньна   | визыньнам   | визыньнан   | визыньналан  |
|   | 2PI | визыньда   | визыньдам   | визыньдан   | визыньдалан  |
|   | 3PI | визыньышт  | визыньыштым | визыньыштын | визыньыштлан |

**Usage:** These numerals express the commonality of two, three, four, or five people regarded as forming a group, i.e., 'the two/three/four/five of us/you/them'.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Когыньна</u> деч тылат компьютерым пӧлеклена.    | We are giving you a computer <u>from the two of us</u> .       |
| <u>Когыньдам</u> таче кастене шке декем унала ўжам. | I'm inviting <u>the two of you</u> to my place this evening.   |
| <u>Кумылянна</u> ик роза гыч пуэныт.                | <u>The three of us</u> were given a rose each.                 |
| <u>Кумыньда</u> нерген тачысе газетыште возеныт.    | They wrote <u>about the three of you</u> in today's newspaper. |
| Нунын <u>нылыньыштын</u> шке фирмышт уло.           | <u>The four of them</u> have a company of their own.           |

4.12. Insert the properly case-inflected forms of the group numeral indicated in parentheses after the sentence, where 4 – 1PL means ‘the four of us’, etc.

1. ... тентгече телевизор дене ончыктеныт. (3 – 1Pl)
2. Лачак тендам ... вученна: мыланна квартет моткочак кўлеш. (4 – 2Pl)
3. Школна ... деч сенгымашым гына вуча. (2 – 2Pl)
4. Нуно пеш весела улыт: ... деч посна ик пайремат ок эрте. (3 – 3Pl)
5. Йолташем дене ... сумка икгай тўсан. (2 – 1Pl)
6. ...ат йоча годсо жапышт ялыште эртен. (3 – 3Pl)
7. Конкурсышто сенгымалан ... чапле фотоаппарат гыч кучыктеныт. (2 – 3Pl)
8. ... статьяшт ик эн сай журналыште савыкталтын. (5 – 3Pl)
9. ... Вера кокай деке каяш да тудлан полшаш кўлеш. (3 – 2Pl)
10. Вокзалыште шўжарем дене ... ача-авана вашлийыныт. (2 – 1Pl)

#### 4.7. Miscellaneous adverbial forms of numerals

The following two suffixes can be attached to numerals in order to form adverbials with very specific meanings:

**-нек [-nek]:** This suffix is coupled with (especially lower) numerals, and some other quantifiers and nouns, to create adverbs with the meaning ‘all ... , the whole ...’. Note that the formation is not always predictable – in some cases the suffix is attached to the long form of a numeral, in some cases to the short form with some alterations.

| Cardinal / Base form |                       | Adverbial in -нек |                    |
|----------------------|-----------------------|-------------------|--------------------|
| ик / икте            | one                   | иктынек           | every last one     |
| кок / кокыт          | two                   | когынек           | both               |
| кум / кумыт          | three                 | кумынек           | all three          |
| ныл / нылыт          | four                  | нылынек           | all four           |
| вич / визыт          | five                  | визынек           | all five           |
| куд / кудыт          | six                   | кудынек           | all six            |
| шым / шымыт          | seven                 | шымынек           | all seven          |
| кандаш / кандаше     | eight                 | кандашынек        | all eight          |
| индеш / индеше       | nine                  | индешынек         | all nine           |
| лу                   | ten                   | луынек            | all ten            |
| тўжем                | thousand              | тўжемнек          | all thousand       |
| тичмаш               | whole, full, complete | тичмашнек         | wholly, completely |
| ора                  | heap, pile            | оранек            | wholly, completely |
| тўча                 | group, pack           | тўчанек           | wholly, completely |
| пўтынъ               | complete, whole       | пўтынек           | wholly, completely |
| тўрыс                | complete, whole       | тўрыснек          | wholly, completely |

As regards the usage of this suffix in the formation of adverbs from adjectives, see 8.1.1.2 – page 310.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Аня йочаже-влакым <u>когынек</u> хорыш возыктен.   | Anya signed <u>both</u> her children up for the choir. |
| Эн сай йолташем-влак <u>кумынек</u> Москошто илат. | <u>All three of</u> my best friends live in Moscow.    |
| «Элнет» романым <u>тўрыснек</u> лудында мо?        | Have you read the novel “Elnet” <u>to the end</u> ?    |

**-е:** This stressed suffix is attached to long forms of numerals from two to seven, to denote that something is divided into the number of parts signified by the numeral.



| Cardinal |       | Adverbial |          |
|----------|-------|-----------|----------|
| КОКЫТ    | two   | КОКЫТЕ    | in two   |
| КУМЫТ    | three | КУМЫТЕ    | in three |
| НЫЛЫТ    | four  | НЫЛЫТЕ    | in four  |
| ВИЗЫТ    | five  | ВИЗЫТЕ    | in five  |
| КУДЫТ    | six   | КУДЫТЕ    | in six   |
| ШЫМЫТ    | seven | ШЫМЫТЕ    | in seven |

Also *неле* 'half' → *неле* 'in half' (note the different stress).

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Олмам шўжарем дене <u>кокыте</u> пайленна.                 | My little sister and I cut the apple <u>in two</u> .                |
| Кўмыж <u>кумыте</u> шелын.                                 | The dish broke <u>into three parts</u> .                            |
| Юля оригамим ышта. Эн ончыч кагазым <u>нылыте</u> тодылеш. | Yulya is making origami. First she folds the paper <u>in four</u> . |

#### 4.8. Date

When giving dates one must distinguish between their designations (e.g., 1999, November, Thursday) and the corresponding adverbials answering the question *кунам* 'when?' (e.g., in 1999, in November, on Thursday).

##### 4.8.1. Days of the week (*кече*)

|                   |                                   |
|-------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Таче могай кече?  | What day of the week is it today? |
| Могай кечын ... ? | On what day of the week ...?      |
| Тиде кечын ...    | On this day ...                   |
| Тудо кечын ...    | On that day ...                   |
| Ончыгече ...      | The day before yesterday ...      |
| Тенгече ...       | Yesterday ...                     |
| Таче ...          | Today ...                         |
| Эрла ...          | Tomorrow ...                      |
| Кумышто ...       | The day after tomorrow ...        |

The adverbials of the days of the week are formed with the adverbial (instructive) suffix in *-н* (see 8.4.1 – page 319).

|                  | Nominal   | Adverbial  |
|------------------|-----------|------------|
| <b>Monday</b>    | шочмо     | шочмын     |
| <b>Tuesday</b>   | кушкыжмо  | кушкыжмын  |
| <b>Wednesday</b> | вўргече   | вўргечын   |
| <b>Thursday</b>  | изарня    | изарнян    |
| <b>Friday</b>    | кугарня   | кугарнян   |
| <b>Saturday</b>  | шуматкече | шуматкечын |
| <b>Sunday</b>    | рушарня   | рушарнян   |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Паша арня <u>шочмын</u> тўналеш.                       | The work week starts <u>on Monday</u> .                |
| <u>Тиде вўргечын</u> мый Озангышке кудадам.            | I'm going to Kazan <u>this Wednesday</u> .             |
| Концертна вес арняште <u>изарнян</u> лиеш.             | Our concert will be next week <u>on Thursday</u> .     |
| «Кугарня» газет <u>кажне кугарнян</u> лектеш.          | The newspaper "Kugarnya" appears <u>every Friday</u> . |
| <u>Шуматкече</u> ден <u>рушарня</u> – каныш кече улыт. | <u>Saturday</u> and <u>Sunday</u> are days of rest.    |

4.13. The nominal and adverbial form of a day of the week is given in parentheses after every sentence. Insert the appropriate one.

1. ... кастене мом ыштет? Айда марий спектакльыш каена! (шуматкече/шуматкечын)
2. Арнян кокымшо кечыже марла ... маналтеш. (кушкыжмо/кушкыжмын)
3. ... гыч эр еда куржталаш тўнгалына. (шочмо/шочмын)
4. ... мый индеше марте мален кертам. (рушарня/рушарнян)
5. Эн йоратыме кечем – ... . (кугарня/кугарнян)

#### 4.8.2. Months (*тылзе*)

|                      |                       |
|----------------------|-----------------------|
| Кызыт могай тылзе?   | What month is it now? |
| Могай тылзыште ... ? | In what month ... ?   |
| Тиде тылзыште ...    | In this month ...     |
| Тудо тылзыште ...    | In that month ...     |

In the adverbials the names of the months are used in the inessive (see 2.4.5 – page 82).

|                  | Nominal  | Adverbial    |
|------------------|----------|--------------|
| <b>January</b>   | январь   | январьыште   |
| <b>February</b>  | февраль  | февральыште  |
| <b>March</b>     | март     | мартыште     |
| <b>April</b>     | апрель   | апрельыште   |
| <b>May</b>       | май      | майыште      |
| <b>June</b>      | июнь     | июньышто     |
| <b>July</b>      | июль     | июльышто     |
| <b>August</b>    | август   | августышто   |
| <b>September</b> | сентябрь | сентябрьыште |
| <b>October</b>   | октябрь  | октябрьыште  |
| <b>November</b>  | ноябрь   | ноябрьыште   |
| <b>December</b>  | декабрь  | декабрьыште  |

The word *тылзе* 'month' is often used in combination with the name of the month: *январь ~ январь тылзе* 'January'. Adverbials are formed by attaching the inessive ending to the word *тылзе* here: *январьыште ~ январь тылзыште*.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Ноябрьыште</u> марий яллаште шуко кумалтыш эрта. | Many prayer ceremonies are held in Mari villages <u>in November</u> . |
| <u>Февраль тылзе</u> марий мландыште эн йўштö.      | <u>February</u> is the coldest (month) in the land of the Maris.      |
| Икымше лум <u>октябрьыште</u> возеш.                | The first snow falls in <u>October</u> .                              |

Mari Folk Calendar: In addition to the names of months given above (← Russian) alternative Mari-language names of months do exist, and are widely used in modern publications. The names of several months are connected with the specific festivities occurring in them.

|                  | Month          | Literal translation                            |
|------------------|----------------|--|
| <b>January</b>   | шорыкйол тылзе | <i>sheep leg (name of a celebration) month</i> |
| <b>February</b>  | пургыж тылзе   | <i>snowdrift month</i>                         |
| <b>March</b>     | ўярня тылзе    | <i>Butter Week (Shrovetide) month</i>          |
| <b>April</b>     | вўдшор тылзе   | <i>high water month</i>                        |
| <b>May</b>       | ага тылзе      | <i>field work month</i>                        |
| <b>June</b>      | пеледыш тылзе  | <i>flower month</i>                            |
| <b>July</b>      | сўрем тылзе    | <i>Sürem (name of a celebration) month</i>     |
| <b>August</b>    | сорла тылзе    | <i>sickle month</i>                            |
| <b>September</b> | идым тылзе     | <i>threshing floor month</i>                   |
| <b>October</b>   | шыжа тылзе     | <i>drizzle month</i>                           |
| <b>November</b>  | кылме тылзе    | <i>frost month</i>                             |
| <b>December</b>  | теле тылзе     | <i>winter month</i>                            |

Here, too, the inessive can be used to create adverbial forms: *шорыкйол тылзыште* 'in January'.

Тошто марий кечышот почеш, у идалык  
ўярня тылзыште тўнгалеш.

According to the old Mari calendar, the year  
starts in March.

Лум Марий Элыште вўдшор тылзыште  
шула.

Snow melts in April in Mari El.

4.14. The nominal and adverbial form of a month is given in parentheses after every sentence. Insert the appropriate one.

1. Университетыште тунемме ий ... мучашлалтеш. (июнь/июньыште)
2. ... иктаж-кушко кечывалвелыш канаш кудалына. (сорла тылзе/сорла тылзыште)
3. ... гыч Юл кылма да тудым йолын вончаш лиеш. (ноябрь/ноябрьыште)
4. Яллаште мланде паша ... тўнгалеш. (май/майыште)
5. ... – идалыкын индешымше тылзыже. (идым тылзе/идым тылзыште)

#### 4.8.3. Seasons (*идалык жап*)

|                         |                        |
|-------------------------|------------------------|
| Кызыт могай идалык жап? | What season is it now? |
| Могай идалык жапыште?   | In what season ... ?   |
| Тиде идалык жапыште ... | In this season ...     |
| Тудо идалык жапыште ... | In that season ...     |
| Тиде/Тений кенгежым ... | This summer ...        |

For the four seasons of the year the adverbials are formed with the accusative (see 2.4.2 – page 71).

|               | Nominal | Adverbial |
|---------------|---------|-----------|
| <b>winter</b> | теле    | телым     |
| <b>spring</b> | шошо    | шошым     |
| <b>summer</b> | кенгеж  | кенгежым  |
| <b>fall</b>   | шыже    | шыжым     |

Кажне телым ме ече дене мунчалтена.

We go skiing every winter.

Кенгежым кушко канаш каеда?

Where are you going on holiday in summer?

Шыжым игече йўран.

The weather is rainy in autumn.

4.15. The nominal and adverbial form of a season is given in parentheses after every sentence. Insert the appropriate one.

1. Кажне ... ик тылзе мый ялыште илем. (кенгеж/кенгежым)
2. ... уло ешге понгым погаш коштына. (шыже/шыжым)
3. Декабрь, январь, февраль – ... тылзе улыт. (теле/телым)
4. Ёярня пайрем годым марий-влак ... ужатат да ... вашлийыт. (теле/телым, шошо/шошым)
5. ... – эн йоратыме пагытем. (шошо/шошым)

#### 4.8.4. Years (уй)

|                    |                      |
|--------------------|----------------------|
| Кызыт могай ий?    | What year is it now? |
| Могай ийыште ... ? | In what year ... ?   |
| Тиде ийыште ...    | In this year ...     |
| Тудо ийыште ...    | In that year ...     |
| Ўмаште ...         | Last year ...        |
| Тений ...          | This year ...        |
| Вес ийыште ...     | Next year ...        |

Naming a year is done with the ordinal number followed by *уй* 'year', the adverbial being formed by using *уй* in the inessive (see 2.4.5 – page 82). The ordinal number is generally written with the abbreviation (-ше/-шо/-шө), as discussed above in the section on ordinal numbers (see 4.2 – page 112).

|             | Nominal    | Adverbial      |
|-------------|------------|----------------|
| <b>895</b>  | 895-ше ий  | 895-ше ийыште  |
| <b>1453</b> | 1453-шо ий | 1453-шо ийыште |
| <b>1545</b> | 1545-ше ий | 1545-ше ийыште |
| <b>1962</b> | 1962-шо ий | 1962-шо ийыште |
| <b>2015</b> | 2017-ше ий | 2017-ше ийыште |

BCE ~ CE (BC ~ AD): To indicate *Common Era* and *Before Common Era* the following expression can be used, where ? represents the number in question:

|            | Nominal  | Adverbial  |
|------------|--|--|
| <b>BCE</b> | мемнан эра деч ончычсо ?-шЕ ий<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо ?-шЕ ий<br>мемнан эра деч ончыч ?-шЕ ий<br>мемнан саман деч ончыч ?-шЕ ий | мемнан эра деч ончычсо ?-шЕ ийыште<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо ?-шЕ ийыште<br>мемнан эра деч ончыч ?-шЕ ийыште<br>мемнан саман деч ончыч ?-шЕ ийыште<br>мемнан эра деч ? ий ончыч<br>мемнан саман деч ? ий ончыч |
| <b>CE</b>  | мемнан эрын ?-шЕ ийже<br>мемнан саманын ?-шЕ ийже<br>мемнан эрысе ?-шЕ ий<br>мемнан саманысе ?-шЕ ий                                 | мемнан эрын ?-шЕ ийыштыже<br>мемнан саманын ?-шЕ ийыштыже<br>мемнан эрысе ?-шЕ ийыште<br>мемнан саманысе ?-шЕ ийыште   |

For example:

|                | Nominal  | Adverbial  |
|----------------|--|--|
| <b>753 BCE</b> | мемнан эра деч ончычсо 753-шо ий<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо 753-шо ий<br>мемнан эра деч ончыч 753-шо ий<br>мемнан саман деч ончыч 753-шо ий | мемнан эра деч ончыч 753-шо ийыште<br>мемнан саман деч ончыч 753-шо ийыште<br>мемнан эра деч ончычсо 753-шо ийыште<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо 753-шо ийыште<br>мемнан эра деч 753 ий ончыч<br>мемнан саман деч 753 ий ончыч |
| <b>476 CE</b>  | мемнан эрын 476-шо ийже<br>мемнан саманын 476-шо ийже<br>мемнан эрысе 476-шо ий<br>мемнан саманысе 476-шо ий                                 | мемнан эрын 476-шо ийыштыже<br>мемнан саманын 476-шо ийыштыже<br>мемнан эрысе 476-шо ийыште<br>мемнан саманысе 476-шо ийыште   |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>1552-шо ий</u> марий калыклан кугу вашталтышым конден.                          | <u>The year 1552</u> brought big changes for the Mari people.                            |
| <u>1775-ше ийыште</u> Санкт-Петербург олаште икымше марий грамматикым савыктеныт.  | <u>In 1775</u> , the first Mari grammar was published in Saint Petersburg.               |
| <u>1995-ше ий</u> гыч марий йылме Марий Эл Республикыште кугыжаныш статусым налын. | The Mari language has had official status in the Republic of Mari El since <u>1995</u> . |
| Аристотель <u>мемнан эра деч ончыч 384-ше ийыште</u> шочын.                        | Aristotle was born in in <u>384 BCE</u> .  |
| Император Октавиан Август <u>мемнан эрын 14-ше ийыштыже</u> колен.                 | Emperor Augustus died in <u>14 CE</u> .  |

4.16. Insert the year given in parentheses after each sentence, either as a nominal or as an adverbial. All year numbers are CE.

1. Марий калык нерген икымше гана ... хазар каганын серышыштыже палемден возымо. (961)
2. Икымше марий букварь ... лектын. (1867)
3. ... гыч Озан олаште марий йылме дене савыкталтше икымше марий периодический изданий «Марла календарь» лекташ тўнгалын. (1907)
4. ... – икымше марий драме театрын шочмо ийже. (1929)
5. «Акпатыр» лўман икымше марий оперым ... ончыктеныт. (1963)

#### 4.8.5. Decades (лу ий)

|                        |                    |
|------------------------|--------------------|
| Тиде лу ий жапыште ... | In this decade ... |
| Тудо лу ий жапыште ... | In that decade ... |

Names of the decades are formed with the ordinal numeral of 10 and its multiples until 90 followed by *ий* 'year' with the plural suffix *-ла* (see 2.1.2.3 – page 59). The adverbials are formed with the inessive (see 2.4.5 – page 82) of *ийла*. As in English, it is also possible to refer to a decade through the reference to its first year, in full (e.g., *the 1960s*). By these means, speakers can refer to the first two decades of the 21<sup>st</sup> century unambiguously.

|                      | Nominal      | Adverbial       |
|----------------------|--------------|-----------------|
| <b>the twenties</b>  | 20-шо ийла   | 20-шо ийлаште   |
| <b>the forties</b>   | 40-ше ийла   | 40-ше ийлаште   |
| <b>the sixties</b>   | 60-шо ийла   | 60-шо ийлаште   |
| <b>the seventies</b> | 70-ше ийла   | 70-ше ийлаште   |
| <b>the nineties</b>  | 90-ше ийла   | 90-ше ийлаште   |
| <b>the 2000s</b>     | 2000-ше ийла | 2000-ше ийлаште |
| <b>the 2010s</b>     | 2010-шо ийла | 2010-шо ийлаште |

Also note the following possibility: *XIX курымын 60-шо ийлаже* ‘the 60s of the 19<sup>th</sup> century’, *XIX курымын 60-шо ийлаштыже* ‘in the 60s of the 19<sup>th</sup> century’. (As regards centuries, see below.)

When one wishes to refer to several decades, one can do so by juxtapositioning the ordinals: *1920–1930-шо (тўжем индешшўдо колымшо–тўжем индешшўдо кумлымшо ~ тўжем индешшўдо колымшо–кумлымшо)* ийла ‘the 1920s and 1930s’, *1920–1930-шо (тўжем индешшўдо колымшо–тўжем индешшўдо кумлымшо ~ тўжем индешшўдо колымшо–кумлымшо)* ийлаште ‘from the 1920s to the 1930s’.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>1550–1580-ше ийлаште</u> марий мландыште «черемис сар» манме кучедалмаш-влак эртенит. | <u>From the 1550s to 1580s</u> , the fighting referred to as the “Cheremis War” took place in the Mari lands. |
| <u>XIX курымын 70-ше ийлаште</u> «Кугу сорта» лўман марий секте шочын.                   | <u>In the 70s of the 19<sup>th</sup> century</u> , the Mari sect called “Kugu Sorta” was established.         |
| <u>1910-шо ийла</u> кыдалне «Война увер» лўман икымше марий газет лекташ тўнгалын.       | In the middle of <u>the 1910s</u> , the first Mari newspaper, called “Voyna uver” started appearing.          |
| <u>1960-шо ийлаште</u> марий школлаште марий йылме дене туныктым чарненыт.               | <u>In the 1960s</u> , teaching in Mari was stopped in Mari schools.   |
| <u>1980-ше ийла</u> тыланда мо дене шарналт кодыныт?                                     | What do you remember <u>the 1980s</u> for?  |

4.17. Insert the decade, or interval of decades, given in parentheses after each sentence, either as a nominal or as an adverbial.

1. Йошкар-Олан Сомбатхей ужашыжым ... чоңымо. (1970–1980)
2. ... гыч тўнгалын качам ик вереак пашам ыштен. (50)
3. ... марий йылме дене книга шагал савыкталтын. (1990)
4. XX курымын ... ялысе марий-влак шукын олашке илаш кусненыт. (20)
5. Илышыштем ... эн онгай, эн сылне лийыныт. (60)

#### 4.8.6. Centuries (курым)

|                       |                         |
|-----------------------|-------------------------|
| Кызыт могай курым?    | What century is it now? |
| Могай курымышто ... ? | In what century ... ?   |
| тиде курымышто        | In this century ...     |
| тудо курымышто        | In that century ...     |

Names of the centuries are formed with an ordinal numeral followed by *курым* ‘century’. The ordinal numeral can be abbreviated or written with Roman numerals (see 4.2 – page 112). For the adverbial the word *курым* is used in the inessive (see 2.4.5 – page 82).

|                     | Nominal                  | Adverbial                        |
|---------------------|--------------------------|----------------------------------|
| <b>4th century</b>  | IV курым<br>4-ше курым   | IV курымышто<br>4-ше курымышто   |
| <b>10th century</b> | X курым<br>10-шо курым   | X курымышто<br>10-шо курымышто   |
| <b>19th century</b> | XIX курым<br>19-ше курым | XIX курымышто<br>19-ше курымышто |
| <b>21st century</b> | XXI курым<br>21-ше курым | XXI курымышто<br>21-ше курымышто |

BCE ~ CE (BC ~ AD): To indicate if a century belongs to the *Common Era* or was *Before Common Era* the following expression can be used, where ? represents the number in question:

|            | Nominal  | Adverbial  |
|------------|--|--|
| <b>BCE</b> | мемнан эра деч ончычсо ? курым<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо ? курым                                   | мемнан эра деч ончыч ? курымышто<br>мемнан саман деч ончыч ? курымышто<br>мемнан эра деч ончычсо ? курымышто<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо ? курымышто<br>мемнан эра деч ? курым ончыч<br>мемнан саман деч ? курым ончыч |
| <b>CE</b>  | мемнан эрын ? курымжо<br>мемнан саманын ? курымжо<br>мемнан эрысе ? курым<br>мемнан саманысе ? курым | мемнан эрын ? курымыштыжо<br>мемнан саманын ? курымыштыжо<br>мемнан эрысе ? курымышто<br>мемнан саманысе ? курымышто   |

For example:

|                                   | Nominal  | Adverbial  |
|-----------------------------------|--|--|
| <b>4<sup>th</sup> century BCE</b> | мемнан эра деч ончычсо IV курым<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо IV курым                                     | мемнан эра деч ончыч IV курымышто<br>мемнан саман деч ончыч IV курымышто<br>мемнан эра деч ончычсо IV курымышто<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо IV курымышто<br>мемнан эра деч IV курым ончыч<br>мемнан саман деч IV курым ончыч |
| <b>4<sup>th</sup> century CE</b>  | мемнан эрын IV курымжо<br>мемнан саманын IV курымжо<br>мемнан эрысе IV курым<br>мемнан саманысе IV курым | мемнан эрын IV курымыштыжо<br>мемнан саманын IV курымыштыжо<br>мемнан эрысе IV курымышто<br>мемнан саманысе IV курымышто   |

When referencing several centuries, the plural suffix *-ла* is attached to *курым*: X-XII (*лумышо-латкокимшо*) *курымлаште* 'in the 10<sup>th</sup> to 12<sup>th</sup> centuries'.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>XVI курымышто</u> марий мланде-влак Руш кугыжанышыш пуренит.                                     | <u>In the 16<sup>th</sup> century</u> , the Mari lands became part of the Tsardom of Russia.   |
| <u>XVI–XVIII курымлаште</u> марий-влак шукын тынеш пуртымо деч пошкырт мландыш илаш кусненит.       | <u>From the 16<sup>th</sup> to the 18<sup>th</sup> centuries</u> , many Maris moved to Bashkortostan to escape Christianization.     |
| <u>XIX курымышто</u> марий калыкын йылмышым, тўвыражым финн да венгр шанчыен-влак шымлаш тўғалынит. | <u>In the 19<sup>th</sup> century</u> , Finnish and Hungarian scholars started to study the language and culture of the Mari people. |
| <u>XX курым</u> тўғалтыште марий калык коклаште интеллигенций шочеш.                                | In the beginning of <u>the 20<sup>th</sup> century</u> , an intelligentsia arose among the Maris.                                    |

4.18. Insert the century, or interval of centuries, given in parentheses after each sentence, either as a nominal or as an adverbial.

1. ... жапыште марий-влак калык семын чумыргаш тўғалынит. (IX–XI)
2. ... марий-влак Шōртнō Орда да Озан ханстве йымалне иленит. (XIII–XVI)
3. ... гыч марий-влакын руш калык дене кыл виянгын. (XII)
4. Марий мут-влак кагазыште икымше гана ... мучаште возалтынит. (XVII)
5. Юлын пурла серыште верланыше Аламнер курык ўмбалне ... тошто марий илем лийын. (XI–XV)

#### 4.8.7. Millennia (*тўжемиий*)

|                      |                        |
|----------------------|------------------------|
| Тиде тўжемиийште ... | In this millennium ... |
| Тудо тўжемиийште ... | In that millennium ... |

Names of the millennia are formed with an ordinal numeral followed by *түжөмү* ‘millennium’. The ordinal numeral can be abbreviated or written with Roman numerals (see 4.2 – page 112). For the adverbial the word *түжөмү* is used in the inessive (see 2.4.5 – page 82).

**BCE ~ CE (BC ~ AD):** To indicate if a millennium belongs to the *Common Era* or was *Before Common Era* the following expression can be used, where ? represents the number in question:

|            | Nominal  | Adverbial  |
|------------|--|--|
| <b>BCE</b> | мемнан эра деч ончычсо ? түжөмү<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо ? түжөмү                                     | мемнан эра деч ончыч ? түжөмүште<br>мемнан саман деч ончыч ? түжөмүште<br>мемнан эра деч ончычсо ? түжөмүште<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо ? түжөмүште<br>мемнан эра деч ? түжөмү ончыч<br>мемнан саман деч ? түжөмү ончыч |
| <b>CE</b>  | мемнан эрын ? түжөмүже<br>мемнан саманын ? түжөмүже<br>мемнан эрысе ? түжөмү<br>мемнан саманысе ? түжөмү | мемнан эрын ? түжөмүштыже<br>мемнан саманын ? түжөмүштыже<br>мемнан эрысе ? түжөмүште<br>мемнан саманысе ? түжөмүште   |

For example:

|                                      | Nominal  | Adverbial  |
|--------------------------------------|--|--|
| <b>2<sup>nd</sup> millennium BCE</b> | мемнан эра деч ончычсо II түжөмү<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо II түжөмү                                       | мемнан эра деч ончыч II түжөмүште<br>мемнан саман деч ончыч II түжөмүште<br>мемнан эра деч ончычсо II түжөмүште<br>мемнан саман деч ончычсо II түжөмүште<br>мемнан эра деч II түжөмү ончыч<br>мемнан саман деч II түжөмү ончыч |
| <b>2<sup>nd</sup> millennium CE</b>  | мемнан эрын II түжөмүже<br>мемнан саманын II түжөмүже<br>мемнан эрысе II түжөмү<br>мемнан саманысе II түжөмү | мемнан эрын II түжөмүштыже<br>мемнан саманын II түжөмүштыже<br>мемнан эрысе II түжөмүште<br>мемнан саманысе II түжөмүште   |

Мемнан эрын I түжөмү мучаште марий-влак калык семын чумыргаш тўналыныт.

At the end of the 1<sup>st</sup> millennium CE, the Maris started forming a distinct ethnic group.

Археолог-влакын ойлымышт почеш, айдеме-влак тыште мемнан эра деч ончычсо IV түжөмүштат иленит.

According to archeologists, people lived here already in the 4<sup>th</sup> millennium BCE.

#### 4.8.8. Month + day (числа)

Таче могай числа?

What day (of the month) is it today?

Могай числаште ... ? (Могай кечын ... ?)

(On) what day (of the month) ... ?

When combining the month and day, the day is given as an ordinal followed by the month: *23-шо апрель* / *вўдшор тылзе* ‘April 23<sup>rd</sup>’. In answer to the question *кунам* ‘when’, the month is then given in the inessive (see 2.4.5 – page 82): *23-шо апрельыште* / *вўдшор тылзыште* ‘on April 23<sup>rd</sup>’. In combination with the month names from the Mari folk calendar, the adverbial (instructive) suffix in *-н* (see 8.4.1 – page 319) can alternatively be attached to the word *тылзе* ‘month’: *23-шо вўдшор тылзын* ‘on April 23<sup>rd</sup>’.

An alternative construction is: *апрель тылзын* / *вўдшор тылзын 23-шо кечыже* ‘April 23<sup>rd</sup> (lit. the 23<sup>rd</sup> day of the month of April)’. Here, adverbials are formed by means of the adverbial (instructive) suffix in *-н* attached to the word *кече* ‘day’ – note that it precedes the possessive suffix third person singular: *апрель тылзын* / *вўдшор тылзын 23-шо кечынже* ‘on April 23<sup>rd</sup> (lit. on the 23<sup>rd</sup> day of the month of April)’.



|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ўярня пайрем тений <u>20-шо пургыж тылзын</u> пура.                                      | Butter Week (~Shrovetide) will be <u>on February 20<sup>th</sup></u> this year.                               |
| Вўдшор тылзын <u>26-ше кечыже</u> Марий талешке кече семын палемадалтеш.                 | <u>April 26<sup>th</sup></u> is commemorated as the Day of Mari Heroes  |
| Тений Агавайрем кумалтыш-влак <u>21-ше май</u> гыч <u>5-ше июнь</u> марте эрташ тўналыт. | This year the Harvest Feast prayers will last from <u>May 21<sup>st</sup></u> to <u>June 5<sup>th</sup></u> . |
| Марий Эл Республикын кечыжым <u>4-ше кылме тылзын</u> палемдат.                          | The Day of the Mari El Republic is commemorated <u>on November 4<sup>th</sup></u> .                           |

As in English, one can form elliptical constructions in which one refers to only the day of the month with an ordinal number, without stating which month the day belongs to:

|                                  |  |
|----------------------------------|--|
| Эрла <u>коло икымше</u> .        | Tomorrow is <u>the 21<sup>st</sup></u> . |
| Тудо <u>нылымшыште</u> толеш мо? | Is s/he coming <u>on the fourth</u> ?    |

4.19. Insert the date given in parentheses after each sentence, either as a nominal or as an adverbial.

1. Ковамын шочмо кечыже ... лиеш. (24.01.)
2. ... марий-влаклан тыглай кече огыл. Лач тунам Марий тиште кечым пайремлат. (10.12.)
3. Шкетан лўмеш театр ... у тургымым почын. (15.09.)
4. ... – Илянгече. Марий-влак шўгарлашке коштыт да колышо родыштым уштат. (02.08.)
5. Чумбылат курыкышто ... кугу кумалтыш лиеш. Тый тушко кайынет мо? (18.06.)

#### 4.8.9. Year + month

If one wishes to refer to a month in a specific year, the year is named with the ordinal number followed by *уй* 'year', and, standing in the nominative, is followed by the reference to the month. For example:

|               | Nominal                  | Adverbial                   |
|---------------|--------------------------|-----------------------------|
| June 1979     | 1979-ше ий июнь          | 1979-ше ий июньышто         |
|               | 1979-ше ий июнь тылзе    | 1979-ше ий июнь тылзыште    |
|               | 1979-ше ий пеледыш тылзе | 1979-ше ий пеледыш тылзыште |
| December 2009 | 2009-ше ий декабрь       | 2009-ше ий декабрьыште      |
|               | 2009-ше ий декабрь тылзе | 2009-ше ий декабрь тылзыште |
|               | 2009-ше ий теле тылзе    | 2009-ше ий теле тылзыште    |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>1917-ше ий июльышто</u> Бирск олаште I Марий калык погын эртен.                                     | <u>In July 1917</u> , the first Mari National Congress took place in Birsik.                     |
| <u>1920-шо ий май</u> гыч марий-влак Пеледыш пайремым палемдаш тўналыныт.                              | Since <u>May 1920</u> , Maris have been celebrating the Flower Festival.                         |
| «Чодыра сем» лўман икымше марий балетын премьерыже <u>1973-шо ий февраль тылзыште</u> эртен.           | The first Mari ballet, called “Melody of the Forest”, had its premiere <u>in February 1973</u> . |
| <u>2010-шо ий сўрем ден сорла тылзе-влак</u> Марий Элыште илыше-влаклан шуко пожар дене шарналт кодыт. | <u>July and August 2010</u> are remembered by the inhabitants of Mari El for their many fires.   |
| «Юмынўдыр» лўман марий мюзиклым икымше гана <u>2012-шо ий шыжа тылзыште</u> ончыктеныт.                | The Mari musical named “Daughter of God” was shown for the first time <u>in October 2012</u> .   |

4.20. Insert the month given in parentheses after each sentence, either as a nominal or as an adverbial.

1. ... Марий самырык театрым почмо дене шарналт кодеш. (April 1991)
2. «Чоныштем илет» луман икымше марий сериалым ... ончыктеныт. (September 1997)
3. ... – «Марий Эл Радион» шке пашажым тўналме жапше. (July 2005)
4. ... Шкетан лумеш театрын коллективышке Москошто тунем лекше 14 самырык актёр ушнен. (August 2015)
5. ... Йошкар-Олаште «Сийгудо» луман марий ресторан почылтын. (October 2016)

#### 4.8.10. Year + month + day

The following forms can be used to express *January 21, 1978* and *on January 21, 1978*:

| Nominal   | Adverbial  |
|---|--|
| <p>1978-ше ий 21-ше январь<br/>1978-ше ий 21-ше шорыкйол тылзе<br/>1978-ше ий шорыкйол тылзын 21-ше кечыже</p>                                      | <p>1978-ше ий 21-ше январьыште<br/>1978-ше ий 21-ше шорыкйол тылзын<br/>1978-ше ий шорыкйол тылзын 21-ше кечынже<br/>1978-ше ийын 21-ше январьыште<br/>1978-ше ийын 21-ше шорыкйол тылзын<br/>1978-ше ийын шорыкйол тылзын 21-ше кечынже</p> |
| <p>Историйыште <u>1552-шо ий 2-шо шыжа тылзе</u> Озан олам налме кече семын палыме.</p>   | <p>Historically, <u>October 2<sup>nd</sup>, 1552</u> is remembered as the day of the conquest of Kazan.</p>  |
| <p><u>1962-шо ий 15-ше май</u> – Йошкар-Ола-Моско южгорным почмо кече.</p>  | <p><u>May 15<sup>th</sup>, 1962</u> was the day a flight connection between Moscow and Yoshkar-Ola was opened.</p>   |
| <p><u>1991-ше ий шыжа тылзын 11-ше кечынже</u> Параньга район Олор ялыште чимарий-влак совет жап деч вара икымше тўня кумалтышым эртареныт.</p>     | <p><u>On October 11<sup>th</sup>, 1991</u>, the adherents of Mari Traditional Religion held their first World Prayer Ceremony after the end of the Soviet era in the village of Olor in the Paranga District.</p>                            |
| <p><u>2014-ше ий 27-ше пургыж тылзын</u> Йошкар-Олаште «Ял ўмбалне мужыр йўксō» фильмын презентацийже эртен.</p>                                    | <p><u>On February 27<sup>th</sup>, 2014</u>, the Film “A Pair of Swans over the Village” was presented in Yoshkar-Ola.</p>   |
| <p><u>2016-шо ий 6-шо да 7-ше октябрьыште</u> «Марий Эл Радион» вияш эфирыштыже С. Чавайнын шочмо кечыже лумеш «Элнет» романжым лудын лектыныт.</p> | <p><u>On October 6<sup>th</sup> and 7<sup>th</sup>, 2016</u>, the novel “Elnet” was read on the occasion of Sergey Chavayn’s birthday in a live broadcast on “Mari El Radio”.</p>  |

4.21. Insert the date given in parentheses after each sentence, either as a nominal or as an adverbial.

1. ... Марий Элын историйыште ик эн йўштō кече лийын. Тунам термометр 54 градус йўштым ончыктен. (31.12.1978)
2. Мый ... шочынам. (8.05.1981)
3. Финн-угор театр-влакын I «Майатул» фестивалышт ... Ижевск олаште почылтын. (26.03.1992)
4. .. Марий Элын историйыште ик эн шокшо кече лийын. Тунам температур 37 градус шокшо марте кўзен. (24.07.2010)
5. ... Марий Элыште йўдвел волгалтышым ужаш лиеш ыле. (17.03.2015)

#### 4.8.11. Year + season

If one wishes to refer to a month in a specific year, the year is named with the ordinal number followed by *уш* 'year', and, standing in the nominative, is followed by the reference to the season. For example:

|                    | Nominal           | Adverbial           |
|--------------------|-------------------|---------------------|
| <b>Summer 1952</b> | 1952-шо ий кенгеж | 1952-шо ий кенгежым |
| <b>Fall 1979</b>   | 1979-ше ий шыже   | 1979-ше ий шыжым    |
| <b>Winter 2000</b> | 2000-ше ий теле   | 2000-ше ий телым    |
| <b>Spring 2009</b> | 2009-ше ий шошо   | 2009-ше ий шошым    |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>1988-ше ий теле</u> пытартыш 35 ий жапыште Марий Элыште ик эн йўштö лийын.                 | <u>The winter of 1988</u> was one of the coldest winters in the last 35 years in Mari El .                    |
| <u>1994-ше ий телым</u> Курыкмари́й драме театр ончышо-влаклан шке омсажым икымше гана почын. | <u>In the winter of 1994</u> , the Hill Mari Drama Theater opened its doors to spectators for the first time. |
| «Мый марла ойлем» акций икымше гана <u>2008-ше ий шошым</u> эртаралтын.                       | The campaign "I speak Mari" was carried out for the first time <u>in the spring of 2008</u> .                 |
| <u>2009-ше ий шыжым</u> курыкмари́й «Акпарс» радиостудий шке пашажым ышташ тўналын.           | <u>In the fall of 2009</u> , the Hill Mari radio studio "Akpars" started its work.                            |
| <u>2010-шо ий кенгеж</u> Марий Элыште веле огыл пеш шокшо лийын.                              | <u>The summer of 2010</u> was very hot not only in Mari El.   |

4.22. Insert the season of the year given in parentheses after each sentence, either as a nominal or as an adverbial.

1. Марий Элын рўдолаже ... марте Царевококшайск лўмым нумалын. (1919, winter)
2. Икымше поезд Йошкар-Олашке ... толын. (1928, winter)
3. Марий кугыжаныш университетысе марий йылме кафедрын историйже ... тўналын. (1931, fall)
4. Телевидений марий мландыште ... гыч шке пашажым ышташ тўналын. (1960, summer)
5. Йошкар-Олаште «Тоштер йўд» акций икымше гана ... эртен. (2008, spring)

#### 4.8.12. 'Last ...', 'next ...'

The participles *кодаш*, *эртыше* 'last, previous', *шышаш*, *толшаш* 'next, coming', derived respectively from *кодаш* (-ам) 'to stay', *эрташ* (-ем) 'to pass', *шыаш* (-ам) 'to arrive, to reach' and *толаш* (-ам) 'to come', are used as adjectives. The word *веш* 'next, coming' is also used in reference to upcoming dates. Also note *ўмашме* 'last year (adverbial)', *ўмашсе* 'of last year (adjective)'.

|                        | Nominal  | Adverbial   |
|------------------------|--|---|
| <b>(the) last week</b> | кодшо арня<br>эртыше арня                                  | кодшо арнян/арняште<br>эртыше арнян/ арняште  |
| <b>(the) last year</b> | кодшо ий (идалык)<br>эртыше ий (идалык)                    | ўмаште<br>кодшо ийын/ийыште (идалыкыште)<br>эртыше ийын/ийыште (идалыкыште)                       |
| <b>(the) last fall</b> | кодшо шыже<br>эртыше шыже<br>ўмашсе шыже                   | ўмаште шыжым<br>кодшо шыжым<br>эртыше шыжым   |
| <b>(the) next week</b> | вес арня<br>толшаш арня<br>шушаш арня                      | вес арнян/арняште<br>шушаш арнян/арняште<br>толшаш арнян/арняште                                  |
| <b>(the) next year</b> | вес ий (идалык)<br>толшаш ий (идалык)<br>шушаш ий (идалык) | вес ийын/ийыште (идалыкыште)<br>шушаш ийын/ийыште (идалыкыште)<br>толшаш ийын/ийыште (идалыкыште) |
| <b>(the) next fall</b> | вес шыже<br>толшаш шыже<br>шушаш шыже                      | вес шыжым<br>шушаш шыжым<br>толшаш шыжым  |

Вес арняште йолташем дене пырля  
Сыктывкар олашке конференцийыш  
кудалына.

Next week I'm going to a conference in  
Syktyvkar with a friend.

Кодшо шыжым мемнан деке  
университетышке кум венгр студент  
толын.

Last fall three Hungarian students came to  
our university.

Ўмаште мый аспирантурым тунем  
пытаренам.

I finished my postgraduate studies last year.

#### 4.9. Time of day

Кызыт мыняр жап?  
Кызыт мыняр шагат?  
Мыняр шагатлан ... ?

What time is it?

At what time ... ?

Morning, noon, evening, night: While the adverbial forms for 'noon' and 'night' employ the accusative suffix (see 2.4.2 – page 71), those for 'morning' and 'evening' trace their roots to the postposition *дене* 'with' (see 6.1.20 – page 170).

|                | Nominal | Adverbial |
|----------------|---------|-----------|
| <b>morning</b> | эр      | эрдене    |
| <b>noon</b>    | кечывал | кечывалым |
| <b>evening</b> | кас     | кастене   |
| <b>night</b>   | йўдым   | йўдым     |

– Поро эр!

– Good morning!

– Салам лийже!

– Hello!

Могай сыльне кас!

What a beautiful evening!

Эрдене мыняр шагатлан кынелат?

When do you get up in the morning?

Кастене рестораныш каена.

We're going to a restaurant in the evening.

Hours: In adverbial references to times of day, the dative (see 2.4.4 – page 78) is used.

|   |                  |
|---|------------------|
| Индеш шагат.<br>Индеше.<br>Лач индеш шагат.<br>Лач индеше.      | It's 9 o'clock.  |
| Латкок шагат<br>Латкокыт.<br>Лач латкок шагат.<br>Лач латкокыт. | It's 12 o'clock. |
| индеш шагатлан<br>индешылан                                     | at 9 o'clock     |
| латкок шагатлан<br>латкокытлан                                  | at 12 o'clock    |

Quarter and half hours:

|  |            |
|--|------------|
| Индеш шагатат латвич минут.<br>Индеш шагатат лучко минут.<br>Индешат лучко.  | It's 9:15. |
| Индеш шагатат кумло минут.<br>Индешат пеле.<br>Индеш шагатат пеле.   | It's 9:30. |
| Индеш шагатат нылле вич минут.<br>Индешат нылле визыт.<br>Латвич минут гыч лу шагат лиеш.<br>Лучко минут гыч лу шагат лиеш.<br>Латвич минут гыч лу шагат шуэш.<br>Лучко минут гыч лу шагат шуэш. | It's 9:45. |
| индеш шагатат латвич минутлан<br>индеш шагатат лучко минутлан<br>индешат лучкылан  | at 9:15    |
| индеш шагатат кумло минутлан<br>индешат пелылан<br>индеш шагатат пелылан   | at 9:30    |
| индеш шагатат нылле вич минутлан<br>индешат нылле визытлан   | at 9:45    |

Further examples:

|  |            |
|--|------------|
| Индеш шагатат кум минут.<br>Индешат кумыт.   | It's 9:03. |
| Индеш шагатат витле вич минут.<br>Индешат витле визыт.<br>Вич минут гыч лу шагат лиеш.<br>Вич минут гыч лу шагат шуэш. | It's 9:55. |
| индеш шагатат кум минутлан<br>индешат кумытлан   | at 9:03    |
| индеш шагатат витле вич минутлан<br>индешат витле визытлан   | at 9:55    |

A.M. and P.M.: While the 24-hour clock is used in formal language in Mari, in colloquial language, the 12-hour clock is used, as it is in English. When it is not clear from context if one is referring to the hours before or after noon, one can disambiguate either by using an adverbial in reference to

the time of day (see above), or by saying *кечывал деч вара* 'after noon' or *пелйүд деч вара* 'after midnight'.

|                       | It is ...                           | at ...   |
|-----------------------|-------------------------------------|--|
| <b>(at) 9:00 a.m.</b> | Индеш шагат эр.                     | индеш шагат эрдене<br>эрдене индеш шагатлан<br>эрдене индешылан  |
| <b>(at) 9:00 p.m.</b> | Индеш шагат кас.<br>Коло ик шагат.  | индеш шагат кастене<br>кастене индеш шагатлан<br>кастене индешылан<br>коло ик шагатлан   |
| <b>(at) 2:00 a.m.</b> | Кок шагат йүд.                      | кок шагат йүдым<br>йүдым кок шагатлан<br>пелйүд деч вара кок шагатлан<br>йүдым кокытлан<br>пелйүд деч вара кокытлан                                  |
| <b>(at) 2:00 p.m.</b> | Кок шагат кечывал.<br>Латныл шагат. | латныл шагатлан<br>кок шагат кечывалым<br>кечывалым кок шагатлан<br>кечывал деч вара кок шагатлан<br>кечывалым кокытлан<br>кечывал деч вара кокытлан |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Паша кечын мый <u>6 шагат эрдене</u> кыналам.                                  | On work days I get up at <u>6 in the morning</u> .   |
| Икымше мужырна университетыште <u>кандашат пелылан</u> тўнгалеш.               | Our first lesson at university starts <u>at 8:30</u> .                                       |
| Йолташем дене <u>11 шагатат 45 минутлан</u> вашлияш кутырен келшенна.          | I agreed with my friend to meet <u>at 11:45</u> .  |
| «Илыш дене төр» передаче «Марий Эл Радиошто» <u>18 шагат гыч 19</u> марте кая. | The program "Keeping up with the Times" on "Mari El Radio" airs from <u>6 p.m. to 7 p.m.</u> |
| <u>Йүдым 3 шагатлан</u> ала-кө омсашке тўкалтен.                               | Somebody knocked on the door at <u>3 in the night</u> .                                      |

4.23. Insert the time of the year given in parentheses after each sentence in the appropriate form.

- Васлий ... мөнгө гыч пашашке лектеш. (7:15)
- Иквереш пашам ыштыше йолташ-влак дене тудо ... кочкаш кая. (12:30)
- ... Васлийын пашаштыже погынымаш тўнгалеш. (15:40)
- ... тудо паша гыч мөнгө кая. (18:20)
- ... Васлий малаш возеш. (23:00)

#### 4.10. Elementary arithmetic operations

##### Addition:

|   |                |
|---|----------------|
| Кокыт да кумыт мыняр лиеш?<br>Кокытышко кумытым ушаш гын, мыняр лиеш?                               | What is 2 + 3? |
| Латвизыт да нылле визыт – кудло.<br>Латвизытышке нылле визытым ушаш гын, кудло лиеш.                | 15 + 45 = 60   |
| Коло кумыт да шымле индеше – шүдө кокыт.<br>Коло кумытышко шымле индешым ушаш гын, шүдө кокыт лиеш. | 23 + 79 = 102  |

Subtraction:

|  |                      |
|--|----------------------|
| Индеше гыч визытым кудалташ гын, мыняр ко деш?                     | What is<br>$9 - 5$ ? |
| Индеше гыч визытым кудалташ гын, мыняр лиеш?                       |                      |
| Индеше гыч визытым лукташ гын, мыняр ко деш?                       |                      |
| Индеше гыч визытым лукташ гын, мыняр лиеш?                         |                      |
| Коло индеше гыч латкудытым кудалташ гын, латкумыт ко деш.          | $29 - 16$<br>$= 13$  |
| Коло индеше гыч латкудытым кудалташ гын, латкумыт лиеш.            |                      |
| Коло индеше гыч латкудытым лукташ гын, латкумыт ко деш.            |                      |
| Коло индеше гыч латкудытым лукташ гын, латкумыт лиеш.              |                      |
| Индешле кандаше гыч кудло шымытым кудалташ гын, кумло икте ко деш. | $98 - 67$<br>$= 31$  |
| Индешле кандаше гыч кудло шымытым кудалташ гын, кумло икте лиеш.   |                      |
| Индешле кандаше гыч кудло шымытым лукташ гын, кумло икте ко деш.   |                      |
| Индешле кандаше гыч кудло шымытым лукташ гын, кумло икте лиеш.     |                      |

Multiplication:

|   |                        |
|---|------------------------|
| Вич гана визыт мыняр лиеш?                            | What is $5 \times 5$ ? |
| Визытым визытлан шукемдаш гын, мыняр лиеш?            |                        |
| Визытым вич гана шукемдаш гын, мыняр лиеш?            |                        |
| Индеш гана визыт – нылле визыт.                       | $5 \times 9 = 45$      |
| Визытым индешылан шукемдаш гын, нылле визыт лиеш.     |                        |
| Визытым индеш гана шукемдаш гын, нылле визыт лиеш.    |                        |
| Куд гана латкудыт – индешле кудыт.                    | $16 \times 6 = 96$     |
| Латкудытым кудытлан шукемдаш гын, индешле кудыт лиеш. |                        |
| Латкудытым куд гана шукемдаш гын, индешле кудыт лиеш. |                        |

Division:

|  |                       |
|--|-----------------------|
| Коло иктым кумытлан пайлаш гын, мыняр лиеш?      | What is $21 \div 3$ ? |
| Коло иктым кумытлан пайлаш гын, шымыт лиеш.      | $21 \div 3 = 7$       |
| Кудло кудытым кудытлан пайлаш гын, латикте лиеш. | $66 \div 6 = 11$      |

4.24. Read out, and solve, the following equations.

1. Латкумытышко шымытым ушаш гын, мыняр лиеш?
2. Витле кудытым кокытлан пайлаш гын, мыняр лиеш?
3. Кандашым кудытлан шукемдаш гын, мыняр лиеш?
4. Кумло визытышке нылле кандашым ушаш гын, мыняр лиеш?
5. Индешле икте гыч латиндешым лукташ гын, мыняр ко деш?
6. Вичшудым коло визытлан пайлаш гын, мыняр лиеш?
7. Тўжем кандашшўдў гыч кумшўдў латвизытым кудалташ гын, мыняр ко деш?
8. Шўдў коло нылыт да шымшўдў шымле кудыт мыняр лиеш?
9. Кумлым ныл гана шукемдаш гын, мыняр лиеш?
10. Лу гыч кокытым кудалташ гын, мыняр ко деш?

## 5. Pronouns

### 5.1. Personal pronouns

#### 5.1.1. Forms

Personal pronouns are used only in the nominative, accusative, genitive, and dative cases.

|            | Nominative | Accusative | Genitive | Dative          |
|------------|------------|------------|----------|-----------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | мый        | мыйым      | мыйын    | мыланем ~ мылам |
| <b>2Sg</b> | тый        | тыйым      | тыйын    | тыланет ~ тылат |
| <b>3Sg</b> | тудо       | тудым      | тудын    | тудлан          |
| <b>1Pl</b> | ме         | мемнам     | мемнан   | мыланна         |
| <b>2Pl</b> | те         | тендам     | тендан   | тыланда         |
| <b>3Pl</b> | нуно       | нуным      | нунын    | нунылан         |

There are two forms for personal pronouns in the first and second persons singular in the dative: *мыланем* ~ *мылам* and *тыланет* ~ *тылат*. There is no overt difference in usage between the two forms. The nominative forms *мый* and *тый* also have long forms, *мые* and *тые*; these are typically encountered in poetic speech.

When the pronoun *тудо*, which is also used as a demonstrative pronoun ‘that’ (see 5.2.1 – page 137) and particle (see 9.5.85 – page 358), is followed by the postpositions *ден(е)* ‘with’ (see 6.1.20 – page 170), *деч(ын)* ‘from, of’ (see 6.1.22 – page 172), and more rarely *дек(е)* ‘to’ (see 6.1.19 – page 169), the postposition can be attached directly to the stem, with the final vowel of the stem being deleted. Alternatively, the postpositions can follow the genitive form *тудын*, in which case they are written separately:

| Genitive + Postposition | Melded form | Meaning      |
|-------------------------|-------------|--------------|
| тудын дек(е)            | туддек(е)   | to him/her   |
| тудын ден(е)            | тудден(е)   | with him/her |
| тудын деч(ын)           | туддеч(ын)  | from him/her |

#### 5.1.2. Usage

The usage of personal pronouns in Mari generally corresponds to their usage in English.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Мый</u> пиалан улам.                | I am happy.                                |
| <u>Ме</u> унам вучена.                 | <u>We</u> are waiting for a guest.         |
| <u>Тыланет</u> кофем але чайым кондаш? | Should (I) bring <u>you</u> coffee or tea? |
| <u>Тыланда</u> серыш толын.            | A letter came <u>for you</u> .             |
| <u>Ме</u> тудым она пале.              | We don't know <u>him/her</u> .             |
| <u>Нуным</u> полиций кычалеш.          | The police are looking for <u>them</u> .   |

A number of factors must be taken into consideration when using Mari personal pronouns, however.

##### 5.1.2.1. 2SG, 2PL, formality

Unlike English, Mari distinguishes between singular and plural forms of ‘you’, both in personal pronouns, and in the verbal paradigm. When addressing more than one person, the form *ме* is always used, regardless of the relationship between the speaker and the addressed persons. When addressing only one person, Mari, like many other European languages (e.g., Russian, Finnish, French), distinguishes based on formality: the pronoun *мый*, and 2SG verbal endings, are used



when addressing children, family members, and close friends, as well as animals or inanimate objects. Otherwise, *me* and 2PL verbal endings are used, especially when addressing people older than oneself.

5.1. What is more appropriate in the given contexts: second person singular, or second person plural?

1. Йолташ деч йодыда: «Тый/Те шуматкечын мом ыштет/ыштеда?»
2. Вич ияш пошкудо ўдыр деч йодыда: «Тый/Те мом ышташ йöратет/йöратеда?»
3. Туныктышо деч йодыда: «Тый/Те мылам полшен кертат/кертыда?»
4. Йолташдан аваж деч йодыда: «Тый/Те от/ода пале, Ивук кызыт кушто?»
5. Ужалыше деч йодыда: «Тый/Те могай киндым налаш темлет/темледа?»

#### 5.1.2.2. Pronoun dropping

Mari is a pro-drop language. Personal pronouns as subjects are optional and can be omitted.

|   |                                    |
|---|------------------------------------|
| <u>Тый</u> кушто илет? ~<br>Кушто илет?                     | Where do <u>you</u> live?          |
| <u>Мый</u> кастене толам. ~<br>Кастене толам.               | <u>I</u> will come in the evening. |
| <u>Тудо</u> Йошкар-Олаште ила. ~<br>Йошкар-Олаште ила.      | <u>S/he</u> lives in Yoshkar-Ola.  |
| <u>Нуно</u> мари йылмым тунемыт. ~<br>Марий йылмым тунемыт. | <u>They</u> are learning Mari.     |

#### 5.1.2.3. Genitive forms

Mari does not have distinct possessive pronouns; genitive forms of personal pronouns are used in this function. As regards the usage of genitive forms of personal pronouns in possessive constructions, see 2.2.2 – page 66. As regards their usage in combination with postpositions, see 6.0 – page 158.

Note that genitive forms can be used as nominals meaning ‘my one, mine’, ‘your one, yours’, ‘his/her own one, his/hers’, etc. In this case they can be declined as nouns: number suffixes and also other case suffixes can follow the genitive ending. This phenomenon will be illustrated in 11.3.3 – page 375.

#### 5.1.2.4. Plural forms for ‘you and I’, etc.

See 6.1.20 – page 170.

### 5.2. Demonstrative pronouns

#### 5.2.1. Base forms

Demonstrative pronouns (in English *this*, *that*, *these*, *those*) can be distinguished by the following parameters in Mari (this overview is restricted to nominative forms; inflected forms are discussed below):

Singular or plural:

| Singular                       | Plural              |
|--------------------------------|---------------------|
| <i>туде</i> ~ <i>мы</i> ‘this’ | <i>нуне</i> ‘these’ |
| <i>тудо</i> ~ <i>мы</i> ‘that’ | <i>нуно</i> ‘those’ |

The pronoun *тудо* is also used as a personal pronoun 's/he' (see 5.1 – page 136), and a particle (see 9.5.85 – page 358).

Note that *нине*, when used as a modifier, co-occurs with plural markers: *нине текст-влак* ~ *нине текст-шамыч* 'these texts', *нине текстлаште* 'in these texts'. The pronoun *нуно* is generally not used as a modifier; instead, *ту* ~ *тудо* are as modifiers used in combination with plural forms of nouns: *ту* ~ *тудо* *имне-влак* 'those horses'. The pronouns *миде* ~ *ты* can be used like this as well instead of *нине*: *ты* ~ *миде* *имне-влак* 'these horses'.

5.2. Which pronoun is appropriate in the following sentences?

1. Тиде/Нине ўдыр моторын мура.
2. Тудо/Нуно пўрт-влак у улыт.
3. Тиде/Нине ручка-влак огыт возо.
4. Тудо/Нуно рвезе марий книга лудеш.
5. Тиде/Нине тунемше-шамыч Германия гыч улыт.

Proximal or distal, i.e., if a pronoun is used in reference to objects near to the speaker or to objects far from the speaker:

| Proximal                       | Distal                         |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| <i>миде</i> ~ <i>ты</i> 'this' | <i>тудо</i> ~ <i>ту</i> 'that' |
| <i>нине</i> 'these'            | <i>нуно</i> 'those'            |

5.3. Which pronoun is appropriate in the following sentences?

1. Тиде/Тудо ўдырамаш мыйын ончылно телефон дене японла кутыра.
2. Нине/Ту кайык-влак кўшнў каваште кечывалвелыш чонештат.
3. Нине/Ту йоча-влак кызытат пўртна ончылно футболла модыт.
4. Тиде/Тудо автобус урем мучаште могай номеран? Торашке ужат мо?
5. Тиде/Тудо ўстел мемнан воктен яра мо?

- Used as modifiers (e.g., *миде урем* ~ *ты урем* 'this street') or used independently (e.g., *миде* 'this') – note that *миде* 'this', *тудо* 'that', and *нине* 'these' can be used in either function, while *ты* 'this' and *ту* 'that' are only used as modifiers, and *нуно* only independently:

| Modifier                          | Independent         |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------|
| <i>миде</i> ~ <i>ты</i> 'this'    | <i>миде</i> 'this'  |
| <i>тудо</i> ~ <i>ту</i> 'that'    | <i>тудо</i> 'that'  |
| <i>нине</i> 'these'               |                     |
| ( <i>тудо</i> ~ <i>ту</i> 'that') | <i>нуно</i> 'those' |

5.4. Which pronouns are appropriate in the following sentences? In some cases, both given options are.

1. Ты ўдыр олыкмарий, а ту/тудо курыкмарий.
2. Ты/Тиде книга шерге мо?
3. Ты/Тиде мыйын тошто йолташем.
4. Ту/Тудо кинде свежа огыл.
5. Тиде олма шопо, а ту/тудо шере.

An overview, with the corresponding interrogative pronouns, see 5.5 – page 147:

|                    | Interrogative  | Singular                               |  | Plural                 |                        |
|--------------------|--|--|--|------------------------|------------------------|
|                    |  | Proximal                               | Distal                                 | Proximal               | Distal                 |
| <b>Modifier</b>    | <i>кудо</i> 'which'  | <i>муде</i> 'this'<br><i>мы</i> 'this' | <i>мудо</i> 'that'<br><i>му</i> 'that' |                        |                        |
| <b>Independent</b> | <i>кудо</i> 'which (one)'<br><i>мо</i> 'what'<br><i>кӧ</i> 'who' | <i>муде</i><br>'this (one)'            | <i>мудо</i><br>'that (one)'            | <i>нине</i><br>'these' | <i>нуно</i><br>'those' |

In addition to these commonly used pronouns, there are the alternative pronouns *cede* 'this' and *cade* 'that'. Their usage is comparatively rare in modern language, with the exception of the dative form *садлан* 'therefore, thus, consequently, so' (see [...] – page [...]), and a number of derived forms and compounds, such as *сандене* 'therefore, thus, consequently, so' (see [...] – page [...]). When *cade* 'that' is used, it is frequently as an anaphora: referring back to something that was previously discussed.

Шарнет уремым, кушто ме иленна? Саде уремыште кок пӧрт гына кодын.

Do you remember the street we lived in? There are only two houses left on that street.

Школышто ик рвезе дене пырля тунемынна. Саде рвезе ынде лӱмлӧ спортсмен.

We went to school with a boy. That boy is now a famous athlete.

### 5.2.2. Inflected forms

When used as modifiers, pronouns – like adjectives and numerals – are not inflected: *муде эл* 'this country' → *муде элыште* 'in this country'. As *мы* 'this' and *му* 'that' are only used as modifiers, they are not inflected, and are morphologically inert.

The inflected forms of the demonstrative pronouns that are used independently are regular, except for the dative forms of *муде* 'this' and *мудо* 'that', where the final vowel is deleted:

| Nominative | Accusative | Genitive | Dative  |
|------------|------------|----------|---------|
| тиде       | тидым      | тидын    | тидлан  |
| тудо       | тудым      | тудын    | тудлан  |
| нине       | ниным      | нинын    | нинылан |
| нуно       | нуным      | нунын    | нунылан |

5.5. Put the given demonstrative pronoun into the appropriate case.

1. Тудо ўдырын йӱкшӧ кӱжгӧ, а (тиде) – вичкыж.
2. Нине спортсмен-влаклан ший медальым пуэныт, а (нуно) – шӧртным.
3. Тиде куштылго сумкам мый нумалам, а (тудо), нелым, тый.
4. Нине турист-влакын тувырышт ужарге, а (нуно) – канде.
5. Тиде туныктышылан ош розам пӧлеклена, а (тудо) – йошкарным.

As regards locational forms – historically derived from these pronominal stems, but perceived as independent words by modern speakers – see below.

When the pronouns *мудо* and *муде* are followed by the postpositions *ден(е)* 'with' (see 6.1.20 – page 170), *деч(ын)* 'from, of' (see 6.1.22 – page 172), and more rarely *дек(е)* 'to' (see 6.1.19 – page 169), the postposition can be attached directly to the stem, with the final vowel of the stem being deleted. Alternatively, the postpositions can follow the genitive form *мудын/мидын* in which case they are written separately:

| Genitive + Postposition | Melded form | Meaning   |
|-------------------------|-------------|-----------|
| тудын дек(е)            | туддек(е)   | to that   |
| тудын ден(е)            | тудден(е)   | with that |
| тудын деч(ын)           | туддеч(ын)  | from that |
| тидын дек(е)            | тиддек(е)   | to this   |
| тидын ден(е)            | тидден(е)   | with this |
| тидын деч(ын)           | тиддеч(ын)  | from this |

### 5.2.3. Derived forms

Numerous adverbs and adjectives are derived from the pronominal stems *мы-* and *ту-*, introduced above. They inherit the proximal or distal character of the pronominal stems. The most important derived proximal and distal forms, with the corresponding question words (where they exist), are:

| Interrogative   | Proximal  | Distal  |
|---|---|---|
| <i>кушто</i> 'where' (inessive)   | <i>мыште</i> 'here'   | <i>тушто</i> 'there'<br>(see also 9.5.86 – page 359)                    |
| <i>куш(ко)</i> '(to) where' (illative)                                  | <i>мыш(ке)</i> '(to) here'  | <i>туш(ко)</i> '(to) there'   |
| <i>кушан</i> 'where' (lative)   | <i>мышан</i> 'here'   | <i>тушан</i> 'there'  |
| <i>кушеч(ын)</i> 'from where'   | <i>мышеч(ын)</i> 'from here'  | <i>тушеч(ын)</i> 'from there'   |
| <i>кушкен</i> 'how far/long'  | -   | <i>тушкен</i> 'till then'   |
| <i>кунам</i> 'when'   | -   | <i>тунам</i> 'then'   |
| <i>кунамлан</i> 'till when'   | -   | <i>тунамлан</i> 'till then'   |
| <i>кунамсек</i> 'since when'  | -   | <i>тунамсек</i> 'since then'  |
| <i>кунамсе</i> 'of what time'   | -   | <i>тунамсе</i> 'of that time'   |
| <i>кусо</i> 'from where, of what place'                                 | <i>мысе</i> 'of this place'   | <i>тусо</i> 'of that place'   |
| <i>кузе</i> 'how'   | <i>мыге</i> 'like this'<br>(see also 9.5.87 – page 359)                 | <i>туге</i> 'like that'<br>(see also 9.5.81 – page 358)                 |
| <i>могай</i> 'what kind of'   | <i>мыгай</i> 'this kind of'   | <i>тугай</i> 'that kind of'   |
| -   | <i>мыгодым</i> 'at this time'   | <i>тугодым</i> 'at that time'   |
| <i>кунар(е)</i> 'how much/many'   | <i>тынар(е)</i> 'this much/many'  | <i>тунар(е)</i> 'that much/many'  |
| <i>мыняр(е)</i> 'how much/many'   |   |   |
| <i>кунарын</i> 'as of how many'   | <i>тынарын</i> 'in this number'   | <i>тунарын</i> 'in that number'   |
| <i>мынярын</i> 'as of how many'   |   |   |
| <i>мынярымше</i> 'which number'   | <i>тынарымше</i> 'this number'  | <i>тунарымше</i> 'that number'  |
| <i>мыняр(ы)лан</i> 'at what time;<br>for what price;<br>by what amount' | <i>тынар(ы)лан</i> 'at this time;<br>for this price;<br>by this amount' | <i>тунар(ы)лан</i> 'at that time;<br>for that price;<br>by that amount' |

In the case of *мыш(ке)* '(to) here', *туш(ко)* '(to) there', *мышак(ын)* 'here', *тушак(ын)* 'there', *мышеч(ын)* 'from here', and *тушеч(ын)* 'from there', the short and long forms are equivalent in meaning. In the case of *тынар(е)* 'this much/many' and *тунар(е)* 'that much/many', the short form is used attributively, while the long form is used independently, cf. the usage of short and long forms of quantifiers (see 4.1.2 – page 108). Especially in poetic language, the *мыгай* and *тугай* are encountered also as *мыгае* and *тугае*.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Йошкар-Олаште <u>кушкен</u> лийыда?  | <u>How long</u> will you be in Yoshkar-Ola?   |
| Икана Пöтыр дене пырля экспедицийышке миенна. <u>Тунамсек</u> эн сай йолташ улына. | Pötyr and I went on an expedition together once. We've been best friends <u>ever since then</u> . |
| Тиде книга <u>кунамсе</u> ? Пеш тоштыла чучеш.                                     | <u>When</u> was this book written? It looks very old.   |
| Вокзал марте <u>тышеч</u> тора мо?   | Is it far to the train station <u>from here</u> ?   |
| Марий йылмым <u>мынярын</u> тунемыда?  | <u>How many</u> of you are there in your Mari class?  |
| Уна-влак кастене куд шагатлан толыт. <u>Тунамлан</u> чылам ямдылен шуктыман.       | The guests are coming in the evening at six. Everything must be done <u>by then</u> .             |
| Унагудышто <u>мынярымше</u> пöлемеш шогалында?                                     | In <u>what number</u> room did you stay in the hotel?   |
| Лотерей дене миллион тенгем модын налында. <u>Тынар</u> окса дене мом ыштеда?      | You won a million rubles in the lottery. What will you do with <u>this much</u> money?            |
| Турист-влак сылне ер деке лектыныт да <u>тушан</u> йöдлан верланеныт.              | The tourists went to the beautiful lake and stayed <u>there</u> for the night.                    |
| Сумкат мотор. <u>Кушто тыгайым</u> налынат?  | Your bag is beautiful. <u>Where</u> did you get <u>one like this</u> ?                            |
| Айда тышеч каена: тыште лишне <u>тынарак йöкан огыл</u> кафем палем.               | Let's go away from here, I know a café nearby that is <u>not as loud</u> .                        |
| Тиде шöр <u>тынарак тамле</u> огыл.  | This soup is <u>not as tasty</u> .  |

#### 5.6. Which of the given options are appropriate in the following sentences?

1. Ял гыч кугорно марте йолын каена, а тышеч/тушеч вара Йошкар-Олашке автобус дене кудалына.
2. Могай мотор тувыр! Мыламат тыгай/тугай кöлеш.
3. Ме кызыт Унчо ялыште улына да тысе/тусо тоштерыш пурен лектына.
4. Ожно марий ешлаште 8–10 йочам ыштеныт. Тынар/Тунар икшывым ончен кушташ куштылго лийын огыл.
5. Тиде пöртым 18-ше курымышто чоҥеныт. Тыште/Тушто шуко лöмлö еҥ илен.
6. Вич ий ончыч тыгай пачер ик миллионым шоген. Мыят тынарлан/тунарлан тудым налынам.
7. Тиде лук гыч телевизорым корандыман. Фен-шуй почеш, тышан/тушан үстелым шындаш кöлеш.
8. Мемнан деке 600 йодмаш пурен: тынарын/тунарын эрла марафонышто куржталаш тöҥалыт.
9. Марий Элыште «Марий чодыра» пöртöс парк уло. Тышке/Тушко шуко турист коштеш.
10. Ончал, кузе марий-влак куштат! Тый тыге/туге моштет мо?

Note the construction *мыняр(e)/кунар(e) ...*, *тынар(e)/тунар(e) ...* 'the ...-er, the ...-er' (the short forms of the pronouns are more typically used in this construction) – see also [...]:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Студент-влак <u>мыняр ~ кунар шуко</u> йодышым пуэныт, Тимын чытышыже <u>тунар</u> пытен. | <u>The more</u> questions the students asked, <u>the more</u> Tim ran out of patience. |
| Пöрт <u>мыняр ~ кунар кугу, тунар шукым</u> коммунал услугылан тöлыман.                   | <u>The larger</u> the house, <u>the more</u> you have to pay for communal services.    |

5.7. Transform the following sentences, following the pattern: *Студент-влак шуко йодышым пуэным. Тимын чытышыже пытен* → *Студент-влак мыняр/кунар шуко йодышым пуэным, Тимын чытышыже тунар пытен.*

1. Шуко лудат. Шуко палет.
2. Чодырашке келгышке пурет. Шуко пум муат.
3. Пелашет дене шуэн вашлият. Чот тудым йораташ тўналат.
4. Еҥлан сайым ыштет. Осал лият.
5. Кўшкő кўзет. Волен возаш лўдыкшő.

Other forms derived from these pronominal stems:

- *тугеже* 'so, thus, then, that means', see 9.5.82 – page 358
- *тыгеже* 'so, like this, in that case, that means'
- *тыгутлаште* 'at this time, at this moment'
- *тымарте* 'till this time'

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Мый шонем, <u>тугеже</u> , мый улам.                     | I think, <u>therefore</u> I am.   |
| Иванов начарын мура. <u>Тыгеже</u> мыят мурен моштем.    | Ivanov sings poorly. Even I can sing <u>like that</u> .                     |
| <u>Тыгодсо</u> марий музыкым колында мо?                 | Have you heard Mari music <u>of this time</u> ?                             |
| Уремыш лекнем ыле, но <u>тыгутлаште</u> виян йўр тўнале. | I wanted to go out, but <u>at this moment</u> a heavy rain started falling. |
| <u>Тымарте</u> парашют дене тўрштен омыл.                | <u>Up to this time</u> , I had not gone skydiving.                          |

Forms derived from *cade* 'this':

- *садлан* 'therefore, and so, thus', see [...] – page [...]
- *санден(е)* 'therefore, and so, thus', see [...] – page [...]
- *садак* 'all the same, makes no difference; after all, nonetheless', see 9.5.71 – page 355
- *садыгай* 'such, that kind of'
- *садыге* 'so, thus'
- *садыгак* 'all the same, anyway, still', see 9.5.72 – page 355

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Кече еда сеҥалтам, лачак <u>садлан</u> сеҥыше улам. (Майкл Джордан)                       | I've failed over and over and over again in my life. <u>And that</u> is why I succeed. (Michael Jordan) |
| Жапна шагал, <u>сандене</u> вашкаш кўлеш.   | We're short on time, <u>so</u> we've got to hurry.  |
| Вашкаш огеш кўл: мемнан деч посна концерт <u>садак</u> огеш тўнал.                        | No need to hurry, the concert won't start without us <u>anyway</u> .                                    |
| Колынат, у смартфоным луктыныт? <u>Садыгайым</u> налаш шонем.                             | Did you hear a new smartphone is being released? I'm thinking of getting <u>one of those</u> .          |
| Кокамын йочаже-влак олашке тунемаш каенят, <u>садыге</u> , тудо ялыште шкетын илаш кодын. | My aunt's children went to town to the university, <u>so</u> she was left on her own in the village.    |
| Йōсō лиеш гынат, <u>садыгак</u> артистлан тунемаш пурем.                                  | Even if it's hard, I'll <u>still</u> start studying to become an actor.                                 |

### 5.3. Reflexive pronoun

#### 5.3.1. Forms

The reflexive pronoun can be marked for person and case, though it – as will be discussed below – is often not. The full paradigm is as follows:

|            | -                | 1Sg                  | 2Sg                      | 3Sg                  | 1Pl                  | 2Pl                  | 3Pl                    |
|------------|------------------|----------------------|--------------------------|----------------------|----------------------|----------------------|------------------------|
| <b>Nom</b> | шке              | шке                  | шке                      | шке ~<br>шкеж        | шке                  | шке                  | шке ~<br>шкешт         |
| <b>Acc</b> | шкем             | шкемым               | шкендым<br>(~ шкендычын) | шкенжым              | шкенам               | шкендам              | шкеныштым              |
| <b>Gen</b> | -                | шкемын               | шкендын<br>(~ шкендычын) | шкенжын              | шкенам               | шкендан              | шкеныштын              |
| <b>Dat</b> | шкан ~<br>шкалан | шкаланем<br>~ шканем | шкаланет<br>~ шканет     | шкаланже<br>~ шканже | шкаланна<br>~ шканна | шкаланда<br>~ шканда | шкаланышт<br>~ шканышт |

Forms not marked for person: There are dative forms *шкалан* and accusative forms *шкем* which are not marked for person. These generally occur in impersonal sentences, but occasionally also in personal sentences

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Шкем</u> кўлеш семын кучен моштыман. | One must know to behave <u>oneself</u> correctly. |
| <u>Шкалан</u> ўшана ш кўлеш.            | One must believe <u>in oneself</u> .              |
| <u>Шкем</u> ончыктем.                   | I'll show <u>myself</u> .                         |

### 5.3.2. Basic usages

The pronoun has a wide range of functions:

a) Non-case marked forms are used adverbially in an emphatic meaning 'oneself' ('myself', 'yourself', etc.). In this function, it is generally simply *шке*, though in the third person (singular or plural), person-marked forms can optionally be used. The form *шкеже* can also be used as an emphatic form in other persons – for the emphatic usage of the possessive suffix third person singular, see 9.1.5 – page 332.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мыланна полшаш огеш кўл: ме <u>шке</u> тидым ыштена. | We don't need help, we'll do it <u>ourselves</u> .                                 |
| Ыштен ода шукто гын, <u>шке</u> титакан лийыда.      | If you don't manage it, you <u>yourself</u> are to blame.                          |
| Эчук, тый мўнгысў пашам <u>шке</u> ыштенат?          | Echuk, did you do your homework <u>yourself</u> ?                                  |
| Кинде шултыш ўстембаке <u>шке</u> ок тол. (Калыкмут) | A slice of bread doesn't find its way onto the table <u>on its own</u> . (Proverb) |
| – Нелеш ида нал, вокзал деке могай автобус кая?      | – Excuse me, which bus goes to the train station?                                  |
| – Каласен ом керт, мый <u>шкеже</u> турист улам.     | – I can't tell you, I'm a tourist <u>myself</u> .                                  |

b) The base form *шке* is used as an adjective 'own' ('my own', 'your own' etc.), in all persons. It is often combined with a noun marked with a possessive suffix. It is often used in contexts where 'own' does not seem natural in the English translation.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Ен ойлан ит ўшане, <u>шке шинчатлан</u> ўшане. (Калыкмут) | Don't believe the words of others, believe your <u>own eyes</u> . (Proverb) |
| Кажне кайыклан <u>шке пыжашыже</u> шерге. (Калыкмут)      | Every bird values its <u>own nest</u> . (Proverb)                           |
| <u>Шке шомакдам</u> мондеда гын, суфлёр тыланда полша.    | If you forget <u>your lines</u> , the prompter will help you.               |
| <u>Шке калыкдан</u> йўлажым сайын паледа?                 | Do you know the customs of <u>your people</u> ?                             |

c) It is used as a reflexive pronoun 'oneself' ('myself', 'yourself', etc.), occurring in all persons. In this function, it can be marked for both case and person. The exact function of the pronoun in individual cases will be discussed below.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ең мутым колышт да <u>шке семенет</u> ыште.<br>(Калыкмут)              | Listen to the words of others, but do <u>it your own way</u> . (Proverb).       |
| Кастене тендам <u>шкенан деке</u> вучена.                              | We expect you <u>at our place</u> in the evening.                               |
| Енлан осалым шонет гын, тудо <u>шканет</u> пörтылеш. (Калыкмут)        | If you think ill of others, it will come right back <u>at you</u> . (Proverb)   |
| <u>Шкендым</u> ушанлан ужмет годым весым орадылан ит шотло. (Калыкмут) | When considering <u>yourself</u> smart, don't consider others stupid. (Proverb) |

### 5.3.3. Usage of the case-inflected forms

Nominative and genitive: Nominative and genitive forms are used in combination with postpositions. As is the case when postpositions are attached to personal pronouns (see 6.0.1 – page 160), some variance occurs here:

|                            |                                |
|----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| Айда <u>шке декына</u> . ~ | Let's go <u>to our place</u> . |
| Айда <u>шкенан дек</u> .   |                                |

In the nominative forms, the person is generally marked by attaching a possessive suffix to the postposition, though in the third person, the possessive suffix can also be attached to the pronoun (*шкеж деке, шкешт деке*). In the genitive, the person is marked on the pronoun alone.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Шке ончылнем</u> нимогай чаракым ом уж.                                      | I see no obstacles <u>in front of myself</u> .                                       |
| <u>Шке ончылнет</u> тиде ийлан могай цельым шынденат?                           | What goals did you set <u>yourself</u> for this year?                                |
| Изи ўдыр <u>шке ончылныжо</u> чыла курчакым шынден да нунын дене модаш тўналын. | The little girl put all the dolls <u>in front of herself</u> and started playing.    |
| Вучыдымын <u>шке ончылнына</u> маскам ужна.                                     | Suddenly we saw a bear <u>in front of us</u> .                                       |
| <u>Шке ончылныда</u> энгерым ужыда гын, чын корно дене каеда.                   | If you see a river <u>in front of yourselves</u> , you're on the right path.         |
| Орол-влак кажне пурышо еным <u>шке ончылнышт</u> шогалтат да тергат.            | The guards make everyone coming in stand <u>in front of them</u> , and inspect them. |
| Ноенам, <u>шке декем</u> мōнгышкō каем.   | I'm tired, I'm going home to <u>my own place</u> .                                   |
| Кодшо кочкышым <u>шке декет</u> нангай.   | Take the leftover food <u>to your place</u> .  |
| Туныктышо тунемшыже-влакым эрла <u>шке декыже</u> ўжын.                         | The teacher invited the students <u>to his/her own place</u> tomorrow.               |
| <u>Шкенан деке</u> йўдым веле миен шуынна.                                      | We only got <u>to our place</u> at night.  |
| <u>Шке декыда</u> мемнам малаш пуртеда мо?                                      | Will you let us spend the night <u>at your place</u> ?                               |
| Уремыште мумо пырысигым Оля ден Юля <u>шке декышт</u> конденыт.                 | Olya and Yuliya took the kitten they found outside <u>to their own place</u> .       |

5.8. Insert a nominative or genitive form of *шке* into the following sentences, as appropriate.

1. ... олмешна йолташ-влакым пашашке лекташ йодынна.
2. Вуйлатышым ме ... кокла гыч ойыренна.
3. Рвезе-влак ... йырышт ончалыч, но нигōм ышт уж.
4. Ме тендан йўладам она пале – те ... семен ыштыза.
5. Мый ... верч ом лўд.
6. ... дечет сай нигōат уке.
7. Кылмеда гын, ... ўмбакада шокшо леведышым пыштыза.
8. Тудо эгоист: ... нергенже веле шона.
9. У ийым Петровмыт ... дене пайремленыт.
10. Кажне агытан ... семенже мура. (Калыкмут)



Genitive forms can also be used in the meaning of '(my, your, etc.) own'. In this function, they are equivalent to the unmarked form *шке*. They are generally combined with nouns marked with matching possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Телефонетым изишлан пуэн кертат?<br><u>Шкемын телефоном</u> пудырген.            | Can you give me your phone for a second? <u>My own phone</u> is broken. |
| <u>Шкендын паспорт номеретым</u> шарнет мо?                                      | Do you remember <u>your passport number</u> ?                           |
| Эчук электрон почтыш пурен ок керт:<br><u>шкенжын шолыпмутшым</u> монден колтен. | Echuk can't log into his e-mails; he forgot <u>his password</u> .       |
| <u>Шкендан шочмо верышкыда</u> чўчкыдын коштыда?                                 | Do you often visit <u>the place you were born</u> ?                     |

5.9. Connect genitive forms of *шке* to the noun *начер* 'apartment' (also marked with a possessive suffix), in all six persons: 'my own apartment', etc.

5.10. Replace the phrase in parentheses with one consisting of *шке* in the genitive, and the following noun marked with an appropriate possessive suffix. Add case suffixes if necessary.

1. Ме (шке туныктышо) пагалена да йбратена.
2. Пошкудына-влак (шке сравоч) йомдареныт.
3. Тый (шке паша) пытаренат гын, мыланна полшаш тол!
4. Вашлиймаште лўмлө сўретче (шке илыш) нерген каласкален.
5. Те (шке тукум) историйжым сайын паледа?

Like the genitive forms of personal pronouns, genitive forms of the reflexive pronouns can be used as nominals meaning 'my own one', 'your own one', etc., and can in this function take plural suffixes and also other case suffixes, see 11.3.3 – page 375.

Accusative and dative: The forms in these cases carry out the classical function of a reflexive pronoun. The choice of case depends on the government of the verb.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Шкендым</u> шке ит мокто, колышт – кузе ег ойла. (Калыкмут) | Don't praise <u>yourself</u> , listen how other people speak. (Proverb) |
| <u>Шкем</u> сенген кертме – эн кугу сенгымаш. (Калыкмут)       | Overcoming <u>oneself</u> is the greatest accomplishment. (Proverb)     |
| Вўд <u>шкаланже</u> корным муэш. (Калыкмут)                    | Water finds a way <u>for itself</u> . (Proverb)                         |

5.11. Enter *шке* in the appropriate form.

1. Ме кызыт пошкудо дене малена: ... пачерыштына ремонт кая.
2. Тый ... кушеч улат, кушто шочынат?
3. Мый шонем, Йыван йолагай, но тудлан ... тидым ит ойло.
4. Тый ... могай ийгот гыч шарнет?
5. Нуно ... эн сай специалистлан шотлат.
6. Шўрым мый рецепт почеш огыл, а ... семянем шолтем.
7. Тошто машинам йолташлан пуэнна, а ... кызыт ум кычалына.
8. Те шочмо кечыдам ... дене эртареда але рестораныште?
9. Кажне саскан ... жапше. (Калыкмут)
10. Мый тиде заданийым ... ыштенам, мылам нигө полшен огыл.

### 5.3.4. Derived forms

Note the following frequently used forms derived from *шке*, and their usage.

шкак ~ шкеак 'on one's (my/your/...) own':

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мемнам ида ужате: тышеч корным <u>шкеак</u> муына.         | Don't see us off, we'll find the way from here <u>on our own</u> . |
| Петровым паша гыч нигö поктен огыл: тудо <u>шкак</u> каен. | Nobody fired Petrov from his job; he left <u>on his own</u> .      |

шкeат ~ шкeат 'oneself (myself/yourself/...):

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Йолташна-влак Карелийышке канаш каенят. Мый <u>шкеат</u> нунын дене пырля кайынем ыле, но паша гыч колтен огытыл. | Our friends went on a holiday to Karelia. I wanted to join them <u>too</u> , but they didn't let me off work. |
| Теат кусарыше улыда, тугеже, <u>шкат</u> паледа, кусарыме годым могай нелылык-влак лектыт.                        | You're a translator too, so you know <u>yourself</u> what problems occur in translation.                      |

шкежак 'on one's (his/her...) own': this form is primarily used in the third person singular.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Тиде марий почеламутым поэт <u>шкежак</u> руш йылмыш кусарен. | The poet translated this Mari poem into Russian <u>himself</u> .                |
| 1-ше сентябрьште президент <u>шкежак</u> урокым эртарен.      | On September 1 <sup>st</sup> , the president conducted a class <u>himself</u> . |

шкет 'alone, by oneself; only, just; solitary, lone; single; individual, personal, private, own': this word can be used as an adjective or an adverb.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Пасу покшелне <u>шкет</u> пушенге шога. | A <u>single</u> tree stands in the middle of the field.                  |
| Корнышто <u>шкет</u> ўдырамаш ошкылеш.  | A <u>solitary</u> woman is walking down the road.                        |
| Кочам колымеке, ковам <u>шкет</u> ила.  | Since my grandfather died, my grandmother has been living <u>alone</u> . |
| Пырыс-влак <u>шкет</u> кошташ йöратат.  | Cats like to wander <u>on their own</u> .                                |

As regards the usage of this word as a particle, see 9.5.101 – page 363.

шкетын 'alone, by oneself; only, just': This form is only used adverbially, and is equivalent to шкет in its adverbial functions.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мом мöнгыштö <u>шкетын</u> шинчет? Айда киношко каена! | What are you sitting at home <u>alone</u> for? Let's go to the movies! |
| <u>Шкетын</u> тынар пашам ыштен ом шукто.              | I can't manage this much work <u>on my own</u> .                       |

As regards the usage of this word as a particle, see 9.5.101 – page 363.

шкетлан 'on one's own, alone': This form can take possessive suffixes in all persons (шкетланем, шкетланет, шкетланже, шкетланна, шкетланда, шкетланышт).

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Шкетлан</u> У ийым пайремлан весела огыл. | Seeing the New Year in <u>on one's own</u> is no fun. |
| Мылам <u>шкетланем</u> тыште йокрок.         | It's boring to be here <u>on my own</u> .             |

#### 5.4. Reciprocal pronoun

Note the alternative arrangements of case and possessive suffixes in the first and second (but not third) person plural:

|                   | -             | 1PI                                  | 2PI                                  | 3PI             |
|-------------------|---------------|--------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|-----------------|
| <b>Nominative</b> | икте-весе     | икте-весеына                         | икте-весеыда                         | икте-весеышт    |
| <b>Genitive</b>   | икте-весын    | икте-весеынан                        | икте-весеыдан                        | икте-весеыштын  |
| <b>Dative</b>     | икте-весеылан | икте-весеыналан ~<br>икте-весеыланна | икте-весеыдалан ~<br>икте-весеыланда | икте-весеыштлан |
| <b>Accusative</b> | икте-весым    | икте-весеынам                        | икте-весеыдам                        | икте-весеыштым  |

Nominative forms occur with postpositions; genitive forms are used in the meaning 'one another's, each other's'. Dative and accusative forms carry out the classical function of a reciprocal pronoun. The choice of case depends on the government of the verb.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Акам дене <u>икте-весе воктен</u> илена.                                     | My big sister and I live <u>next door to one another</u> .                 |
| Ойлат, пуйто йыгыр-влак <u>икте-весеышт</u> деч <u>посна</u> илен огыт керт. | They say that twins cannot live <u>without one another</u> .               |
| Нуно <u>икте-весын</u> <u>илышышт</u> нерген чылам паленыт.                  | They knew everything about <u>each other's lives</u> .                     |
| Тыланда <u>икте-весеыдан</u> <u>ойлымым</u> колышташ тунемман.               | You must learn to listen to <u>one another's words</u> .                   |
| Пошкудем дене <u>икте-весеылан</u> эре полшен шогена.                        | My neighbor and I always help <u>one another</u> .                         |
| Тошто йолташем дене <u>икте-весеыланна</u> эн кугу секретым ушанен кертына.  | My old friend and I can trust <u>one another</u> with our biggest secrets. |
| Ромео ден Джульетта <u>икте-весым</u> чот йоратеныт.                         | Romeo and Juliet loved <u>one another</u> dearly.                          |
| Чодыраште <u>удыр-влак</u> <u>икте-весеыштым</u> йомдареныт.                 | The girls lost <u>each other</u> in the forest.                            |

#### 5.12. Insert an appropriate form of *икте-весе*.

1. Ик финн йолташем дене пайрем годым ... эре открыткым колтена.
2. Аня дене ... мыняр ий паледа?
3. ... нерген мом шонеда?
4. У палымем дене ... телефон номерым йомдаренна.
5. Миша ден Маша икымше шинчаончалтыш гыч ... келшенит.
6. Шўжарем дене ... деке чўчкыдын унала коштына.
7. Пиет ден пырысет ... кузе чытат?
8. Удыр ден рвезе ... шинчашке ончат.
9. Шахматист-влак ... ваштареш шинчыныт.
10. Олян марийже кызыт тораште, но нуно ... кажне кечын йынгыртат.

#### 5.13. Choose a form of *ике*, or *икте-весе*, as appropriate.

1. Ме шольым дене икте-весеыланна/шкаланна мўнгышкў у компьютерым налынна.
2. Урок деч вара ме Валя дене икте-весеынам/шкенам школ ончылно вучена.
3. Икте-весеыдан/шкендан пашаште тыланда кў полша?
4. 8-ше мартыште йолташ удыр-влак икте-весеыштлан/шкаланышт изирак пўлекым кучыктеныт.
5. Тый курыкмари улат, а пелашет олыкмарий. Те икте-весеыдам/шкендам сайын умыледа?

### 5.5. Interrogative pronouns and adverbs

Interrogative pronouns are used to ask questions and represent the thing that we do not know. Interrogative adverbs, in Mari derived from the stems of interrogative pronouns, are used to ask

questions about adverbial modifications (pertaining to a place or time). Together, they form the class of question words, which will be handled jointly in this section.

|             |  |
|-------------|--|
| кӧ          | who  |
| мо          | what   |
| могай       | what, what kind of                           |
| мыняр(е)    | how many, how much                           |
| кунар(е)    | how many, how much                           |
| мочол(о)    | (oh) how many, (oh) how much                 |
| кудо        | which, which one                             |
| кушто       | where (inessive)                             |
| куш(ко)     | (to) where (illative)                        |
| кушан       | where (lative)                               |
| кушеч(ын)   | from where                                   |
| кушкен      | for how long; how far                        |
| кунам       | when   |
| кунамлан    | till when                                    |
| кунамсек    | since when                                   |
| кунамсе     | of what time                                 |
| кусо        | from where, of what place                    |
| кузе        | how  |
| молан       | why  |
| кунарын     | in a group of how many                       |
| мынярын     | in a group of how many                       |
| мынярымше   | which one, which number                      |
| мыняр(ы)лан | at what time; for what price; by what amount |

Especially in poetic language, *могай* is often realized as *могае*.

A number of these pronouns are also used as particles with secondary meanings: *мо* (see 9.5.46 – page 349), *могай* (see 9.5.48 – page 350), *кунам* (see 9.5.39 – page 348), *кузе* (see 9.5.38 – page 347).

Note that unlike in English, question words in Mari generally occur in the position taken by their counterpart in a declarative sentence – they are not moved to the beginning of the sentence like their English counterparts.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Те <u>кө</u> улыда?   | <u>Who</u> are you?  |
| Тиде <u>мо</u> тыгай?                                       | <u>What</u> is this?   |
| Таче <u>могай</u> кече?                                     | <u>Which</u> day is it today?  |
| Те <u>мыняр</u> ияш улыда?                                  | <u>How</u> old are you?  |
| Тыlanda <u>кунар</u> окса күлеш?                            | <u>How much</u> money do you need?   |
| <u>Мочоло</u> пеледышым тылат пөлекленыт!                   | <u>Oh how many</u> flowers you got!  |
| Тый <u>кудо</u> пörтыштö илет?                              | <u>Which</u> house do you live in?   |
| Ават <u>кушто</u> пашам ышта?                               | <u>Where</u> does your mother work?  |
| Таче кастене <u>кушко</u> каеда?                            | <u>Where</u> are you going this evening?   |
| <u>Кушан</u> шинчына?                                       | <u>Where</u> shall we sit?   |
| Нине тунемше-влак <u>кушеч</u> улыт?                        | <u>Where</u> are these students <u>from</u> ?                                    |
| Ялышке <u>кушке</u> каеда?                                  | <u>For how long</u> are you going to the village?                                |
| Олашке <u>кунам</u> пörтылыда?                              | <u>When</u> are you going back to the city?                                      |
| Эрла тендам <u>кунамлан</u> вучаш?                          | <u>When</u> should (I) expect you tomorrow?                                      |
| Марий йылмым <u>кунамсе</u> к тунемыда?                     | <u>Since when</u> have you been studying Mari?                                   |
| Тиде шör <u>кунамсе</u> ? Шопен огыл?                       | <u>When's</u> this milk <u>from</u> ? It hasn't gone bad?                        |
| Те <u>кусо</u> улыда? Морко район гыч огыл?                 | Where are you <u>from</u> ? Not from the Morko (Russian <i>Морки</i> ) District? |
| <u>Кузе</u> шонеда, марий йылме неле мо?                    | <u>What</u> (lit. <u>how</u> ) do you think, is Mari hard?                       |
| Те <u>молан</u> йылмызе пашам ойыренда?                     | <u>Why</u> did you choose to become a linguist?                                  |
| Тендан университет гыч конференцийышке <u>кунарын</u> каят? | <u>How many of you</u> are going to the conference from your university?         |
| Ешыштыда <u>мынярын</u> улыда?                              | <u>How many</u> of you are there in your family?                                 |
| Тый ешыште <u>мынярымше</u> йоча улат?                      | <u>What number</u> child are you in your family?                                 |
| Спектакль <u>мынярылан</u> тўңалеш?                         | <u>What day</u> does the play start?   |

5.14. Replace the underlined word or phrase with an appropriate question word.

1. Ме вокзал ончылно шогена.
2. Турист-влак Исландий гыч улыт.
3. Эр годсек тендам вучем.
4. Поезд 7 шагатлан тарвана.
5. Шинчат канде тўсан.

### 5.5.1. Notes on individual question words

Asking for occupations: Note that when asking what somebody is by profession, the pronoun *кө* 'who' is used rather than *мо* 'what'.

Case inflection of pronouns: The interrogative pronouns given above can be inflected for case – in the case of *мыняр(e)* 'how many, how much' and *кунар(e)* 'how many, how much' only the long forms, as the short forms are only used attributively and are not inflected in this position.

| Nominative | Accusative | Genitive | Dative      |
|------------|------------|----------|-------------|
| кө         | көм        | көн      | көлан       |
| мо         | мом        | мон      | молан       |
| могай      | могайым    | могайын  | могайлан    |
| мыняр(e)   | мынярым    | мынярын  | мыняр(ы)лан |
| кунар(e)   | кунарым    | кунарын  | кунар(ы)лан |
| кудо       | кудым      | кудын    | кудылан     |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Көн</u> телефонжо йынгыртата?                        | <u>Whose</u> telephone is ringing?                                      |
| <u>Мом</u> йоднет?                                      | <u>What</u> do you want to ask?   |
| Киндым <u>могайым</u> налаш: ошым але шемым?            | <u>What kind of</u> bread should (I) get: white or brown?               |
| – Пөлекым лу еглан налаш күлеш.<br>– <u>Мынярылан</u> ? | – (You) need to get presents for ten people.<br>– <u>For how many</u> ? |
| Пашатлан <u>кунарым</u> тўлат?                          | <u>How much</u> do they pay you for your work?                          |
| Тортым <u>кудым</u> ойырет: тидым але тудым?            | <u>Which</u> cake will you pick: this one or that one?                  |

**Possessive suffixes on *kö* ‘who’ and *mo* ‘what’:** Possessive suffixes can be attached to these pronouns. Note the optional usage of the irregular possessive suffix *-ч* in the second person singular, see 2.2.1.1 – page 61 – as regards the usage of this suffix in connection with kinship terms.

|            | кө   | мо         |
|------------|------|------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | көэм | моэм       |
| <b>2Sg</b> | көэт | моэт (моч) |
| <b>3Sg</b> | көжө | можо       |
| <b>1Pl</b> | көна | мона       |
| <b>2Pl</b> | көда | мода       |
| <b>3Pl</b> | көшт | мошт       |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Нуно группышто индешын улыт, а экзаменым таче кандашын возеныт. <u>Көшт</u> толын огыл? | There are nine of them in the group, and eight of them wrote an exam today. <u>Which of them</u> didn't come? |
| Те Озангышке чўчкыдын коштыда. Туштыжо <u>көда</u> ила?                                 | You go to Kazan a lot. <u>Who do you know</u> there? (Lit. <u>Your who</u> lives there?)                      |
| Вуй корштымо деч <u>моэт</u> уло?   | <u>What</u> have you got for headache?  |
| Пакчаште тудын <u>можо</u> кушкеш?  | <u>What</u> does s/he have growing in the yard?   |

5.15. Attach the indicated possessive suffix to the interrogative pronoun.

- Олаштыда турист-влаккан ончалаш мо (2Pl) уло?
- Уна-влакым сийлаш мо (1Pl) уло?
- Шочмо ялыштыже Йыванын кө (3Sg) кодын?
- Пошкудо-влакын кухньышто мо (3Pl) йўла?
- Сайын мурышо кө (1Pl) уло?

**Short and long Forms – *мыняр(e)* ‘how many, how much’ and *кунар(e)* ‘how many, how much’:** the usage of the short and long forms here corresponds to the usage of short and long forms of numerals (see 4.1.2 – page 108). The short form is usually used before a noun as an attribute, the long form usually stands on its own and is then subject to nominal inflection.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Фейсбукушто <u>мыняр</u> йолташет уло?           | <u>How many friends</u> do you have on Facebook?                               |
| Яра жапна <u>мыняре</u> уло?                     | <u>How much</u> free time do we have? (lit. <u>How much</u> is our free time?) |
| Университетыште <u>кунар</u> ий тунемашет кодын? | <u>How many years</u> of studying at university do you have left?              |
| Тиде компьютерын акше <u>кунаре</u> ?            | <u>What's</u> the price of this computer?                                      |

5.16. Is the short or long form appropriate in the given sentences?

- Кунар/кунаре еным сўаныш ўжыда?
- Автобусышто яра вер эше мыняр/мыняре уло?
- Марий йылмым мыняр/мыняре процентлан умыледа?

4. Мыняр/мыняре шагатлан кынылыда?
5. Тудын пашадарже кунар/кунаре?

Long and short forms of *куш(ко)* '(to) where', *кушеч(ын)* 'from where': in these cases, the short and long forms are equivalent.

### 5.5.2. Question words in clausal subordination

Numerous question words – most prominently *кудо* 'which' – can also serve as relative pronouns. This will be discussed in detail in [...] – page [...].

### 5.6. Negative pronouns and adverbs

Negative pronouns and adverbs are formed from interrogative pronouns with the prefix *ни-* [ni-] (exception: *иктам* 'nobody, not one'). The pronouns can be inflected for case – note however that in the case of *иктам*, which is composed of the numeral *икте* 'one' and the clitic *-ам* (see 9.1.1 – page 328) the clitic follows the case suffix, e.g., *иктынам* 'of nobody (genitive)'.

| Mari          |             | Translation           |                                   |
|---------------|-------------|-----------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Interrogative | Negative    | Interrogative         | Negative                          |
| кӧ            | нигӧ        | who                   | nobody, no one                    |
| мо            | нимо        | what                  | nothing                           |
| могай         | нимогай     | what, what kind of    | no kind of                        |
| мыняр(е)      | нимыняр(е)  | how many, how much    | no, none, not at all, none at all |
| кунар(е)      | нигунар(е)  | how many, how much    | no, none, not at all, none at all |
| кудо          | нигудо      | which, which one      | neither of them                   |
| кузе          | нигузе      | how                   | in no way, by no means            |
| кунам         | нигунам     | when                  | never                             |
| куш(ко)       | нигуш(ко)   | where (inessive)      | nowhere, anywhere                 |
| кушто         | нигушто     | (to) where (illative) | nowhere, anywhere                 |
| кушан         | нигушан     | where (lative)        | nowhere, anywhere                 |
| кушеч(ын)     | нигушеч(ын) | from where            | from nowhere                      |
| молан         | нимолан     | why                   | for no reason                     |
| (икте)        | иктат       | (one)                 | nobody, not one                   |

Regarding the shift  $\kappa \rightarrow \zeta$ , (*кӧ* → *нигӧ*, etc.), see 1.5.7 – page 34. Note that when the clitic *-ам* (see 9.1.1 – page 328) is attached to *нимо* 'nothing', the resulting form is usually *нимам*, though the regular form *нимоам* can be encountered as well.

Multiple negation occurs in combination with negative pronouns and adverbs: verbal forms are negated as well in the relevant clauses.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Тиде темым <u>нигӧ ок умыло</u> .                   | <u>Nobody understands</u> this topic.                        |
| Антарктидыште <u>нигунам дийын онал</u> .           | We've <u>never been</u> to Antarctica.                       |
| Тиде пашам <u>нигузе пытарен ом керт</u> .          | I <u>can't finish</u> this work <u>in any way</u> .          |
| Тыланда <u>нимогай эм огеш кӱл</u> : те таза улыда. | You <u>don't need any kind of medicine</u> , you're healthy. |
| – Шинчалыкем <u>нигушто ом му</u> .                 | – I <u>can't find</u> my glasses <u>anywhere</u> .           |
| – Сангашкет ончал!                                  | – Look at your forehead.                                     |
| Японла мемнан коклаште <u>иктат ок кутыро</u> .     | <u>None of us speaks</u> Japanese.                           |

5.17. Answer using a negative pronoun or adverb, following the pattern: *Кӧ толын?* → *Нигӧ толын огыл*.

1. Кенжежым кушто каненда?
2. Кӧм вучеда?

3. Могай вином утларак йӱратет?
4. Мыняр йонгылышым ыштенам?
5. Мо нерген шонеда?
6. Кудо сумка тылат утларак келша?
7. Шке ўмылем деч кушан шылаш?
8. Ерыште шергашым кузе муаш?
9. Миллион тенгем кушеч налаш?
10. Кунам ме сандалыкыш чонгештена?

### 5.7. Indefinite pronouns and adverbs

Indefinite pronouns and adverbs can be formed in several ways from interrogative pronouns and adverbs.

#### 5.7.1. *кеч-, керек-* ‘-ever’

One group of indefinite forms is formed by means of the prefixes *кеч-* and *керек-*. These forms are used to imply the speaker's indifference and are similar to English forms using the suffix ‘-ever’: ‘whoever’, ‘whatever’, ‘whenever’, etc.

| Mari          |                                   | Translation              |  |
|---------------|-----------------------------------|--------------------------|--|
| Interrogative | Indefinite                        | Interrogative            | Indefinite                             |
| кӱ            | кеч-кӱ,<br>керек-кӱ               | who                      | whoever, anyone                        |
| мо            | кеч-мо,<br>керек-мо               | what                     | whatever, anything                     |
| могай         | кеч-могай,<br>керек-могай         | what, what kind of       | of whatever sort,<br>of whatever kind  |
| мыняр(е)      | кеч-мыняр(е),<br>керек-мыняр(е)   | how many, how much       | however many,<br>however much          |
| кунар(е)      | кеч-кунар(е),<br>керек-кунар(е)   | how many, how much       | however many,<br>however much          |
| кудо          | кеч-кудо,<br>керек-кудо           | which, which one         | whichever                              |
| кузе          | кеч-кузе,<br>керек-кузе           | how                      | however, any way                       |
| кунам         | кеч-кунам,<br>керек-кунам         | when                     | whenever, anytime                      |
| куш(ко)       | кеч-куш(ко),<br>керек-куш(ко)     | where (inessive)         | wherever,<br>no matter where           |
| кушто         | кеч-кушто,<br>керек-кушто         | (to) where<br>(illative) | wherever,<br>no matter where           |
| кушан         | кеч-кушан,<br>керек-кушан         | where (lative)           | wherever,<br>no matter where           |
| кушеч(ын)     | кеч-кушеч(ын),<br>керек-кушеч(ын) | from where               | from wherever, no<br>matter from where |
| молан         | кеч-молан,<br>керек-молан         | why                      | for whatever reason                    |



|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ольош пеш виан: <u>кеч-кӧм</u> сӱген кертеш.   | Olyosh is quite strong; he can beat <u>anyone</u> .  |
| Пырым <u>кеч-мыняр</u> пукшо, садак чодыраш ончен урмыжеш. (Калыкмут)                  | Feed a wolf <u>as much as you like</u> , he will still howl when looking into the woods. (Proverb) |
| Аня интернет-газетлан статья-влакым воза. Тиде пашам <u>кереке-кушеч</u> ыштен кертеш. | Anya writes articles for a web journal. She can do this work <u>from anywhere</u> .                |
| Володялан <u>кереке-могай</u> неле пашам ўшанаш лиеш.                                  | You can trust Volodya with <u>any kind of</u> hard work.   |

5.18. Enter an appropriate pronoun/adverb with *кеч-/кереке-*.

1. Йыван деч ... йодын кертыда: тудо чылам пала, чыла йодышлан вашешта.
2. Йолташна – пеш тале пародист: ... модын ончыктен кертеш, поснак политик-влакым онгайын ончыкта.
3. Тудо весела, кутырышан айдеме – ... у йолташым муэш. Палымыже-влак Австралийыштат, Аляскыштат улыт.
4. Ме тендам эре вучена: ... толза.
5. Шўжарем шерым чот йӱрата: кампетым ... кочкын кертеш.

### 5.7.2. *ала-* ‘some-’

A second group of indefinite forms is formed by connecting the prefix *ала-* to an interrogative form. These forms are generally used in reference to concepts that are assumed to be definite, but that are not known to the speaker. English forms with ‘some-’ often serve as good counterparts.

| Mari          |               | Translation           |                 |
|---------------|---------------|-----------------------|-----------------|
| Interrogative | Indefinite    | Interrogative         | Indefinite      |
| кӧ            | ала-кӧ        | who                   | someone         |
| мо            | ала-мо        | what                  | something       |
| могай         | ала-могай     | what, what kind of    | some kind of    |
| мыняр(е)      | ала-мыняр(е)  | how many, how much    | some number     |
| кунар(е)      | ала-кунар(е)  | how many, how much    | some number     |
| кудо          | ала-кудо      | which, which one      | which (of them) |
| кузе          | ала-кузе      | how                   | somehow         |
| кунам         | ала-кунам     | when                  | sometime        |
| куш(ко)       | ала-куш(ко)   | where (inessive)      | somewhere       |
| кушто         | ала-кушто     | (to) where (illative) | somewhere       |
| кушан         | ала-кушан     | where (lative)        | somewhere       |
| кушеч(ын)     | ала-кушеч(ын) | from where            | from somewhere  |
| молан         | ала-молан     | why                   | for some reason |

The pronoun *ала-мо* ‘something’ should not be confused with the particle *ала мо* ‘maybe, probably’, written without a hyphen, see 9.5.5 – page 339.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Турист-влак англичанла <u>ала-мом</u> йодыныт, но мый нуным умылен омыл.       | The tourists asked <u>something</u> in English, but I didn’t understand.             |
| Тыланда <u>ала-могай</u> ўдыр йынгыртен, но лўмжым каласен огыл.               | <u>Some</u> girl called you, but she didn’t say her name.                            |
| <u>Ала-кушто</u> Угарман кундемыште археолог-влак тошто марий шўгарлам муыныт. | <u>Somewhere</u> in the Nizhny Novgorod Oblast, archeologists found old Mari graves. |
| Таче <u>ала-молан</u> начар маленам.   | I slept poorly last night <u>for some reason</u> .                                   |

5.19. Replace the underlined word or phrase with a pronoun/adverb with *ала-*.

1. Кызыт ме Архангельскышке Ош тенгыз деке кудалына.
2. Пелйүдым омсашке почтальон тўкалтен.
3. 40 ий ончыч Йошкар-Оласе Сомбатхей район олмышто куп лийын.
4. Талантан йоча-влаклан окса дене полшаш кўлеш.
5. Мемнан курсышто лу ег финн йылмым тунемеш, шымыт – эстоным да ныл студент венгр йылмыш коштеш.

### 5.7.3. иктаж- 'any-'

Another group of indefinite forms is formed by connecting the prefix *иктаж-* to an interrogative form. They are generally used in reference to concepts that are truly indefinite, that might or might not exist. English forms with 'any-' often serve as good counterparts.

| Mari          |                 | Translation           |                |
|---------------|-----------------|-----------------------|----------------|
| Interrogative | Indefinite      | Interrogative         | Indefinite     |
| кō            | иктаж-кō        | who                   | anyone         |
| мо            | иктаж-мо        | what                  | anything       |
| могай         | иктаж-могай     | what, what kind of    | any kind of    |
| мыняр(е)      | иктаж-мыняр(е)  | how many, how much    | any number     |
| кунар(е)      | иктаж-кунар(е)  | how many, how much    | any number     |
| кудо          | иктаж-кудо      | which, which one      | one (of), any  |
| кузе          | иктаж-кузе      | how                   | anyhow         |
| кунам         | иктаж-кунам     | when                  | anytime        |
| куш(ко)       | иктаж-куш(ко)   | where (inessive)      | anywhere       |
| кушто         | иктаж-кушто     | (to) where (illative) | anywhere       |
| кушан         | иктаж-кушан     | where (lative)        | anywhere       |
| кушеч(ын)     | иктаж-кушеч(ын) | from where            | from anywhere  |
| молан         | иктаж-молан     | why                   | for any reason |

Кузе шонет, айдеме иктаж-кунам  
Марсышке чонгешта?

What do you think, will people fly to Mars  
some day?

Мыланна иктаж-кушто марла-финнла  
мутерым муаш кўлеш.

We need to find a Mari-Finnish dictionary  
somewhere.

Заданий-влак неле улыт, но нуным иктаж-кузе ыштыман.

The exercises are difficult, but they have to be  
done somehow.

Корно тўрыштō ик шагат шогенна, но,  
иктаж-кудо машинаже садак шогалеш  
манын, ўшаненна.

We stood at the side of the road for an hour,  
trusting that some car would stop.

5.20. Replace the underlined word or phrase with a pronoun/adverb with *иктаж-*.

1. Уна-влак толыт гын, чайлан тортым налаш кўлеш.
2. Кум-ныл кече гыч шокшо лийшаш.
3. Йўдым палыдыме ег толеш гын, омсам ида поч.
4. Пашаштем кугу йонгылышым ужыда гын, каласыза.
5. Начар игечылан кōра толын ода керт гын, йынгыртыза.

5.21. Choose the appropriate indefinite form.

1. Васлий – фотосўретче: ала-кушко/керек-кушко фотоаппарат дене коштеш.
2. Пырысна иктаж-молан/ала-молан шōрым ок йōрате.
3. Кенжежым ме иктаж-кушто/кеч-кушто Европышто канаш шонена, но элым але ойырен онал.
4. Кеч-мыняр/иктаж-мыняр окса билететлан огеш сите гын, мый пуэн кертам.
5. Тудо пеш уста скульптор: кў гыч керек-мом/ала-мом ыштен кертеш.

6. Киношто ала-могай/иктаж-могай финн фильмым ончыктат. Айда каена!
7. Нине марий серызе-влак кокла гыч керек-кӱм/иктаж-кӱм паледа мо?
8. Иктаж-кушеч/ала-кушеч мемнан деке кок попугай чонгештен толын.
9. Йываным иктаж-кузе/кеч-кузе йодса, тудо садак тыланда огеш полшо.
10. Ала-кунам/керек-кунам ожно тыште одо-влак иленят.

#### 5.7.4. (-)гынат 'some-'

The fourth group of indefinite forms is formed by connecting the suffix *-гынат* (realized with the hyphen) to an interrogative form. In contrast to other indefinite forms, these imply some sort of inevitability.

| Mari          |                 | Translation           |                 |
|---------------|-----------------|-----------------------|-----------------|
| Interrogative | Indefinite      | Interrogative         | Indefinite      |
| кӱ            | кӱ-гынат        | who                   | someone         |
| мо            | мо-гынат        | what                  | something       |
| могай         | могай-гынат     | what, what kind of    | of some sort    |
| мыняр(е)      | мыняр(е)-гынат  | how many, how much    | some number of  |
| кунар(е)      | кунар(е)-гынат  | which, which one      | some number of  |
| кудо          | кудо-гынат      | who                   | whichever (one) |
| кузе          | кузе-гынат      | how                   | in some manner  |
| кунам         | кунам-гынат     | when                  | some day        |
| куш(ко)       | куш(ко)-гынат   | where (inessive)      | (to) somewhere  |
| кушто         | кушто-гынат     | (to) where (illative) | somewhere       |
| кушан         | кушан-гынат     | where (lative)        | somewhere       |
| кушеч(ын)     | кушеч(ын)-гынат | from where            | from somewhere  |
| молан         | молан-гынат     | why                   | for some reason |

Могай-гынат ситуацийште ала-мом ум тунемаш лиеш.

One can learn something new in any kind of situation.

Вич ег гыч вашлиймашышке кӱ-гынат садак толеш.

Of the five people, someone will come to the meeting.

Шинчалыкым кузе-гынат муаш кӱлеш: туддеч посна нимат ом уж.

I need to find my glasses somehow; I can't see anything without them.

Кунам-гынат чылан шонгемына.

We all get old at some point.

Note that when a pronoun to which it is attached is followed by a postposition, the element *гынат* comes after the postposition, and is not written with a hyphen: *кӱ дене гынат* 'with someone', etc.

Йӱратыме кокана мемнам эре мо дене гынат сийлаш тырша.

Our dear aunt always tries to treat us with something.

Тиде уверым тудо кӱ деч гынат пален налеш.

S/he will hear this news from someone.

5.22. Replace the underlined word or phrase with a pronoun/adverb with (-)гынат.

1. Понго кызыт пешыжак уке, но пел ведрам погенам.
2. Эльбрусыш эркын садак кӱзена.
3. Фестивальыште калык шуко лиеш – у ег дене палыме лийына.
4. ИФУСКО деч вара тунемше-влак чеверласат: «Финн-угор тӱня изи, иктаж-могай конференцийыште вашлийына».
5. Экзаменлан ямдылалтын омыл, но шке шонымашым ойлаш кӱлеш.

### 5.7.5. *ук(me)* ‘one’, *век(e)* ‘other’

In addition to the derived indefinite pronouns discussed above, the numeral *ук* ~ *укме* ‘one’ (see 4.1 – page 106, and about its usage as a particle, see 9.5.28 – page 344) can also be used as an indefinite pronoun, with *ук* being used attributively, and *укме* independently (see 4.1.2 – page 108). In this function, it can be contrasted with *век(e)* ‘other’ – here too, the short form is used attributively and the long form independently

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Ик сѡснаже весе деч</u> пел центнерлан<br>нелырак.                  | <u>One of the pigs</u> is heavier <u>than the other</u> by<br>half a centner.                                 |
| Илен улмаш <u>ик мераң.</u>  | Once upon a time there was <u>a</u> rabbit.   |
| <u>Икте иктым</u> ойла, <u>весе</u> – <u>весым.</u> Кѡлан<br>ўшанаһ?   | <u>One person</u> says <u>one thing</u> , <u>and the next</u> says<br><u>something else</u> . Who to believe? |
| <u>Иктыже</u> нимат ок ыште, <u>весиже</u> тудлан<br>полша. (Калыкмут) | <u>One of them</u> does nothing, <u>and the other</u><br>helps. (Proverb)                                     |

Note the usage of the possessive suffix third person singular to denote that the marked word is part of a larger group, see [...] – page [...].

### 5.7.6. Other indefinite pronouns

The following words are also described as pronouns in some grammatical descriptions:

- *икмыняр(e)* ‘some, a few, several’
- *иктаж(e)* ‘some, somebody, someone, something’
- *иктажышт* ‘one of them’
- *кажне* ‘each, every’ – see 6.1.23 – page 174
- *чумыр* ‘all, entire, the whole’
- *чыла* ‘all, everyone’
- *чылажат* ‘in total, all in all, all together’
- *чылаже* ‘in total, all in all, all together’
- *чылажлан* ‘for everything’
- *чылан* ‘all, everyone (collective form)’ – see 4.5 – page 117
- *чыланже* ‘in all, all together’
- *чылашт* ‘all of them’
- *южгунам* ‘occasionally, at times, from time to time’
- *южгунамже* ‘only sometimes’
- *южикте* ‘some (of them)’
- *южиктыже* ‘one of them’
- *южиктыжышт* ‘some of them’
- *южиктышт* ‘some of them’
- *южо* ‘some’ – see 4.4 – page 116
- *южыжо* ‘some (of them)’
- *южышт* ‘some (of them)’

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Экзамен <u>икмыняр</u> минут гыч тўғалеш.                               | The exam starts in <u>a few</u> minutes.                                |
| <u>Иктаж</u> марий калыкмутым паледа мо?                                | Do you know <u>any</u> Mari proverbs?                                   |
| <u>Кажне</u> саскан шке жапше. (Калыкмут)                               | <u>Every</u> fruit has its own time. (Proverb)                          |
| Мўй погыстарышыже мўкш веле, кочшыжо <u>чылан</u> . (Калыкмут)          | Only bees collect honey, but <u>everybody</u> eats it. (Proverb)        |
| Жап эртыме семын <u>чыла</u> начар мондалтеш.                           | As time goes by, <u>all</u> bad things are forgotten.                   |
| Пайремышке <u>чумыр</u> ял погынен.                                     | <u>The whole village</u> was at the party.                              |
| <u>Южгунам</u> йолташ-влак дене пырля чодырашке шўкшакым погаш лектына. | <u>Sometimes</u> my friends and I go into the forest to collect litter. |
| <u>Южо</u> ег мемнам огеш умыло.  | <u>Some</u> people don't understand us.                                 |
| <u>Южиктыже</u> мемнан деке шўкшакым погаш ушна.                        | <u>Some of them</u> are joining us to collect litter.                   |

5.23. Which pronoun is appropriate in the following sentences?

1. Южо/южикте ялыште газ уке.
2. Марий Элыште суас йылмым икмыняр/чыла школышто гына туныктат.
3. Южо/Кажне ача-авалан йочаже шерге, южо/кажне йочалан – ача-ава. (Калыкмут)
4. Школ вуйлатышым саламлаш кажне/чумыр школна погынен.
5. Канаш чылан/чыла йōратат.

## 6. Postpositions

### 6.0. General remarks

Postpositions are a closed word class in Mari – there is a finite number of postpositions in active usage in the modern language. After some preliminary general remarks on their usage, this chapter contains an overview of postpositions in use in contemporary Mari, with accompanying exercises.

Mari makes use of a large number of postpositions to complement the case system (see 2.3 – page 68; as regards the relationship between postpositions and case suffixes, see below in 6.0.2 – page 163). Their usage and the range of meanings they express are similar to those of prepositions in English. They can be used to express:

- Spatial relations: *вач* 'from, off', *вере* 'in ... places', *вошт* 'over, across, through', *дене* 'by, at; with', *деран* 'at, by', *йыр* 'around, round', *кумдыкеш* 'all across, throughout', *кутынек* 'along', *кутынь* 'along', *кутышеш* 'along', *кутышын* 'along', *мелын* 'facing', *пелен* 'close to, near, beside', *тореш* 'opposite', *тўрысõ* 'on the edge', *велне* 'on the side', *воктене* 'beside', *йымалне* 'under', *коклаште* 'among', *кõргыштõ* 'within', *кўдылнõ* 'close to', *лишне* 'close to', *лонгаште* 'amidst', *могырышто* 'on the side', *деч мўндырнõ* 'far from', *ончылно* 'in front of', (*деч*) *õрдыжтõ* 'outside', *поکشелне* 'in the middle of', *тораште* 'in a distance', *тураште* 'around', *ўмбалне* 'on top of'
- Temporal relations: *водын* 'on the eve', *годсек* 'since', *годым* 'during', *гутлан* 'about, around', *жапыште* 'over the course of', *ияшын* 'at the age of', *лугыч(ын)* 'at the same time as', *мучкылан* 'for the length of', *ожно* 'ago', *осыгечын* 'on the eve of', *деч вара* 'after', *деч ожно* 'up to', *деч ончыч* 'before'
- Spatial or temporal relations: *вашеш* 'before', *ваштапеш* 'towards', *зоч* 'through', *гутлаште* 'around', *гыч* 'from; since', *еда* 'every', *йотке* 'up to', *кыдалне* 'in the middle', *марте* 'up to', *мучашеш* 'at the end', *мучаште* 'at the end', *мучко* 'through', *поче* 'in succession', *почела* 'in succession', *почеш* 'after', *шумеш(ке)* 'up to'
- Reasons and aims: *верч* 'for (the sake of); because (of)', *кõра* 'for (the sake of); because (of)', *лийын* 'because (of)', *шумлык* 'because (of)'
- Different quantifying relations: *виса* 'about, around', *гана* 'time(s)', *дангым* 'up to', *келгым* 'as deep as', *кужым* 'as long as', *кумдык* 'as big as', *кут* 'the length of', *кутыш* 'of a certain length', *кўжгым* 'as thick as', *кўкшым* 'as high as', *наре* 'about, roughly', *начаш* 'times', *тич* 'full of', *утла* 'more than', *чоло* 'about, roughly', *деч утла(рак)* 'more than'
- Comparison: *гай* 'like', *деч* 'than', *семын* 'like'
- The object of conversation or thought: *манмаште* 'concerning', *нерген* 'about', *шотышто* 'concerning', *шумлык* 'concerning'
- Inclusion or exclusion: *укеште* 'in the absence of', *улмаште* 'in the presence of', *деч зоч* 'more than', *деч моло* 'except for, other than', *деч посна* 'without'
- Miscellaneous other values: *вереш* 'instead of', *олмеш* 'instead of', *шотеш* 'of account of', *вач* 'in spite of', *ончыде* 'in spite of', *йõре* 'mixed together with', *йõршан* 'mixed together with', *ваштапеш* 'against', *тореш* 'opposed', *келшышын* 'in accordance with', *почеш* 'according to', *негызеш* 'on ground of', *дене* 'with', *кўшеш* 'at the expense of', *лўмеш* 'in the name of', *сынан* 'having the shape'

In contrast to English prepositions, Mari postpositions follow the subordinate word rather than precede it.

|          |               |                        |                    |
|----------|---------------|------------------------|--------------------|
| нерген   | ‘about’       | паша <u>нерген</u>     | ‘about work’       |
| шенгелне | ‘behind’      | пӧрт <u>шенгелне</u>   | ‘behind the house’ |
| ваштареш | ‘against’     | мардеж <u>ваштареш</u> | ‘against the wind’ |
| марте    | ‘till, until’ | эр <u>марте</u>        | ‘till morning’     |

Postpositions can take some, but not all, endings that are attached to nominals. They do not generally take number suffixes and case suffixes; exceptions will be discussed when they occur. Postpositions do however frequently take:

- Possessive suffixes (see 2.2.1 – page 61): *ӱмбалне* ‘on top of’ → *мыйын ӱмбалнем* ‘on top of me’. Possessive suffixation of postpositions will be discussed below in 6.0.1 – page 160.
- The comparative suffix *-рак* (see 3.2.2 – page 101): *ӱстел деке* ‘to the table’ → *ӱстел декырак* ‘closer to the table’.
- Derivational suffixes (see 11 – page 369): *мланде ӱмбалне* ‘on the land’ → *мланде ӱмбалнысе* ‘of the land’, using the derivational suffix *-се*, see 11.6.3 – page 383. Here *ӱмбалнысе* keeps the postpositional characteristic of following a host word, but forms a phrase that is used as an adjective. Derivations of this sort will be discussed where they occur.
- The clitics *-ла* (see 9.1.4 – page 331), *-ам* (see 9.1.1 – page 328), and *-ак* (see 9.1.2 – page 330).

Postpositions can be used in connection with simple nouns, adjectives, quantifiers, pronouns, non-finite verbal forms – participles in particular, and among these most commonly with the passive participle in *-ме* (see 7.2.4 – page 260) – and in many cases without a subordinate word, i.e., as adverbs.

|                 |                            |
|-----------------|----------------------------|
| ой ваштареш     | ‘against a suggestion’     |
| нунын ваштареш  | ‘against them’             |
| шонымо ваштареш | ‘against someone’s wishes’ |
| <i>ваштареш</i> | <i>‘against (it)’</i>      |

The adverbial usage of many words that also serve as postpositions will be revisited in Section 7 – page 196 – though in this section too it will be shown if individual words that are used as postpositions can also serve as adverbs: in the discussion of individual postpositions that will follow, at least one usage example will be provided of all of these basic usages whenever appropriate. If we do not provide an example sentence in which the postposition is used in a particular manner (e.g., with a participle, as an adverb), this means that we could not provide natural examples. Adverbial usage examples will be italicized.

The nominal form preceding the postposition is generally in the nominative, but ( a ) pronouns often occur in the genitive rather than the nominative in combination with postpositions, ( b ) some postpositions govern other cases. The coupling of pronouns with postpositions will be discussed below in 6.0.1 – page 160. The following overview of postpositions used in Mari will mention it explicitly when a postposition governs a case other than the nominative.

Postpositions can also be demanded by government by verbs or nouns, for example the postposition *дене* ‘with’ (see 6.1.20 – page 170) in the following two examples:

|                                   |  |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| <u>Шочмо кечет дене</u> саламлем! | Happy birthday! (Lit. I congratulate you <u>with your birthday</u> ) |
| <u>зоологий дене</u> учебник      | zoology textbook (lit. textbook <u>with zoology</u> )                |

A number of postpositions have fused with their subordinate nouns to form lexicalized adverbs, for example: *ӱстел* ‘table’ + *ӱмбалне* ‘on’ → *ӱстембалне* ‘on the table’. These adverbs maintain the property of postpositions that they can take possessive suffixes, e.g.: *ӱстембалнышт* ‘on their table’. Some important adverbs of this sort are discussed in the chapter on adverbs in 8.2.2 – page 315.

This chapter contains separate sections for postpositions that form “families”, i.e., cases where multiple postpositions are overtly derived from the same stem (6.2 – page 185) – and compound postpositions (6.3 – page 193). Both these sections contain additional notes on postpositions of this type. Section 6.1 – page 164 – only contains simple postpositions, i.e., postpositions that neither form “families”, nor are compound postpositions.

Short forms and long forms: A number of postpositions have both long forms and short forms that are functionally equivalent to one another: *верч* ~ *верчын* ‘for; due to’, *зоч* ~ *зочын* ‘through’, etc.

### 6.0.1. Postpositions and possessive suffixes, postpositions and pronouns

Postpositions that generally govern the nominative will however frequently appear after genitive forms of some pronouns:

|                       |                                 |
|-----------------------|---------------------------------|
| <u>школ ончылно</u>   | ‘in front of the school’        |
| <u>мемнан ончылно</u> | ‘in front of <u>us</u> ’        |
| <u>тидын ончылно</u>  | ‘in front of <u>this</u> ’      |
| <u>шкенан ончылно</u> | ‘in front of <u>ourselves</u> ’ |

#### Personal pronouns:

When the reference word of a postposition is a personal pronoun (see 5.1 – page 136) possessive suffixes – (see 2.2.1 – page 61) – can be used instead of a personal pronoun in the genitive: *ончылнем* ‘in front of me’, *ончылнет* ‘in front of you’, etc. It is also possible to mark the person by both a personal pronoun in the genitive, and a possessive suffix: *мыйын ончылнем* ‘in front of me’, *тыйын ончылнет* ‘in front of you’, etc. In summation, the three different possibilities are:

|            | Pronoun (in genitive) | Possessive suffix (Px) | Pronoun + Px     |
|------------|-----------------------|------------------------|------------------|
| <b>1SG</b> | мыйын ончылно         | ончылнем               | мыйын ончылнем   |
| <b>2SG</b> | тыйын ончылно         | ончылнет               | тыйын ончылнет   |
| <b>3SG</b> | тудын ончылно         | ончылныжо              | тудын ончылныжо  |
| <b>1PL</b> | мемнан ончылно        | ончылнына              | мемнан ончылнына |
| <b>2PL</b> | тендан ончылно        | ончылныда              | тендан ончылныда |
| <b>3PL</b> | нунын ончылно         | ончылнышт              | нунын ончылнышт  |

The usage of the possessive suffix is far more common in the first and second person singular than it is in the other persons: for example, *мыйын ончылнем* is considerably more customary than *мыйын ончылно*, while *мемнан ончылно* is considerably more customary than *мемнан ончылнына*. However, all forms given in the table above are legitimate.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Мыйын нергенем</u> газетыштат возенят.  | They wrote about me <u>as well in the newspaper</u> .      |
| <u>Тыйын ончылно</u> черетыште кум ег.     | There are three people <u>in front of you</u> in the line. |
| <u>Мемнан олмеш</u> тидым нигö ок ыште.    | Nobody will do this <u>instead of us</u> .                 |
| <u>Нунын воктенышт</u> музыкант-влак илат. | Musicians live <u>next door to them</u> .                  |

#### 6.1. Attach all possessive suffixes to the postposition *вашмареш* ‘against’.

Some postpositions do not take possessive suffixes, e.g., *марте* ‘up to’. For them, only options from the first column in the table above (pronoun in genitive) are used: *мыйын марте* ‘up to me (i.e., my age)’.



|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Мыйын марте</u> илет гын, вес семын шонаш тўналат.                           | If you live <u>as long as I have</u> , you will see things differently.          |
| Пашам ыштем <u>тыйын наре</u> , а оксам шагалрак налам.                         | I work <u>as much as you do</u> , but get less money.                            |
| <u>Мыйын виса</u> тунемат гын, тыят экзаменым сайын кучет.                      | If you study <u>as much as I do</u> , you'll also do fine on the exam.           |
| Тунам вуйлатышына Александр Иванович лийын. <u>Тудын годым</u> паша сайын каен. | At that time, our boss was Aleksandr Ivanovich. <u>Under him</u> work went well. |
| <u>Мемнан марте</u> тиде увер ала-молан шуын огыл.                              | For some reason, this message did not find its way <u>to us</u> .                |

When postpositions do not take possessive suffixes, this is indicated in the overview below.

6.2. Attach the postposition *годым* 'during', which does not take possessive suffixes, to all personal pronouns.

Some postpositions behave in a highly idiosyncratic manner when coupled with personal pronouns, demanding the usage of the nominative in some persons and the genitive in others, and demanding the usage of possessive suffixes in some persons but not allowing it in others. For example, *деке* 'to' (see 6.1.19 – page 169):

|            |                    |
|------------|--------------------|
| <b>1SG</b> | мый <i>декем</i>   |
| <b>2SG</b> | тый <i>декет</i>   |
| <b>3SG</b> | тудын <i>деке</i>  |
| <b>1PL</b> | мемнан <i>деке</i> |
| <b>2PL</b> | тендан <i>деке</i> |
| <b>3PL</b> | нунын <i>деке</i>  |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Мый <i>декем</i></u> уна-влак толыныт.       | Guests came <u>to my place</u> .                       |
| <u>Тый <i>гает</i></u> моторын марла кутырынем. | I want to speak Mari as beautifully <u>as you do</u> . |
| <u>Тый <i>денет</i></u> илаш весела.            | It's fun living <u>with you</u> .                      |
| <u>Тудын <i>деч</i></u> серышым нална.          | We got a letter <u>from him/her</u> .                  |
| <u>Тендан <i>гай</i></u> айдеме шагал.          | There are few people <u>like you</u> .                 |
| Аня <u>тый <i>семынет</i></u> шона.             | Anya thinks <u>like you</u> .                          |

In the overview below, postpositions with idiosyncratic possessive suffixation are indicated as such.

Note that individual postpositions can vary in their usage: they are sometimes used in a regular fashion (i.e., in analogy to *ончылно* above), and sometimes are used in an idiosyncratic fashion (i.e., in analogy to *деке* above), e.g., *почеш* 'after': мыйын *почешем* (regular, cf. *мыйын ончылнем* 'in front of me') ~ *мый почешем* (idiosyncratic, cf. *мый *декем** 'to me').

6.3. Attach the postposition *дене* 'with', which behaves like *деке*, to all personal pronouns.

6.4. Insert the given postpositions into the sentences, marked for the person indicated (i.e., with the appropriate pronoun and/or possessive suffix). “No Px” indicates that the postposition does not take possessive suffixes; “like *деке*” indicates that the postposition behaves in the same idiosyncratic fashion *деке* does.

1. ... йолташет толын. (*деке*, 2SG)
2. Ялна эше тора: ... лу менгым ошкылман. (*марте*, 3SG, no Px)
3. ... ачатлан саламым каласе. (*деч*, 1SG, like *деке*)
4. ... шуко ойыртем уло. (*коклаште*, 1PL, no Px)
5. ... полицейский-влак куржыт. (*почеш*, 2SG)
6. Кунам ... вашлийына? (*дене*, 2PL, like *деке*)
7. Эргым, ... кочкат гын, тыят виян лият. (*наре*, 1SG, no Px)
8. Мастарлык шотышто ... кушкын шуаш ок лий. (*йотке*, 2SG, no Px)
9. ... кушташ тунемнем. (*семын*, 3PL)
10. ... кок венгр ўдыр шинча. (*пелен*, 1SG)

Noun + possessive suffix: Note that if a postposition follows a noun on which possession is to be indicated, the possessive suffix can be attached either to the noun or to the postposition: *нӧртем ончылно* ~ *нӧрт ончылнем* ‘in front of my house’, *садет шенгелне* ~ *сад шенгелнем* ‘behind your garden’.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Аня <u>вуй гычем</u> нигузе ок лек, эре тудым шонем. | I can't get Anya <u>out of my head</u> , I'm always thinking of her. |
| <u>Пӧрт воктенет</u> корным ачалат.                  | They're fixing the road <u>beside your house</u> .                   |
| <u>Пакча гочна</u> меран кудал эртыш.                | A rabbit ran <u>through our garden</u> .                             |

The reflexive pronoun *шке*:

When the reflexive pronoun *шке* ‘oneself’, see 5.3 – page 142 – is used with postpositions, several patterns occur and the person can be marked in several ways: 1) (optional) personal pronoun in the nominative + pronoun in the nominative + postposition, 2) pronoun in the nominative + postposition with possessive suffix, 3) pronoun in the nominative with possessive suffix + postposition, 4) pronoun in the genitive + postposition. Note that arrangement 3) does not work in the first and second person plural, and that the genitive forms in arrangement 4) are marked for person. Note the different manners in which the postposition *нерген* ‘about’ can be connected to the reflexive pronoun – the most commonly used form(s) are given in bold:

|            | 1)                       | 2)                          | 3)                         | 4)                           |
|------------|--------------------------|-----------------------------|----------------------------|------------------------------|
| <b>1SG</b> | (мый) <i>шке нерген</i>  | <b><i>шке нергенем</i></b>  | <i>шкем нерген</i>         | <i>шкемын нерген</i>         |
| <b>2SG</b> | (тый) <i>шке нерген</i>  | <b><i>шке нергенет</i></b>  | <i>шкет нерген</i>         | <i>шкендын нерген</i>        |
| <b>3SG</b> | (тудо) <i>шке нерген</i> | <b><i>шке нергенже</i></b>  | <b><i>шкеж нерген</i></b>  | <i>шкенжын нерген</i>        |
| <b>1PL</b> | (ме) <i>шке нерген</i>   | <i>шке нергенна</i>         | -                          | <b><i>шкенан нерген</i></b>  |
| <b>2PL</b> | (те) <i>шке нерген</i>   | <i>шке нергенда</i>         | -                          | <b><i>шкендан нерген</i></b> |
| <b>3PL</b> | (нуно) <i>шке нерген</i> | <b><i>шке нергенышт</i></b> | <b><i>шкешт нерген</i></b> | <i>шкеныштын нерген</i>      |

Some examples of *шке* used with postpositions:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Шке олмешем</u> пашашке таче шўжарым колтенам.     | I sent my little sister to work <u>instead of me</u> today.    |
| <u>Шке нергенет</u> марла мом каласен кертат?         | What can you say <u>about yourself</u> in Mari?                |
| Валя <u>шке воктенже</u> Анялан верым кодыш.          | Valya left a place for Anya <u>beside herself</u> .            |
| Чодыраште <u>шкенан почеш</u> шўкым нигунам она кодо. | We never leave litter <u>behind (ourselves)</u> in the forest. |
| <u>Шкендан деке</u> у пачарышке кунам ўжыда?          | When will you invite (me) <u>to your</u> new flat?             |

Other pronouns:

Other pronouns are subject to some variance when they are coupled with postpositions. Some preferentially (or exclusively) occur in the nominative, some preferentially (or exclusively) in the genitive. The following overview illustrates how the postposition *нерген* 'about' can connect to various pronouns, with italic forms being marginal in usage.

| Pronoun type                             | Pronoun                | Nominative         | Genitive                |
|--|------------------------|--------------------|-------------------------|
| <b>Demonstrative</b><br>(5.2 – page 137) | тиде 'this'            | <i>тиде нерген</i> | тидын нерген            |
|  | тудо 'that'            | <i>тудо нерген</i> | тудын нерген            |
| <b>Reciprocal</b> (5.4 – p. 146)         | икте-весе 'each other' | икте-весе нерген   | -                       |
| <b>Interrogative</b><br>(5.5 – page 147) | кө 'who'               | кө нерген          | <i>көн нерген</i>       |
|  | мо 'what'              | мо нерген          | -                       |
|  | кудо 'which'           | <i>кудо нерген</i> | кудын нерген            |
| <b>Negative</b><br>(5.6 – page 151)      | нигө 'nobody'          | нигө нерген        | <i>нигөн нерген</i>     |
|  | нимо 'nothing'         | нимо нерген        | -                       |
| <b>Indefinite</b><br>(5.7 – page 152)    | иктаж-кө 'anybody'     | иктаж-кө нерген    | <i>иктаж-көн нерген</i> |
|  | ала-кө 'somebody'      | ала-кө нерген      | <i>ала-көн нерген</i>   |
|  | ...                    | ...                | ...                     |
|  | иктаж-мо 'anything'    | иктаж-мо нерген    | -                       |
|  | ала-мо 'something'     | ала-мо нерген      | -                       |
|  | ...                    | ...                | ...                     |
|  | икте                   | икте нерген        | -                       |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Марла кутыраш <u>кө</u> деч тунемынат?                            | From <u>whom</u> did you learn to speak Mari?                        |
| Мо <u>верч</u> шортат?  | About <u>what</u> are you crying?                                    |
| У мари́й филь́м лектын. Чылан <u>тудын</u> <u>нерген</u> кутырат. | A new Mari film was released. Everybody is talking <u>about it</u> . |
| Черетыште <u>көн</u> <u>почеш</u> улыда?                          | <u>Who</u> are you <u>behind of</u> in the line?                     |
| Тудо мыланна <u>нимо</u> <u>дене</u> полшен ыш керт.              | S/he couldn't help us <u>with anything</u> .                         |

6.5. What is the appropriate form of the pronoun given in parentheses?

1. Нуно чўчкыдын (икте-весе) деке унала коштыт.
2. Ме (тиде) ваштареш улына.
3. (Кө) дене илет, тудын койышым погет.
4. Теве тушто кевыт. А (тудо) воктене мемнан пöртна.
5. Кызыт (мо) нерген шонет?

### 6.0.2. Relationship between postpositions and case suffixes

In many important ways, postpositions have a close binding to their host word:

- It is not customary for additional words (e.g., adverbs) to appear between a postposition's host word, and a postposition.
- The pronunciation of postpositions orthographically realized with an initial *z* or *ð* depends on the final sound of the host word: they are pronounced as /g/ and /d/ after vowels and sonorant consonants, but as /k/ and /t/ after obstruent consonants, e.g., *дене* (/dene/ ~ /tene/) 'with': *йоча дене* /joča dene/ 'with a child', but *йолташ дене* /joltaş tene/ 'with a friend' (see 1.5.7 – page 34).
- In some cases, original postpositions and their host words are written as compounds: *эрдене* 'in the morning' ← *эр* 'morning' + *дене* 'with', *кастене* 'in the evening' ← *кас* 'evening' + *дене* 'with'.
- As with case suffixes (see 2.3 – page 68), highly idiosyncratic forms appear when some postpositions are attached to personal pronouns, see above in 6.0.1 – page 160.

Given these factors, it is rather arbitrary that, for example, *дене* ‘with’ is considered a postposition rather than a case suffix: this is based more on grammatical traditions and on orthography (that it is written as a separate word) than on its actual usage.

Numerous postpositions are used to indicate spatial relations. One of these, *гыч* (see 6.1.17 – page 169), complements the system of local cases: it is the analog to the illative case in *-u(кЕ)* (marking motion into, see 2.4.6 – page 84) and the inessive case in *-umE* (marking no motion, see 2.4.5 – page 82), and indicates motion out of. (The lative case in *-eu* can indicate either motion into, or no motion, see 2.4.7 – page 88.) These cases, together with *гыч*, for a threefold system of local expression.

|        |     |        |
|--------|-----|--------|
| -ш(кЕ) | -еш | into   |
| -ште   |     | in     |
| гыч    |     | out of |

A number of other postpositions form their own threefold system of local expression, relating however to motion to, positioning at, and motion away from something:

|                         |                          |              |
|-------------------------|--------------------------|--------------|
| деке (6.1.19, page 169) | деран (6.1.21, page 172) | to           |
| дене (6.1.20, page 170) |                          | with; by, at |
| деч (6.1.22, page 172)  |                          | from         |

Other simple postpositions also indicate spatial relations – e.g., *мапте* ‘up to’, *ваштапеш* ‘against’, *зоч* ‘across’ – but do not fit into a threefold system of local expression. Derived postpositions forming ‘families’ – discussed below in 6.2 – page 185 – however, do exist within the threefold system of local expression, for example:

|            |          |             |
|------------|----------|-------------|
| шенгек(е)  | шенгелан | (to) behind |
| шенгелне   |          | behind      |
| шенгеч(ын) |          | from behind |

These will be discussed in greater detail below.

## 6.1. Simple postpositions

Note that ‘simple’ here means that the postpositions do not form ‘families’ in modern Mari (see 6.2 – page 185) and that they are not compound postpositions (see 6.3 – page 193). Some postpositions contained in this section are complex in the sense that they are derived from other lexical items by transparent means, e.g., *почеш* ‘after, behind, following; according to’ (see 6.1.66 – page 182) ← *поч* ‘tail’ + lative suffix (see 2.4.7 – page 88), *шумеш(ке)* ‘to, up to, to, as far as; till, until, up to, to’ (see 6.1.78 – page 185) ← *шуаш (-ам)* ‘to arrive’ + gerund of future actions (see 7.2.10 – page 274).

### 6.1.1. *вач(ын)* ‘from, off; above, over; after; in spite of’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Йоча-влак <u>курык вачын</u> издер дене мунчалтат. | The children go <u>down the hill</u> with sleds.              |
| <u>Ял вачын</u> йўксё-влак чонештен эртышт.        | Swans flew by <u>over the village</u> .                       |
| <u>Кутырен келшыме вач</u> вес семын ыштен.        | <u>Although it had been agreed</u> , s/he did it another way. |

### 6.1.2. *вашеш* 'on/from the opposite side; before, on the eve; in answer'

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Пайрем вашеш</u> чылан пӧлекым налыт.           | <u>On the eve of the holiday</u> , everybody buys presents.   |
| <u>Мемнан вашеш</u> йолташна-влак толыт.           | Our friends are coming down the street <u>towards us</u> .    |
| <u>Йӱштӧ лийшаш вашеш</u> шӱдыр-влак чот чолгыжат. | <u>Before it starts to get cold</u> , stars sparkle strongly. |
| – Васлий, мӧнгыштӧ улат мо? – ала-кӧ кычкырал.     | – Vasliy, are you home? – somebody yelled.                    |
| – Уке, уке улам, – <u>вашеш</u> маньым.            | – No, I am not – I said <u>in answer</u> .                    |

This postposition can also co-occur with the dative.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Уныка-влаклан вашеш</u> ковашт лектын. | The grandmother went out <u>to meet her grandchildren</u> . |
|---|---|

### 6.1.3. *ваштареш* 'towards; opposite; against; before, toward, on the eve'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Пӧртна ваштареш</u> олесе парк.                  | There's a city park <u>opposite our building</u> .              |
| <u>Мемнан ваштареш</u> виян команде модеш.          | A strong team is playing <u>against us</u> .                    |
| <u>Тамакым шупшмо ваштареш</u> у тӧртыкым луктыныт. | A new law was passed <u>against smoking</u> .                   |
| Марина мылам чот сырен: эре <u>ваштареш</u> ойла.   | Marina is quite angry at me, she's always talking <u>back</u> . |

While this postposition generally governs the nominative, it does on occasion co-occur with the dative.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Йыван <u>окна ваштареш</u> шинчын. ~<br>Йыван <u>окналан ваштареш</u> шинчын.     | Yyvan sat <u>opposite the window</u> .      |
| Молан тый <u>тудын ваштареш</u> улат? ~<br>Молан тый <u>тудлан ваштареш</u> улат? | Why are you <u>against him/her</u> ?        |
| <u>Йӱд ваштареш</u> корныш ит лек ~<br><u>Йӱдлан ваштареш</u> корныш ит лек.      | Don't go out <u>when night is falling</u> . |

### 6.1.4. *вере* 'in ... places'

This postposition is only used with a closed set of host words, e.g., *ик* 'one', *вес* 'other', *чыла* 'all', *шуко* 'many'.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Ик вере</u> веле йонгылышым ыштенам.    | I only made a mistake <u>in one place</u> .                           |
| Оля <u>вес вере</u> илаш куснен.           | Olya went to live <u>somewhere else</u> .                             |
| Телым окнаш ончалат: <u>чыла вере</u> ошо. | You look out the window in winter, and it's white <u>everywhere</u> . |
| Марий-влак <u>шуко вере</u> илат.          | Maris live <u>in many places</u> .                                    |

### 6.1.5. *вереш* 'instead'

This postposition is similar in usage to *олмеш* 'instead' (see 6.1.59 – page 181), but is used more rarely, and mostly in combination with animate nouns.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Таче <u>йолташем вереш</u> пашам ыштем.    | Today I'm working <u>instead of my friend</u> .                     |
| Анямыт <u>мемнан вереш</u> театрыш каенит. | Anya and her family are going to the theater <u>instead of us</u> . |

### 6.1.6. *верч(ын)* ‘for, for the sake of; because of, due to; instead of; about, of’

This postposition can express both finality (i.e., the purpose of something, see 15.7 – page 401) – and causality (i.e., the reason for something, see 15.7 – page 401). It can co-occur with the nominative and the dative, with the nominative preferentially used when expressing an aim, and the dative preferentially used when expressing a cause. It can follow the passive participle in *-МЕ* (see 7.2.4 – page 260) indicating a cause, and the future-necessitive participle in *-шаш* (see 7.2.5 – page 263) indicating an aim. It follows nominative and dative forms of the passive participle, but only nominative forms of the future-necessitive participle.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тудо <u>окса верч</u> веле пашам ышта.           | S/he only works <u>for the money</u> .              |
| Черлан <u>верч</u> пашашке шым кае.              | I didn't go to work <u>because I was ill</u> .      |
| Тылат <u>верч</u> вараш кодынам.                 | I was late <u>because of you</u> .                  |
| Аваже <u>тудын верч</u> азаплана.                | His/her mother worries <u>about him/her</u> .       |
| <u>Шуко шонымо верч</u> вуем коршта.             | My head hurts <u>from all the thinking</u> .        |
| Паша лектышым саемдышаш <u>верч</u> чот тыршена. | We're working hard <u>to improve work results</u> . |

### 6.1.7. *виса* ‘about, around, roughly; as much as’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes. Its synonym *наре* (see 6.1.55 – page 180) is considerably more frequent in usage.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ивук <u>ачаже виса</u> илен да 90 ияшыж годым колен. | Ivuk lived as long <u>as his father</u> and died at the age of 90. |
| Спортсмен омыл, <u>тыйын виса</u> куржын ом керт.    | I'm not an athlete, I can't run as quickly <u>as you do</u> .      |

### 6.1.8. *водын* ‘on the eve’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Пайрем водын</u> уло еш пырля погына.                | The whole family gets together <u>on the eve of the celebration</u> .      |
| <u>Шочмо кечем лийшаш водын</u> акам вес ола гыч толын. | <u>On the evening before my birthday</u> , my aunt came from another city. |

### 6.1.9. *вошт* ‘over, across, through, via; up to, right up to, as far as’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Ялыш чодыра вошт</u> ошкылынна.            | We walked to the village <u>through the forest</u> .        |
| <u>Тудын вошт</u> эртымеке, ялыш миен шуынна. | After we passed <u>through it</u> , we reached the village. |
| Юля <u>малыме вошт</u> аважын йүкшым колын.   | Yulya heard her mother's voice <u>through her sleep</u> .   |
| Тудо мыйым сайын пала, <u>вошт</u> ужеш.      | S/he knows me well and sees right <u>through me</u> .       |

In the meaning ‘up to, right up to, as far as’, this postposition can occur with the illative case (see 2.4.6 – page 84), or the postpositions *марте* (see 6.1.49 – page 179), *шумеш* (see 6.1.78 – page 185), *йотке* (see 6.1.26 – page 175).

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Мурымыжо <u>пошкудо ялыш вошт</u> шокта.  | The singing can be heard <u>as far as the next village</u> . |
| Тышечын <u>ер марте вошт</u> йолын каена. | We will walk from here <u>as far as the lake</u> .           |

### 6.1.10. *гай* 'like, as'

This postposition is connected to personal pronouns in an idiosyncratic fashion: *мый гаем* 'like me', etc.

|                                       |  |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| Ирина <u>аваж гай</u> воштылеш.       | Irina laughs <u>like her mother</u> .                      |
| <u>Тый гает</u> пашаче еным кычалына. | We are looking for a hard-working person <u>like you</u> . |
| Тиде <u>лўмын ыштыме гай</u> лие.     | This was <u>as if it had been done intentionally</u> .     |

Phrases created with this postposition can be used as adverbs, adjectives, and nouns. Adverbial constructions using *гай* include constructions of equivalence (*as ... as*, see 3.2.1 – page 101 – as regards adjectival constructions of this type, and 8.5.1 – page 322 – as regards adverbial constructions), where *гай* can in adverbial constructions of equivalence (*as ...-ly as*) be used interchangeably with the comparative case suffix *-ла* (see 2.4.8 – page 91) and the postposition *семын* (see 6.1.67 – page 183). Nominal phrases using *гай* can take all suffixes nouns can, including case suffixes and plural suffixes, and can themselves be followed by other postpositions.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Шинчат <u>шўдыр гай</u> йолгыжеш.         | Your eyes sparkle <u>like stars</u> .        |
| <u>Тумо гай</u> пенгыде тазалыкет лийже.  | May your health be robust <u>as an oak</u> . |
| <u>Тендан гай-влакым</u> мый сайын палем. | <u>People like you</u> I know well.          |

This postposition has the alternative form *гае*. As regards the usage of *гай* as a particle, see 9.5.16 – page 341.

6.6. Insert the fitting postposition. The options are given below.

1. Эчан шуко ... лийын: Африкыште, Америкыште, эсогыл Антарктидыштат.
2. Начар игечылан ... самолётна кучалтын.
3. Зина кўвар ... модышым пога.
4. Мый кочам ... илынем: тудо 105 ияшын колен.
5. Рошто ... оласе урем-влакым сōрастарат.

(вачын, вашеш, вере, верчын, виса)

6. Тый марий ... моторын марла мутланет.
7. Ёстел омса ... шога.
8. Кугече ... шукын черкыш каят.
9. Авам черле, садлан таче тудын ... пашаш лектынам.
10. Янда ... кече ырыкта.

(ваштареш, вереш, вошт, водын, гай)

### 6.1.11. *гана* 'time(s)'

This postposition generally follows quantifiers and does not take possessive suffixes. It is similar in usage to *начаш* (see 6.1.66 – page 182), but is more versatile: it can also be used in reference to one specific occasion (*кокымшо гана* 'the second time' *туде гана* 'this time'), while *начаш* is more typically used in reference to multiple occasions, and as a multiplier – twice, three times (as much), etc.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Японийыште мый <u>кок гана</u> лийынам.               | I've been to Japan <u>twice</u> .           |
| Вепс-влак дене <u>шуко гана</u> вашлийынна.           | We met with Veps <u>many times</u> .        |
| <u>Пытартыш гана</u> нунын дене Ижевскыште кутыренна. | We <u>last</u> talked with them in Izhevsk. |

### 6.1.12. *годсек* 'since, beginning with'

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes, although it can in rare cases in combination with certain phrases, e.g., *узи годсекем* 'since I was young'.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Эр годсек</u> тыйым вучем.          | I've been waiting for you <u>since morning</u> . |
| <u>Тудын годсек</u> чылан сайын илена. | <u>Since then</u> we've all been living well.    |
| <u>Кайымет годсек</u> шўлыкан улам.    | I've been sad ever <u>since you left</u> .       |

See 8.1.1.3 – page 311 – as regards the suffix *-сек* contained in this postposition.

### 6.1.13. *годым* 'during, at the time'

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Петя урок</u> <u>годым</u> мален колтен.                      | Petya fell asleep <u>in class</u> .                             |
| <u>Мемнам</u> <u>годым</u> экзамен-влак нелырак лийыныт.         | <u>In our time</u> , exams were more difficult.                 |
| <u>Москошто</u> <u>тунемме</u> <u>годым</u> тўшкагудышто иленам. | <u>When I went to university in Moscow</u> , I lived in a dorm. |

This possessive suffix is similar in usage to the gerund of simultaneous action in *-шыла* (see 7.2.11 – page 276): *толмо* *годым* ~ *толшыла* 'when coming'. Their relationship is discussed in the section on this gerund.

In combination with the future-necessitive participle in *-шаш* (see 7.2.5 – page 263), it can be used to indicate what is done when something else should be done.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Книгам</u> <u>лудшаш</u> <u>годым</u> серышым воза. | <u>Instead of reading the book</u> , s/he is writing a letter.<br>( <u>At a time when s/he ought to read the book</u> , s/he is writing a letter.) |
|--|--|

### 6.1.14. *гоч(ын)* 'over, across, through; during, throughout; using, via'

This postposition only rarely takes possessive suffixes.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Кеңеж</u> <u>гоч</u> ялыште иленна.                                    | We were in the countryside <u>all throughout summer</u> .                     |
| Анна Петровна <u>мемнан</u> <u>гоч</u> эргыжлан оксам колтен.             | Anna Petrovna sent money to her son <u>through us</u> .                       |
| <u>Йылмым</u> <u>тунемме</u> <u>гоч</u> калыкын тўвыражымат пален налына. | <u>Through learning a language</u> , we also get to know a different culture. |

### 6.1.15. *гутлан* 'about, around (a time)'

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Айда <u>вич</u> <u>шагат</u> <u>гутлан</u> вашлийына.                     | Let's meet <u>around five</u> .                                  |
| <u>Эр</u> <u>гутлан</u> йўр чарныш.                                       | It stopped raining <u>around morning</u> .                       |
| <u>Паша</u> <u>гыч</u> <u>толмем</u> <u>гутлан</u> кас кочкиш ямде лийже. | Dinner should be ready <u>around when I get back from work</u> . |

### 6.1.16. *гутлаште* 'around, in the area; about, around, during, at (a time)'

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ме кызыт <u>парк</u> <u>гутлаште</u> улына.       | We're currently <u>in the area of the park</u> . |
| Лач <u>тиде</u> <u>гутлаште</u> ала-кõ йынгыртыш. | Just <u>around then</u> someone called.          |
| <u>Кочмына</u> <u>гутлаште</u> уна тольо.         | A guest came <u>while we were eating</u> .       |



### 6.1.17. *гыч(ын)* ‘from, out of’

This postposition is not generally used with pronouns. When it is attached to nouns, it can take possessive suffixes: *вер гычем* ‘from my place’, etc.

|                                 |                              |
|---------------------------------|------------------------------|
| Мый Йошкар-Ола <u>гыч</u> улам. | I’m <u>from</u> Yoshkar-Ola. |
|---------------------------------|------------------------------|

As discussed above in 6.0.2 – page 163 – this postposition complements the system of local cases to form a threefold system of local expressions.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Мый <u>школ</u> <u>гыч</u> тольым.        | I came <u>from</u> school.                |
| Мый <u>школышко</u> кайышым.              | I went <u>to</u> school.                  |
| Мый <u>Карелий</u> <u>гыч</u> улам.       | I am <u>from</u> Karelia.                 |
| Кызыт мый <u>Марий Элыште</u> илем.       | Now I live <u>in</u> Mari El.             |
| Кенжежым мый <u>Удмуртийышке</u> кудалам. | In summer, I am going <u>to</u> Udmurtia. |

The postposition also has a number of secondary usages:

a) It can denote the material from which something is made or the source of a transformation.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Холодильникыште</u> кодшо йөрвар <u>гыч</u> пиццым ышташ лиеш. | (We) can make a pizza <u>from</u> the leftover food <u>in</u> the fridge. |
| <u>Тошто вургем</u> <u>гыч</u> мый ум ургем.                      | I’ll make new clothes <u>from</u> the old ones.                           |

b) It can indicate a distribution, similar to English *each*.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Кажне кечын <u>коло у мут</u> <u>гыч</u> тунемза. | Learn <u>twenty new words</u> each day.  |
| Йоча-влак <u>ик олма</u> <u>гыч</u> налыныт.      | The children each took <u>one</u> apple. |

c) It can be used in a temporal sense ‘in; from’, signifying an action that will be carried out after a certain time period. In combination with *марте*, it can also be used to signify a time period.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Ик арня</u> <u>гыч</u> У ий толеш.                      | New Year is <u>in</u> a week.                         |
| <u>Шочмо</u> <u>гыч</u> изарня марте ме вес олаште лийына. | <u>From Monday</u> to Thursday we’re in another town. |

d) It can indicate the surface affected by an activity (‘on, by, under’)

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Вова Костям <u>пылышыж</u> <u>гыч</u> перен. | Vova hit Kostya <u>on</u> the ear.        |
| Ава эргыжым <u>вуй</u> <u>гыч</u> ниялтен.   | Mother patted her son <u>on</u> the head. |

e) It can indicate the path of a movement (i.e., serve as a PROLATIVE marker), expressing through where a movement takes place.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Омса почмо гын, молан <u>окна</u> <u>гыч</u> пурет? | If the door is open, why are you coming <u>in</u> through the window? |
| <u>Капка</u> <u>гыч</u> мотор ўдыр лекте.           | A beautiful girl went out <u>through</u> the gate.                    |

### 6.1.18. *дангым* ‘to, up to’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Изи ўдыр <u>пулвуй</u> <u>дангым</u> vele вўдыш пурен. | The little girl only went into the water <u>up to</u> her knees. |
|--|--|

### 6.1.19. *дек(e)* ‘to’

This postposition is connected to personal pronouns in an idiosyncratic fashion: *мый декам* ‘to me’, etc. As regards its connection to *тудо* ‘s/he’, see 5.1.1 – page 136.

|                                      |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| Рушарнян ача-авам <u>деке</u> каена. | We’re going <u>to</u> our parents’ place on Sunday. |
| Кунам <u>тый декет</u> мияш лияш?    | When can I come <u>to</u> your place?               |

As discussed above in 6.0.2 – page 163 – this postposition together with *дене* ‘with; by, at’ (6.1.20 page 170), *деран* ‘at, by’ (6.1.21 – page 172), and *деч* ‘from’ (6.1.22, page 172) falls into a threefold system of local expression.

In many cases, the usage of *дек(e)* is required by government, for example by the verbs *шўмангаш (-ам)* ‘to develop a taste for’:

Изи ўдыр музык дек шўмангын.

| The little girl developed a taste for music.

6.7. Insert the appropriately person-marked form of *деке* (i.e., pronoun in nominative or genitive followed by *деке* with or without a possessive suffix) in the following sentences, for the indicated person.

1. Миклай ... унала коштеш мо? (2Pl)
2. ... Угарман гыч йолташем толын. (1Sg)
3. Молан тудо ... пижедылеш? (2Sg)
4. Черет ... лишемеш. (1Pl)
5. Англичан йылмым тунемаш ... мынярын коштыт? (2Sg)

### 6.1.20. *ден(e)* ‘with; by, at’

This postposition is connected to personal pronouns in an idiosyncratic fashion: *мый денем* ‘with me’, etc. As regards its connection to *тудо* ‘s/he’, see 5.1.1 – page 136.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Ме Аня дене</u> эн сай йолташ улына. | Anya and I (lit. we <u>with Anya</u> ) are best friends. |
| <u>Тудын дене</u> ме 20 ий келшена.     | I’ve been friends <u>with him/her</u> for 20 years.      |
| <u>Лўдмō дене</u> мый тушеч куржынам.   | <u>In my fear</u> , I ran away from there.               |

While this postposition can often simply be translated as ‘with’, its range of applications exceeds that of its prototypical English counterpart.

a) It is used to indicate the co-participant of an action – i.e., the person with whom one carries out an activity.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Авам дене</u> келшен илена.         | My <u>mother</u> and I get on well.                  |
| <u>Саша дене</u> кызыт статьям возена. | <u>Sasha</u> and I are currently writing an article. |

b) It is used to indicate the instrument used in carrying out an activity, the means of transportation used in a movement, etc.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Мелнам ме <u>кид дене</u> кочкина.        | We’re eating the pancakes <u>with our hands</u> . |
| Пашашке мый <u>метро дене</u> кудалыштам. | I go to work <u>by metro</u> .                    |

c) It can be used in a spatial sense, indicating that something is happening close to something, or along something. In this sense it can be understood to form a threefold system of local expression, as discussed above in 6.0.2 – page 163 – with *деке* ‘to’ (6.1.19 page 169), *деран* ‘at, by’ (6.1.21 – page 172), and *деч* ‘from’ (6.1.22, page 172).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Айда театр дене</u> вашлийына.             | Let’s meet <u>at the theater</u> .                |
| <u>Тиде урем дене</u> иктаж вич минут кайыза. | Go <u>down this street</u> for some five minutes. |

d) It can mark the material from which something is built or made. In this function, it is similar to *гыч* ‘from, out of’ (see 6.1.17 – page 169).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Йошкар-Олаште шуко пōртым <u>йошкар кермыч дене</u> чоҥымо. | In Yoshkar-Ola, many buildings are made <u>from red brick</u> . |
| Подкогылым <u>торык дене</u> да <u>паренге дене</u> ыштат.  | Dumplings are <u>made with curds and potatoes</u> .             |

e) It can indicate the cause or reason for an event. The postposition can also be connected with the passive participle in *-мЕ* (see 7.2.4 – page 260) in this sense.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Шыде дене</u> Миша телефонжымат кўварыш шуэн. | <u>In his anger</u> , Misha threw his phone on the floor. |
| <u>Йывыртыме дене</u> Оля куштенат колтыш.       | <u>In her joy</u> , Olya started dancing.                 |

f) It can mark the agent of a passive clause (see 11.7.12 – page 391). In this function, it is generally coupled with inanimate nouns, especially natural phenomena such as rain and wind.

|                                   |   |
|-----------------------------------|---|
| Куэ <u>мардеж дене</u> лўнгалтеш. | The birch tree is rocking <u>in the wind</u> .                              |
| Сер <u>вўд дене</u> мушкылтеш.    | Waves wash against the shore (lit. The shore is washed <u>with water</u> ). |

g) It can be used to indicate a subject matter contained in or covered by something, or in which a person specializes.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Марий йылме дене</u> тунемме книга тыланда келша мо? | Do you like the <u>Mari</u> textbook?                      |
| Диссертацийдам <u>могай теме дене</u> возеда?           | <u>What topic</u> are you writing your dissertation about? |

h) It can be used to denote quantities by which something happens.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Шоколадым тудо <u>килограмм дене</u> кочкын кертеш. | S/he can eat chocolate <u>by the kilo</u> .           |
| Турист-влак кызыт <u>шўдў дене</u> толаш тўналыныт. | Tourists have started coming <u>by the hundreds</u> . |

i) It can be used in a temporal sense. The postposition can also be connected with the passive participle in this sense.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Кенжежым ме <u>арня дене</u> ялыште илена. | In summer, we spend <u>weeks</u> in the countryside. |
| <u>Жап эртыме дене</u> чыла мондалтын.     | All is forgotten <u>as time goes by</u> .            |

j) It is in many cases governed by verbs, i.e., the verb demands constituents are marked with this postposition – in certain meanings, at least.

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Те <u>гитар дене</u> шоктен моштеда? | Can you play <u>the guitar</u> ?                                 |
| Шочмо кечет дене саламлем!           | Happy birthday (lit. I congratulate <u>with your birthday</u> )! |
| Тый <u>мый денем</u> келшет?         | Do you agree <u>with me</u> ?                                    |

**‘You and I’:** In Mari, this can be expressed by saying, literally, “we with you”. Analogously, “he and his sister” can be expressed as “they with his sister”, etc. In such cases, the verb is in the plural.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ме <u>тый денет</u> эре пырля лийынна.     | The two of us (lit. we <u>with you</u> ) were always together. |
| Нуно <u>ватыж дене</u> нигунам огыт ўчаше. | He <u>and his wife</u> never argue.                            |

**Adjective *денысе*:** Note the usage of this adjectival derivation from *дене*.

|                                 |   |
|---------------------------------|---|
| Мемнан <u>денысе илыш</u> онай. | <u>Life around here</u> is interesting. |
|---------------------------------|---|

**Conjunction *ден*:** as regards the usage of this postposition as a conjunction ‘and’, see [...] – page [...].

6.8. Insert the appropriate phrases with *дене*. The options are given below.

1. – Айда этнографий ончерыш каена!  
– Айда!  
– Тугеже 11 шагатлан Евсеев ... вашлийына.
2. Марий-влак суртыштым ... чоҥеныт.
3. Ме ... келшен илена, ваш-ваш полшена.
4. Ваня эн чот ... урокым йӧрата.
5. Тиде фильмыш билетым ... ужаленыт.

(пошкудо дене, тўжем дене, пу дене, тоштер дене, историй дене)

6. Чот ... Марина изи шольыжым кынелтыш.
7. Кокам ... когылым пеш тамлын ышта
8. Тунам мый Москошто иленам да шочмо ялыштем ... лийын омыл.
9. Йошкар-Ола гыч Угарманышке ... 4 шагатыште миен шуаш лиеш.
10. Тиде ... каеда гын, 15 минут гыч паркыш миен шуыда.

(машина дене, бульвар дене, олма дене, тылзе дене, воштылмо дене)

### 6.1.21. *деран* 'at, by'

This postposition is connected to personal pronouns in an idiosyncratic fashion: *мый деранем* 'by me', etc.

Машина пӧрт деран шогале.

The car stopped by the house.

Акам мемнан деран малаш кодын.

My sister overnight with us.

As discussed above in 6.0.2 – page 163 – this postposition together with *деке* 'to' (6.1.19 page 169), *дене* 'with; by, at' (6.1.20 page 170), and *деч* 'from' (6.1.22, page 172) falls into a threefold system of local expression.

### 6.1.22. *деч(ын)* 'from'

This postposition is connected to personal pronouns in an idiosyncratic fashion: *мый дечем* 'from me', etc. As regards its connection to *мудо* 's/he', see 5.1.1 – page 136.

Изам деч серышым вучем.

I'm waiting for a letter from my big brother.

Тый дечет вик мӧнгӧ каем.

I'll go right home from your place.

As discussed above in 6.0.2 – page 163 – this postposition together with *деке* 'to' (6.1.19 page 169), *деран* 'at, by' (6.1.21 – page 172), and *дене* 'with; by, at' (6.1.20 page 170) falls into a threefold system of local expression. In addition to its spatial meaning, this postposition is used in numerous other situations as well:

a) It is used to indicate the person from whom something is received.

Изам деч серыш толын.

A letter came from my big brother.

Тиде тылат Йӱштӧ Кугыза деч пӧлек.

This is a present for you from Father Christmas.

b) It is used to mark the cause for something. In this meaning, it can follow the passive participle in *-МЕ* (see 7.2.4 – page 260). In this function, it is synonymous with *верч* (see 6.1.6 – page 166) and *кӧра* (see 6.1.32 – page 176).

Шуко малыме деч вуем коршта.

My head hurts from all the sleeping.

c) In combination with the passive participle in *-МЕ* (see 7.2.4 – page 260) it can also mean 'instead of', and be comparable to *олмеш* (see 6.1.59 – page 181).

Яра шинчыме деч газетым ончалам.

Instead of sitting around doing nothing, I'm looking at the newspaper.

d) It is used in the meaning 'against' (e.g., an illness)

Кокырымо деч мўян шөр полша.

Milk with honey helps against a cough.

Аллергий деч могай эмым темледа?

What medicine do you suggest against allergies?

e) It is used to indicate the object of comparison, both in adjectival (see 3.2.2 – page 101) and adverbial (see 8.5.2 – page 322) comparative constructions.

Юл Какшан деч кужурак.

The Volga is longer than the Kokshaga.

Автобус трамвай деч писын кудалеш.

The bus goes faster than the streetcar.

f) It is used in emphatic superlative constructions, see 3.2.3 – page 104.

Айвика нигө деч сылын мура.

Ayvika sings the most beautifully.

Сай деч сай ылышым тыланем.

I wish (you) the best of lives.

g) It is in many cases governed by verbs, i.e., the verb demands constituents are marked with this postposition – in certain meanings, at least.

Изи ўдыр уна деч вожылеш.

The little girl is shy in front of the guests.

Тый кишке деч лўдат мо?

Are you afraid of snakes?

«Тиде чын мо?» – журналист политик деч йодын.

"Is this true?", the journalist asked the politician.

h) It is used in numerous compound postpositions, e.g., *деч носна* 'without', *деч вапа* 'after'. These are discussed below in 6.3 – page 193.

6.9. Insert the appropriate phrases with *деч*. The options are given below.

1. Пырыс ... кугурак.
2. Изи йоча ... йодеш: «Молан ушкал ужар шудым кочкеш, а шөржө ошо?»
3. Шўжарем сўанлан ... мотор тувырым налын.
4. Йошкар-Ола ... 50 менге тораште верлана.
5. Шўлыкан ... сай фильм, концерт але оңай книга полшен кертеш.

(Юл деч, мотор деч, аваж деч, кумыл деч, коля деч)

6. Йўштым ... логарем коршта.
7. Зоопаркыште: «Эргым, ... коранг, тудо вет пырыс гай огыл».
8. Тиде кимоном эн сай ... налым. Тудо кызыт Японийыште ила.
9. Катя ... ойырлен.
10. Тунемше-влак ... изишак лўдыт.

(тигр деч, йолташем деч, экзамен деч, кочмо деч, марийже деч)

6.10. Insert *дене*, *деке*, or *деч* into the following sentences.

1. Унагудет вокзал ... тора огыл.
2. Шочмо ... школлаште кенгеж каныш тўңалеш.
3. Йолташ-влак ... ме чўчкыдын вашлийына.
4. Акам ... электрон серышым налым.
5. Андраш Венгрий ...
6. Веня изаж ... изирак.
7. Таче кастене мемнан ... уна-влак толыт.
8. Ача-авам тораште илат, садлан ме скайп ... кутырена.
9. Тый черле улат, тылат эмлызе ... каяш кўлеш.
10. Тый кофем шөр ... йўат?

6.11. Insert the fitting postposition. The options are given below.

1. Мемнан рўдолана кум ... у лўмым (Царевококшайск, Краснококшайск, Йошкар-Ола) налын.
2. Сар ... кочам фронтышто лийын.
3. Икымше туныктышем дене школ ... вашлийын онал.
4. Шудо кыдал ... кушкын.
5. Олма тений шуко шочын: теле ... тудым кочкынна.  
(гана, годсек, годым, гоч, даңгыт)

### 6.1.23. *еда* '(to/in) each, every'

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Чебоксарыш автобус <u>кок шагат еда</u> коштеш.    | A bus goes to Cheboksary <u>every two hours</u> .       |
| <u>Маша дене вашлийме еда</u> шагат дене кутырена. | <u>Every time Masha and I meet</u> , we talk for hours. |

This postposition, following nouns in the nominative, can either mean 'each' (in a temporal sense), 'in each' (in a local sense), or 'into each' (in a local sense). The correct reading is determined by context. It is roughly synonymous to the word *кажне*, which precedes a noun that is subject to nominal inflection (consequently, the correct reading of a phrase with *кажне* is possible also without context).

|            |                  |                |
|------------|------------------|----------------|
| кече еда ~ | кажне кечын      | every day      |
| шыже еда ~ | кажне шыжым      | every fall     |
| пöрт еда ~ | кажне пöртыштö   | in every house |
| пöрт еда ~ | кажне пöртыш(кö) | to every house |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Марий кас <u>тылзе еда</u> эрта.                   | There's a Mari evening <u>every month</u> .                                  |
| <u>Пöрт еда</u> У ийым пайремлат.                  | New Year is celebrated <u>in every house</u> .                               |
| Эрла <u>пачер еда</u> газым терген кошташ тўналыт. | Tomorrow they will start going <u>into every apartment</u> to check the gas. |

### 6.1.24. *жапыште* 'over the course of'

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Кеҗеж каныш жапыште</u> мом ыштенда?                        | What did you do <u>over the summer holidays</u> ?                           |
| Ковам каласкала: « <u>Мемнан жапыште</u> интернет лийын огыл». | My grandmother says: " <u>In our days</u> there was no Internet."           |
| <u>Тунемме жапыште</u> пашамат ыштен шуктенна.                 | <u>When (we) were at the university</u> , we managed to have a job as well. |
| Саскам <u>жапыште</u> погыман.                                 | Fruit must be gathered <u>in time</u> .                                     |

### 6.1.25. *ияшын* 'at the age of'

This postposition is generally only used with quantifiers, and does not take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Мый <u>вич ияшын</u> лудаш тунемынам.          | I learned to read <u>when I was five</u> .      |
| Акам <u>коло ияшын</u> марлан лектын.          | My sister married <u>at twenty</u> .            |
| Те <u>мыняр ияшын</u> марла тунемаш тўналында? | <u>At what age</u> did you start studying Mari? |

### 6.1.26. *йотке* ‘till, until, by; up to, as far as’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes. It is a synonym of *марте*, and is used comparatively rarely.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Кас <u>йотке</u> эше жап уло.                                 | There’s still time <u>till evening</u> .                                |
| Пайрем лишемеш. <u>Тудо йотке</u> кугу пашам ыштен пытарыман. | The celebration is approaching. A lot needs to be done <u>by then</u> . |

### 6.1.27. *йөре* ‘together with, mixed together with’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Руашлан ложашым <u>вўд йөре</u> лугена.              | To make dough, we mix flour <u>together with</u> water.    |
| Мом <u>воштылмо йөре</u> ончет?                      | Why are you looking at me <u>and laughing</u> ?            |
| Подкогыльылан торык ден паренгым <u>йөре</u> варена. | For dumplings, we mix curds and potatoes <u>together</u> . |

### 6.1.28. *йөршан* ‘together with, mixed together with’

Phrases created with this postposition are used as adjectives. It does not connect to pronouns and does not take possessive suffixes.

|                              |                        |
|------------------------------|------------------------|
| <u>Лум йөршан</u> йўр йўреш. | It’s <u>sleeting</u> . |
|------------------------------|------------------------|

### 6.1.29. *йыр* ‘around, round’

|                                      |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| Тылзе <u>Мланде йыр</u> пёрдеш.      | The Moon revolves <u>around the Earth</u> .     |
| Чылан <u>мемнан йыр</u> погыненыт.   | Everybody gathered <u>around us</u> .           |
| <u>Йыр</u> ончалым, но нигём шым уж. | I looked <u>around</u> , but didn’t see anyone. |

### 6.1.30. *келгым* ‘as deep as, up to’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Коремыште <u>метр келгым</u> вўд погынен. | The water in the ravine got <u>up to a meter</u> . |
|---|--|

### 6.1.31. *келшышын* ‘in accordance with, going with’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes. It governs the dative case, or the postposition *дене* ‘with’.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Ме чылам <u>тёртык дене келшышын</u> ыштена. ~                      | We do everything <u>in accordance with the law</u> .                          |
| Ме чылам <u>тёртыклан келшышын</u> ыштена.                          |   |
| Ачайын сугыньжым мый шарнем, <u>туддене келшышын</u> илаш тыршем. ~ | I remember my father’s advice, and try to live <u>in accordance with it</u> . |
| Ачайын сугыньжым мый шарнем, <u>тудлан келшышын</u> илаш тыршем.    |   |
| Тортым <u>рецептыште возымо дене келшышын</u> ыштенам. ~            | I made the cake <u>according to the recipe</u> .                              |
| Тортым <u>рецептыште возымылан келшышын</u> ыштенам                 |   |
| Театрыш тудо моткоч <u>келшышын</u> чиен.                           | S/he dressed quite <u>appropriately</u> for the theater.                      |

### 6.1.32. *көра* ‘for, for the sake of; because of, due to’

This postposition can express both finality (i.e., the purpose of something, see 15.7 – page 401) – and causality (i.e., the reason for something, see [...] – page [...]). It governs the dative case. It can follow the passive participle in *-мЕ* (see 7.2.4 – page 260) and the future-necessitive participle in *-шаш* (see 7.2.5 – page 263). It does not conventionally take possessive suffixes.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ик йонгылышлан <u>көра</u> нылытаным<br>налым.  | I got a B <u>because of one mistake</u> .                |
| Тудо <u>тылат көра</u> веле ила.                | S/he lives only <u>for you</u> .                         |
| <u>Черланымылан көра</u> концертыш ышна<br>кае. | We didn't go to the concert <u>because we fell ill</u> . |

6.12. Insert the fitting postposition. The options are given below.

1. Снегым ўмбал ... варыза.
2. Ик йўдыштө 10 сантиметр ... лум возын.
3. «Мыры ай» пайрем ий ... эрта.
4. Маша модылан ... чия.
5. Паспортым Российыште 14 ... налыт.  
(еда, ияшын, йөре, келшышын, келгыт)
6. Шокшо игечылан ... чыла ончычрак пеледаш тўнале.
7. Сок ... шөрым коктейль маныт.
8. Лекций 10 шагат гыч 12 ... лиеш.
9. Тиде вич ий ... ылышна саемян.
10. Ўстел ... пўкен-влак шогат.  
(жапыште, йотке, йөршан, йыр, көра)

### 6.1.33. *кужым* ‘as long as, having a certain length’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Тиде пөлемыш <u>кум метр кужым</u> шкафым<br>кычалына. | We're looking for a <u>three-meter-long</u><br>wardrobe for this room. |
|--|--|

### 6.1.34. *кумдык* ‘all across, throughout; the size of, as big as’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|                                     |   |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| Пырдыжыште <u>парня кумдык</u> рож. | There's a hole <u>as big as a finger</u> in the wall. |
|-------------------------------------|---|

### 6.1.35. *кумдыкеш* ‘all across, throughout’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Мурымыжо <u>урем кумдыкеш</u> шокта. | The singing can be heard <u>all along the street</u> . |
| <u>Кумдыкеш</u> лум кия.             | There's snow <u>everywhere</u> .                       |

### 6.1.36. *кут* ‘the length of’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Тиде тувырлан <u>метр кут</u> ўштө кўлеш. | For this shirt, (you) need a belt <u>a meter long</u> . |
|---|---|



### 6.1.37. *кутынек* ‘along’

This postposition can follow the nominative, or the dative. It is synonymous with *кутынь* (see below). It is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Ялна кутынек</u> кугорно кия.   | A large road runs <u>through our village</u> .                               |
| <u>Эгерлан кутынек</u> пөрт-влак шогат.                                    | Houses stand <u>along the river</u> .  |
| Оригами урокышто: «Кайыкым ышташ эн ончыч кагазым <u>кутынек</u> тодылза». | In origami class: “To make a bird, first fold the paper <u>lengthwise</u> .” |

### 6.1.38. *кутынь* ‘along’

This postposition can follow the nominative, or the dative. It is synonymous with *кутынек* (see above). It is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Корно кутынь</u> кок могыржымат пушенгым шындыт. ~<br><u>Корнылан кутынь</u> кок могыржымат пушенгым шындыт. | They planted trees <u>along the road</u> on both sides. |
| Оңам <u>кутынь</u> кокыте пүчкедыза.  | Cut the board in two <u>lengthwise</u> .                |

### 6.1.39. *кутыш* ‘of a certain length (spatial, temporal)’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Шольым <u>парня кутыш</u> колым кучен. | My little brother caught a fish <u>as long as a finger</u> . |
|--|--|

### 6.1.40. *кутышеш* ‘along, the length of’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes. It can co-occur with the nominative or dative case.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Коридор кутышеш</u> кужу тоя кия. ~<br><u>Коридорлан кутышеш</u> кужу тоя кия. | There’s a long pole lying <u>along the corridor</u> . |
| Вургемже <u>кутышеш</u> шеле.   | His/her clothes tore lengthwise.                      |

### 6.1.41. *кутышын* ‘along’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Пырдыж кутышын</u> пүкен-влак шогат.  | Chairs are standing <u>along the wall</u> .                    |
| Ик тоя <u>кутышын</u> кия, весыже тореш. | One pole is lying <u>lengthwise</u> , the other one crosswise. |

### 6.1.42. *кўжгым* ‘as thick as’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Киярым <u>парня кўжгым</u> ластыкыш кутынек пүчкедена. | We are cutting the cucumber lengthwise in slices <u>as thick as a finger</u> . |
|--|--|

### 6.1.43. *кўкшым* ‘as high as’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Кум пачашан пөрт кўкшым</u> пушенгыш кўзен керта? | Can you climb a tree as high <u>as a three-story building</u> ? |
|--|---|

### 6.1.44. *күшеш* 'at expense of'

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Книгам тудо <u>шке оксаж күшеш</u> луктын.           | S/he published the book <u>with his/her own money</u> .         |
| Тыйын <u>күшеш</u> мый ынем иле, пашам ышташ каем.   | I don't want to live <u>on your expense</u> , I'll go and work. |
| Йолташем <u>англичан йылмым туныктымо күшеш</u> ила. | My friend lives <u>from teaching English</u> .                  |

6.13. Insert the fitting postposition. The options are given below.

1. Тошкалтышлан ... пырдыжыште сүрет-влак кечат.
2. Пörтыштына пырдыж-влак кагаз ... улыт: чыла шокта.
3. Ялыштына изи энгер гоч 6 метр ... кўварым чоҥенит.
4. Ёдырамаш окна ... шога, корныш онча.
5. Ош тувыреш копа ... кофе тамгам шынденам.

(кужыт, кумдык, кутынек/кутынь, кўдынъ, кўжгыт)

6. Икана чодыраште кок метр ... шем кишкым ужинам.
7. Пошкудына кум метр ... кўртньö печым шынден.
8. Оласе бюджет ... тений шуко корным ачалыме.
9. Тиде увер тўня ... шарлен.
10. Бульвар ... пеледышым шындыме.

(кумдыкеш, кут/кутыш, кутышеш/кутышын, кўкшыт, кўшеш)

### 6.1.45. *лийын* 'as, being; because of, due to'

This postposition governs the dative case. It does not generally take possessive suffixes. It is synonymous with *кõра* (see 6.1.32 – page 176) and *верч* (see 6.1.6 – page 166), though it is used considerably rarer.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Йўрлан <u>лийын</u> нигушко кудалын онал.             | <u>Because of the rain</u> , we didn't drive anywhere. |
| Тыlande <u>лийын</u> веле мый тõрланенам.             | I only got well <u>because of you</u> .                |
| Вараш <u>кодмыжлан лийын</u> тудым паша гыч луктынит. | S/he was fired for being late.                         |

### 6.1.46. *лугыч(ын)* 'without interrupting, at the same time as'

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Галя паша <u>лугычак</u> кочкеш.                 | Galya is eating <u>without stopping work</u> .                   |
| Саша <u>Женя дене кутырымо лугыч</u> СМС-м воза. | Sasha is writing a text message <u>and talking with Zhenya</u> . |
| Нелеш ида нал, мый тендам <u>лугыч</u> ыштышым.  | Sorry, I interrupted you.  |

### 6.1.47. *лўмеш* 'in honor/the name of; because of, due to; for (someone)'

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Шочмо кечыж лўмеш</u> ме тудлан пеледыш аршашым пõлекленна. | We gave him/her a flower bouquet <u>for his/her birthday</u> . |
| Тыйын <u>лўмеш</u> ик шўдырым лўмденит.                        | A star was named <u>after you</u> .                            |
| Толмет <u>лўмеш</u> мый уна-влакым ўжинам.                     | I invited guests <u>on the occasion of your visit</u> .        |

This postposition is used to mark an individual's name when carried by an institution:

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>М. Шкетан лүмеш</u> Марий калыкле драме театр | <u>M. Shketan</u> Theater Mari National Drama Theater |
| <u>Олык Ипай лүмеш</u> Кугыжаныш премий          | <u>Olyk Ipay</u> National Award                       |
| <u>С. Г. Чавайн лүмеш</u> Калыке книгагудо       | <u>S. G. Chavayn</u> National Library                 |

#### 6.1.48. *манмаште* ‘concerning, as regards, regarding, about’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes. It is synonymous with *шотышто* (see 6.1.77 – page 185).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Окса манмаште</u> пашадарым жапыште тўлат. | <u>Regarding money</u> , the salaries are paid in time. |
| <u>Каныме манмаште</u> яра жапше укеат.       | <u>As regards relaxation</u> , there’s no free time.    |

#### 6.1.49. *марте* ‘up to, as far as; till, until’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Пазар марте</u> йолын каена.                              | We’ll walk <u>up as far as the market</u> .                       |
| Таче <u>19 шагат марте</u> тунемам.                          | I will study <u>till 7 P.M.</u> today.                            |
| <u>Мемнан марте</u> илен шунда гын, тамакым ида шупш.        | If you want to live <u>as long as we have</u> , don’t smoke.      |
| <u>Финляндийыш кайыдем марте</u> финнла изиш тунем шуктыман. | <u>Before I go to Finland</u> , I need to study a bit of Finnish. |

#### 6.1.50. *мелын* ‘facing, with one’s face towards’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes. It can co-occur with either the dative case, or a number of postpositions: *дек(е)* ‘to’, *век(е)* ‘towards’, *велке* ‘id.’, *вельш(ке)* ‘id.’, *вашеш* ‘on the opposite side’, *ваштапеш* ‘towards’.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Сергей <u>Анялан мелын</u> шогалын да шинчашкыже ончалын. | Sergey stood <u>facing Anya</u> and looked into her eyes.       |
| Ончылнем шогышо ең <u>мый декем мелын</u> савырнен.       | The person standing in front of me turned and <u>faced me</u> . |
| Тувыретым тупынь чиенат – <u>мелын</u> савыре.            | You put your shirt on inside-out, turn it <u>around</u> .       |

#### 6.1.51. *мучашеш* ‘at the end, on the tip’

This postposition does not generally follow pronouns or take possessive suffixes.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Кеҗеж мучашеш</u> игече йўкшемден.                           | <u>Towards the end of summer</u> , the weather cooled down.                  |
| <u>Школышто тунемме мучашеш</u> Лена актрисе лияш шонен пыштен. | <u>At the end of her time in school</u> , Lena decided to become an actress. |
| <u>Мучашеш</u> мый тыланда тазалыкым тыланынем.                 | <u>Finally</u> , I wish you health.  |

#### 6.1.52. *мучаште ~ мучашыште* ‘at the end, on the tip’

This postposition does not generally follow pronouns. It only takes possessive suffixes when it follows nouns, e.g., *вуй мучаштем* ‘over my head’.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Урем мучаште</u> у кевытым починыт.                        | A new store was opened <u>at the end of the street</u> .  |
| <u>Кумалме мучаште</u> погынышо-влак тауштыме мутым пелештат. | At the end of the prayer ceremony, the people assembled express words of gratitude (to the gods). |
| <u>Мучаште</u> чыла сай лие.                                  | Everything worked out <u>in the end</u> .   |

### 6.1.53. *мучко* 'across, through, around; down, along; the whole, all'

This postposition does not generally follow pronouns or take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Чавайн бульвар мучко</u> каеда гын, Какшан деке лектыда.    | If you walk <u>down Chavayn Boulevard</u> , you will get to the Kokshaga.           |
| Йочам-влак <u>кенгеж мучко</u> ялыште иленит.                  | My children were in the countryside <u>all summer</u> .                             |
| Ялна воктене кумда лап уло. <u>Тудын мучко</u> изи энгер йога. | There's a wide lowland beside our village. A little river flows <u>through it</u> . |
| Тыште <u>мучко</u> маке пеледеш.                               | There are poppies growing <u>all around</u> .                                       |

### 6.1.54. *мучкылан* 'for the whole, for the duration of, for the length of'

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Эрла <u>кече мучкылан</u> чодырашке понго погаш каена. | Tomorrow we'll go pick mushrooms in the forest <u>all day</u> . |
|--|---|

6.14. Insert the fitting postposition. The options are given below.

- Мемнан пöртна ял ... чодыра воктене шога.
- Арня ... каже кастене «Пушкин» кинотеатрыште финн фильмым ончыкташ тўнгалыт.
- Йўштылан ... тунемше-влак школыш огыт кай.
- Лиза телевизорым ончымо ... телефон дене кутыра.
- Айста, йолташ-влак, вашлиймына ... йўына!

(лийын, лугыч, лўмеш, мучаште, мучко)

- Йолташем-влак каже ийын теле ... шокшо эллашке илаш каят: йўштым нуно огыт чыте.
- Эчук кечылан ... шогалын: изиш кўнеже.
- У ий ... ик тылзе веле кодын: пöлекым налын шуктыман.
- Апрель ... марий кундемыште чыла лум шула.
- Йот йылме ... школлаште эн шукын англичанла тунемыт.

(манмаште, марте, мелын, мучашеш, мучкылан)

### 6.1.55. *наре* 'about, approximately, nearly, roughly, circa; as much as'

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes. It often co-occurs with the particle *иктаж* 'some, about, roughly', which will precede the word that *наре* follows.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Москошто <u>кок ий наре</u> илем.                      | I've been living in Moscow <u>for about two years</u> .       |
| Байкалышке <u>итаж арня наре</u> поезд дене кудалынна. | We spent <u>about a week</u> on the train to Lake Baikal.     |
| <u>Мемнан наре</u> пашам ыштет гын, тьят ноет.         | If you work <u>as much as we do</u> , you too will get tired. |
| Маша <u>чывиге наре</u> шагал кочкеш.                  | Masha eats <u>as little as a young chicken</u> .              |

### 6.1.56. *негызеш* 'on ground of, on the basis of'

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Тиде книга негызеш</u> фильмым войзеныт.                         | They made a movie <u>on the basis of this book</u> .   |
| Яллаште шуко интервьюм погенам. <u>Нунын негызеш</u> статьям возем. | I did a lot of interviews in the countryside. I'm writing an article <u>on their basis</u> . |
| <u>Ойлымыда негызеш</u> ме фотороботым ямдылена.                    | We made a photofit picture <u>on the basis of what you said</u> .                            |

### 6.1.57. *нерген* 'about, regarding'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Марий тўвыра нерген</u> мом паледа?      | What do you know <u>about Mari culture</u> ?                        |
| Ават эре <u>тыйын нерген</u> шона.          | Your mother always thinks <u>about you</u> .                        |
| <u>Кўсотышто кумалме нерген</u> колынат мо? | Have you heard <u>about prayer ceremonies in the sacred grove</u> ? |

### 6.1.58. *ожно* 'ago'

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Кумло ий ожно</u> олаште марий йылмым шагал колаш лиеш ыле. | <u>Thirty years ago</u> , you heard little Mari in town. |
| <u>Ожно</u> кўслем пörъен-влак веле шоктеныт.                  | <u>In the old days</u> , only men played guslis.         |

### 6.1.59. *олмеш* 'instead of'

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Сакыр олмеш</u> чайышке мўйым пыште.      | Put honey in the tea <u>instead of sugar</u> .     |
| <u>Тендан олмеш</u> тидым нигö ок ыште.      | Nobody will do this <u>instead of you</u> .        |
| <u>Каныме олмеш</u> йолташ-влаккан полшенна. | <u>Instead of resting</u> , we helped our friends. |
| Мый <u>олмешет</u> пашам ом ыште.            | I'm not doing your work <u>for you</u> .           |

### 6.1.60. *ончыде* 'in spite of'

This postposition is originally the negative gerund – see 7.2.8 – page 270 – of the verb *ончаш* (-ем) 'to see'. It does not take possessive suffixes, and governs the accusative.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Йўрым ончыде</u> корнышко лекна.              | We headed out <u>in spite of the rain</u> .              |
| Корно кужу. <u>Тидым ончыде</u> умбаке ошкылына. | The road is long. <u>In spite of this</u> , we march on. |
| <u>Черланым ончыде</u> tudo пашаш каен.          | <u>In spite of falling ill</u> , s/he went to work.      |

### 6.1.61. *осыгечын* 'on the eve of'

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Кумалтыш осыгечын</u> кўсотым эрыктат.   | <u>On the eve of the celebration</u> , the sacred grove is cleansed. |
| <u>Осыгечын</u> чылан пайремлан ямдылалтыт. | Everybody prepares for the celebration <u>the night before</u> .     |

### 6.1.62. *начаш* 'times'

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes. It is similar in usage to *гана* (see 6.1.11 – page 167), but is generally only used after cardinal numbers and quantifiers such as *шуко* 'much; many'.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Ваня Аня деч <u>кок пачаш</u> утларак кочкеш. | Vanya eats <u>twice</u> as much as Anya.        |
| «Элнет» романым <u>шуко пачаш</u> лудынам.    | I've read the novel "Elnet" <u>many times</u> . |

### 6.1.63. *пелен* 'close to, near, beside'

|                                      |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| Ўстел <u>окна пелен</u> шога.        | The table stands <u>near the window</u> . |
| <u>Тыйын пеленет</u> шинчаш лиеш мо? | May (I) sit <u>beside you</u> ?           |
| Паспортым <u>пеленда</u> налында мо? | Did you take your passport <u>along</u> ? |

Note the derived adjectival form *пеленысе*: *институт пеленысе лабораторий* 'laboratory adjacent to the institute'.

### 6.1.64. *поче* 'in succession, in a row'

This postposition synonymous with *почела* (see below). It is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ковам <u>кум йўд поче</u> ок мале.               | My grandmother hasn't slept <u>for three nights in a row</u> . |
| Хорышто мурышо-влак сценыш <u>поче</u> лектыныт. | The choir singers filed onto the stage.                        |

### 6.1.65. *почела* 'in succession, in a row'

This postposition synonymous with *поче* (see above). It is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Вич ий почела</u> ик вере канаш коштына. | We've been going on a holiday to one place <u>for five years in a row</u> . |
| Лудиге-влак вўдышкō <u>почела</u> пурат.    | The ducklings go into the water <u>in a row</u> .                           |

6.15. Insert the fitting postposition. The options are given below.

1. Леннарт Мери финн-угор калык-влак ... пеш онгай фильм-влакым войзен.
2. 1919-ше ийыште рўдолана Царевококшайск ... Краснококшайск лўмым налын.
3. Ялна марте 3 менгым ... ошкылаш кодын.
4. ИФУСКО конференций 33 ий ... эрта.
5. Чыла нелылыкым ... Марина конкурсышто икымше верыш лектын.

(наре, нерген, олмеш, ончыде, поче/почела)

6. Катя тўнō чот кылмен, садланак шокшо конга ... шогалын.
7. Пайрем ... озавате сийым ямдыла.
8. Илышыже ... романым возаш лиеш.
9. Марий Элын кумдыкшо Финляндий деч 15 ... изирак.
10. «Марий Эл» радио шке пашажым 12 ий ... ышташ тўнгалын.

(негызеш, ожно, осыгечын, пачаш, пелен)

### 6.1.66. *почеш* 'after, behind, following (spatial, temporal); according to'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Рывыж <u>меран почеш</u> кудалеш.                             | The fox is running <u>after the rabbit</u> .                                  |
| <u>Идалык почеш</u> идалык эртен.                             | Year <u>after year</u> passed.  |
| Ача-авам йылмызе улыт. Мыят <u>нунын почеш</u> йылмызе лийым. | My parents are linguists. I too became a linguist <u>in their footsteps</u> . |
| Чыла <u>кутырен келшыме почеш</u> кая.                        | Everything is happening <u>as agreed</u> .                                    |
| <u>Почешем</u> ида кошт.                                      | Don't follow <u>me</u> .  |

### 6.1.67. *семын* 'like, as'

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Кокам мыйым <u>ава семын</u> куштен.             | My grandmother raised me <u>like a mother</u> .    |
| Мыят тендан <u>семын</u> куштен моштынем.        | I also want to be able to dance <u>as you do</u> . |
| <u>Кушмо семын</u> тўняончалтышыже<br>вашталтын. | <u>As s/he grew up</u> , her world view changed.   |
| Мый <u>семынем</u> тыге шонем.                   | This is what I think <u>to myself</u> .            |

This postposition has a number of meanings:

a) It is used in adverbial constructions of equivalence (*as ...-ly as*, see 8.5.1 – page 322), interchangeably with the comparative case suffix *-ла* (see 2.4.8 – page 91) and the postposition *гай* (see 6.1.10 – page 167).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Жапше <u>кайык семын</u> чонгештен эрта.                      | Time flies <u>as quickly as a bird</u> .                              |
| Йолташем, кумло ияш гынат, <u>йоча семын</u><br>куанен мошта. | Even if my friend is thirty, s/he can be happy<br><u>as a child</u> . |

b) It is used in the meaning of 'like, as', similar, but not identical, to the meaning of the comparative case with the suffix *-ла* (see 2.4.8 – page 91). While the comparative case expresses a likeness, this postposition more expresses a capacity in which someone or something carries out an action, or is subject to an action.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Туныктышо семын</u> тудо мылам келша, но<br><u>айдеме семын</u> мый тудым ом умыло. | I like him/her <u>as a teacher</u> , but <u>as a person</u> I<br>don't understand him/her. |
| <u>Пөлек семын</u> «Шочмо кечет дене» мурым<br>тылат колтем.                           | <u>As a present</u> , I am sending you the song<br>"Happy Birthday to You".                |

c) It can mean 'according to, in accordance with'.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Кертме семын</u> тыланда полшена.     | We are helping you <u>as best we can</u> .        |
| <u>Ўжмыда семын</u> куд шагатлан тольым. | I came at six, <u>following your invitation</u> . |

d) It can mean 'as' in a temporal sense – i.e., in accordance with an activity or a development.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Шокшемдыме семын</u> пушенге-влак<br>ужаргаш тўналыныт.               | <u>As it got warmer</u> , the trees started turning<br>green.                          |
| <u>Пайрем лишемме семын</u> кевытлаште<br>калык шуқырак да шуқырак коеш. | <u>As the celebration draws nearer</u> , more and<br>more people appear in the stores. |

e) It can indicate that something is carried out in a certain manner, or in a number of manners. It can follow numerals or pronouns in the genitive. Possessive suffixes can be used instead of pronouns in the same meaning.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тиде почеламутым <u>тўрлө семын</u> умылаш<br>лиеш.            | This poem can be understood <u>many ways</u> .                          |
| Эрге аважым колыштын огыл, <u>шке</u><br><u>семынже</u> ыштен. | The son didn't listen to his mother, and did it<br><u>his own way</u> . |

f) It can be marked with possessive suffixes and used in the meaning of 'to oneself, in one's mind'.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Семынже</u> тудо мом шона гын?                    | Just what is s/he thinking?   |
| <u>Семынем</u> иктым шонем, а ойлем йөршын<br>весым. | I think one thing <u>to myself</u> , but say something<br>completely different. |

### 6.1.68. *сынан* 'having the shape, having the appearance'

Phrases created with this postposition are used as adjectives. It does not take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Прозо сынан почеламутым лудаш йӧратет мо?  | Do you like reading <u>prose poetry</u> ?           |
| Мый денем пырля тыйын сынан рвезе тунемеш. | A <u>boy like you</u> is studying together with me. |

#### 6.1.69. *мич* ‘full of, filling (completely)’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Пайремышке дӧрт тич калык погынен.     | A <u>houseful</u> of people gathered for the celebration. |
| Ковам сумкашкеш йокмам тич оптен пуэн. | My grandmother <u>filled</u> my bag with guest presents.  |

#### 6.1.70. *тореш* ‘opposite; across; opposed; crosswise’

This postposition can follow nominative or dative forms of nouns.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Йолгорно тореш йӧрлшӧ пушенге кия. ~<br>Йолгорнылан тореш йӧрлшӧ пушенге кия | A fallen tree lies <u>across</u> the footpath.   |
| Ме тидлан тореш улына.   | We are <u>against</u> this.                      |
| Ача-ават марла кайыметлан тореш улыт.  | Your parents are <u>opposed</u> to you marrying. |
| Ӱстелым тореш шындыза.   | Place the table <u>crosswise</u> .               |

#### 6.1.71. *тӱрысӧ* ‘on the edge, close to, near to’

Phrases created with this postposition are used as adjectives. It does not connect to pronouns and does not take possessive suffixes.

|                                       |   |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| Кова ден кочам Юл тӱрысӧ ялыште илат. | My grandparents live <u>in a village at the Volga</u> . |
|---------------------------------------|---|

#### 6.1.72. *укеште* ‘in the absence of, for lack of, without’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| Сакыр укеште кофем мӱй дене йӱам.   | If there is <u>no sugar</u> , I drink coffee with honey. |
| Мыйын укеште Иванов вуйлатыше лиеш. | <u>In my absence</u> , Ivanov will be the leader.        |
| Кочкаш укеште кукшо киндат тамле.   | <u>In absence of food</u> , dry bread is tasty too.      |

#### 6.1.73. *улмаште* ‘in presence of, if there is, if there are’

This postposition does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|                                  |   |
|----------------------------------|---|
| Шуко паша улмаште жап писын кая. | Time passes quickly <u>when there’s a lot to do</u> . |
| Тыйын улмаште илашат веселарак.  | Life is more fun <u>with you</u> .                    |

#### 6.1.74. *утла* ‘more than’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Моркышко Йошкар-Ола гыч <u>кок шагат утла</u> кудалынна. | We drove <u>more than two hours</u> from Yoshkar-Ola to Morko (Russian <i>Морки</i> ). |
| Тышеч ялна марте 100 меңге але <u>утла</u> .             | It’s 100 kilometers or <u>more</u> from here to our village.                           |

#### 6.1.75. *чоло* ‘about, approximately, roughly, around, circa’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes. It is synonymous with *наре* – see 6.1.55 – page 180.



|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Нуно <u>коло ий чоло</u> пырля илат. | They’ve been living together for about <u>twenty years</u> . |
|--------------------------------------|--|

### 6.1.76. *шотеш* ‘for, as, instead of; on an account; at the expense of’

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Пөлек шотеш</u> мылам пырысым налыныт.                         | They got me a cat <u>as a present</u> .  |
| Эргыч кызытат <u>тыйын шотеш</u> ила, пашам ок ыште.              | Your son is now living <u>at your expense</u> , he isn’t working.                                  |
| <u>Тұлымō шотеш</u> ялысе калык тудлан муным, ұйым, торыкым пуэн. | <u>Instead of paying him/her</u> , the people of the village gave him/her eggs, butter, and curds. |

### 6.1.77. *шотышто* ‘regarding, concerning; as, in the capacity of; among’

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Студент-влак <u>экзамен шотышто</u> туныктышо деч консультацийым йоднешт. | The students want to ask the teacher for a consultation <u>regarding the exam</u> . |
| Вуйлатыше дене <u>тендан шотышто</u> кутыренна.                           | I talked to the boss <u>concerning you</u> .  |
| <u>Тамакым ужалыме шотышто</u> у төртык лектын.                           | A new law was passed <u>regarding the selling of tobacco</u> .                      |

### 6.1.78. *шумеш(ке)* ‘to, up to, to, as far as; till, until, up to, to’

This postposition is not used with pronouns and does not generally take possessive suffixes. In its spatial meaning, it governs the nominative or illative case (see 2.4.6 – page 84), or the postposition *дек(е)* ‘to’ (see 6.1.19 – page 169). In its temporal meaning, it governs the nominative.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Йолташем мыйым <u>вокзалыш шумеш</u> ужатен.    | My friend accompanied me <u>to the train station</u> .            |
| Палымем дене йўдвошт <u>эр шумеш</u> кутыренна. | My acquaintance and I talked all night long <u>till morning</u> . |

### 6.1.79. *шумлык* ‘because of, due to; as regards, concerning, about’

This postposition is in one of its meanings synonymous with *кōpa*, see 6.1.32 – page 176 – and *верч*, see 6.1.6 – page 166, and in its other meaning synonymous with *нерген*, see 6.1.57 – page 181.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ялысе калык дене <u>тошто йўла шумлык</u> кутыренна.             | We talked to the villagers <u>about the old customs</u> .            |
| <u>Тыйын шумлык</u> веле вес олаш илаш кусненам.                 | I moved to another city <u>just because of you</u> .                 |
| Школыштына <u>марий йылмым туныктымо шумлык</u> погынымаш эртен. | A meeting was held at our school <u>about the teaching of Mari</u> . |

## 6.2. Postpositions that form ‘families’

As discussed above in n 6.0.2 – page 163 – numerous postpositions form ‘families’, the individual members of which can be roughly classified into a three-part directional system indicating ‘motion toward’, ‘no motion’, and ‘motion away from’. After some introductory remarks, this chapter will provide an overview of the most important families of postpositions, sorted by the stem (in many cases originally a noun or adjective) the members of the family share.

The suffixes attached to the stem indicate whether ‘motion toward’, ‘no motion’, or ‘motion away from’ is meant. To some extent these suffixes are those used in the normal nominal system (illative *-u(кE)*, lative *-eu*, inessive *-umE*; see 2.4.6 – page 84, 2.4.7 – page 88, 2.4.5 – page 82), complemented by the postposition *зыч* – see 6.1.17 – page 169. In most cases, however, suffixes

are used that are no longer productive in nominal declension. One can differentiate between a 'productive row' and 'unproductive row':

| Unproductive row |     | Productive row |     | Directionality   |
|------------------|-----|----------------|-----|------------------|
| -к(Е)            | -ан | -ш(кЕ)         | -еш | motion towards   |
| -н(Е)            |     | -штЕ           |     | no motion        |
| -ч(ЫН)           |     | ... гыч        |     | motion away from |

Note that the suffix *-ан*, like its productive counterpart *-еш*, is used to create lative forms that can indicate 'motion toward' as well as 'no motion'. As regards the usage of lative forms, see 2.4.7 – page 88.

Some families of adverbs of space use suffixes from the unproductive row, while others use forms from the productive row.

1. Unproductive row, e.g., *шенгел* 'back, rear, hind (noun/adjective)' →

|            |          |             |
|------------|----------|-------------|
| шенгек(е)  | шенгелан | (to) behind |
| шенгелне   |          | behind      |
| шенгеч(ын) |          | from behind |

2. Productive row, e.g., *көргө* 'inside, interior' →

|            |        |                 |
|------------|--------|-----------------|
| көргыш(кө) | көргөш | (deep) into     |
| көргыштө   |        | within          |
| көргө гыч  |        | from the inside |

In some cases, the exact realization of the suffixes is somewhat unpredictable

**Short and Long Forms:** Numerous postpositions formed by suffixes of the unproductive row have short and long forms, e.g., *шенгеч* ~ *шенгечын* 'from behind', *воктен* ~ *воктене* 'beside'. The short and long forms are equivalent in meaning. Note that short forms are not always possible due to the restrictions of pronunciation: for example, there is no short form of the adverb *шенгелне* 'at the back'.

**Adverb ~ Postposition:** As is the case for postpositions in general (see above in 6.0 – page 158), postpositions forming families can often also be used as adverbs. In the simplest term, if a word that can serve as a postposition or an adverb appears after a post word and/or with a possessive suffix, it is considered a postposition (e.g., *пөрт шенгелне* 'behind the house', *шенгелнем* 'behind me'). If it appears without a host word or a possessive suffix, it is considered an adverb (e.g., *шенгелне* 'at the back').

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Изи рвезе йолташыж деч <u>пөрт шенгеке</u> шылын.                | The little boy hid from his friend <u>behind the house</u> .                        |
| Кинотеатрыште: «Айда <u>шенгеке</u> шинчына: тушеч сайрак коеш». | In the movie theater: "Let's sit <u>at the back</u> , we'll see better from there." |
| <u>Омса шенгелне</u> уна вучен шога.                             | A guest is waiting <u>behind the door</u> .   |
| <u>Шенгелне</u> шинчыше пörъеным те паледа мо?                   | Do you know the man sitting <u>at the back</u> ?                                    |
| Кече <u>пыл шенгелан</u> йомо.                                   | The sun disappeared <u>behind a cloud</u> .   |
| Изам почеш ошкыл ом шукто, <u>шенгелан</u> кодам.                | I can't keep up with my big brother, I'm <u>lagging behind</u> .                    |
| <u>Телевизор шенгеч</u> пырыс онча.                              | A cat is looking out <u>from behind the TV</u> .                                    |
| <u>Шенгечын</u> ала-кө мыйым ваче гыч пералтен.                  | Somebody hit me on the shoulder <u>from behind</u> .                                |

The adverbial usage of many words introduced in this section will be revisited in 8.2.1 – page 312.

**Separative forms:** The separative forms often also have a PROLATIVE meaning, and mark motion past the reference point.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Кызыт ме Чавайнур <u>ял воктечын</u> кудал эртена. | We're now driving <u>past the village of Chavaynur</u> . |
| Чодыра <u>шенггеч</u> кече лектеш.                 | The sun rose <u>behind the forest</u> .                  |

Also note the alternative unproductive separative suffix *-ым*, formally identical with the accusative suffix (see 2.4.2 – page 71), which only is used in the case of very few postpositions forming families.

**Weakened references:** Forms marking 'motion towards' can be coupled with the clitic in *-ла* (see 9.1.4 – page 331) – and in consequence have a weakened spatial reference, indicating that motion is carried out in the direction of the target, but not all the way into/up to it. For example, *шенггек(е)* 'behind' → *шенггекыла* 'towards the back of something'.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Сүретым мый <u>шкаф шенггек</u> шылтен пыштем. | I'll hide the picture <u>behind the closet</u> .        |
| Пий <u>пакча шенггекыла</u> куржын.            | The dog ran off <u>towards the back of the garden</u> . |

**Derived adjectives:** Forms marking 'no motion' can be coupled with the adjective derivational suffix *-сЕ* (see 11.6.3 – page 383) – to form adjectives that maintain some postpositional characteristics – they are placed after a noun, and form compound adjectives with it. For example, *шенггелне* 'behind' → *шенггелнысе* 'behind (adjective)': *пöрт шенггелнысе пушенге* 'tree behind a house'.

**Usage with *дек(е)* and *деч(ын)*:** A number of postpositions that fall into this category can, or must, be preceded by the postposition *дек(е)* 'to', or *деч(ын)* 'from': for example, *лиш(ке)* 'closer to' can optionally be preceded by *дек(е)*, while *торашке* 'away from' must be preceded by *деч(ын)* to be used as a postposition:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Изи ўдыр <u>слон (деке) лишке</u> мияш лўдын. | The little girl was afraid of going <u>close to the elephant</u> . |
| Эргым, <u>мöнгö деч торашке</u> ит кай.       | Son, don't go far <u>from home</u> .                               |

It will be mentioned in regard to individual postpositions if they can, or must, occur in combination with *дек(е)* 'to' or *деч(ын)*.

### 6.2.1. *вел* 'side; area'

|  |              |                      |
|--|--------------|----------------------|
| <u>век(е), велке, вельш(ке)</u>          | велан, велеш | towards              |
| <u>велне, вельште</u>                    |              | on the side, towards |
| <u>веч(ын), велым, велч(ын), вел гыч</u> |              | from the side, from  |

Note that the lative form *велеш* is primarily used in a temporal sense 'towards, before'.

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Йоча-влак <u>ер велке</u> куржыт.    | The children run <u>towards the lake</u> .           |
| <u>Клуб велне</u> музык шокта.       | Music can be heard <u>around the club</u> .          |
| Машина <u>кевыт велан</u> шогалын.   | The car stopped <u>at the store</u> .                |
| <u>Теңыз вечын</u> йүштö мардеж пуа. | There's a cold wind blowing in <u>from the sea</u> . |

### 6.2.2. *вокте*l-

|                   |          |                      |
|-------------------|----------|----------------------|
| <u>воктек(е)</u>  | воктелан | (to) beside, next to |
| <u>воктен(е)</u>  |          | beside, next to      |
| <u>воктеч(ын)</u> |          | (away) from          |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Оля <u>омса воктеке</u> шогалын да колыштеш.       | Olya went <u>to the door</u> and is listening.           |
| Коча ден ковам <u>кугу чодыра воктене</u> илат.    | My grandparents live <u>by a large forest</u> .          |
| Эчук <u>окна воктелан</u> шинчын да лудаш тўнале.  | Echuk sat down <u>by the window</u> and started reading. |
| Кызыт ме <u>Чавайнур ял воктечын</u> кудал эртена. | We're now driving <u>past the village of Chavaynur</u> . |

### 6.2.3. йымал 'bottom, foot, lower part; lower'

|           |         |                        |
|-----------|---------|------------------------|
| йымак(е)  | йымалан | (to) under, underneath |
| йымалне   |         | under, underneath      |
| йымач(ын) |         | out from under         |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Кугу йўр деч <u>пушенге йымаке</u> шылынна. | We hid from the heavy rain <u>under a tree</u> . |
| Ўстел <u>йымалне</u> ала-кўн ручкаже кия.   | Someone's pen is lying <u>under the table</u> .  |
| Машинам <u>дум йымалан</u> шога.            | My car is <u>under the snow</u> .                |
| Мланде <u>йымач</u> памаш лектеш.           | A spring comes up <u>from under the ground</u> . |

### 6.2.4. кокла 'distance, gap'

|            |        |                      |
|------------|--------|----------------------|
| коклаш(ке) | коклаш | into the middle      |
| коклаште   |        | in the middle, among |
| кокла гыч  |        | from among           |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ивук <u>Ольош ден Женя коклашке</u> шинчын.           | Ivuk sat down <u>between Olyosh and Zhenya</u> .               |
| Тўрлў кагаз <u>коклаште</u> паспорттым кычалам.       | I'm looking for (my) passport <u>among the many papers</u> .   |
| Изи ўдыр аваж деч <u>пушенге коклаш</u> шылын.        | The little girl hid from her mother <u>among the trees</u> .   |
| <u>Ныл вариант кокла гыч</u> ик чын вашмутым ойырыза. | Find the one right answer <u>from among the four options</u> . |

### 6.2.5. көргө 'inside, interior, inner part'

|            |        |                 |
|------------|--------|-----------------|
| көргыш(кө) | көргеш | (deep) into     |
| көргыштө   |        | within          |
| көргө гыч  |        | from the inside |

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Уна-влаклан: «Эртыза, <u>пөрт көргышкө</u> пурыза».          | To guests: "Come in, come <u>into the house</u> ."              |
| <u>Компьютер көргыштө</u> ала-мо пудырген.                   | Something broke <u>inside the computer</u> .                    |
| Телефоном <u>сумка көргеш</u> кодын, а сумкам шолышт каенит. | My phone stayed <u>in my bag</u> , and my bag was stolen.       |
| Пелйүд гоным <u>шкаф көргө гыч</u> тўкалтыме йўк шоктыш.     | At midnight, knocking was heard <u>from inside the closet</u> . |

6.16. Insert the fitting postposition derived from the given stem.

1. Марий книга ... кудыжым лудаш темлет? (кокла)
2. Кече пелтыме деч пушенге ... ўмылеш шична. (ўымал – lative or illative)
3. Монча ... пеш шокшо – шўлашат огеш лий. (кўргў)
4. Колызо-влак энгер ... кол кучаш каят. (вел)
5. Пўкен ўстел ... шога. (воктел-)
6. Сравочым эре кўсен ... пыштем. (кўргў – lative or illative)
7. Ўстелым пырдыж ... шогалтен кодышна. (воктел- – lative or inessive)
8. Лум ... икымше пеледыш-влак лектыт. (ўымал)
9. Олыкмарий да курыкмарий йылме ... могай ойыртем? (кокла)
10. Ушкал-влак олык ... мўнгў толыт. (вел)

### 6.2.6. кўдыл-

|                    |          |                   |
|--------------------|----------|-------------------|
| кўдык(ў), (кўдынъ) | кўдылан, | closer to, beside |
| кўдылнў, кўдынъ    | (кўдынъ) | close to, beside  |
| кўдыч(ын)          |          | away, off         |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Йоча <u>аваж кўдык</u> миен шинчын.                   | The child went and sat <u>beside its mother</u> .                      |
| <u>Окна кўдылнў</u> ломбо пелед шога.                 | A bird cherry tree is blooming <u>close to the window</u> .            |
| <u>Пўрт кўдылан</u> ковам пеледышым шынден.           | My grandmother planted <u>flowers close to the house</u> .             |
| Изи ўдыр <u>йўратыме модышыж кўдыч</u> коран ок керт. | The little girl can't tear herself away <u>from her favorite toy</u> . |
| Изи рвезе <u>ачаже кўдынъ</u> шога.                   | The little boy is standing <u>beside his father</u> .                  |
| <u>Тыйын кўдынъ</u> шинчаш лиеш мо?                   | May (I) sit <u>beside you</u> ?  |

### 6.2.7. кыдал 'waist; middle'

|           |         |                 |
|-----------|---------|-----------------|
| кыдалке   | кыдалан | into the middle |
| кыдалне   |         | in the middle   |
| кыдач(ын) |         | from the middle |

Note that the form *кыдалке* is rare in usage.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Унам вашлияш <u>ял кыдалке</u> лекна.             | We went <u>to the middle of the village</u> to meet the guests.                         |
| <u>Июль кыдалне</u> марий-влак Сўремым пайремлат. | Maris celebrate <i>Sūrem</i> <u>in the middle of July</u> .                             |
| <u>Корно кыдалан</u> машина шогале.               | The car stopped <u>in the middle of the road</u> .                                      |
| <u>Курык кыдач</u> олыкышко памаш йога.           | The water from the spring flows <u>from the middle of the mountain</u> into the meadow. |

### 6.2.8. лиш-

|                  |       |                       |
|------------------|-------|-----------------------|
| (дек(е)) лиш(ке) | лишан | nearer to, closer to  |
| лишне            |       | near to, close to     |
| лишыч(ын)        |       | from near, from close |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Эргым, <u>тиде пий лишке</u> ит мий: тудо пурлын кертеш.  | Son, don't go close <u>to this dog</u> , it could bite.                                      |
| Лена начар ужеш, садлан <u>сцене лишке</u> шинчын. ~<br>Лена начар ужеш, садлан <u>сцене деке лишке</u> шинчын. | Lena has bad eyes, so she sat <u>close to the stage</u> .                                    |
| <u>Шкетан театр лишне</u> сай пӧлек кевыт уло: тушто марий сувенирым налаш лиеш.                                | There's a nice gift shop <u>close to Shketan Theater</u> , you can buy Mari souvenirs there. |
| Мончам ме <u>ер лишан</u> чоҥенна.  | We built a bathhouse <u>close to the lake</u> .  |
| Тудо <u>Йошкар-Ола лишыч</u> улеш.  | S/he's <u>from close to Yoshkar-Ola</u> .  |

Adverbials can occur between *дек(е)* and *лиш(ке)*, e.g.: *сцене деке утыждене лишке* 'too close to the stage'.

When *дек(е) лиш(ке)* is used not to express a motion but a position close to something, *дек(е)* cannot be omitted. This usage is, however, comparatively rare.

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| <u>Окна деке лишке</u> ит шого.      | Don't stand <u>close to the window</u> . |
| Сакар <u>эргыже дек лишке</u> лийын. | Sakar was <u>close to his son</u> .      |

### 6.2.9. *лонга* 'thicket'

|                   |        |                                 |
|-------------------|--------|---------------------------------|
| <u>лонгаш(ке)</u> | лонгаш | into the middle of              |
| лонгаште          |        | amidst, in the middle of        |
| лонга гыч         |        | from amidst, from the middle of |

|                                      |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| <u>Укш лонгашке</u> кайык шинчын.    | A bird sat down <u>in the middle of the branches</u> .        |
| <u>Чодыра лонгаште</u> шӱшпык мура.  | A nightingale is singing <u>in the middle of the forest</u> . |
| <u>Пырыс кӱкшӧ шудо лонгаш</u> йомо. | The cat disappeared <u>in the high grass</u> .                |
| <u>Пыл лонга гыч</u> тылзе онча.     | The moon is shining <u>from among the clouds</u> .            |

### 6.2.10. *могыр* 'body; side, direction'

|                     |         |                                   |
|---------------------|---------|-----------------------------------|
| <u>могырыш(ко)</u>  | могыреш | in the direction, towards         |
| могырышто           |         | on the side, towards              |
| могырым / могыр гыч |         | from the side, from the direction |

Note that the form *могыреш* is rare in usage.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Ялна могырышко</u> автобус огеш кошт.                                     | No bus goes <u>in the direction of our village</u> .  |
| <u>Ола могырышто</u> салют йӱк шокта.  | A firework can be heard <u>towards the town</u> .   |
| Изаже энгерын пурла серышкыже куснен, шольыжо <u>шола сер могыреш</u> кодын. | The elder brother crossed over to the right bank of the river, the younger brother stayed <u>on the left bank</u> . |
| <u>Юл могырым</u> шем пыл лишемеш.   | A black cloud is approaching from <u>the Volga</u> .  |

6.17. Insert the fitting postposition derived from the given stem.

1. Футбол матч деч вара стадион ... метро велке шуко калык кая. (могыр)
2. Кылмыше рвезе тул ... вераңын. (кўдыл-)
3. Курык ... эңгер-влак писе да виян улыт. (лонга)
4. Октябрь ... , 10–15-ше числаште, икымше лум возеш. (кыдал)
5. Изи Марина ушкал ... мяш лўдеш. (лиш-)
6. Пайремым эртараш ял ... тўн уремыште изирак сценым вераңденит. (кыдал – lative or inessive)
7. Шудо ... мераң кудал лектын. (лонга)
8. Мый аэропорт ... илем, садлан самолётым кажне кечын ужам. (лиш-)
9. Пийна поснак ачанам йўрата: эре тудын ... улеш. (кўдыл-)
10. Унагудышто мыланна сай пөлем логалын: окнаже тенгыз ... лектеш. (могыр)

### 6.2.11. мўндыр 'distant, faraway, remote'

|                |              |          |
|----------------|--------------|----------|
| деч мўндырк(ө) | деч мўндыран | far from |
| деч мўндырнө   |              | far from |
| -              |              | -        |

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Лышташыже <u>пушенге деч мўндыркө</u> ок воч.      | Leaves don't fall <u>far from</u> trees.          |
| Йошкар-Ола <u>Моско деч мўндырнө</u> верланен.     | Yoshkar-Ola is <u>far from</u> Moscow.            |
| Серге <u>марий кундем деч мўндыран</u> илаш кодын. | Serge ended up <u>living far from</u> Mari lands. |

Adverbials can occur between *деч* and the form of *мўндыр*, e.g.: *сцене деч утыждене мўндырнө* 'too far from the stage'.

### 6.2.12. ончыл 'front (noun, adjective)'

|           |         |                          |
|-----------|---------|--------------------------|
| ончык(о)  | ончылан | (to) in front of, before |
| ончылно   |         | in front of, before      |
| ончыч(ын) |         | from in front of         |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Метрий <u>класс ончыко</u> лектын шогале да почеламутым лудын пуыш. | Metriy went <u>to the front of the class</u> and recited a poem. |
| <u>Театр ончылно</u> шуко калык шога.                               | Many people are standing <u>in front of the theater</u> .        |
| Таксиште: «Теве <u>тиде пөрт ончылан</u> шогалтыза, пожалуйста».    | In a taxi: "Please stop <u>in front of this house</u> ."         |
| <u>Капкана ончыч</u> пошкудын машинаже кудал эртыш.                 | The neighbor's car passed <u>by our gate</u> .                   |

### 6.2.13. өрдыж 'side'

|               |                |                      |
|---------------|----------------|----------------------|
| (деч) өрдыжкө | (деч) өрдыжан, | to the side, outside |
| (деч) өрдыжтө | (деч) өрдыжеш  | at the side, outside |
| -             |                | -                    |

Note the facultative usage of *деч*.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Машинам колын, <u>корно өрдыжкө</u> коранна.<br>~ Машинам колын, <u>корно деч өрдыжкө</u><br>коранна. | Hearing the car, we went <u>away from the road</u> .          |
| <u>Ял өрдыжтө</u> кугорно эрта.   | A large road passes <u>by the village</u> .                   |
| <u>Пөртна деч өрдыжтө</u> корным ачалат.  | They are fixing the road <u>outside our house</u> .           |
| Турист-влак палаткым <u>корно өрдыжеш</u><br>веранденыт.  | The tourists put up the tent <u>at the side of the road</u> . |

Adverbials can occur between *деч* and the form of *өрдыж*, e.g.: *сцене деч вич метр өрдыжтө* 'five meters from the stage'.

#### 6.2.14. *нокшел* 'middle, center (noun, adjective)'

|  |          |  |
|--|----------|--|
| <u>покшек(е)</u>   | нокшелан | to the middle of   |
| <u>покшелне</u>  |          | in the middle of   |
| <u>покшеч(ын)</u>  |          | from the middle of   |
| Киндым <u>үстел покшеке</u> шынде.                       |          | Put the bread <u>in the middle of the table</u> .                          |
| <u>Пөлем покшелне</u> үстел шинча.                       |          | There's a table <u>in the middle of the room</u> .                         |
| <u>Площадь покшелан</u> у чапкүм шогалтеныт.             |          | A new statue was erected <u>in the middle of the square</u> .              |
| <u>Зал покшеч</u> сценышке ала-кө пеледышым<br>кудалтен. |          | Somebody threw flowers onto the stage <u>from the middle of the hall</u> . |

6.18. Insert the fitting postposition derived from the given stem.

- У ийлан кудывече ... верысе йоча-влаклан кожым шогалтенна. (*нокшел* – lative or illative)
- Ял деч ... кенгежлан археолог-влак верланеныт. (*өрдыж* – lative or inessive)
- Акам мемнан деч ... ила: туддек поезд дене 20 шагат кудалман. (*мүндыр*)
- Концерт мучаште калык ... чыла артист лектын. (*ончыл*)
- Книгам тудо тўңалтыш гыч огыл, а ... лудеш. (*нокшел*)
- Эчук, кишкым ужын, корно деч ... төршталтен. (*өрдыж*)
- Мемнан окна ... кече мучко калык эртен коштеш. (*ончыл*)
- Кок эл кокласе кўвар ... чекым оролышо-влак шогат. (*нокшел*)
- Такси метро ... шогалын. (*ончыл* – lative or inessive)
- Мемнан этнограф-влак Марий Эл деч ... кудалнешт – уралысе марий-влак деке. (*мүндыр*)

#### 6.2.15. *тора* 'distant place, distance; distant, far, remote'

|                  |              |                          |
|------------------|--------------|--------------------------|
| <u>тораш(ке)</u> | торан, тораш | away from, far away from |
| <u>тораште</u>   |              | in a distance            |
| <u>тора гыч</u>  |              | from a distance          |

These forms are placed after measures of distance:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Шүдө метр тораште</u> кугорно эрта.        | A large road passes <u>a hundred meters from here</u> .          |
| Ушменым <u>50 сантиметр торан</u> шындыман.   | Beets should be planted <u>at a distance of 50 centimeters</u> . |
| Уна-влак <u>тўжем менге тора гыч</u> толыныт. | The guests came <u>from a thousand kilometers away</u> .         |

If a reference point is given (to/from which the distance is), the postposition *деч* is placed after the reference point.



Тудо ялна деч коло менге торашке илаш куснен.

S/he moved away to live 20 kilometers from our village.

The measure of distance can be omitted, in which case *деч* and the form of *тора* are placed after the reference point:

Эргым, кудывече деч торашке ит кай.

Son, don't go far from the yard.

Ковам Юл деч тораште огыл ила.

My grandmother lives not far from the Volga.

Машина пöртна деч тораш шогалын.

The car is parked far from our house.

Adverbials can occur between *деч* and the form of *тора*, e.g.: *nöpm деч neu тораште* 'very far from the house'.

### 6.2.16. *тура* 'steep'

|                 |              |                           |
|-----------------|--------------|---------------------------|
| тура, тураш(ке) | туран, тураш | to, up to                 |
| тураште         |              | around, close to, near to |
| тура гыч        |              | from close to             |

Кечываллан ялна турашке миен шуынна.

By noon we were close to our village.

Йолташем дене клуб тураште вашлийынна.

I met my friend at the club.

Йöдлан ер туран малаш кодна.

We spent the night close to the lake.

Вес корнывож тура гыч корно начар лиеш.

Around the next fork the road gets worse.

### 6.2.17. *ёмбал* 'top, surface'

|           |         |                             |
|-----------|---------|-----------------------------|
| ёмбак(е)  | ёмбалан | onto, on top of             |
| ёмбалне   |         | on, on top of               |
| ёмбач(ын) |         | from the top of, from above |

Иян корно ёмбаке телым ошмам шават.

Sand is spread on icy roads in winter.

Ял ёмбалне мужыр йöксö чонгештен эртен.

A pair of swans flew past over the village.

Кевытыште омса ёмбалан паша радамым мари йылме денат возышна.

We wrote the opening hours of the store on the door in Mari as well.

Йоча-влак мланде ёмбач олмам погат.

The children are picking up apples from the ground.

### 6.2.18. *шенгел* 'backside, back; back, rear, hind'

|            |          |                   |
|------------|----------|-------------------|
| шенгек(е)  | шенгелан | (to) behind       |
| шенгелне   |          | behind            |
| шенгеч(ын) |          | (out) from behind |

Изи рвезе йолташыж деч пöрт шенгеке шылын.

The little boy hid from his friend behind the house.

Омса шенгелне уна вучен шога.

A guest is waiting behind the door.

Кече пыл шенгелан йомо.

The sun disappeared behind a cloud.

Телевизор шенгеч пырыс онча.

A cat is looking out from behind the TV.

## 6.3. Compound postpositions

Compound postpositions conventionally consist of the postposition *деч(ын)* 'from' (see 6.1.22 – page 172) – and a second element, e.g., *деч носна* 'without (lit. from separate)'.

When a possessive suffix is attached to a compound postposition, it is generally placed on the first element, *деч*, e.g., *мый дечем носна* 'without me'.

Note that this overview does not include such compound postpositions as *деч мўндырнõ* 'far from' that constitute parts of families of postpositions. These are covered in the discussion of the individual 'families', see above in 6.2 – page 185. Also in the case of these compound postpositions, possessive suffixes are attached to *деч*, rather than the second word: *мый дечем мўндырнõ* 'far from me'.

### 6.3.1. *деч вара* 'after'

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Паша деч вара</u> нуно концертыш каят. | They're going to a concert <u>after work</u> . |
| Мончаш мый <u>тый дечет вара</u> пурем.   | I'll go into the bathhouse <u>after you</u> .  |
| <u>Кочмо деч вара</u> кофем йўына.        | We'll drink coffee <u>after eating</u> .       |

If one wishes to specify the amount of time after, it can either be placed between *деч* and *вара*, or directly before the passive participle.

|  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| пашам пытарыме деч <u>кок шагат</u> вара | <u>two hours</u> after finishing work |
| пашам <u>кок шагат</u> пытарыме деч вара |                                       |

Derived forms: Note the adjectival derivation *деч вараце*, using the adjectival derivational suffix *-це* (see 11.6.3 – page 383): *сар деч вараце* 'postwar', etc.

### 6.3.2. *деч гоч* 'more than'

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Кухньына изи: тушко <u>кандаш-лу ег деч гоч</u> огешат пуро. | Our kitchen is small, <u>more than eight to ten people</u> won't fit into it. |
| <u>Тый дечет гоч</u> поро айдеме укеат.                      | There is <u>nobody kinder than you</u> .                                      |
| <u>Кочмо деч гоч</u> тудо малымым веле йõрата.               | The only thing s/he loves <u>more than eating</u> is sleeping.                |

### 6.3.3. *деч моло* 'except for, other than'

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Шõр деч моло</u> холодильникиште нимат уке.         | There is <u>nothing but milk</u> in the fridge.                 |
| <u>Мемнан деч моло</u> тылат нигõ полшен огеш керт.    | Nobody <u>but us</u> can help you.                              |
| <u>Йылмым шымлыме деч моло</u> мылам нимат онгай огыл. | <u>Aside from researching languages</u> , nothing interests me. |

Phrases with *деч моло* can be used nominally, and can take case suffixes:

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Йолташем деч молым</u> тыште нигõм ом пале.   | <u>Aside from my friend</u> , I know nobody here.    |
| <u>Тый дечет моылаң</u> ом ўшане.                | I trust <u>nobody but you</u> .                      |
| <u>Ольош деч моын</u> тыгай машина олаштына уке. | <u>Nobody but Olyosh</u> has such a car in our town. |

### 6.3.4. *деч ожно* 'up to, till, until, before'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>1917-ше ий деч ожно</u> олаште пеш шагал марий илен.                 | <u>Before 1917</u> very few Maris lived in town.  |
| <u>Тудын деч ожно</u> лудын-возен моштышо егат шагал лийын.             | <u>Before that</u> there were few people that could read and write.                                 |
| <u>Руш кугыжанышыш ушымо деч ожно</u> марий мланде Озаң ханствыш пурен. | <u>Before becoming part of the Tsardom of Russia</u> , Mari lands belonged to the Khanate of Kazan. |

If one wishes to specify the amount of time before, it can either be placed between *деч* and *ожно*:

мемнан саман деч вич курым ожно | fifth century BCE

### 6.3.5. деч ончыч 'before'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Паша деч ончыч</u> мылам банкышке пурыман.                             | I need to go to the bank <u>before</u> work.                            |
| <u>Мемнан деч ончыч</u> тиде отрошто ик енат лийын огыл. Ме икымше улына. | <u>Before us</u> not a person had been to this island. We're the first. |
| <u>Кочмо деч ончыч</u> кидым мушман.                                      | You should wash your hands <u>before</u> you eat.                       |

If one wishes to specify the amount of time before, it can either be placed between *деч* and *ончыч*, or directly before the passive participle.

пашам пытарыме деч кок шагат ончыч | two hours before finishing work  
пашам кок шагат пытарыме деч ончыч

Derived forms: Note the adjectival derivation *деч ончычсо*, using the adjectival derivational suffix *-сЕ* (see 11.6.3 – page 383): *сар деч ончычсо* 'prewar', etc.

### 6.3.6. деч посна 'without; except for, but'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Кофе деч посна</u> тунемын она керт.                 | We can't study <u>without</u> coffee.   |
| <u>Тый дечет посна</u> илен ом керт.                    | I can't live <u>without</u> you.  |
| <u>Текстым лудмо деч посна</u> эше сочиненийым возыман. | <u>In addition to reading a text</u> , (I) also still need to write an essay. |

### 6.3.7. деч утла(рак) 'more than'

The form *деч утла* is generally only used in combinations with a specified amount (e.g., *пел шагат* 'half an hour', *кок менге* 'two kilometers'). The form *деч утларак* can be used here as well, but can also be attached to other nouns, pronouns, etc.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Автобусым <u>пел шагат деч утла (утларак)</u> вученна. | We waited for the bus <u>more than half an hour</u> . |
| Тый <u>мый дечем утларак</u> ушан улат.                | You're smarter <u>than me</u> .                       |

Note the somewhat flexible word order here – additional elements, for example an object, can occur between *деч* and *утларак*:

Лудмым телевизорым ончымо деч утларак йöратем. ~  
Телевизорым ончымо деч лудмым утларак йöратем. | I like reading more than watching TV.

## 7. Verbs

### 7.0. General remarks and verbal stem

#### 7.0.1. General remarks

The verb in the Mari language presents great morphological wealth and a fair number of grammatical categories. The task of mastering verbal morphology is made much easier by two facts, however: 1) The various verbal forms can to a very great extent be easily analyzed and effortlessly segmented. 2) There are only two irregular verbs in Mari, the verb *улаш* (-ам) 'to be' (see 7.5 – page 295) and the negation verb (see 7.3.1 – page 278) with its defective paradigm (lacking non-finite forms, for example).

The major difficulty of the Mari verb for foreign learners lies in the fact there every Mari verb belongs to one of two different conjugations. While the conjugation class can be identified from almost all verbal forms, finite and non-finite, it is not possible to discern which conjugation a verb belongs to by the infinitive – which serves as the dictionary form in most Mari dictionaries – which for all verbs ends in *-аш* (-яш). As it is necessary to know the conjugation of a verb in order to conjugate it correctly, it is crucial when learning a new Mari verb to learn which conjugation it belongs to. In this grammar, and many other materials on Mari, the conjugation class is marked by giving the ending of the first person singular present indicative after the infinitive: *-ам* (-ям) in the first conjugation and *-ем* (-эм) in the second conjugation. Some older dictionaries of Mari, and dialect dictionaries, use the first person singular as the dictionary form, from which the conjugation class is immediately visible.

Mari makes extensive use not only of finite verbal forms, but also of a wide range of non-finite forms (see 7.2 – page 250). The conjugation class of a verb is also relevant in the formation of non-finite forms.

#### 7.0.2. Verbal stem

A major concept for learners regarding the construction of Mari verbal forms, both finite and non-finite, is the verbal stem – an abstract form from which all inflected verbal forms, finite and non-finite, can be derived.

The following overview illustrates how the verbal stem can be reconstructed from the infinitive (an A-suffix that is attached to the verbal stem, see 1.6.3 – page 44), i.e., how learners can determine the verbal stem of verbs they look up in the dictionary.

**Conjugation I:** Verbal stems of the first conjugation end in consonants, or the vowels *-y/-ÿ*. The verbal stem is obtained by removing the ending of the infinitive *-аш*.

| Verb                          | Verbal stem |
|-------------------------------|-------------|
| лудаш (-ам) 'to read'         | луд-        |
| налаш (-ам) 'to take'         | нал-        |
| толаш (-ам) 'to come'         | тол-        |
| тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn'      | тунем-      |
| шуаш (-ам) 'to reach'         | шу-         |
| лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become' | лий-        |

**Simplified stem:** If the verbal stem of a first-conjugation verb ends in *-км-*, *-шк-*, *-чк-*, or *-нч-*, due to phonotactic restrictions (see 1.5.3 – page 24) the consonant cluster is simplified in syllable-final position – i.e., word-finally (see 7.1.0 – page 198), and when followed by a suffix that begins in a consonant (see 1.6.6 – page 48). Likewise, stem-final *-з-*, realized as *-з-* between vowels, alternates with *-ч-* in syllable-final position.

1. -КТ- → -К-
2. -ШК- → -Ш-
3. -ЧК- → -Ч-
4. -НЧ- → -Ч-
5. -З- → -Ч-

| Verb                       | Verbal stem | Altered stem |
|----------------------------|-------------|--------------|
| лектaш (-ам) 'to go'       | лект-       | лек-         |
| мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash'     | мушк-       | муш-         |
| кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat'      | кочк-       | коч-         |
| шинчаш (-ам) 'to sit down' | шинч-       | шич-         |
| возаш (-ам) 'to lie down'  | воз-        | воч-         |

Note that these are the only simplification/alternation rules. Other consonant clusters/consonants are not simplified or alternated (see 1.5.3 – page 24).

7.1. Give the verbal stems of the following first conjugation verbs. If the stem has an altered form, give this too.

1. модаш (-ам) 'to play'
2. муаш (-ам) 'to find'
3. кояш (-ям) 'to seem, to appear'
4. лукташ (-ам) 'to lead out'
5. колышташ (-ам) 'to listen'
6. йёаш (-ам) 'to drink'
7. кушкаш (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)'
8. кудааш (-ам) 'to drive, to ride'
9. шёаш (-ям) 'to rot'
10. керташ (-ам) 'to be able to'
11. камвозаш (-ам) 'to fall'
12. кёаш (-ам) 'to ripen'
13. ияш (-ям) 'to swim'
14. тёрвынчаш (-ам) 'to sneeze'
15. пёчкаш (-ам) 'to cut'

**Conjugation II:** The verbal stem of a second conjugation verb always ends in a vowel which is deleted by the infinitive suffix *-аш*, in accordance with the rules determining the manner in which A-suffixes (see 1.6.3 – page 44) are attached to their base words. To obtain the stem, remove the infinitive suffix and add *-E* in accordance with the rules of vowel harmony (see 1.5.8 – page 36).

| Verb                        | Verbal stem |
|-----------------------------|-------------|
| илаш (-ем) 'to live'        | иле-        |
| ышташ (-ем) 'to do'         | ыште-       |
| кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak'    | кутыро-     |
| туныкташ (-ем) 'to teach'   | туныкто-    |
| ёдаш (-ем) 'to sow'         | ёдө-        |
| каяш (-ем) 'to go'          | кае-        |
| шуяш (-ем) 'to stretch out' | шуйо-       |
| лёаш (-ем) 'to shoot'       | лөйө-       |
| пуаш (-эм) 'to give'        | пуо-        |

Note that in the many cases in which a suffix is added to the verbal stem of a second conjugation verb the final *-E* will become *-ы* (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

Once the verbal stem is known, other forms can be derived by the same means inflected forms of nouns can be created. Consider, for example, the ending *-eu* of the indicative present (see 7.1.1.1 – page 201) in the first conjugation: this suffix is an E-suffix (see 1.6.2 – page 43), and is attached to verbal stems accordingly.

| Verb                   | Verbal stem | Indicative 3Sg |
|------------------------|-------------|----------------|
| лудаш (-ам) 'to read'  | луд-        | луд <u>еш</u>  |
| шуаш (-ам) 'to reach'  | шу-         | шу <u>эш</u>   |
| лияш (-ям) 'to become' | лий-        | ли <u>еш</u>   |

Compare with the manner the lative suffix *-eu* (see 2.4.7 – page 88), likewise an E-suffix, is attached to nominal stems:

| Nominative     | Lative        |
|----------------|---------------|
| кид 'hand'     | кид <u>еш</u> |
| лу 'bone'      | лу <u>эш</u>  |
| вий 'strength' | ви <u>еш</u>  |

Irregularity that seems to occur in verbal inflection is due to the parameters of Mari orthography (see 1.5.5 – page 26), not due to actual irregularity in the formation of the forms. The following overview of Mari verbal inflection generally only provide a limited number of examples. Our paradigm generator found at [paradigm.mari-language.com](http://paradigm.mari-language.com) can be used to create complete paradigms, containing both non-finite and finite forms, of any desired verb. Additional information will be provided as regards forms that are less trivial to form, such as those of the simple past tense I (see 7.1.1.4 – page 222), and the gerund in *-н* (see 7.2.7 – page 267).

7.2. Give the verbal stems of the following second conjugation verbs.

1. пояш (-ем) 'to get rich'
2. кўзаш (-ем) 'to climb'
3. пўтыраш (-ем) 'to turn (tr.)'
4. кусараш (-ем) 'to translate'
5. возаш (-ем) 'to write'
6. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come'
7. нояш (-ем) 'to become tired'
8. сōраш (-ем) 'to promise'
9. тўяш (-ем) 'to chop'
10. мураш (-ем) 'to sing'
11. наңгаяш (-ем) 'to take (away)'
12. йōраташ (-ем) 'to love'
13. кушташ (-ем) 'to dance'
14. пўяш (-ем) 'to dam up'
15. чонешташ (-ем) 'to fly'

## 7.1. Finite verbs

### 7.1.0. General remarks

The following categories are relevant for finite Mari verbs: person/number, mood, tense, positive/negative forms.

a) Person and number: Mari verbs have separate forms for the combination of the three grammatical persons and the two numbers, singular and plural, in other words a total of six: 1Sg, 2Sg, 3Sg, 1Pl, 2Pl, and 3Pl.

**b) Mood:** Mari distinguishes between three moods: indicative, imperative and desiderative. The indicative mood is the neutral mood, used by default if the other two moods are not required. This does not mean, however, that modal nuances cannot be expressed with indicative forms (for example, conditional clauses are formed using indicative forms, see 7.1.1 – page 201). The indicative mood is also the only one in which the full array of tenses can be found. The major usage of the imperative mood is to express orders, wishes, demands, etc. while the desiderative mood is used to express wish or intention.

**c) Tense:** In the indicative mood a total of seven tenses are distinguished (ignoring the sporadically used future-tense forms, see 7.1.1.1 – page 201 – and 7.5.5 – page 300). Three of these are simple tenses (present, simple past I and simple past II) while four (the compound past tenses I-IV) are periphrastic tenses involving a construction with two or more elements. No level of time is distinguished in the imperative mood. In the desiderative mood three tenses can be distinguished, present, past I, and past II. Note that gerundial constructions (see 7.2.9 – page 272, 7.2.10 – page 274, 7.2.11 – page 276) and postpositional constructions (see 6 – page 158) can be used to express more complex temporal relations.

**d) Positive and negative forms:** In the following sub-chapters the formation of positive verbal forms will be treated separately from the formation of negative forms. Apart from the simple past tense II and the compound past tenses III and IV which are negated by more complex means (see 7.1.1.2 – page 208), all other forms (the remaining tenses in the indicative, as well as imperative and desiderative forms) are negated with the appropriate form of the negation verb (see 7.3.1 – page 278) followed by the so-called CONNEGATIVE FORM. This connegative form is invariable and the same in all tenses and moods. It does not take any endings, not even clitics.

The connegative form is usually identical with the verbal stem discussed above.

|                       | Infinitive                | Verbal Stem | Connegative |
|-----------------------|---------------------------|-------------|-------------|
| <b>Conjugation I</b>  | толаш (-ам) 'to come'     | тол-        | тол         |
|                       | лудаш (-ам) 'to read'     | луд-        | луд         |
|                       | тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn'  | тунем-      | тунем       |
|                       | шуаш (-ам) 'to reach'     | шу-         | шу          |
|                       | лияш (-ям) 'to become'    | лий-        | лий         |
| <b>Conjugation II</b> | вучаш (-ем) 'to wait'     | вучо-       | вучо        |
|                       | илаш (-ем) 'to live'      | иле-        | иле         |
|                       | туныкташ (-ем) 'to teach' | туныкто-    | туныкто     |
|                       | ўдаш (-ем) 'to sow'       | ўдō-        | ўдō         |
|                       | ышташ (-ем) 'to do'       | ыште-       | ыште        |

In some cases, however, the connegative form differs from the verbal stem. Differences can occur in both the first and in the second conjugations.

**Conjugation I:** Since the connegative form is morphologically invariable and takes no further suffixes, stem-final consonants and consonant clusters are by default word-final, and thus syllable final. As discussed above (7.0.2 – page 196), the stem-final consonant clusters *-км-*, *-шк-*, *-чк-*, *-нч-*, and stem-final *-з-*, are simplified/altered in this position:

| Verb                       | Verbal stem | Altered stem | Connegative |
|----------------------------|-------------|--------------|-------------|
| лекташ (-ам) 'to go'       | лект-       | лек-         | лек         |
| мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash'     | мушк-       | муш-         | муш         |
| кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat'      | кочк-       | коч-         | коч         |
| шинчаш (-ам) 'to sit down' | шинч-       | шич-         | шич         |
| возаш (-ам) 'to lie down'  | воз-        | воч-         | воч         |

**Conjugation II:** Differences between verbal stem and connegative form occur in two situations.

a) If the verbal stem ends in *-yo-*, (→ infinitive in *-yaw*) the final *-o* is usually, but not obligatorily, deleted in the connegative form.

| Verb       |          | Verbal stem | Connegative |
|------------|----------|-------------|-------------|
| пуаш (-эм) | to give  | пуо-        | пу (пуо)    |
| куаш (-эм) | to weave | куо-        | ку (куо)    |
| шуаш (-эм) | to throw | шуо-        | шу (шуо)    |

b) For a number of frequently used verbal stems ending in */-je/*, */-jo/*, or */-jö/* (→ infinitive in *-yaw*), the connegative form can be identical with this stem or it can be formed without the final vowel:

| Verb          |                       | Verbal stem | Connegative     |
|---------------|-----------------------|-------------|-----------------|
| каяш (-ем)    | to go                 | кае-        | кай ~ кае       |
| кияш (-ем)    | to lie (e.g., in bed) | кие-        | кий ~ кие       |
| лўйаш (-ем)   | to shoot              | лўйё-       | лўй ~ лўйё      |
| мешаяш (-ем)  | to bother, to disturb | мешае-      | мешай ~ мешае   |
| мияш (-ем)    | to go, to come        | мие-        | мий ~ мие       |
| намияш (-ем)  | to bring              | нарие-      | нарий ~ нарие   |
| нангаяш (-ем) | to take (away)        | нангае-     | нангай ~ нангае |
| пўйаш (-ем)   | to dam up             | пўйё-       | пўй ~ пўйё      |
| тўйаш (-ем)   | to chop               | тўйё-       | тўй ~ тўйё      |
| чияш (-ем)    | to put on, to dress   | чие-        | чий ~ чие       |

Other verbs with verbal stems ending in */-je/*, */-jo/*, or */-jö/* do not have this shortened connegative form, e.g.:

| Verb           |                  | Verbal stem | Connegative |
|----------------|------------------|-------------|-------------|
| йытыраяш (-ем) | to clean         | йытырае-    | йытырае     |
| тояш (-ем)     | to hide          | тойо-       | тойо        |
| шўйаш (-ем)    | to become firmer | шўйё-       | шўйё        |

### 7.3. Form the connegative form of the following first conjugation verbs.

- куржаш (-ам) 'to run'
- пўчкаш (-ам) 'to cut'
- ужаш (-ам) 'to see'
- вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'
- лўдаш (-ам) 'to fear'
- ўпшыначаш (-ам) 'to smell, to sniff'
- шияш (-ям) 'to thresh'
- камвозаш (-ам) 'to fall'
- йўаш (-ам) 'to drink'
- лукташ (-ам) 'to lead out'
- колаш (-ам) 'to hear'
- мушкылташ (-ам) 'to wash oneself'
- шўшкаш (-ам) 'to shove'
- муаш (-ам) 'to find'
- воштылаш (-ам) 'to laugh'



7.4. Form the connegative form of the following second conjugation verbs.

1. каласаш (-ем) 'to say, to tell'
2. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
3. шонаш (-ем) 'to think'
4. шымлаш (-ем) 'to research'
5. руаш (-эм) 'to cut down'
6. конаш (-ем) 'to agree, to assent'
7. чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress'
8. пураш (-ем) 'to enter, to come in'
9. мешаяш (-ем) 'to bother, to disturb'
10. шокташ (-ем) 'to play (e.g., an instrument)'
11. гуляаш (-ем) 'to go for a walk'
12. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak'
13. кунчаш (-ем) 'to dig'
14. намияш (-ем) 'to bring'
15. суретлаш (-ем) 'to draw, to paint'

### 7.1.1. Indicative

#### 7.1.1.1. Present (and future) tense

Numerous sources refer to this tense as the present-future tense due to its wide range of usages (see below).

Formation of positive forms: to form the present tense the endings in the following table are added to the verbal stem respectively in the two conjugation classes. Note the following: 1) In the first conjugation simplified/altere forms are not required as the present-tense endings are vowel-initial, i.e., the final consonant cluster/consonant is not syllable-final. 2) In the second conjugation, the stem-final *-E* is deleted.

|            | Conjugation I | Conjugation II |
|------------|---------------|----------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | -ам (-ям)     | -ем (-эм)      |
| <b>2Sg</b> | -ат (-ят)     | -ет (-эт)      |
| <b>3Sg</b> | -еш (-эш)     | -а (-я)        |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -ына          | -ена (-эна)    |
| <b>2Pl</b> | -ыда          | -еда (-эда)    |
| <b>3Pl</b> | -ыт           | -ат (-ят)      |

Examples:

|            | Conjugation I         | Conjugation II        |
|------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|
|            | кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat' | вучаш (-ем) 'to wait' |
| <b>1Sg</b> | кочкам                | вучем                 |
| <b>2Sg</b> | кочкат                | вучет                 |
| <b>3Sg</b> | кочкеш                | вуча                  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | кочкина               | вучена                |
| <b>2Pl</b> | кочкида               | вучеда                |
| <b>3Pl</b> | кочкит                | вучат                 |

For paradigms of verbs in which orthographic changes (see 1.5.5 – page 26) occur – e.g., *шуаш* (-ам) 'to reach', *пуаш* (-эм) 'to give', *лияш* (-ям) 'to be; to become', *кааш* (-ем) 'to go' – please consult [paradigm.mari-language.com](http://paradigm.mari-language.com).

7.5. Give all six positive present-tense forms of the following first-conjugation verbs.

1. лудаш (-ам) 'to read'
2. тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn, to study'
3. колышташ (-ам) 'to listen'
4. налаш (-ам) 'to take; to buy'
5. ияш (-ям) 'to swim'
6. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'
7. муаш (-ам) 'to find'
8. йѳаш (-ам) 'to drink'
9. лекташ (-ам) 'to go, to leave'
10. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash'

7.6. Give all six positive present tense forms of the following second-conjugation verbs.

1. илаш (-ем) 'to live'
2. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak'
3. умылаш (-ем) 'to understand'
4. ышташ (-ем) 'to do'
5. возаш (-ем) 'to write'
6. мураш (-ем) 'to sing'
7. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
8. каяш (-ем) 'to go'
9. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)'
10. нояш (-ем) 'to become tired'

7.7. Give all six positive present tense forms of the following first or second-conjugation verbs.

1. ончаш 'to look'
2. мушкылташ 'to wash oneself'
3. йѳраташ 'to love'
4. йодаш 'to ask'
5. туныкташ 'to teach'
6. ужаш 'to see'
7. кудааш 'to drive, to ride'
8. малаш 'to sleep'
9. мияш 'to go, to come'
10. кошташ 'to go'

7.8. Form the present tense in the person indicated, e.g.: *манаш (-ам)* 'to say', 1Sg → *манам*.

1. тўнғалаш (-ам) 'to begin', 3Pl
2. ошкылаш (-ам) 'to step, to stride', 3Sg
3. шонаш (-ем) 'to think', 2Pl
4. кынелаш (-ам) 'to get up', 1Sg
5. шолташ (-ем) 'to boil, to cook (tr.)', 3Pl
6. чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress', 1Pl
7. шокташ (-ем) 'to play (e.g., an instrument)', 2Sg
8. ойлаш (-ем) 'to talk, to speak', 3Pl
9. толаш (-ам) 'to come', 1Pl
10. йўштылаш (-ам) 'to go swimming', 2Sg
11. ужалаш (-ем) 'to sell', 1Sg
12. кычалаш (-ам) 'to look for, to search', 3Sg
13. модаш (-ам) 'to play', 1Pl
14. кушташ (-ем) 'to dance', 3Pl
15. лўяш (-ем) 'to shoot', 2Pl
16. куржаш (-ам) 'to run', 2Sg
17. келшаш (-ем) 'to agree', 1Pl
18. керташ (-ам) 'to be able to', 1Sg
19. мошташ (-ем) 'to be able to, to know how to', 3Sg
20. пўртылаш (-ам) 'to return, to come back', 2Pl

**Formation of negative forms:** Negative forms of the present tense are formed with the present-tense forms of the negation verb (see 7.3.1 – page 278) followed immediately by the connegative form of the negated verb (see 7.1.0 – page 198).

|            | Negation verb | Example: тол- 'to come' |
|------------|---------------|-------------------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | ом            | ом тол                  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | от            | от тол                  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | огеш ~ ок     | огеш ~ ок тол           |
| <b>1Pl</b> | огына ~ она   | огына ~ она тол         |
| <b>2Pl</b> | огыда ~ ода   | огыда ~ ода тол         |
| <b>3Pl</b> | огыт          | огыт тол                |

As can be seen, in the third person singular and first and second persons plural there are double forms (*огеш ~ ок, огына ~ она, огыда ~ ода*). These are completely synonymous.

Examples for negation with contrasting positive forms:

|            | Conjugation I         |                 | Conjugation II        |                  |
|------------|-----------------------|-----------------|-----------------------|------------------|
|            | кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat' |                 | вучаш (-ем) 'to wait' |                  |
|            | Positive              | Negative        | Positive              | Negative         |
| <b>1Sg</b> | кочкам                | ом коч          | вучем                 | ом вучо          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | кочкат                | от коч          | вучет                 | от вучо          |
| <b>3Sg</b> | кочкеш                | огеш ~ ок коч   | вуча                  | огеш ~ ок вучо   |
| <b>1Pl</b> | кочкына               | огына ~ она коч | вучена                | огына ~ она вучо |
| <b>2Pl</b> | кочкыда               | огыда ~ ода коч | вучеда                | огыда ~ ода вучо |
| <b>3Pl</b> | кочкыт                | огыт коч        | вучат                 | огыт вучо        |

7.9. Give all six negative present tense forms of the following first-conjugation verbs.

1. шижаш (-ам) 'to feel'
2. шинчаш (-ам) 'to sit down'
3. колаш (-ам) 'to hear'
4. шуаш (-ам) 'to arrive, to reach'
5. ўжаш (-ам) 'to invite'
6. қушқаш (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)'
7. йўаш (-ам) 'to drink'
8. кынелаш (-ам) 'to get up'
9. лекташ (-ам) 'to go, to leave'
10. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'

7.10 Give all six negative present tense forms of the following second-conjugation verbs.

1. палаш (-ем) 'to know'
2. кондаш (-ем) 'to bring'
3. қўнчаш (-ем) 'to dig'
4. каяш (-ем) 'to go'
5. пораш (-ем) 'to collect, to gather'
6. шарнаш (-ем) 'to remember'
7. қучаш (-ем) 'to catch'
8. нўраш (-ем) 'to become wet'
9. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
10. вашешташ (-ем) 'to answer, to reply'

7.11. Give all six negative present tense forms of the following first or second-conjugation verbs.

1. тунемаш 'to learn, to study'
2. мураш 'to sing'
3. чоғешташ 'to fly'
4. лудаш 'to read'
5. ияш 'to swim'
6. кутыраш 'to speak'
7. кошташ 'to go'
8. илаш 'to live'
9. мушқаш 'to wash'
10. туныкташ 'to teach'

7.12. Negate the following positive forms, e.g.: *манам* → *ом ман*.

1. ышта
2. миём
3. пўчына
4. куштет
5. муам
6. моштат
7. ноем
8. возам
9. маледа
10. лият
11. колыштыт
12. лўя
13. модат
14. кўэш
15. шонена
16. шўшкыда
17. йўратем
18. кудалына
19. йодеш
20. канат

#### Usage:

a) The present tense is used to locate a situation or event in the present time. Note that the Mari present forms do not distinguish between habitual or continuous action as English does: *лудам* 'I read ~ I am reading'.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Мый Марий Элыште <u>илем</u> .              | I <u>live</u> in Mari El.                                   |
| Тый марла <u>кутырет</u> мо?                | Do you <u>speak</u> Mari?                                   |
| Тудо кызыт пашам <u>ышта</u> .              | S/he <u>is working</u> now.                                 |
| Ме оңай книга <u>лудына</u> .               | We <u>are reading</u> an interesting book.                  |
| Те чылам <u>умыледа</u> ?                   | Do you <u>understand</u> everything?                        |
| Спортым мый <u>ом йўрате</u> .              | I <u>don't like</u> sports.                                 |
| Тый молан <u>от мале</u> ?                  | Why <u>aren't</u> you <u>sleeping</u> ?                     |
| Нуно ватыж дене нигунам <u>огыт ўчаше</u> . | He and his wife <u>never argue</u> .                        |
| Кофе деч посна тунемын <u>она керт</u> .    | We <u>can't</u> study without coffee.                       |
| Тўно ялт пычкемыш: ниможат <u>ок кой</u> .  | It's completely dark outside, you <u>can't</u> see a thing. |

b) The present tense can refer to a situation or event in the future. The reference to the future can be understood through context or through the use of a temporal adverbial, e.g., *эрла* 'tomorrow'.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Таче кастене мемнан деке уна-влак <u>толыт</u> . | Guests <u>will be coming</u> to our place tonight. |
| Эрла эн сай йолташем дене <u>вашлиям</u> .       | I <u>will meet</u> my best friend tomorrow.        |
| Вес кенжежым Йошкар-Олашке <u>кудалына</u> .     | We're <u>going to</u> Yoshkar-Ola next summer.     |
| Ик ий гыч Ивановмыт Москош илаш <u>куснат</u> .  | The Ivanovs <u>are moving</u> to Moscow in a year. |
| Вашке шыже <u>толеш</u> .                        | Autumn <u>will come</u> soon.                      |

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Эрла театрыш <u>она кай</u> : жапна уке.             | We <u>won't be going</u> to the theater tomorrow, we don't have time.       |
| Кумышто концертыште <u>ом муро</u> : логарем коршта. | I <u>won't sing</u> at the concert the day after tomorrow, my throat hurts. |
| Вес арняште серыш эше <u>ок тол</u> .                | The letter <u>won't come</u> by next week.                                  |
| Тиде пашам ме нигунам <u>она пыта</u> ре.            | We will <u>never finish</u> this work.                                      |
| Вес ийын Турцийышке канаш <u>она кай</u> .           | We <u>won't go</u> to Turkey on a holiday next year.                        |

As regards explicitly marked future forms, see below.

c) The present tense can be used as a so-called historic present, referring to situations or events in the past and commonly employed as a stylistic device.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ожно, мемнан уке годым, иленыт улмаш кува ден кугыза. Нунын икшывышт ик ўдыр веле улмаш. Нуно коктынат <u>колен колтат</u> , ўдырышт тулыкеш <u>коде</u> ш. Тулык ўдыр суртшо гыч <u>лектеш</u> да шинчаже куш онча, тушко <u>ка</u> я. | Once upon a time there lived an old woman and a man. They only had one child, a daughter. They both <u>die</u> , the daughter <u>becomes</u> an orphan. The orphaned girl <u>leaves</u> her home and <u>goes</u> wherever her feet take her. |
|---|--|

d) In the first person (especially plural), the present tense, both positive and negative, can be used as a cohortative-hortative imperative: 'Let's (do something)! Let's not (do something)!' In these cases, the formal subject (*ме* 'we') does not appear. In this way, the indicative present supplements the imperative mood (see 7.1.2 – page 233) which has forms for only the second and third persons. The imperative particles *айда* and *айсма* (see 9.3 – page 333) are frequently used in sentences of this type.

|                                       |                             |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <u>Айста</u> марла <u>муралтена</u> ! | <u>Let's sing</u> in Mari!  |
| <u>Айда</u> изиш <u>каналтена</u> !   | <u>Let's rest</u> a little! |
| <u>Айда</u> она <u>вашке</u> !        | <u>Let's not rush</u> !     |
| <u>Айста</u> она <u>вурсе</u> дыл!    | <u>Let's not fight</u> !    |

First person singular forms can also be used in this manner. Here, however, the formal subject *мый* does frequently appear:

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Айда</u> мый тылат <u>полшем</u> .     | <u>Let me help</u> you.                             |
| <u>Айста</u> чайым <u>кондем</u> .        | <u>Let me bring</u> tea.                            |
| <u>Айда</u> мый экзаменыш <u>ом кай</u> . | I'll <u>not go</u> to the exam <u>then</u> .        |
| <u>Айста</u> ялышке <u>ом кудал</u> .     | I'll <u>not go</u> to the countryside <u>then</u> . |

7.13. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate positive form.

1. Серге романжым визымше ий ... (возаш(-ем))
2. Рвезе-влак, айста футболла ... (модаш (-ам))
3. Школышто кызыт кечывал жап: йоча-влак ... (кочкаш (-ам))
4. Рушарнян кечывалым тый мом ... ? (ышташ (-ем))
5. Айста киношко ... (каяш (-ем))
6. Йыван кажне эрдене стадионышто ... (куржталаш (-ам))
7. Мый тыланда лу минут гыч ... (йынгырташ (-ем))
8. Эрла те мыняр шагатлан ... ? (кынелаш (-ам))
9. Алло! Тый кушто улат? Мый тыйым метро воктене ... (вучаш (-ем))
10. Айда пырля ... (кушталташ (-ем))

7.14. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate negative form.

1. Аня кызыт пашам ышта, интернетыште ... (шинчаш (-ем))
2. Таче да эрла тылат шуко тунемаш кўлеш, ато кумышто экзаменым сайын ... (кучаш (-ем))
3. Айда трамвай дене ...! (кудалаш (-ам))
4. Алло! Пеш начарын шокта, мый тыйым ... (колаш (-ам))
5. Тый кунамсек кофем ...? (йўаш (-ам))
6. Шочмо кечышкем те молан ...? (толаш (-ам))
7. Айста начарым ...! (шонаш (-ем))
8. Эрла метро ... (кошташ (-ам))
9. Айста ...! (кычкыраш (-ем))
10. Марий калыкын историйжым мый сайын ... (палаш (-ем))

7.15. Negate the following sentences.

1. Финн студент-влак Йошкар-Олашке каяш шонат.
2. Юха визылан документым пога.
3. Ме финн уна-влакым вокзалыште вашлийына.
4. Тый нунылан олам ончыктет.
5. Мый марла тунемше-влак деч интервьюм налам.

7.16. Transform these negative sentences into positive ones.

1. Мый уна-влаклан команмелнам ом пукшо.
2. Айста шокшо мончаш она пуро!
3. Йотэлысе студент-влак Юлышто огыт йўштыл.
4. Кумышто марий кумалтышым от уж.
5. Юха Марий Элыште илаш ок код.

Future with the auxiliary verb *тўнғалаш* (-ам): In addition to future situations and events being referenced with the present tense it is possible to use an auxiliary verb *тўнғалаш* (-ам) with the infinitive of a main verb. This first conjugation verb has the primary meaning of 'to begin, to start'.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Урок вич минут гыч <u>тўнғалеш</u> .                  | The lesson starts in five minutes.                             |
| Тачысе урокнам шушаш жап теме дене <u>тўнғалына</u> . | We'll start today's lesson with the topic of the future tense. |

It is also commonly used together with another verb in the infinitive in the sense of 'to begin doing something, to start doing something'.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Кава пылан, вашке йўр <u>йўраш тўнғалеш</u> .  | The sky is cloudy, it'll <u>start to rain</u> soon.   |
| Тенгече диплом пашам <u>возаш тўнғалынам</u> . | Yesterday I <u>started writing</u> my diploma thesis. |

This verb can also be employed as an auxiliary verb used together with the infinitive of a main verb to indicate future in general. It typically occurs in combination with verbs denoting repeated or long-lasting events. The usual ordering is infinitive + *тўнғалаш*.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Вес ийыште <u>немыч йылме курсыш кошташ тўнғалам</u> .  | I <u>will attend</u> a German course next year.             |
| Шочмо гыч эр еда <u>куржталаш тўнғалына</u> .           | We <u>will run</u> every morning starting Monday.           |
| Палымем концертыште <u>гитар дене шокташ тўнғалеш</u> . | My acquaintance <u>will play the guitar</u> in the concert. |

7.17. Replace the italicized present-tense forms in the following sentences with infinitive + *тўнғалаш*.

1. Шўжарем венгр мурым *мура*.
2. Рвезе-влак футболла *модыт*.
3. Йолташем-влак дене мыйын шочмо кечым *пайремлена*.
4. Телевизор дене марий сериалым *ончыктат*.
5. Мый кусарышылан пашам *ыштем*.

Future of 'to be': see 7.5.5 – page 300.

#### 7.1.1.2. Simple Past Tense I

Formation of positive forms: The formation of the positive forms of the simple past tense I differs considerably in the two conjugations. They will therefore be discussed separately.

a) Conjugation I: The general rule for formation is that the endings in the following table are added to the verbal stem.

|            |     |
|------------|-----|
| <b>1Sg</b> | -ым |
| <b>2Sg</b> | -ыч |
| <b>3Sg</b> | -Е  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -на |
| <b>2Pl</b> | -да |
| <b>3Pl</b> | -ыч |

Note that the endings are the same in the second person singular and the third person plural. The ending of the third person singular (-Е) reflects the rules of vowel harmony, see 1.5.8 – page 36.

|            |     | тунемаш (тунем-) 'to learn' | лудаш (луд-) 'to read' | ўжаш (ўж-) 'to invite' |
|------------|-----|-----------------------------|------------------------|------------------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | -ым | тунемым                     | лудым                  | ўжым                   |
| <b>2Sg</b> | -ыч | тунемыч                     | лудыч                  | ўжыч                   |
| <b>3Sg</b> | -Е  | тунеме                      | лудо                   | ўжө                    |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -на | тунемна                     | лудна                  | ўжна                   |
| <b>2Pl</b> | -да | тунемда                     | лудда                  | ўжда                   |
| <b>3Pl</b> | -ыч | тунемыч                     | лудыч                  | ўжыч                   |

Stress in the first and second persons plural can alternate: *лудна* ~ *лудна*, *лудда* ~ *лудда*, see 1.5.6 – page 31.

7.18. Form the positive simple past tense I of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. лўдаш (-ам) 'to fear'
2. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like'
3. өраш (-ам) 'to be amazed'
4. модаш (-ам) 'to play'
5. муаш (-ам) 'to find'
6. мушкылташ (-ам) 'to wash oneself'
7. почаш (-ам) 'to open (tr.)'
8. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'
9. кошташ (-ам) 'to go'
10. кўаш (-ам) 'to ripen'

Since the endings in the first and second persons plural begin with a consonant (-на, -да), the simplification/alternation of consonant clusters discussed above (7.0.2 – page 196) occurs in these two persons (but not in other persons, as the endings there begin in vowels).



|            | лекташ (-ам)<br>'to go'<br>(лект- → лек-) | мушкаш (-ам)<br>'to wash'<br>(мушк- → муш-) | кочкаш (-ам)<br>'to eat'<br>(кочк- → коч-) | шинчаш (-ам)<br>'to sit down'<br>(шинч- → шич-) | возаш (-ам)<br>'to lie down'<br>(воз- → воч-) |
|------------|---|---|--|---|---|
| <b>1Sg</b> | лектым                                    | мушкым                                      | кочкым                                     | шинчым  | возым   |
| <b>2Sg</b> | лектыч                                    | мушкыч                                      | кочкыч                                     | шинчыч  | возыч   |
| <b>3Sg</b> | лекте                                     | мушко                                       | кочко                                      | шинче   | возо  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | лекна                                     | мушна                                       | кочна                                      | шинча   | вочна   |
| <b>2Pl</b> | лекда                                     | мушда                                       | кочда                                      | шинда   | вочда   |
| <b>3Pl</b> | лектыч                                    | мушкыч                                      | кочкыч                                     | шинчыч  | возыч   |

7.19. Form the positive simple past tense I of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

- кушкаш (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)'
- лукташ (-ам) 'to lead out, to take out'
- түрвынчаш (-ам) 'to sneeze'
- пүчкаш (-ам) 'to cut'
- нушкаш (-ам) 'to creep, to crawl'

If the stem of a first-conjugation verb ends in /l/ or /n/, for example *молаш (-ам)* 'to come' → *тол-*, *манаш (-ам)* 'to say' → *ман-*, these two consonants are palatalized in all persons of the singular and in the third person plural, i.e., /l/ → /l'/, /n/ → /n'/ . The consonants remain unaffected in the first and second persons plural. In accordance with the rules of Mari orthography concerning the writing of palatalized consonants (see 1.5.5 – page 26), the palatalization of /l/ and /n/ is indicated with the soft sign ь before the vowels -ы, -о, and -ө (→ -ль-, -нь-), but before -е palatalization of /l/ and /n/ is not indicated. Note that whereas many first conjugation verbs have a stem ending in /l/, the only first conjugation verb in /n/ is *манаш (-ам)*.

Compare the present and past tense I forms of *молаш* and *манаш* in the following table.

|            | толаш (-ам) 'to come' (тол-) |               | манаш (-ам) 'to say' (ман-) |               |
|------------|------------------------------|---------------|-----------------------------|---------------|
|            | Present                      | Simple past I | Present                     | Simple past I |
| <b>1Sg</b> | толам                        | тольым        | манам                       | маньым        |
| <b>2Sg</b> | толат                        | тольыч        | манат                       | маньыч        |
| <b>3Sg</b> | толеш                        | тольо         | манеш                       | мане /маñе/   |
| <b>1Pl</b> | толына                       | толна         | манына                      | манна         |
| <b>2Pl</b> | толыда                       | толда         | маныда                      | манда         |
| <b>3Pl</b> | толыт                        | тольыч        | маныт                       | маньыч        |

7.20. Form the positive simple past tense I of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

- налаш (-ам) 'to take; to buy'
- кредалаш (-ам) 'to fight'
- кудаш (-ам) 'to run, to drive'
- логалаш (-ам) 'to touch; to find oneself (somewhere)'
- шулаш (-ам) 'to cut'

7.21. Form the positive simple past tense I of the following first-conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *лудаш* (-ам) 'to read', 1Sg → *лудым*.

1. кєрташ (-ам) 'to be able to', 1Sg
2. вурсєдылаш (-ам) 'to argue', 2Sg
3. кошташ (-ам) 'to go', 3Pl
4. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like', 3Sg
5. ужаш (-ам) 'to see', 1Pl
6. колаш (-ам) 'to hear', 1 Sg
7. шўяш (-ям) 'to rot', 2Pl
8. шўшкаш (-ам) 'to shove', 1Pl
9. муаш (-ам) 'to find', 3Sg
10. ўпшынчаш (-ам) 'to smell, to sniff', 2Pl
11. кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat', 2Pl
12. шуаш (-ам) 'to arrive, to reach', 1Sg
13. манаш (-ам) 'to say', 3Sg
14. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask', 2Sg
15. йўаш (-ам) 'to drink', 1Pl
16. ияш (-ям) 'to swim', 3Sg
17. камвозаш (-ам) 'to fall', 2Pl
18. лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become', 1Sg
19. кўаш (-ам) 'to ripen', 3Pl
20. кынєлаш (-ам) 'to get up', 1Pl

b) **Conjugation II:** The marker of the simple past tense I in the second conjugation is *-и*, which is added to the verbal stem (which is subject to the vowel reduction *-E → -ы*). The tense marker is followed by the personal endings shown in the table below which contrasts the endings of the second conjugation in this tense with that of the first. Note that in comparison with the endings of the first conjugation the first and second persons both singular and plural are identical, while the endings differ between the conjugations in the third person singular and plural. (As a consequence, no homonymy between 2Sg and 3Pl occurs in the second conjugation.) In the third person singular, there is no personal ending in the second conjugation; the form ends in the tense marker *-и*.

|            | Conjugation I | Conjugation II |
|------------|---------------|----------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | -ым           |                |
| <b>2Sg</b> | -ыч           |                |
| <b>3Sg</b> | -Е            | -              |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -на           |                |
| <b>2Pl</b> | -да           |                |
| <b>3Pl</b> | -ыч           | -т             |

Examples:

|            |     | возаш ( возо-) 'to write' | малаш ( мале-) 'to sleep' | каяш ( кае-) 'to go' |
|------------|-----|---------------------------|---------------------------|----------------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | -ым | возышым                   | малышым                   | кайышым              |
| <b>2Sg</b> | -ыч | возышыч                   | малышыч                   | кайышыч              |
| <b>3Sg</b> | -   | возыш                     | малыш                     | кайыш                |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -на | возышна                   | малышна                   | кайышна              |
| <b>2Pl</b> | -да | возышда                   | малышда                   | кайышда              |
| <b>3Pl</b> | -т  | возышт                    | малышт                    | кайышт               |

Stress in the first and second persons plural can alternate in the second conjugation as well: *возышна ~ возышна, возышда ~ возышда*, see 1.5.6 – page 31.

7.22. Form the positive simple past tense I of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. илаш (-ем) 'to live'
2. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
3. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak'
4. ышташ (-ем) 'to do'
5. шонаш (-ем) 'to think'
6. палаш (-ем) 'to know'
7. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come'
8. вашешташ (-ем) 'to answer, to reply'
9. руаш (-эм) 'to cut down'
10. шолташ (-ем) 'to boil, to cook (tr.)'
11. ончаш (-ем) 'to look'
12. нояш (-ем) 'to become tired'
13. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)'
14. канаш (-ем) 'to rest, to relax'
15. чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress'

7.23. Form the positive simple past tense I of the following second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *пуаш (-эм) 'to give', 1Sg → пуышым.*

1. умылаш (-ем) 'to understand', 1Sg
2. шарнаш (-ем) 'to remember', 3Sg
3. мондаш (-ем) 'to forget', 1Pl
4. шуаш (-эм) 'to throw', 3Pl
5. сүретлаш (-ем) 'to draw, to paint', 3Sg
6. келшаш (-ем) 'to agree', 2Sg
7. йөраташ (-ем) 'to love', 2Pl
8. мураш (-ем) 'to sing', 3Sg
9. кушташ (-ем) 'to dance', 1Pl
10. пайремлаш (-ем) 'to celebrate', 2Sg
11. чонешташ (-ем) 'to fly', 2Sg
12. куанаш (-ем) 'to be happy', 3Pl
13. ойгыраш (-ем) 'to worry (intr.)', 1Pl
14. ужалаш (-ем) 'to sell', 2Sg
15. лўяш (-ем) 'to shoot', 1Sg
16. пураш (-ем) 'to enter, to come in', 2Pl
17. шинчаш (-ем) 'to sit', 3Sg
18. вучаш (-ем) 'to wait', 2Pl
19. шокташ (-ем) 'to play (e.g., an instrument)', 3Pl
20. шуяш (-ем) 'to stretch (tr.)', 1Sg

Formation of negative forms: The negative forms of the simple past tense I are formed in exactly the same way as the negative forms of the present (see 7.1.1.1 – page 201), namely with a form of the negation verb (see 7.3.1 – page 278) followed by the connegative form of the verb which is negated (see 7.1.0 – page 198). The only difference is that the forms of the negation verb are in the past tense rather than in the present. In the following table, for the sake of contrast the forms of the negation verb are given both in the present and the past.

|            | Present     | Simple Past I |
|------------|-------------|---------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | ом          | шым           |
| <b>2Sg</b> | от          | шыч           |
| <b>3Sg</b> | огеш ~ ок   | ыш            |
| <b>1Pl</b> | огына ~ она | ышна          |
| <b>2Pl</b> | огыда ~ ода | ышда          |
| <b>3Pl</b> | огыт        | ышт           |

Examples with contrasting positive and negative forms in the simple past I:

|            | Conjugation I         |          | Conjugation II        |           |
|------------|-----------------------|----------|-----------------------|-----------|
|            | кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat' |          | вучаш (-ем) 'to wait' |           |
|            | Positive              | Negative | Positive              | Negative  |
| <b>1Sg</b> | лудым                 | шым луд  | возышым               | шым возо  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | лудыч                 | шыч луд  | возышыч               | шыч возо  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | лудо                  | ыш луд   | возыш                 | ыш возо   |
| <b>1Pl</b> | лудна                 | ышна луд | возышна               | ышна возо |
| <b>2Pl</b> | лудда                 | ышда луд | возышда               | ышда возо |
| <b>3Pl</b> | лудыч                 | ышт луд  | возышт                | ышт возо  |

7.24. Form the negated simple past tense I of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. колышташ (-ам) 'to listen'
2. шинчаш (-ам) 'to sit down'
3. лекташ (-ам) 'to go, to leave'
4. пörтылаш (-ам) 'to return, to come back'
5. ияш (-ям) 'to swim'
6. кошташ (-ам) 'to go'
7. кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat'
8. йуаш (-ам) 'to drink'
9. воштылаш (-ам) 'to laugh'
10. шорташ (-ам) 'to cry'

7.25. Form the negated simple past tense I of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. ойлаш (-ем) 'to talk, to speak'
2. сийлаш (-ем) 'to entertain, to serve'
3. пураш (-ем) 'to enter, to come in'
4. күзаш (-ем) 'to climb'
5. волаш (-ем) 'to come down, to descent'
6. каяш (-ем) 'to go'
7. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
8. лүяш (-ем) 'to shoot'
9. кондаш (-ем) 'to bring'
10. нангаяш (-ем) 'to take (away)'

7.26. Form the negated simple past tense I of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *нуаш (-эм)* 'to give', 1Sg → *шым ну*.

1. ужалаш (-ем) 'to sell', 1Pl
2. налаш (-ам) 'to take; to buy', 1Sg
3. чоңаш (-ем) 'to build', 3Sg
4. кушкаш (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)', 2Pl
5. руаш (-эм) 'to cut down', 3Pl
6. йомаш (-ам) 'to disappear', 2Sg
7. йынгырташ (-ем) 'to call (telephone)', 1Sg
8. кычалаш (-ам) 'to look for, to search', 1Pl
9. муаш (-ам) 'to find', 3Pl
10. нояш (-ем) 'to become tired', 2Sg
11. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)', 2Sg
12. кўаш (-ам) 'to ripen', 3Sg
13. вучаш (-ем) 'to wait', 1Pl
14. кынелаш (-ам) 'to get up', 1Sg
15. мушкылташ (-ам) 'to wash oneself', 3Pl
16. шолташ (-ем) 'to boil, to cook (tr.)', 2Pl
17. пышташ (-ем) 'to put, to place', 1Sg
18. камвозаш (-ам) 'to fall', 3Pl
19. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet', 2Pl
20. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak', 3Sg

7.27. Form both the negated present and the negated simple past tense I of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *лудаш (-ам)* 'to read', 2Sg → *от луд, шыч луд*.

1. палаш (-ем) 'to know', 2Pl
2. тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn, to study', 1Sg
3. туныкташ (-ем) 'to teach', 1Pl
4. кусараш (-ем) 'to translate', 2Sg
5. модаш (-ам) 'to play', 2Pl
6. шокташ (-ем) 'to play (e.g., an instrument)', 3Sg
7. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash', 1Pl
8. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask', 2Sg
9. вашешташ (-ем) 'to answer, to reply', 3Pl
10. лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become', 3Sg
11. шонаш (-ем) 'to think', 1Pl
12. ончаш (-ем) 'to look', 3Sg
13. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like', 1Sg
14. шымлаш (-ем) 'to research', 2Pl
15. ўжаш (-ам) 'to invite', 3Pl
16. почаш (-ам) 'to open (tr.)', 2Sg
17. петыраш (-ем) 'to close, to cover', 1Sg
18. лукташ (-ам) 'to lead out', 3Sg
19. колташ (-ем) 'to send', 3Pl
20. куржаш (-ам) 'to run', 1Pl

Usage: The simple past tense I is used to locate a situation or event in the past. In particular, it is used to report actions and happenings that the speaker has seen or experienced first-hand or that are well known to the speaker. In addition this tense is used when the situations or events are still considered to be connected with the moment of speech or when they have just occurred. It is as a

tendency more used in relation to completed actions. The relationship between this past tense and the simple past II will be discussed in greater detail below, see 7.1.1.3 – page 215.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Таче эрдене куд шагатлан <u>кынелъым</u> .       | I <u>got up</u> at six today in the morning.                  |
| Ватем эр кочкишым <u>ямдылыш</u> .               | My wife <u>made</u> breakfast.                                |
| Шым шагатлан мӧнгӧ гыч <u>лекна</u> .            | We <u>left</u> home at seven.                                 |
| Те мыланна пашам ышташ <u>полшышда</u> .         | You <u>helped</u> us work.                                    |
| Кастене мемнан деке уна-влак <u>тольыч</u> .     | In the evening guests <u>came</u> to our place.               |
| Мый йӱдвошт <u>шым мале</u> : тестлан тунемынам. | I <u>didn't sleep</u> all night, I was studying for the test. |
| Те экзаменлан <u>ышда тунем</u> .                | You <u>didn't study</u> for the exam.                         |
| Туныктышо экзаменышке <u>ыш тол</u> .            | The teacher <u>didn't come</u> to the exam.                   |
| Ме тидын верч <u>ышна ойгыро</u> .               | We <u>didn't worry</u> about this.                            |
| Студент-влак начар оценкым <u>ышт нал</u> .      | The students <u>didn't get</u> bad grades.                    |

The simple past tense I is also used in two auxiliary functions:

a) Past tense I forms of verbs of motion – especially *каяш (-ем)* ‘to go’ – are used in reference to actions that should take place immediately after the moment of speech.

Мый кайышым, эрла урокем уло. | I'm gone, I've got a class tomorrow.

b) Past tense I forms of verbs of motion – especially *каяш (-ем)* ‘to go’ – can be used in the first person plural as an imperative of joint action, similar to English ‘let's ...’.

Серге, кайышна! | Serge, let's go!  
Тарванышна мо? | Shall we get going?

7.28. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate positive form of the simple past tense I.

1. Шочмо кечемлан мый йолташем-влакым рестораныш ... (ӱжаш (-ам))
2. Пайрем кас шым шагатлан ... (тӱнгалаш (-ам))
3. Уна-влак онгай пӧлек-влакым ... (пуаш (-эм))
4. Официант тортым ... (кондаш (-ем))
5. Тый шагал гына ... (кочкаш (-ам))
6. Вара ме изиш ... (кушташ (-ем))
7. Верысе музыкант-влак мыйым муро дене ... (саламлаш (-ем))
8. Мый шуко селфим ... (войзаш (-ем))
9. Те ресторан гыч ончычрак ... (каяш (-ем))
10. Тыге мылам кумло ий ... (темаш (-ам))

7.29. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate negative form of the simple past tense I.

1. Тиде телым Финляндийышке ме ... (кудалаш (-ам))
2. Нелеш ида нал, мый вашкышым, сандене тендам ... (вучаш (-ем))
3. Чодыраште ме ны маскал, ны пирым ... (вашлияш (-ам))
4. Нуно мыскаратым ... (умылаш (-ем))
5. Шергашетым ... ? (муаш (-ам))
6. Меат концертышке мийышна, но те мемнам ... (ужаш (-ам))
7. Тый эмлызе деке молан ... ? (мияш (-ем))
8. У вургем дене мый тыйым ... (палаш (-ем))
9. Уремыште Аня телефон йӱкым ... (колаш (-ам))
10. Тиде заданийым пытараш жапна ... (ситаш (-ем))

7.30. Negate the following sentences.

1. Кенжежым ме Венгрийышке мийышна.
2. Тушто мемнам венгр палымына-влак вашлийыч.
3. Нуно мыланна Будапештым ончыктышт.
4. Иштван венгр историй нерген каласкалыш.
5. Ме тудым тўткын колыштна.
6. Рестораныште мый гуляш шўрым тамлышым.
7. Тый ош вином йўыч.
8. Те Балатон ерыште йўштылда.
9. Сомбатхей олаште Йошкар-Ола микрорайоным муым.
10. Мемнан канышна онгайын эртыш.

7.31. Transform the negative sentences into positive ones.

1. Мыланна ўжмашым ышт колто.
2. Васлийын адресшым шыч мондо?
3. Зонтиким пеленем шым нал.
4. Йоча-влаклан спектакль ыш келше.
5. Палыдыме енлан омсам ышна поч.
6. Те мыйын электрон серышым ышда луд мо?
7. Йолташем ыш йынгырте.
8. Ер воктелан малаш ышна код.
9. Тиде йодышлан молан ышда вашеште?
10. Кочкишлан ак-влак ышт кўзў.

### 7.1.1.3. Simple Past Tense II

**Formation of positive forms:** The simple past tense II is formed on the basis of the gerund in *-н* (see 7.2.7 – page 267) to which the endings seen in the following table are added. When gerunds have short forms and long forms (e.g., *тунемаш (-ам)* ‘to study’ → *тунем ~ тунемын*), only the long forms are used as a basis of simple past tense II forms.

Note that the difference between the two conjugations is apparent in the gerundial form itself (Conjugation I: *-ын*, Conjugation II: *-ен (-эн)*), but that the personal endings are the same for both conjugations. In the third person singular, there is no personal ending: the simple past tense II consists in this person of the gerund in *-н* alone.

|            | Personal ending | Examples                        |                               |
|------------|-----------------|---------------------------------|-------------------------------|
|            |                 | Conjugation I                   | Conjugation II                |
|            |                 | лудаш (-ам) ‘to read’ → лудын → | илаш (-ем) ‘to live’ → илен → |
| <b>1Sg</b> | -ам             | лудынам                         | иленам                        |
| <b>2Sg</b> | -ат             | лудынат                         | иленат                        |
| <b>3Sg</b> | -               | лудын                           | илен                          |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -на             | лудынна                         | иленна                        |
| <b>2Pl</b> | -да             | лудында                         | иленда                        |
| <b>3Pl</b> | -ыт             | лудыныт                         | иленыт                        |

Stress in the first and second persons plural can alternate in the case of second-conjugation verbs: *иленна ~ иленна, иленда ~ иленда*, see 1.5.6 – page 31.

7.32. Form the positive simple past tense II of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. модаш (-ам) 'to play'
2. колышташ (-ам) 'to listen'
3. колаш (-ам) 'to hear'
4. ужаш (-ам) 'to see'
5. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like'
6. кынелаш (-ам) 'to get up'
7. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash'
8. кычалаш (-ам) 'to look for, to search'
9. муаш (-ам) 'to find'
10. налаш (-ам) 'to take; to buy'
11. кошташ (-ам) 'to go'
12. куржаш (-ам) 'to run'
13. ияш (-ям) 'to swim'
14. кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat'
15. йѳаш (-ам) 'to drink'

7.33. Form the positive simple past tense II of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak'
2. умылаш (-ем) 'to understand'
3. палаш (-ем) 'to know'
4. шонаш (-ем) 'to think'
5. возаш (-ем) 'to write'
6. мураш (-ем) 'to sing'
7. кушташ (-ем) 'to dance'
8. сѳретлаш (-ем) 'to draw, to paint'
9. шинчаш (-ем) 'to sit'
10. малаш (-ем) 'to sleep'
11. канаш (-ем) 'to rest, to relax'
12. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
13. каяш (-ем) 'to go'
14. чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress'
15. пытараш (-ем) 'to finish, to end (tr.)'



7.34. Form the positive simple past tense II of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *йөрөмөш (-ем)* 'to love', 1Sg → *йөрөмөнөм*.

1. *вашкаш (-ем)* 'to hurry', 2Pl
2. *ышташ (-ем)* 'to do', 3Pl
3. *кояш (-ям)* 'to resemble, to look like', 1Sg
4. *мияш (-ем)* 'to go, to come', 1Pl
5. *воштылаш (-ам)* 'to laugh', 3Sg
6. *ончаш (-ем)* 'to look', 1Sg
7. *вашлияш (-ям)* 'to meet', 3Sg
8. *лекташ (-ам)* 'to go, to leave', 1Pl
9. *кияш (-ем)* 'to lie (e.g., in bed)', 2Sg
10. *мушкылташ (-ам)* 'to wash oneself', 3Pl
11. *пөртылаш (-ам)* 'to return, to come back', 2Sg
12. *йодаш (-ам)* 'to ask', 1Pl
13. *руаш (-эм)* 'to cut down', 3Sg
14. *лүдаш (-ам)* 'to fear', 1Sg
15. *шолташ (-ем)* 'to boil, to cook (tr.)', 2Pl
16. *ужалаш (-ем)* 'to sell', 3Pl
17. *шогаш (-ем)* 'to stand', 1Sg
18. *күаш (-ам)* 'to ripen', 2Sg
19. *чөгөшташ (-ем)* 'to fly', 3Pl
20. *манаш (-ам)* 'to say', 2Pl

**Alternative form of the simple past tense II:** An alternative way to form the positive simple past tense II is to place the inflected present forms of *улаш (-ам)* 'to be' (see 7.5 – page 295) after the gerund in *-н*. This can be done in all persons but the third person singular, where the gerund on its own constitutes the form of the simple past tense II. This is the original method by which this tense was formed, but today is far less common than the (compounded) forms discussed above that arose from the simplified pronunciation of these forms. Note that this alternative form is used most frequently in the plural.

| Conjugation I                        |                  | Conjugation II                   |                  |
|--------------------------------------|------------------|----------------------------------|------------------|
| тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn' → тунымын → |                  | возаш (-ем) 'to write' → возен → |                  |
| Compounded form                      | Alternative form | Compounded form                  | Alternative form |
| тунемынам                            | тунымын улам     | возенам                          | возен улам       |
| тунемынат                            | тунымын улат     | возенат                          | возен улат       |
| тунымын                              | (тунымын)        | возен                            | (возен)          |
| тунемынна                            | тунымын улына    | возенна                          | возен улына      |
| тунемында                            | тунымын улыда    | возенда                          | возен улыда      |
| тунемыныт                            | тунымын улыт     | возеныт                          | возен улыт       |

Мемнан деке уна-влак толын улыт.

Guests came to our place.

Валентин Колумб нерген колын улыда?

Have you heard of Valentin Kolumb?

Тенгече ме родына дене вашлийын улына.

Yesterday we met our relatives.

**Formation of negative forms:** The negative forms of the simple past tense II are formed with the gerund in *-н* followed by the negated forms of *улаш (-ам)* 'to be' (see 7.5 – page 295), written as separate words.

|            | Negation marker | Examples                        |                               |
|------------|-----------------|---------------------------------|-------------------------------|
|            |                 | Conjugation I                   | Conjugation II                |
|            |                 | лудаш (-ам) 'to read' → лудын → | илаш (-ем) 'to live' → илен → |
| <b>1Sg</b> | омыл            | лудын омыл                      | илен омыл                     |
| <b>2Sg</b> | отыл            | лудын отыл                      | илен отыл                     |
| <b>3Sg</b> | огыл            | лудын огыл                      | илен огыл                     |
| <b>1Pl</b> | огынал ~ онал   | лудын огынал ~ онал             | илен огынал ~ онал            |
| <b>2Pl</b> | огыдал ~ одал   | лудын огыдал ~ одал             | илен огыдал ~ одал            |
| <b>3Pl</b> | огытыл          | лудын огытыл                    | илен огытыл                   |

The clitics *-am* (see 9.1.1 – page 328) and *-ak* (see 9.1.2 – page 330) can be attached to the gerund in *-n* here: *лудынат омыл* 'I didn't even read', *лудынак омыл* 'I haven't read (it) at all', etc. Other than this, no additional words may occur between the gerund, and the negation marker.

The short forms in 1Pl and 2Pl do not differ in meaning from the longer forms.

Examples with contrasting positive and negative forms:

|            | Conjugation I                        |                       | Conjugation II                   |                     |
|------------|--------------------------------------|-----------------------|----------------------------------|---------------------|
|            | тунемаш (-ам) 'to study' → тунымын → |                       | пураш (-ем) 'to enter' → пурен → |                     |
|            | Positive                             | Negative              | Positive                         | Negative            |
| <b>1Sg</b> | тунымынам                            | тунымын омыл          | пуренам                          | пурен омыл          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | тунымынат                            | тунымын отыл          | пуренат                          | пурен отыл          |
| <b>3Sg</b> | тунымын                              | тунымын огыл          | пурен                            | пурен огыл          |
| <b>1Pl</b> | тунымынна                            | тунымын огынал ~ онал | пуренна                          | пурен огынал ~ онал |
| <b>2Pl</b> | тунымында                            | тунымын огыдал ~ одал | пуренда                          | пурен огыдал ~ одал |
| <b>3Pl</b> | тунымыныт                            | тунымын огытыл        | пуреныт                          | пурен огытыл        |

7.35. Form the negated simple past tense II of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

- шочаш (-ам) 'to be born'
- кушаш (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)'
- лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become'
- тўнгалаш (-ам) 'to begin'
- налаш (-ам) 'to take; to buy'
- керташ (-ам) 'to be able to'
- шинчаш (-ам) 'to sit down'
- кудаш (-ам) 'to drive, to ride'
- йўаш (-ам) 'to drink'
- йўштылаш (-ам) 'to go swimming'

7.36. Form the negated simple past tense II of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

- полшаш (-ем) 'to help'
- ойыраш (-ем) 'to select, to choose'
- тергаш (-ем) 'to check, to inspect'
- тамлаш (-ем) 'to taste'
- келшаш (-ем) 'to agree'
- тўлаш (-ем) 'to pay'
- вашталташ (-ем) 'to change, to alter'
- кылмаш (-ем) 'to freeze (intr.)'
- черланаш (-ем) 'to fall ill'
- тўрланаш (-ем) 'to recover, to get better'

7.37. Form the negated simple past tense II of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *пуаш (-эм)* 'to give', 1Sg → *пуэн омыл*.

1. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come', 3Pl
2. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet', 1Sg
3. погаш (-ем) 'to collect, to gather', 3Sg
4. почаш (-ам) 'to open (tr.)', 2Pl
5. пышташ (-ем) 'to put, to place', 2Sg
6. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash', 1Pl
7. шорташ (-ам) 'to cry', 1Sg
8. куанаш (-ем) 'to be happy', 3Pl
9. чоңаш (-ем) 'to build', 1Pl
10. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask', 3Sg
11. шылаш (-ам) 'to hide (intr.)', 3Sg
12. йомаш (-ам) 'to disappear', 3Pl
13. шымлаш (-ем) 'to research', 2Pl
14. йуаш (-ам) 'to drink', 2Sg
15. коршташ (-ем) 'to hurt', 3Sg
16. кусараш (-ем) 'to translate', 1Sg
17. пеледаш (-ем) 'to flower, to blossom', 1Pl
18. руаш (-эм) 'to cut down', 1Pl
19. кошташ (-ам) 'to go', 2Sg
20. лүяш (-ем) 'to shoot', 2Pl

7.38. Form both the positive and the negated simple past tense II of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *лудаш (-ам)* 'to read', 2Sg → *лудынат, лудын отыл*.

1. ияш (-ям) 'to swim', 3Sg
2. малаш (-ем) 'to sleep', 2Pl
3. налаш (-ам) 'to take; to buy', 2Sg
4. шонаш (-ем) 'to think', 3Sg
5. тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn, to study', 1Sg
6. ойлаш (-ем) 'to talk, to speak', 1Pl
7. куржаш (-ам) 'to run', 3Pl
8. ышташ (-ем) 'to do', 1Sg
9. йөраташ (-ем) 'to love', 3Pl
10. муаш (-ам) 'to find', 1Pl
11. лекташ (-ам) 'to go, to leave', 2Sg
12. илаш (-ем) 'to live', 1Sg
13. модаш (-ам) 'to play', 2Pl
14. ончаш (-ем) 'to look', 2Sg
15. пуаш (-эм) 'to give', 2Pl
16. воштылаш (-ам) 'to laugh', 1Sg
17. мураш (-ем) 'to sing', 3Pl
18. кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat', 1Pl
19. каяш (-ем) 'to go', 2Sg
20. колышташ (-ам) 'to listen', 3Sg

Usage: The simple past tense II, as the simple past tense I, is used to locate a situation or event in the past. In contrast to the simple past tense I, it is particularly used to report actions and happenings that the speaker has not seen or experienced first-hand. The tense is also used to refer

to events and situations considered remoter and less connected with the point of speech, and as a tendency is used more in reference to imperfective circumstances.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мый ялыште <u>шочынам</u> .                                  | I <u>was born</u> in the countryside.                            |
| Университет воктене, колынам, у кафем <u>почыныт</u> .       | I heard a new café <u>has been opened</u> beside the university. |
| Тенгече уналыкеш <u>миенна</u> .                             | We <u>went</u> for a visit yesterday.                            |
| Школым ик ий ончыч тунем <u>пытаренам</u> .                  | I <u>graduated</u> from school a year ago.                       |
| Йолташем дене кок шагат <u>кутыренна</u> .                   | My friend and I <u>talked</u> for two hours.                     |
| Ўмаште Петя япон йылме курсыш <u>коштын</u> .                | Last year Petya <u>attended</u> a Japanese language course.      |
| Кенгурум илышыште нигунам <u>ужын одал мо?</u>               | <u>Have</u> you <u>never seen</u> a kangaroo in your life?       |
| Мылам каласышт, тый пашашке <u>миен отыл</u> .               | They told me you <u>didn't go</u> to work.                       |
| Ончыгече самолётышко <u>шуктен омыл</u> .                    | I <u>didn't catch</u> my flight the day before yesterday.        |
| Васлий кум ий ончыч Эстонийышке тунемаш <u>каен огыл</u> .   | Vasliy <u>didn't go</u> to study in Estonia three years ago.     |
| Школышто лудаш <u>йöратен онал</u> .                         | We <u>didn't like</u> to read at school.                         |
| Ик ий ончыч Коля ден Оля икте-весыштым <u>пален огытыл</u> . | A year ago Kolya and Olya <u>didn't know</u> one another.        |

Simple past tense I, simple past tense II: In many cases, either the simple past tense I or the simple past tense II can be used, but a number of factors motivate, or in some cases necessitate, the usage of one of the two simple past tenses. An appropriate choice of a fitting past tense form is often difficult for learners.

Factors motivating the choice of one of the two simple past tense forms are:

a) The simple past tense II has in particular been adopted as the standard past tense form in journalistic language; one is more likely to find simple past tense II forms in newspapers and magazines than simple past tense I forms.

b) When multiple simple past tense I forms are used in a sentence, the (completed) actions they denote are understood to be serialized, occurring one after another. When multiple simple past tense II forms are used in a sentence, the (imperfective) actions they denote are understood to be simultaneous. When the two tenses are used together in a sentence, the simple past tense II form is understood as the imperfective background action to the completed foreground action in the simple past tense I.

|   |   |   |
|---|---|---|
| <b>PST 1 + PST 1:<br/>Serialization</b>                   | Мөңгө <u>тольым</u> , <u>кочкым</u> да малаш <u>возым</u> .               | I <u>came</u> home, <u>ate</u> , and <u>went</u> to sleep.                          |
|   | Юлий Цезарь: « <u>Тольым</u> , <u>ужым</u> , <u>сенгышым</u> ».           | Julius Caesar: "I <u>came</u> , I <u>saw</u> , I <u>conquered</u> "                 |
| <b>PST 2 + PST 2:<br/>Simultaneous</b>                    | Черетыште <u>шогенам</u> да книгам <u>лудынам</u> .                       | I <u>stood</u> in line and <u>read</u> a book.                                      |
|   | Вера автобусышто <u>кудалын</u> да окнаш <u>ончен</u> .                   | Vera <u>rode</u> in the bus and <u>looked</u> out the window.                       |
| <b>PST 2 + PST 1:<br/>Background &amp;<br/>Foreground</b> | <u>Вученат</u> , да <u>тольым</u> .                                       | You <u>were waiting</u> , and I <u>came</u> .                                       |
|   | Ньютон олмапу йымалне <u>шинчен</u> . Трук ўмбакыже олма <u>камвозо</u> . | Newton <u>sat</u> underneath an apple tree. Suddenly an apple <u>fell</u> onto him. |

It is of course dependent on framing if an action is considered completed or not. In the following two sentences, the act of living in Finland in the first sentence is depicted using the simple past tense II and is presented as an imperfective action that occurred in the past, while in the second sentence the act is depicted using the simple past tense I as it is viewed as a delimited action serialized with a later event:

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Мый ончыч Финляндийыште <u>иленам</u> .   | I <u>lived</u> in Finland in the old days.                                |
| Мый кок ий Финляндийыште <u>илышым</u> да вара Австрийыш илаш <u>куснышым</u> . | I <u>lived</u> in Finland for two years and then <u>moved</u> to Austria. |

c) The simple past tense II is used in experiential contexts – when it is indicated if someone has ever carried out an action or not.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Почеламутым иктаж-кунам <u>возенат</u> мо?    | Have you ever <u>written</u> poems?                    |
| Президент лияш иктаж-кунам <u>шоненат</u> мо? | Have you ever <u>thought</u> about becoming president? |

7.39. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate positive form of the simple past tense II.

1. Тенгече авана Петям пазарышке ... (колташ (-ем))
2. Мый Петя дене пырля пазарыш ... (каяш (-ем))
3. Тушто түрлө пакчасаскам ... (ужалаш (-ем))
4. Ме киярым, кешырым да шоганым ... (налаш (-ам))
5. Мемнан 50 тенге окса ... (кодаш (-ам))
6. Мый тиде окса дене авайлан пеледышым налаш ... (темлаш (-ем))
7. Вара ме мөңгө ... (пörтылаш (-ам))
8. Тушто мемнам йолташ-влакна ... (вучаш (-ем))
9. А те тенгече кушко ... ? (кошташ (-ам))
10. Аватлан тый кунам пытартыш гана пеледышым ... ? (пöлеклаш (-ем))

7.40. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate negative form of the simple past tense II.

1. Финн-угор йылме-влакым нуно але ... (тунемаш (-ам))
2. Ушкалым ме тиддеч ончыч нигунам ... (лўшташ (-ем))
3. Конгамбалне те эше ... (малаш (-ем))
4. Подкогыльым ме ик ганат ... (кочкаш (-ам))
5. Васлий олаште шочын: шудым нигунам ... (солаш (-ем))
6. Почаншўдырым тудо ... (ужаш (-ам))
7. Президент лияш мый нигунам ... (шонаш (-ем))
8. Дельфин дене пырля тый ... мо? (ияш (-ам))
9. Австралийыште мый нигунам ... (лияш (-ам))
10. Парашют дене нуно ... (төршташ (-ем))

7.41. Negate the following sentences.

1. Май тылзыште Марий кугыжаныш университетыште финн-угор конференций эртаралтын.
2. Тушко шуко шымлызе погынен.
3. Мый тиде конференцийыште докладым лудынам.
4. Докладлан материалым кужун погенам, шуко интервьюм войзенам.
5. Интервью-влак онгай лийыныт.
6. Доклад деч вара колыштшо-влак йодышым пуэныт.
7. Тый теорий нерген йодынат.
8. Кастене ме рестораныште кочкынна.
9. Те у проект-влак нерген шуко кутыренда.
10. Конференций деч вара ме Козьмодемьянскыш экскурсийыш миенна.

7.42. Transform the negative sentences into positive ones.

1. Тений кенжежым ме ялышке миен онал.
2. Коча-ковам мемнам вучен огытыл.
3. Мый нунылан пакчаште полшен омыл.
4. Ме чодырашке снегылан коштын онал.
5. Шольым кочам дене колым кучен огыл.
6. Нуно ерыште йўштылын огытыл.
7. Мый ковам дене вареньым шолтен омыл.
8. Теат тений ялыште лийын одал.
9. Тый у мончам чоҥен отыл.
10. Ялысе йолташет-влак дене вашлийын отыл.

#### 7.1.1.4. Compound Past Tense I

Other sources refer to this tense as the first periphrastic imperfect.

Formation (positive and negative): both positive and negative forms of the compound past tense I are formed by placing the particle *ыле* (see 9.3 – page 333) after the present-tense forms (see 7.1.1.1 – page 201).

|            | Conjugation I         |                     | Conjugation II        |                      |
|------------|-----------------------|---------------------|-----------------------|----------------------|
|            | кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat' |                     | вучаш (-ем) 'to wait' |                      |
|            | Positive              | Negative            | Positive              | Negative             |
| <b>1Sg</b> | кочкам ыле            | ом коч ыле          | вучем ыле             | ом вучо ыле          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | кочкат ыле            | от коч ыле          | вучет ыле             | от вучо ыле          |
| <b>3Sg</b> | кочкеш ыле            | огеш ~ ок коч ыле   | вуча ыле              | огеш ~ ок вучо ыле   |
| <b>1Pl</b> | кочкина ыле           | огына ~ она коч ыле | вучена ыле            | огына ~ она вучо ыле |
| <b>2Pl</b> | кочкида ыле           | огыда ~ ода коч ыле | вучеда ыле            | огыда ~ ода вучо ыле |
| <b>3Pl</b> | кочкыт ыле            | огыт коч ыле        | вучат ыле             | огыт вучо ыле        |

Certain clitics and particles (see 9 – page 328) can be placed after the present-tense form, e.g.: *кочкам гына ыле, кочкама т ыле.*

7.43. Form the compound past tense I of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. лудаш (-ам) 'to read'      2. тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn'      3. кошташ (-ам) 'to go'

7.44. Form the compound past tense I of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. илаш (-ем) 'to live'      2. ончаш (-ем) 'to look'      3. мураш (-ем) 'to sing'

7.45. Exercise: Form the compound past tense I of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *йодаш (-ам) 'to ask', 1Sg → йодам ыле.*

1. модаш (-ам) 'to play', 2Pl
2. погаш (-ем) 'to collect, to gather', 2Sg
3. колышташ (-ам) 'to listen', 1Sg
4. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak', 1Pl
5. ияш (-ям) 'to swim', 2Sg
6. сүретлаш (-ем) 'to draw, to paint', 3Pl
7. шымлаш (-ем) 'to research', 3Sg
8. кудааш (-ам) 'to drive, to ride', 1Pl
9. ышташ (-ем) 'to do', 1Sg
10. кычалаш (-ам) 'to look for, to search', 2Sg

7.46. Form the negated compound past tense I of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. ужаш (-ам) 'to see'      2. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash'      3. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'

7.47. Form the negated compound past tense I of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. возаш (-ем) 'to write'      2. каяш (-ем) 'to go'      3. келшаш (-ем) 'to agree'

7.48. Form the negated compound past tense I of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *ашнаш* (-ем) 'to keep (animals)', 2Sg → *от ашне ыле*.

1. ужалаш (-ем) 'to sell', 1Sg
2. налаш (-ам) 'to take; to buy', 1Pl
3. шотлаш (-ем) 'to count', 2Sg
4. йӱаш (-ам) 'to drink', 3Sg
5. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)', 1Pl
6. лӱаш (-ем) 'to shoot', 3Pl
7. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like', 2Sg
8. кушташ (-ем) 'to dance', 3Sg
9. куржталаш (-ам) 'to run (around)', 2Pl
10. тӱнгалаш (-ам) 'to begin', 1Sg

### Usage

a) The compound past tense I is used to express continuous, repeated, habitual non-delimited actions or states in the past, similar to constructions with *used to* in English ('I used to read the newspaper every day.') It can also express that an action in the past occurred simultaneously with another action, and is comparable in this function to the English past progressive tense ('I was going.'). It can also be used to express past-tense circumstances in a more vivid fashion, for example in narrations. In addition, it is also characteristic of this tense that it – in contrast to the compound past tense II (see 7.1.1.5 – page 225), to which it is otherwise similar in usage – is used to report actions and happenings that the speaker has seen or experienced first-hand or that are well known to the speaker.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ончыч мый эре куд шагатлан <u>кынедам ыле</u> .                                | I always <u>used to get up</u> at six o'clock.  |
| Паша деч ончыч йолташем дене стадионышто <u>куржталына ыле</u> .               | I <u>used to go running</u> in the stadium with my friend before work.                |
| Йынгыртымет годым кофем <u>шолтем ыле</u> .                                    | I was <u>making coffee</u> when you called.   |
| Тенгече кастене книгаг <u>лудам ыле</u> , трук окнашке попугай чонештен пурыш. | I <u>was reading</u> a book last night, suddenly a parrot flew in through the window. |
| Авай ӱмбакем нигунам <u>ок сыре ыле</u> .                                      | Mom <u>never scolded me</u> .   |
| Йыван ончыч тамакым <u>ок шупш ыле</u> .                                       | Yyvan <u>didn't use to smoke</u> .  |
| Пурымыда годым лачак нимом <u>ом ыште ыле</u> .                                | I was <u>doing nothing</u> at all when you came in.                                   |

7.49. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate positive form of the compound past tense I

1. Изиэм годым мый пушенгылашке кӱзаш ... (йӱраташ (-ем))
2. Тый тыште улат? А ме тыйым ... (кычалаш (-ам))
3. Школышто Йыван футболла эн сайын ... (модаш (-ам))
4. Йынгыртымем годым тый эше ... мо? (малаш (-ем))
5. Ончыч уремыште утларак йоча ... (куржталаш (-ам))

7.50. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate negative form of the compound past tense I.

1. Студент лиймына годым ме пелйӱд деч ончыч малаш ... (возаш (-ам))
2. Университетыште тунеммет годым тый пашам ... мо? (ышташ (-ем))
3. Ончыч олесе школлаште марий йылмым ... (туныкташ (-ем))
4. Ӱмаште мый концертыш тынар чӱчкыдын ... (кошташ (-ам))
5. Ончыч Аня эр кочкишым нигунам ... (кочкаш (-ам))



7.51. Negate the following sentences.

1. Изина годым ялышке кажне кенжежым коштына ыле.
2. Ковам тунам кече еда мелнам да когылым кўэштеш ыле.
3. Помыжалтмына годым ковам ден кочам пакчаште пашам ыштат ыле.
4. Эр кочкиш деч вара мый сурт коклаште полшем ыле.
5. Те тунам мемнан деке чўчкидын унала пуреда ыле.

7.52. Transform the negative sentences into positive ones.

1. Ту жапыште Санкт-Петербургышто ом иле ыле.
2. Йолташем дене кок тылзе еда Финляндийышке она кудалышт ыле.
3. Финн йылмым тунам от тунем ыле.
4. Финнла пелештымет годым финн-влак тыйым огыт умыло ыле.
5. Гидлан пашам ышташ тылат ок келше ыле.

b) In addition, this tense can be used to indicate conditionality. If the conjunction *гын* 'if' (see [...] – page [...]) is not used, then the sentence is ambiguous, if not disambiguated by context. Thus, the sentence *Мыят тыгак илем ыле* could, depending on context, be translated either as 'I lived like that, too' or 'I would live like that, too'.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Каныш годым теңыз воктене <u>канем ыле</u> .                            | I <u>used to go on vacation</u> to the seaside. ~<br>I <u>would like to go on vacation</u> to the seaside. |
| Ончыч кажне кенжежым каныш годым теңыз воктене <u>канем ыле</u> .       | I <u>used to go on vacation</u> to the seaside in the old days.  |
| Оксам <u>лиеш ыле</u> гын, каныш годым теңыз воктене <u>канем ыле</u> . | If I had had the money, I <u>would have gone on vacation</u> to the seaside.                               |

#### 7.1.1.5. Compound Past Tense II

Other sources refer to this tense as the second periphrastic imperfect.

**Formation (positive and negative):** both positive and negative forms of the compound past tense II are formed by placing the particle *улмаш* (see 9.3 – page 333) after the present-tense forms (see 7.1.1.1 – page 201).

|            | Conjugation I         |                       | Conjugation II        |                        |
|------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|------------------------|
|            | кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat' |                       | вучаш (-ем) 'to wait' |                        |
|            | Positive              | Negative              | Positive              | Negative               |
| <b>1Sg</b> | кочкам улмаш          | ом коч улмаш          | вучем улмаш           | ом вучо улмаш          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | кочкат улмаш          | от коч улмаш          | вучет улмаш           | от вучо улмаш          |
| <b>3Sg</b> | кочкеш улмаш          | огеш ~ ок коч улмаш   | вуча улмаш            | огеш ~ ок вучо улмаш   |
| <b>1Pl</b> | кочкина улмаш         | огына ~ она коч улмаш | вучена улмаш          | огына ~ она вучо улмаш |
| <b>2Pl</b> | кочкида улмаш         | огыда ~ ода коч улмаш | вучеда улмаш          | огыда ~ ода вучо улмаш |
| <b>3Pl</b> | кочкыт улмаш          | огыт коч улмаш        | вучат улмаш           | огыт вучо улмаш        |

Certain clitics and particles (see 9 – page 328) can be placed after the present-tense form, e.g: *кочкам гына улмаш, кочкамат улмаш*.

7.53. Form the compound past tense II of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. куржталаш (-ам) 'to run (around)' 2. лекташ (-ам) 'to leave' 3. ййаш (-ам) 'to drink'

7.54. Form the compound past tense II of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. палаш (-ем) 'to know' 2. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come' 3. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'

7.55. Form the compound past tense II of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *нӧртылаш (-ам)* 'to come back', 3Sg → *нӧртылеш улмаш*.

1. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)', 1Pl
2. тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn, to study', 3Sg
3. вашешташ (-ем) 'to answer, to reply', 1Sg
4. йӧраташ (-ем) 'to love', 3Pl
5. ияш (-ям) 'to swim', 1Pl
6. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask', 1Sg
7. шонаш (-ем) 'to think', 2Sg
8. муаш (-ам) 'to find', 2Pl
9. кушташ (-ем) 'to dance', 3Sg
10. кошташ (-ам) 'to go', 2Sg

7.56. Form the negated compound past tense II of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. кудалаш (-ам) 'to drive' 2. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash' 3. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'

7.57. Form the negated compound past tense II of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak' 2. умылаш (-ем) 'to understand' 3. чияш (-ем) 'to dress'

7.58. Form the negated compound past tense II of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *мушкаш (-ам)* 'to wash', 2Sg → *от муш улмаш*.

1. модаш (-ам) 'to play', 2Pl
2. каяш (-ем) 'to go', 1Sg
3. кусараш (-ем) 'to translate', 3Pl
4. кушкаш (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)', 2Sg
5. пуаш (-эм) 'to give', 3Sg
6. ўжаш (-ам) 'to invite', 1Pl
7. кўаш (-ам) 'to ripen', 1Sg
8. пышташ (-ем) 'to put, to place', 2Sg
9. куанаш (-ем) 'to be happy', 1Pl
10. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like', 3Sg

### Usage

a) Like the compound past tense I (see 7.1.1.4 – page 222), the compound past tense II is used to express continuous, repeated, habitual non-delimited actions or states in the past. It can also express that an action in the past occurred simultaneously with another action and is comparable in this function to the English past progressive tense ('I was going.') It differs from the compound past tense I, however, in that it indicates that the speaker derives his/her knowledge from indirect experience or perception ('it seems, it turns out, it appears').

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Эстонийыште тунеммышт годым Валямыт марий ансамблыште <u>мурат улмаш</u> . | Valya and her friends <u>sang</u> in a Mari ensemble when they studied in Estonia, <u>it turns out</u> . |
| Самырык годым те почеламутым <u>возеда улмаш</u> .                         | You wrote <u>poems</u> when you were young, <u>it turns out</u> .  |
| Омсаш тўкалтымына годым Ольош <u>мала улмаш</u> .                          | When we knocked on the door, <u>Olyosh was sleeping</u> , <u>it turns out</u> .                          |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Эчан вес фирмыштат пашам шот дене <u>ок ыште улмаш.</u> | Echan <u>didn't work</u> properly in the other company either, <u>it turns out</u> . |
| Йолташна-влак толмынам <u>огыт вучо улмаш.</u>          | Our friends <u>didn't wait</u> for us to come, <u>it turns out</u> .                 |
| Изиж годым тудо марла <u>ок кутыро улмаш.</u>           | S/he <u>didn't use to speak</u> Mari when s/he was little, <u>it turns out</u> .     |

## Compound past tense I, compound past tense II:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Толмем годым Йыван экзаменлан <u>ямдылалтеш ыле.</u> Ончылныжо шуко книга кия ыле.                                    | When I came Yyvan <u>was preparing</u> for the exam. He had a lot of books lying in front of him.                          |
| Толмем годым Йыван экзаменлан <u>ямдылалтеш улмаш.</u> Аваже тыге каласыш.  | When I came Yyvan <u>was preparing</u> for the exam. That's what his mother said.  |
| Озаңыште илымыж годым Максим яра жапыште суас йылмым <u>тунемеш ыле.</u> Южгунам туддене суасла <u>пелештена ыле.</u> | Maksim <u>studied</u> Tatar in his free time when he lived in Kazan. We <u>used to</u> occasionally <u>speak</u> in Tatar. |
| Озаңыште илымыж годым Максим яра жапыште суас йылмым <u>тунемеш улмаш.</u> Тидым вара иже пален налым.                | Maksim <u>studied</u> Tatar in his free time when he lived in Kazan. I only found out about this later.                    |

7.59. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate positive form of the compound past tense II.

1. Ёдырда каласен, те ончыч Яльчик ерыш канаш ... (кошташ (-ам))
2. Пошкудына ончыч футбол командыште ... (модаш (-ам))
3. Паша дене Москошто лиймем годым йолташем-влак мылам онгай пӧлекым ... (ямдылаш (-ем))
4. Кугарнян ме тыйым пашаштет кычалынна, а тый радиошто интервьюм ... (пуаш (-эм))
5. Света эше тунеммыж годымак йоча-влаклан англичан йылмым ... (туныкташ (-ем))

7.60. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate negative form of the compound past tense II.

1. У темым умылтарымем годым Иванов ... (колышташ (-ам))
2. Мӧнгыштӧ укена годым йочана-влак урокым ... (ышташ (-ем))
3. Мый тудлан шылан когылым пукшаш тӧченам, а тудо шылым ... (кочкаш (-ам))
4. Ават ойлыш, ончыч тый тамакым ... (шупшаш (-ам))
5. Ожно марий-влак тыште ... (илаш (-ем))

7.61. Negate the following sentences.

1. Ожно марий-влак тистым кучылтыт улмаш.
2. Йынгыртымем годым нуно пашашке вашкат улмаш.
3. Миклай школышто тунеммыж годымак детективым лудаш йӧрата улмаш.
4. Тудо ончычат мыланна шойыштеш улмаш.
5. Валямыт ӱмаште кажне кечын куржталыт улмаш.

7.62. Transform the negative sentences into positive ones.

1. Изида годым те йочасадыш ода кошт улмаш.
2. Тый ончычат кочкаш от шолто улмаш.
3. Ожно марий-влак сӧснам огыт ашне улмаш.
4. Марием дене ялыште лиймына годым эргына олаште пӧртым ок эрыкте улмаш.
5. Ончыч тудо кофем ок йӱ улмаш.

b) In addition, this tense can be used to indicate conditionality. If the conjunction *гын* 'if' (see [...] – page [...]) is not used, then the sentence is ambiguous, if not disambiguated by context.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Мылам <u>полшат улмаш</u> .   | They <u>used to help</u> me. ~<br>They <u>would have helped</u> me.                        |
| Ончылий туткарыш логалмем годым йолташем-влак шолып мылам <u>полшат улмаш</u> . | When I ran into a rough spot last year, my friends <u>helped me</u> without me knowing it. |
| Нуно чылам палат ыле гын, мылам <u>полшат улмаш</u> .                           | If they had known everything, they <u>would have helped</u> me.                            |

#### 7.1.1.6. Compound Past Tense III

Other sources refer to this tense as the first periphrastic perfect.

**Formation (positive and negative):** both positive and negative forms of the compound past tense III are formed by placing the particle *ыле* (see 9.3 – page 333) after the simple past tense II forms (see 7.1.1.3 – page 215).

|            | Conjugation I                        |                           | Conjugation II                   |                         |
|------------|--------------------------------------|---------------------------|----------------------------------|-------------------------|
|            | тунемаш (-ам) 'to study' → тунемын → |                           | пураш (-ем) 'to enter' → пурен → |                         |
|            | Positive                             | Negative                  | Positive                         | Negative                |
| <b>1Sg</b> | тунемынам ыле                        | тунемын омыл ыле          | пуренам ыле                      | пурен омыл ыле          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | тунемынат ыле                        | тунемын отыл ыле          | пуренат ыле                      | пурен отыл ыле          |
| <b>3Sg</b> | тунемын ыле                          | тунемын огыл ыле          | пурен ыле                        | пурен огыл ыле          |
| <b>1Pl</b> | тунемынна ыле                        | тунемын огынал ~ онал ыле | пуренна ыле                      | пурен огынал ~ онал ыле |
| <b>2Pl</b> | тунемында ыле                        | тунемын огыдал ~ одал ыле | пуренда ыле                      | пурен огыдал ~ одал ыле |
| <b>3Pl</b> | тунемыныт ыле                        | тунемын огытыл ыле        | пуреныт ыле                      | пурен огытыл ыле        |

Certain clitics and particles (see 9 – page 328) can be placed after the present-tense form, e.g.: *кочкынам гына ыле, кочкынамат ыле*.

7.63. Form the compound past tense III of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. лудаш (-ам) 'to read'    2. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'    3. йѳаш (-ам) 'to drink'

7.64. Form the compound past tense III of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. ойлаш (-ем) 'to speak'    2. каяш (-ем) 'to go'    3. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'

7.65. Form the compound past tense III of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *шужаш (-ем) 'to starve', 3Sg → шужен ыле*.

1. вучаш (-ем) 'to wait', 1Pl
2. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask', 3Sg
3. келшаш (-ем) 'to agree', 1Sg
4. куржаш (-ам) 'to run', 2Pl
5. ияш (-ям) 'to swim', 1Sg
6. руаш (-эм) 'to cut down', 3Pl
7. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)', 2Sg
8. кѳаш (-ам) 'to ripen', 1Pl
9. малаш (-ем) 'to sleep', 3Sg
10. почаш (-ам) 'to open (tr.)', 2Sg

7.66. Form the negated compound past tense III of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. кынелаш (-ам) 'to get up'    2. муаш (-ам) 'to find'    3. кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat'

7.67. Form the negated compound past tense III of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak' 2. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come' 3. шонаш (-ем) 'to think'

7.68. Form the negated compound past tense III of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *налаш (-ам) 'to take', 1Sg → налын омыл ыле.*

1. модаш (-ам) 'to play', 3Pl
2. воштылаш (-ам) 'to laugh', 3Sg
3. мураш (-ем) 'to sing', 2Sg
4. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like', 1Pl
5. пуаш (-эм) 'to give', 1Sg
6. вашешташ (-ем) 'to answer, to reply', 2Pl
7. ўжаш (-ам) 'to invite', 2Sg
8. чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress', 1Pl
9. канаш (-ем) 'to rest, to relax', 3Sg
10. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash', 1Sg

### Usage

a) The compound past tense III is used to denote an action in the past that preceded another action, or was interrupted by it. It can also indicate that an action was directly observed, rather than inferred. In this regard, it is comparable to the compound past tense I (see 7.1.1.4 – page 222), but contrasts with the compound past tenses II (see 7.1.1.5 – page 225) and IV (see 7.1.1.7 – page 230) (in other regards, it is quite similar in usage to the compound past tense IV).

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Малаш возынам веле ыле</u> , ала-кө омсаш тўкалтыш.                            | I <u>had just gone to sleep</u> when someone knocked on the door.                    |
| Метрий у тувырым <u>чиен</u> гына <u>ыле</u> , ту кечынак кофе тамгам шындыш.     | Metriy <u>had just put on</u> a new shirt, and that day he got a coffee stain on it. |
| Орина ик пашажым пытарен <u>шуктен огыл ыле</u> , тудлан вес пашам пуэныт.        | Orina <u>had not finished</u> one task when she was given another one.               |
| Будапештышке кайыме деч ончыч ме самолёт дене нигунам <u>чонгештен онал ыле</u> . | Before we went to Budapest, we <u>had</u> never <u>flown</u> by plane.               |

In many situations, this tense can be used interchangeably with the simple past tense II (see 7.1.1.3 – page 215):

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Венгрийышке ик гана веле <u>миенна ыле</u> . ~ Венгрийышке ик гана веле <u>миенна</u> . | We've only <u>gone</u> to Hungary once. |
| Ныл ий ончыч мый <u>йўклен омыл ыле</u> . ~ Ныл ий ончыч мый <u>йўклен омыл</u> .       | I <u>didn't vote</u> four years ago.    |

7.69. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate positive form of the compound past tense III.

1. Мый уремышке лектын ... гына ..., трук виян йўр йўраш тўнгале. (шукташ (-ем))
2. Шарнет, изиэт годым тый икмыняр гана йўштө Кугызалан серышым ... (возаш (-ем))
3. Иванов кочкаш ... веле ..., шўрышкыжө карме чонгештен пурыш. (шинчаш (-ам))
4. Тиде рвезым мый палем: икана ме поездыште пырля ... (кудалаш (-ам))
5. Конференцийыште Ленамыт докладыштым лудаш ... , да тунамак проектор пудыргыш. (тўнгалаш (-ам))

7.70. : Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate negative form of the compound past tense III.

1. Рушарнян эрдене 8 шагат ... , пошкудо-влак ремонтым ышташ тўнгалыч. (шуаш (-ам))
2. Те докладдам лудын ... , а Петров йодышым пуыш. (пытараш (-ем))
3. «Марий чодыра» паркыште ме тымарте нигунам ... . (лияш (-ям))
4. Уна-влак эше ... , а озавате ўстембаке чыла поген. (толаш (-ам))
5. Тендан деч ончыч тиде темым нигö ... . (шымлаш (-ем))

7.71. Negate the following sentences

1. Аня эрдене будильник кычкырыме деч ончыч кынелын ыле.
2. Марий оперым ужынат ыле мо?
3. У ий деч ончыч ме йолташланна открытым колтенна ыле.
4. Тыгай марий сувенирым «Эн сай» кевытыште ужаленыт ыле.
5. Паша кече деч ончыч электрон почтым тергенам ыле.

7.72. Transform the negative sentences into positive ones.

1. Украинысе чемерис-влак нерген колын отыл ыле мо?
2. Машалан 18 ий темын огыл ыле, тудо Москош пашам ышташ каен.
3. Ёмаште кенжежым ялышке миен онал ыле.
4. Мый тудым конгресс деч ончыч пален омыл ыле.
5. Йываным вашлиймешке, Галя марлан лектын огыл ыле.

#### 7.1.1.7. Compound Past Tense IV

Other sources refer to this tense as the second periphrastic perfect.

**Formation (positive and negative):** both positive and negative forms of the compound past tense IV are formed by placing the particle *улмаш* (see 9.3 – page 333) after the simple past tense II forms (see 7.1.1.3 – page 215).

|            | Conjugation I                       |                               | Conjugation II                   |                              |
|------------|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|----------------------------------|------------------------------|
|            | тунемаш (-ам) 'to study' → туемын → |                               | пураш (-ем) 'to enter' → пурен → |                              |
|            | Positive                            | Negative                      | Positive                         | Negative                     |
| <b>1Sg</b> | туемынам<br>улмаш                   | туемын омыл<br>улмаш          | пуренам<br>улмаш                 | пурен омыл<br>улмаш          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | туемынат<br>улмаш                   | туемын отыл<br>улмаш          | пуренат<br>улмаш                 | пурен отыл<br>улмаш          |
| <b>3Sg</b> | туемын<br>улмаш                     | туемын огыл<br>улмаш          | пурен<br>улмаш                   | пурен огыл<br>улмаш          |
| <b>1Pl</b> | туемынна<br>улмаш                   | туемын огынал ~ онал<br>улмаш | пуренна<br>улмаш                 | пурен огынал ~ онал<br>улмаш |
| <b>2Pl</b> | туемында<br>улмаш                   | туемын огыдал ~ одал<br>улмаш | пуренда<br>улмаш                 | пурен огыдал ~ одал<br>улмаш |
| <b>3Pl</b> | туемыныт<br>улмаш                   | туемын огытыл<br>улмаш        | пуреныт<br>улмаш                 | пурен огытыл<br>улмаш        |

Certain clitics and particles (see 9 – page 328) can be placed after the present-tense form, e.g: *кочкынам гына улмаш, кочкынамат улмаш.*

7.73. Form the compound past tense IV of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. кошташ (-ам) 'to go'
2. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'
3. муаш (-ам) 'to find'

7.74. Form the compound past tense IV of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. палаш (-ем) 'to know'    2. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come'    3. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'

7.75. Form the compound past tense IV of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *лұшташ (-ем)* 'to milk', 2Sg → *лұштенат улмаш*.

1. тўнғалаш (-ам) 'to begin', 2Sg
2. канаш (-ем) 'to rest, to relax', 1Sg
3. кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat', 1Pl
4. шолташ (-ем) 'to boil, to cook (tr.)', 3Sg
5. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)', 3Pl
6. лудаш (-ам) 'to read', 3Sg
7. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like', 2Pl
8. каяш (-ем) 'to go', 2Sg
9. йўаш (-ам) 'to drink', 1Sg
10. пытараш (-ем) 'to finish, to end (tr.)', 1Pl

7.76. Form the negated compound past tense IV of the following first conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. ужаш (-ам) 'to see'    2. ияш (-ям) 'to swim'    3. кўаш (-ам) 'to ripen'

7.77. Form the negated compound past tense IV of the following second conjugation verbs in all persons.

1. ойлаш (-ем) 'to speak'    2. вучаш (-ем) 'to wait'    3. чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress'

7.78. Form the negated compound past tense IV of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *тошташ (-ам)* 'to dare', 3Sg → *тоштын озгыл улмаш*.

1. мушкылташ (-ам) 'to wash oneself', 3Sg
2. шонаш (-ем) 'to think', 2Sg
3. почаш (-ам) 'to open (tr.)', 3Pl
4. лекташ (-ам) 'to go, to leave', 1Pl
5. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak', 3Sg
6. колышташ (-ам) 'to listen', 1Sg
7. йўраташ (-ем) 'to love', 2Pl
8. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask', 2Sg
9. мураш (-ем) 'to sing', 1Sg
10. келшаш (-ем) 'to agree', 1Pl

### Usage

a) The compound past tense IV is used to denote an action in the past that preceded another action, or was interrupted by it. It can also indicate that the speaker derives his/her knowledge from indirect experience or perception ('it seems, it turns out, it appears'), and that the speaker is surprised by the information. In this regard, it is comparable to the compound past tense II (see 7.1.1.5 – page 225), but contrasts with the compound past tenses I (see 7.1.1.4 – page 222) and compound past tense III (see 7.1.1.6 – page 228) (in other regards, it is quite similar in usage to the compound past tense III).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Вашлиймына деч ончыч тый мылам<br><u>йынгыртенат улмаш</u> , а мый колынат<br>омыл. | You <u>called</u> me before we met, but I didn't hear it.                                 |
| Ўдырем <u>кушкын улмаш</u> : ўмашсе тувыр<br>тудлан изи лийын.                      | My daughter <u>has grown up</u> : last year's dress<br>doesn't fit her anymore.           |
| Йоча годсо альбомым муым да ёрым:<br>тунам сайын <u>сўретленам улмаш</u> .          | I found a childhood album and was amazed, I<br><u>could</u> really <u>draw</u> back then. |
| Унагудышко мийышна, а мемнам тушто<br><u>вучен огытыл улмаш</u> .                   | We went to the hotel, but they <u>hadn't waited</u><br>for us there.                      |
| Ават каласыш, университет деч ончыч<br>журналистикыш каяш <u>шонен отыл улмаш</u> . | Your mother said you <u>hadn't thought</u> of going<br>into journalism before university. |

In many situations, this tense can be used interchangeably with the simple past tense II (see 7.1.1.3 – page 215). The variant using the compound past tense IV in some cases indicates the speaker's surprise to a greater extent:

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Нуно ўмаште Японийышке <u>миеныт улмаш</u> . ~<br>Нуно ўмаште Японийышке <u>миеныт</u> .           | (I heard) they <u>went to Japan</u> last year.                |
| Илона ушкалым ик ганат <u>лўштен огыл улмаш</u> . ~<br>Илона ушкалым ик ганат <u>лўштен огыл</u> . | (I heard) Ilona <u>had not milked</u> a cow a<br>single time. |

Compound past tense III, compound past tense IV:

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Конкурсышто мурымо деч ончыч йоча-<br>влак кужу жап <u>ямдылалтыныт ыле</u> .<br>Мурымыштым кажне кечын колаш лиеш<br>ыле. | Before singing at the contest, the children<br><u>prepared</u> for a long time. You could hear their<br>singing every day. |
| Туныктышо каласыш, конкурсышто<br>мурымо деч ончыч йоча-влак кужу жап<br><u>ямдылалтыныт улмаш</u> .                       | The teacher said that the children <u>had</u><br><u>prepared</u> for a long time before singing at the<br>contest.         |
| Аня «Алдияр» оперым <u>ужын ыле</u> . Кодшо<br>тылзыште тиде спектакльым пырля<br>онченна.                                 | Anya <u>has seen</u> the opera “Aldiyar”. We went<br>to see this performance together last month.                          |
| Аня «Алдияр» оперым <u>ужын улмаш</u> .<br>Фейсбукушто спектакль нерген<br>шонымашыжым лудынам.                            | Anya <u>has seen</u> the opera “Aldiyar”. I read her<br>thoughts about the performance on<br>Facebook.                     |

7.79. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate positive form of the compound past tense IV.

1. Ачат каласыш, экзамен деч ончыч тый чот ... (лўдаш (-ам))
2. Те чынак мо урок жапыште йўштылаш шолып ... ? (кошташ (-ам))
3. Жапым ончалбым – пелйўдат ... (эрташ (-ем))
4. Кайымешке, ме окнам петыраш ... , садлан кызыт пачерыште пеш йўштө. (мондаш (-ем))
5. Вара иже умылышна: ужалыше-влак пазарыште мемнам ... (ондалаш (-ем))



7.80. Insert the verbs given in parentheses into the sentence in the appropriate negative form of the compound past tense IV.

1. Катя шочмо кечышкет молан толын огыл, шонем. А тый, акат каласыш, тудым ... . (ўжаш (-ам))
2. Экскурсий деч вара веле пале лийын: турист-влак мемнам йөршын ... . (умылаш (-ем))
3. Те тиде секретым чынак ... , а мый тыланда шым ўшане. (палаш (-ем))
4. Ялыште Лаура ушкал деч чот лўдын: туддеч ончыч ўдыр ушкалым нигунам ... . (ужаш (-ам))
5. Нелеш ида нал, ме тендам жапыште ... . (саламлаш (-ем))

7.81. Negate the following sentences.

1. Изат каласыш, те уремыште пел миллион тенге оксам муында улмаш.
2. Кызыт мондалтын, но лу ий ончыч ме тиде актрисе дене чынак вашлийынна улмаш.
3. Студент-влак туныктышым экзаменыште вученыт, а тудо экзамен нерген монден улмаш.
4. Ольош ойлыш, тый у машинам налынат улмаш.
5. Ивановмыт деке унала миенна. Омсашкышт пел шагат тўкалтенна, а нуно малыныт улмаш.

7.82. Transform the negative sentences into positive ones.

1. Университет деч ончыч тый англичан йылмым тунемын отыл улмаш.
2. Уромышто Петя гына начар вашештен: мўнгыштў ямдылалтын огыл улмаш.
3. Авайын мутшо почеш, изиэм годым мушкылташ йўратен омыл улмаш.
4. Йолташет ойлыш, Ханты-Мансийскыште те лийын одал улмаш.
5. Йотэлысе студент-влак шуко йодыштыныт: мари́й йўла нерген нунылан каласкален огытыл улмаш.

### 7.1.2. Imperative

Formation of positive forms: In the imperative mood there are distinct forms for the second and third persons singular and plural, i.e., a total of four persons in all. (For cohortative-hortative forms in the first person plural see 7.1.1.1 – page 201; for the usage of past-tense forms as an imperative of joint action, see 7.1.1.2 – page 208). Note that in the imperative, the same suffixes are attached to the verbal stem in both conjugation classes.

a) Second person singular: In both conjugations the form of the positive imperative second person singular is identical with the connegative form (see 7.1.0 – page 198).

7.83. Form the imperative second person singular of the following first conjugation verbs.

1. кынелаш (-ам) 'to get up'
2. колышташ (-ам) 'to listen'
3. шинчаш (-ам) 'to sit down'
4. кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat'
5. йўаш (-ам) 'to drink'
6. толаш (-ам) 'to come'
7. муаш (-ам) 'to find'
8. куржаш (-ам) 'to run'
9. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash'
10. лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become'

7.84. Form the imperative second person singular of the following second conjugation verbs.

1. пураш (-ем) 'to come in, to enter'
2. кўзаш (-ем) 'to climb'
3. ончаш (-ем) 'to look'
4. ўшанаш (-ем) 'to believe'
5. каяш (-ем) 'to go'
6. ужалаш (-ем) 'to sell'
7. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
8. туныкташ (-ем) 'to teach'
9. чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress'
10. малаш (-ем) 'to sleep'

7.85. Form the imperative second person singular of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. каласаш (-ем) 'to say, to tell'
2. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'
3. сўраш (-ем) 'to promise'
4. лекташ (-ам) 'to go, to leave'
5. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come'
6. лудаш (-ам) 'to read'
7. шонаш (-ем) 'to think'
8. канаш (-ем) 'to rest, to relax'
9. тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn, to study'
10. ўжаш (-ам) 'to invite'

b) Second person plural: In both conjugations the imperative second person plural is an unstressed S-suffix (see 1.6.7 – page 50) *-3a* (*-3a* ~ *-ca*) attached to the verbal stem. The stem changes discussed in 7.0.2 – page 196 – occur here, if necessary, in the case of first-conjugation verbs.

| Conjugation class | Stem ends in ...                          | Example |             |                              |
|-------------------|---|---------|-------------|------------------------------|
| 2                 | Unstressed -e, -o, -ö                     | ыште-   | 'to do'     | ышты <u>за</u>               |
| 1                 | Stressed -y, -ÿ                           | шу-     | 'to arrive' | шу <u>за</u>                 |
|                   | Sonorant consonant                        | тол-    | 'to come'   | тол <u>за</u>                |
|                   | Obstruent consonant                       | луд-    | 'to read'   | луд <u>са</u>                |
|                   | Obstruent consonant<br>(with stem change) | чк → ч  | кочк-       | 'to eat' коч <u>са</u>       |
|                   |   | шк → ч  | мушк-       | 'to wash' муш <u>са</u>      |
|                   |   | нч → ч  | шинч-       | 'to sit down' шинч <u>са</u> |
|                   |   | кт → к  | лект-       | 'to leave' лек <u>са</u>     |
|                   |   | з → ч   | воз-        | 'to lie down' воч <u>са</u>  |

7.86. Form the imperative second person plural of the following first conjugation verbs.

1. почаш (-ам) 'to open (tr.)'
2. пörтылаш (-ам) 'to return, to come back'
3. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask'
4. колышташ (-ам) 'to listen'
5. лукташ (-ам) 'to lead out'
6. йёаш (-ам) 'to drink'
7. манаш (-ам) 'to say'
8. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'
9. кушкаш (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)'
10. муаш (-ам) 'to find'

7.87. Form the imperative second person plural of the following second conjugation verbs.

1. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak'
2. каяш (-ем) 'to go'
3. йöраташ (-ем) 'to love'
4. кушташ (-ем) 'to dance'
5. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
6. сүретлаш (-ем) 'to draw, to paint'
7. возаш (-ем) 'to write'
8. лёаш (-ем) 'to shoot'
9. кусараш (-ем) 'to translate'
10. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)'

7.88. Form the imperative second person plural of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. тўналаш (-ам) 'to begin'
2. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come'
3. кошташ (-ам) 'to go'
4. шўшкаш (-ам) 'to shove'
5. ямдылаш (-ем) 'to prepare (tr.)'
6. ияш (-ям) 'to swim'
7. кондаш (-ем) 'to bring'
8. ўжаш (-ам) 'to invite'
9. шолташ (-ем) 'to boil, to cook (tr.)'
10. руаш (-эм) 'to cut down'

c) Third person singular: In both conjugations the imperative third person singular is an S-suffix (see 1.6.7 – page 50) -ЖЕ (-жЕ ~ -шЕ) attached to the verbal stem. The stem changes discussed in 7.0.2 – page 196 – occur here, if necessary, in the case of first-conjugation verbs.

| Conjugation class | Stem ends in ...                          |        | Example |               |                |
|-------------------|---|--------|---------|---------------|----------------|
| 2                 | Unstressed -e, -o, -ö                     |        | ыште-   | 'to do'       | ышты <u>же</u> |
| 1                 | Stressed -y, -ÿ                           |        | шу-     | 'to arrive'   | шу <u>жо</u>   |
|                   | Sonorant consonant                        |        | тол-    | 'to come'     | тол <u>жо</u>  |
|                   | Obstruent consonant                       |        | луд-    | 'to read'     | луд <u>шо</u>  |
|                   | Obstruent consonant<br>(with stem change) | чк → ч | кочк-   | 'to eat'      | коч <u>шо</u>  |
|                   |   | шк → ч | мушк-   | 'to wash'     | муш <u>шо</u>  |
|                   |   | нч → ч | шинч-   | 'to sit down' | шинч <u>ше</u> |
|                   |   | кт → к | лект-   | 'to leave'    | лект <u>ше</u> |
|                   |   | з → ч  | воз-    | 'to lie down' | воч <u>шо</u>  |

Note that when verbal stems end in obstruent consonants, the forms of the imperative 3Sg are homonymous with the active participle (see 7.2.3 – page 259): *кочшо* 's/he should eat ~ eating'.

7.89. Form the imperative third person singular of the following first conjugation verbs.

- камвозаш (-ам) 'to fall'
- налаш (-ам) 'to take; to buy'
- лұдаш (-ам) 'to fear'
- йомаш (-ам) 'to disappear'
- лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become'
- муаш (-ам) 'to find'
- шочаш (-ам) 'to be born'
- кұраш (-ам) 'to pull, to tear'
- кұаш (-ам) 'to ripen'
- кушкаш (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)'

7.90. Form the imperative third person singular of the following second conjugation verbs.

- көнаш (-ем) 'to agree, to assent'
- чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress'
- вучаш (-ем) 'to wait'
- йынгырташ (-ем) 'to call (telephone)'
- вұдаш (-ем) 'to lead'
- колташ (-ем) 'to send'
- каяш (-ем) 'to go'
- ойлаш (-ем) 'to talk, to speak'
- полшаш (-ем) 'to help'
- пуаш (-эм) 'to give'

7.91. Form the imperative third person singular of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

- кұзаш (-ем) 'to climb'
- ужаш (-ам) 'to see'
- мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come'
- йұаш (-ам) 'to drink'
- палаш (-ем) 'to know'
- лукташ (-ам) 'to lead out'
- шокташ (-ем) 'to play (e.g., an instrument)'
- кынелаш (-ам) 'to get up'
- руаш (-эм) 'to cut down'
- вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'

d) Third person plural: The ending of the positive imperative in the third person plural is *-(ы)шм* which is attached to the verbal stem. The *-ы* occurs as an epenthetic vowel in the first conjugation, but not in the second conjugation.

| Conjugation class | Example |               |         |
|-------------------|---------|---------------|---------|
| 2                 | ыште-   | 'to do'       | ЫШТЫШТ  |
|                   | толо-   | 'to steal'    | ТОЛЫШТ  |
|                   | йөрө-   | 'to suit'     | ЙӨРЫШТ  |
|                   | кае-    | 'to go'       | КАЙЫШТ  |
| 1                 | шу-     | 'to arrive'   | ШУЫШТ   |
|                   | тол-    | 'to come'     | ТОЛЫШТ  |
|                   | луд-    | 'to read'     | ЛУДЫШТ  |
|                   | кочк-   | 'to eat'      | КОЧКЫШТ |
|                   | мушк-   | 'to wash'     | МУШКЫШТ |
|                   | шинч-   | 'to sit down' | ШИНЧЫШТ |
|                   | лект-   | 'to leave'    | ЛЕКТЫШТ |
|                   | воз-    | 'to lie down' | ВОЗЫШТ  |

Note that in the second conjugation the forms of the imperative third person plural are formally identical with the 3Pl forms of the simple past tense I: *малаш (-ем)* 'to sleep' → *малышм* 'they slept ~ they should sleep'.

7.92. Form the imperative third person plural of the following first conjugation verbs.

1. почаш (-ам) 'to open (tr.)'
2. лукташ (-ам) 'to lead out'
3. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like'
4. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask'
5. куржаш (-ам) 'to run'
6. муаш (-ам) 'to find'
7. кушкаш (-ам) 'to grow (intr.)'
8. йёаш (-ам) 'to drink'
9. мушкылташ (-ам) 'to wash oneself'
10. воштылаш (-ам) 'to laugh'

7.93. Form the imperative third person plural of the following second conjugation verbs.

1. вашешташ (-ем) 'to answer, to reply'
2. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)'
3. ышташ (-ем) 'to do'
4. ужалаш (-ем) 'to sell'
5. нояш (-ем) 'to become tired'
6. шолташ (-ем) 'to boil, to cook (tr.)'
7. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
8. ончаш (-ем) 'to look'
9. шуяш (-ем) 'to stretch (tr.)'
10. пытараш (-ем) 'to finish, to end (tr.)'

7.94. Form the imperative third person plural of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. умылаш (-ем) 'to understand'
2. пўчкаш (-ам) 'to cut'
3. руаш (-эм) 'to cut down'
4. ужаш (-ам) 'to see'
5. палаш (-ем) 'to know'
6. кошташ (-ам) 'to go'
7. кычалаш (-ам) 'to look for, to search'
8. лўяш (-ем) 'to shoot'
9. вашкаш (-ем) 'to hurry'
10. ияш (-ям) 'to swim'

#### Formation of negative forms:

The negative imperative is formed in all persons with the negation verb (see 7.3.1 – page 278) followed by the connegative form of the negated verb (see 7.1.0 – page 198). The forms of the negation verb in the imperative are as follows:

|            |       |
|------------|-------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | -     |
| <b>2Sg</b> | ит    |
| <b>3Sg</b> | ынже  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -     |
| <b>2Pl</b> | ида   |
| <b>3Pl</b> | ынышт |

Examples with contrasting positive and negative forms:

|            | Conjugation I         |           | Conjugation II        |            |
|------------|-----------------------|-----------|-----------------------|------------|
|            | кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat' |           | вучаш (-ем) 'to wait' |            |
|            | Positive              | Negative  | Positive              | Negative   |
| <b>1Sg</b> | -                     | -         | -                     | -          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | коч                   | ит коч    | вучо                  | ит вучо    |
| <b>3Sg</b> | кочшо                 | ынже коч  | вучыжо                | ынже вучо  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -                     | -         | -                     | -          |
| <b>2Pl</b> | кочса                 | ида коч   | вучыза                | ида вучо   |
| <b>3Pl</b> | кочкышт               | ынышт коч | вучышт                | ынышт вучо |

7.95. Form the negated imperative second person singular of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. толаш (-ам) 'to come'
2. тўрлаш (-ем) 'to level, to smooth'
3. йўаш (-ам) 'to drink'
4. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come'
5. пышташ (-ем) 'to put, to place'
6. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash'
7. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
8. шогаш (-ем) 'to stand'
9. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'
10. модаш (-ам) 'to play'

7.96. Form the negated imperative third person singular of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. муаш (-ам) 'to find'
2. мураш (-ем) 'to sing'
3. лекташ (-ам) 'to go, to leave'
4. кусараш (-ем) 'to translate'
5. каяш (-ем) 'to go'
6. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask'
7. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like'
8. руаш (-эм) 'to cut down'
9. ияш (-ям) 'to swim'
10. сөраш (-ем) 'to promise'

7.97. Form the negated imperative second person plural of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. канаш (-ем) 'to rest, to relax'
2. камвозаш (-ам) 'to fall'
3. ончаш (-ем) 'to look'
4. лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become'
5. лудаш (-ам) 'to read'
6. кўзаш (-ем) 'to climb'
7. лукташ (-ам) 'to lead out'
8. чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress'
9. пörтылаш (-ам) 'to return, to come back'
10. пураш (-ем) 'to come in, to enter'

7.98. Form the negated imperative third person plural of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. шўшкаш (-ам) 'to shove'
2. тörшташ (-ем) 'to jump'
3. помыжалташ (-ам) 'to wake up (intr.)'
4. ойгыраш (-ем) 'to worry (intr.)'
5. вўдаш (-ем) 'to lead'
6. кўаш (-ам) 'to ripen'
7. кудааш (-ам) 'to drive, to ride'
8. малаш (-ем) 'to sleep'
9. кояш (-ям) 'to resemble, to look like'
10. кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)'

7.99. Negate the positive imperative second person singular of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. Колышт!
2. Ойло!
3. Ий!
4. Тырше!
5. Кынел!
6. Кай!
7. Луд!
8. Пу!
9. Тўлō!
10. Шич!

7.100. Negate the positive imperative third person singular of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. Вашкыже!
2. Тöчыжö!
3. Вашлийже!
4. Шуыжо!
5. Пеледше!
6. Вучыжо!
7. Лүдшö!
8. Мушшо!
9. Мийыже!
10. Мужо!

7.101. Negate the positive imperative second person plural of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. Йодса!
2. Вашештыза!
3. Тунемза!
4. Шоныза!
5. Возыза!
6. Лекса!
7. Кийыза!
8. Йүза!
9. Пуыза!
10. Вочса!

7.102. Negate the positive imperative third person plural of the following first and second conjugation verbs.

1. Коштышт!
2. Руышт!
3. Вашлийышт!
4. Кўышт!
5. Сўретлышт!
6. Ужышт!
7. Кўзышт!
8. Куштышт!
9. Мушкышт!
10. Кайышт!

### Usage

a) The imperative is used to express orders, wishes, demands, permission, etc. In the second person one or more persons are directly addressed. In the third person indirect orders, etc. are given to one or more persons not being addressed by the speaker. English in contrast has no widely used specific form of the imperative in the third person and typically employs an auxiliary verb + infinitive: 'He should go. They should come.' One comparable form used in English is *long live*: 'Long live the Mari language!'



|  |  |
|--|--|
| Вашкерак <u>тод!</u>                     | <u>Come</u> quickly!                             |
| Мылам <u>полшо</u> , пожалуйста.         | <u>Help</u> me, please.                          |
| Эркынрак <u>кутырыза</u> .               | <u>Talk</u> more slowly.                         |
| Йолташет пӧртышкӧ <u>пурьжо!</u>         | Your friend <u>should come</u> into the house!   |
| Йӱштӧ вӱдым <u>ит йӱ!</u>                | <u>Don't drink</u> cold water!                   |
| Йӱдым олаште <u>ида кошт</u> .           | <u>Don't walk</u> around town at night.          |
| Мыйым <u>ида вурсо!</u>                  | <u>Don't scold</u> me!                           |
| Изат нелеш <u>ынже нал</u> .             | Your big brother <u>should not be offended</u> . |
| Мемнан деч посна нуно <u>ынышт кай</u> . | They <u>shouldn't go</u> without us.             |

Note the usage of numerous particles in combination with imperative forms, and/or to add imperative semantics to indicative forms: *-ян, -я* (see 9.2 – page 333), *айда, айтма, тек* (see 9.3 – page 333), *ыле* (see 9.3 – page 333), *але* (see 9.5.6 – page 339), *докан* (see 9.5.24 – page 343).

b) The imperative is used in finite final clauses, see 15.7.1 – page 401.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Йоча-влак, авашт ласкан <u>малыже</u> манын, шып модыт. | In order for their mother <u>to sleep</u> peacefully, the children played quietly. |
|---|--|

c) The imperative can be used in connection with the particles *кеч ~ кепек* ‘even if’ (see 9.5.35 – page 346, 9.5.33 – page 346), and pronouns such as *кеч-мо* ‘whatever’ or *кеч-кӧ* ‘whoever’ (see 5.7.1 – page 152), in concessive constructions.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мый денем <u>кеч-мом ыштыза</u> , мый садак чыным каласем. | <u>Do whatever you want</u> with me, I'll still say the truth. |
| <u>Кеч-кӧ толжо</u> , мый омсам нигӧлан ом поч.            | No matter <u>who comes</u> , I won't open the door for anyone. |

7.103. Insert the positive imperative form of the given verb in the indicated person into the sentence.

- Шке калыкшым тудо ... (пагалаш (-ем) ‘to respect’, 3Sg)
- Пашатым сайын ... (ышташ (-ем) ‘to do’, 2Sg)
- Тек нуно марла ... (кутыраш (-ем) ‘to speak’, 3Pl)
- Таза ... (лияш (-ям) ‘to be, to become’, 2Pl)
- Айдеме шке корныжым ... (кычалаш (-ам) ‘to look for, to search’, 3Sg)
- Ача-аватым эре ... (колышташ (-ам) ‘to listen’, 2Sg)
- Ваш келшен ... (илаш (-ем) ‘to live’, 2Pl)
- Тек марий йӱла-влак ... (аралалташ (-ам) ‘to be preserved’, 3Pl)
- Ӱмыр мучко ... (тунемаш (-ам) ‘to learn’, 2Sg)
- Илышдам ... (йӧраташ (-ем) ‘to love’, 2Pl)

7.104. Insert the negative imperative form of the given verb in the indicated person into the sentences pertaining to Mari superstitions.

- Ӱстембалым чара кид дене ... – нужнаш коদেশ. (ӱшташ (-ам) ‘to sweep’, 3Sg)
- Эрдене эр ... – шортат. (мураш (-ем) ‘to sing’, 2Sg)
- Кӱзӧ гыч ... – осал лийыда. (кочкаш (-ам) ‘to eat’, 2Pl)
- Ойгетым шуко ... – ойго ойгым ӱжеш. (ойлаш (-ем) ‘to speak’, 2Sg)
- Тулышко ... – тӱрвешышт йора лектеш. (шӱведаш (-ем) ‘to spit’, 3Pl)
- Шуко ... – шортат. (воштылаш (-ам) ‘to laugh’, 2Sg)
- Пошкудет кастене оксам кӱсын ... (пуаш (-эм) ‘to give’, 3Sg)
- Киндым кумык ... – илышда кумык лиеш. (пышташ (-ем) ‘to put, to place’, 2Pl)
- Ӱстел деке туп дене ... (шинчаш (-ам) ‘to sit down’, 3Pl)
- Кастене кӱварым ... (мушкаш (-ам) ‘to wash’, 2Pl)

7.105. Negate the imperative in the following sentences.

1. Кевытыште киндым нал.
2. Пöлемышке эртыза.
3. Ондакрак малаш вочшо.
4. Эше ик пүкеным кондышт.
5. Кидетым муш.
6. Варарак йынгыртыже.
7. Кочкаш шичса.
8. Шинчалым мыланем пуыза.
9. Шокшын чий.
10. Эрла 6 шагатлан кынелышт.

7.106. Transform the following sentences, creating negative imperative sentences in the indicated person, e.g.: *Тыште йўштылаш огеш лий. (2Pl) > Тыште уда йўштыл.*

1. Шўкым уремыште шуаш ок йөрö. (3Sg)
2. Лифтыште төршташ ок лий. (2Pl)
3. Шоколадым шукым кочкаш ок йөрö. (2Sg)
4. Интернетыште кужун шинчаш сай огыл. (2Sg)
5. Машинаштым ең капка ончылан шогалташ сай огыл. (3Pl)
6. Йўдым тўмыр дене шокташ ок йөрö. (2Pl)
7. Йўр чот йўреш. Зонтик деч посна лекташ ок лий. (3Pl)
8. Тыште корным вончаш ок лий. (2Sg)
9. Кафеште тамакым шупшаш ок лий. (3Sg)
10. Тиде лавыран ерыште йўштылаш ок йөрö. (2Pl)

### 7.1.3. Desiderative

#### 7.1.3.1. Desiderative Present

Formation of positive forms: A verb in the positive desiderative consists of three elements, a) the verbal stem, b) the marker of the desiderative mood, and c) the appropriate personal suffix.

The desiderative marker *-ne* is a N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) attached directly to the verbal stem in both conjugation classes. Stem simplifications and alterations (see 7.0.2 – page 196) occur in the first conjugation if necessary.

The personal endings, and a usage example from each conjugation class:

|            | Personal ending | Examples                         |                                 |
|------------|-----------------|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
|            |                 | Conjugation I                    | Conjugation II                  |
|            |                 | лудаш (-ам) 'to read' → лудне- → | илаш (-ем) 'to live' → илыне- → |
| <b>1Sg</b> | -м              | луднем                           | иынем                           |
| <b>2Sg</b> | -т              | луднет                           | иынет                           |
| <b>3Sg</b> | -же             | луднеже                          | иынеже                          |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -на             | луднена                          | иынена                          |
| <b>2Pl</b> | -да             | луднеда                          | иынеда                          |
| <b>3Pl</b> | -шт             | луднешт                          | иынешт                          |

7.107. Give all six positive desiderative forms of the following first conjugation verbs.

1. тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn, to study'
2. кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat'
3. ййаш (-ам) 'to drink'
4. мушкылташ (-ам) 'to wash oneself'
5. муаш (-ам) 'to find'
6. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'
7. лекташ (-ам) 'to go, to leave'
8. налаш (-ам) 'to take; to buy'
9. йодаш (-ам) 'to ask'
10. ужаш (-ам) 'to see'

7.108. Give all six positive desiderative forms of the following second conjugation verbs.

1. каяш (-ем) 'to go'
2. ончаш (-ем) 'to look'
3. кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak'
4. полшаш (-ем) 'to help'
5. малаш (-ем) 'to sleep'
6. канаш (-ем) 'to rest, to relax'
7. ышташ (-ем) 'to do'
8. пуаш (-эм) 'to give'
9. чияш (-ем) 'to put on, to dress'
10. каласаш (-ем) 'to say, to tell'

7.109. Form the desiderative of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *туныкташ (-ем) 'to teach', 2Sg → туныктынет.*

1. вучаш (-ем) 'to wait', 3Sg
2. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash', 1Sg
3. модаш (-ам) 'to play', 3Pl
4. лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become', 3Sg
5. кушташ (-ем) 'to dance', 1Sg
6. толаш (-ам) 'to come', 1Pl
7. шокташ (-ем) 'to play (e.g., an instrument)', 2Pl
8. ўжаш (-ам) 'to invite', 2Sg
9. мураш (-ем) 'to sing', 1Pl
10. мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come', 2Sg

Formation of negative forms: The negative forms of the desiderative consist of the negation verb (see 7.3.1 – page 278) in the appropriate person followed by the connegative form (see 7.1.0 – page 198). The negation verb in the desiderative is seen in the following table.

|            |       |
|------------|-------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | ынем  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | ынет  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | ынеж  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | ынена |
| <b>2Pl</b> | ынеда |
| <b>3Pl</b> | ынешт |

Examples with contrasting positive and negative forms:

|            | Conjugation I         |           | Conjugation II       |           |
|------------|-----------------------|-----------|----------------------|-----------|
|            | лудаш (-ам) 'to read' |           | илаш (-ем) 'to live' |           |
|            | Positive              | Negative  | Positive             | Negative  |
| <b>1Sg</b> | луднем                | ынем луд  | иынем                | ынем иле  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | луднет                | ынет луд  | иынет                | ынет иле  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | луднеже               | ынеж луд  | иынеже               | ынеж иле  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | луднена               | ынена луд | иынена               | ынена иле |
| <b>2Pl</b> | луднеда               | ынеда луд | иынеда               | ынеда иле |
| <b>3Pl</b> | луднешт               | ынешт луд | иынешт               | ынешт иле |

7.110. Form the negated desiderative in all persons from the following first conjugation verbs.

- кынелаш (-ам) 'to get up'
- мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash'
- ияш (-ям) 'to swim'
- кўаш (-ам) 'to ripen'
- кошташ (-ам) 'to go'
- куржаш (-ам) 'to run'
- пёртылаш (-ам) 'to return, to come back'
- шинчаш (-ам) 'to sit down'
- лўдаш (-ам) 'to fear'
- колышташ (-ам) 'to listen'

7.111. Form the negated desiderative in all persons from the following second conjugation verbs.

- шогаш (-ем) 'to stand'
- кияш (-ем) 'to lie (e.g., in bed)'
- ойлаш (-ем) 'to talk, to speak'
- палаш (-ем) 'to know'
- мондаш (-ем) 'to forget'
- пураш (-ем) 'to come in, to enter'
- ондалаш (-ем) 'to deceive, to cheat'
- кўзаш (-ем) 'to climb'
- вашешташ (-ем) 'to answer, to reply'
- сõраш (-ем) 'to promise'

7.112. Form the negated desiderative of the following first and second conjugation verbs in the person indicated, e.g.: *туныкташ (-ем) 'to teach', 2Sg → ынет туныкто.*

- лукташ (-ам) 'to lead out', 1Sg
- ужалаш (-ем) 'to sell', 2Sg
- кудалаш (-ам) 'to drive, to ride', 2Pl
- мияш (-ем) 'to go, to come', 1Pl
- помыжалташ (-ам) 'to wake up (intr.)', 3Sg
- шонаш (-ем) 'to think', 1Sg
- йўаш (-ам) 'to drink', 2Sg
- вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet', 3Pl
- шарнаш (-ем) 'to remember', 2Pl
- пуаш (-эм) 'to give', 3Sg

7.113. Negate the following positive desiderative forms, e.g.: *толнена* → *ынена тол*.

1. койнена
2. вочнем
3. воштылнеже
4. кусарынена
5. кондынем
6. шымлынеже
7. чонештынет
8. тўнгалнеда
9. пытарынешт
10. шортнет

7.114. Transform the following negative desiderative forms into positive ones, e.g.: *ынем лек* → *лекнем*.

1. ынена код
2. ынеж возо
3. ынем камвоч
4. ынена колто
5. ынет ман
6. ынем пыште
7. ынешт кычал
8. ынеж лий
9. ынет лўйё
10. ынеда келше

### Usage

Mari has no verb with the meaning 'to want'. The desiderative mood is used instead to express a wish or intention, with the usual equivalent in English being 'to want to (do something), to intend to (do something)'. (Compare also with the construction 'passive participle' + *шыаш (-ам)* 'to arrive' – see 7.2.4 – page 260.)

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Корно деч вара изиш <u>канынем</u> .                  | After the trip I <u>want to rest</u> a bit.                     |
| Таче кастене кушко <u>кайынет</u> ?                   | Where do you <u>want to go</u> tonight?                         |
| Томи марий калык кочкишым <u>тамлынеже</u> .          | Tomi <u>wants to taste</u> Mari national cuisine.               |
| Йотэлысе студент-влак дене марий ялым <u>ужнена</u> . | We <u>want to see</u> a Mari village with the foreign students. |
| Те могай марий пёлекым <u>налнеда</u> ?               | What Mari presents do you <u>want to buy</u> ?                  |
| Пеш шокшо мончашке <u>ынем пуро</u> .                 | I <u>don't want to go</u> into an overly hot sauna.             |
| Конгамбалне <u>ынет мале</u> ?                        | <u>Don't you want to sleep</u> on the stove bench?              |
| Түнө 37 градус йўштö. Оля уремыш <u>ынеж лек</u> .    | It's minus 37 outside. Olya <u>does not want to go out</u> .    |
| Ушкалым <u>ынеда лўштö</u> ?                          | <u>Don't you want to milk</u> a cow?                            |
| Нуно олашке <u>ынешт пörтыл</u> .                     | They <u>don't want to return</u> to town.                       |

Note the usage of the desiderative in reference to some natural phenomena. It is not productive in this function:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Кече <u>ончынеже</u> .                              | The sun <u>is trying to shine</u> .                |
| Йўр <u>тўнгалнеже</u> ала мо, айда зонтикым налына. | It <u>looks like</u> rain, let's take an umbrella. |
| Теле <u>толнеже</u> ала мо.                         | <u>Looks like</u> winter is on its way.            |

7.115. Insert the positive desiderative form of the given verb in the indicated person into the sentence.

1. Астрономий пӧлкан тунемшыже-влак у шӱдырым ... (почаш (-ам) 'to open (tr.)', 3Pl)
2. Сентябрь тылзе гыч мый суахели йылмым ... (тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn', 1Sg)
3. Вес кенжежым ме Байкал ер деке ... (кудалаш (-ам) 'to ride, to drive', 1Pl)
4. Тый мыняр арняште Эверест курыкыш ... ? (кӱзаш (-ем) 'to climb', 2Sg)
5. Те лӱмлӧ йылмызе ... мо? (лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become', 2Pl)
6. Иванов тамакым ок шупш, аракам ок йӱ: тудо 100 ий ... (илаш (-ем) 'to live', 3Sg)
7. Тый чынак мо парашют дене ...? (тӧршташ (-ем) 'to jump', 2Sg)
8. Тиде самырык шымлызе Нобель премийым ... (налаш (-ам) 'to take', 3Sg)
9. Те сандалыкыш ... мо? (чонгешташ (-ем) 'to fly', 2Pl)
10. Самырык-влак уло тӱням ... (вашталташ (-ем) 'to change (tr.)', 3Pl)

7.116. Insert the negative desiderative form of the given verb in the indicated person into the sentence.

1. Мом илышыште ... ? (ышташ (-ем) 'to do', 2Pl)
2. Чодыраште маска дене ... (вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet', 1Pl)
3. Каныш годым паша нерген ... (кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak', 1Sg)
4. Еш рецептштым нуно нигӧлан ... (ойлаш (-ем) 'to say', 3Pl)
5. Мый денем пырля фитнесышке ... ? (кошташ (-ам) 'to go', 2Sg)
6. Аня йӱштӧ кофем ... (йӱаш (-ам) 'to drink', 3Sg)
7. Мыйын клаустрофобий – метро дене ... (кудалаш (-ам) 'to ride, to drive', 1Sg)
8. Ме каена, черетыште ... (шогаш (-ем) 'to stand', 1Pl)
9. Йыван ден Петя балет школышто ... (тунемаш (-ам) 'to learn', 3Pl)
10. Акам кугу олашке илаш ... (куснаш (-ем) 'to move (intr.)', 3Sg)

7.117. Negate the desiderative in the following sentences.

1. Тиде кенжежым те кузе эртарынеда?
2. Мый теныз воктене канынем.
3. Ме ялышке кована деке кайынена.
4. Оля мӧнгыштӧ коднеже.
5. Эстон студент-влак марий йӱлам шымлаш тӱналнешт.
6. Мери марий романым финн йылмышке кусарынеже.
7. Мый эр еда куржталнем.
8. Арнялан кок-кум гана Юлышто йӱштылнена.
9. Россий мучко мый денем пырля кудалыштнет мо?
10. Йолташем-влак книгаг возынешт.

7.118. Complete the following sentences, following the pattern: *Йочалан малаш кӱлеш, но тудо ... > ынеж мале.*

1. Нунылан шулдырак пачерым кычалаш кӱлеш, но нуно ...
2. Мый изамым машинажым пуаш йодам, но тудо ...
3. Мыланна пӱй эмлыше деке мияш кӱлеш, но ме ...
4. Тыланда кызыт йӧратыме актёр деч автографым йодаш лиеш, но те ...
5. Ме тендам полшаш йодына, но те ...
6. Йолташетым мемнан деке ўжаш лиеш, но тый ...
7. Мыйын паспортысо фотом ончыкташ йодат, но мый ...
8. Ёдырнам хоккейла модаш ўжыт, но тудо ...
9. Петровмытым йотэлышке илаш ўжыт, но нуно тушто ...
10. Неле рокым кызыт колышташ лиеш, но мый ...

7.1.3.2. Desiderative Past I

**Formation:** The desiderative past I is formed by placing the particle *ыле* (see 9.3 – page 333) after the present-tense form of the desiderative, positive or negative, in both conjugation classes.

|            | Conjugation I         |               | Conjugation II       |               |
|------------|-----------------------|---------------|----------------------|---------------|
|            | лудаш (-ам) 'to read' |               | илаш (-ем) 'to live' |               |
|            | Positive              | Negative      | Positive             | Negative      |
| <b>1Sg</b> | луднем ыле            | ынем луд ыле  | иынем ыле            | ынем иле ыле  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | луднет ыле            | ынет луд ыле  | иынет ыле            | ынет иле ыле  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | луднеже ыле           | ынеж луд ыле  | иынеже ыле           | ынеж иле ыле  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | луднена ыле           | ынена луд ыле | иынена ыле           | ынена иле ыле |
| <b>2Pl</b> | луднеда ыле           | ынеда луд ыле | иынеда ыле           | ынеда иле ыле |
| <b>3Pl</b> | луднешт ыле           | ынешт луд ыле | иынешт ыле           | ынешт иле ыле |

7.119. Form the positive desiderative past I in all persons from the following first conjugation verbs.

1. ужаш (-ам) 'to see'      2. кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat'      3. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'

7.120. Form the negated desiderative past I in all persons from the following second conjugation verbs.

1. палаш (-ем) 'to know'      2. ончаш (-ем) 'to look'      3. тўлаш (-ем) 'to pay'

Usage

a) The desiderative past I is used to refer to past wishes or intentions. As is the case with the compound past tenses I (see 7.1.1.4 – page 222) and III (see 7.1.1.6 – page 228) it is typically used with direct observations.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Изиэм годым актрисе <u>лийнем ыле</u> .                 | When I was little I <u>wanted to become</u> an actress.                |
| Акам эре телевиденийыште пашам <u>ыштынеже ыле</u> .    | My big sister always <u>wanted to work</u> in television.              |
| Тенгече киношко <u>кайынена ыле</u> , но вара ышна кай. | We <u>wanted to go</u> to the movies yesterday, but then we didn't go. |
| Тидым тылат <u>ынем ойло ыле</u> , но ойлаш логалеш.    | I <u>didn't want to tell</u> you this, but it has to be said.          |
| Пөлекдам У ий марте <u>ынена поч ыле</u> .              | I <u>didn't want to open</u> your present till New Year's.             |
| Тунемше-влак туныктышым <u>ынешт колышт ыле</u> .       | The students <u>didn't want to listen</u> to the teacher.              |

b) The desiderative past I can also express conditionality or heightened politeness.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Мый денем <u>вашлийнет ыле</u> гын, йынгыртен кертат ыле. | If you <u>wanted to meet</u> me, you could have called. |
| Нелеш ида нал, тендан деч полышым <u>йоднем ыле</u> .     | Excuse me, <u>could I ask</u> you for help?             |
| Корно деч вара изиш <u>канынем ыле</u> .                  | I <u>would like to rest</u> a bit after the trip.       |

7.121. Insert the positive desiderative past I form of the given verb in the indicated person into the sentence.

1. Кочкаш ..., но ала-кө омсашке тўкалтыш. (шинчаш (-ам) 'to sit down', 1 Pl)
2. Серге ден шольыжо изишт годсек калык йўлам ... (шымлаш (-ем) 'to research', 3Pl)
3. Эрла мыняр шагатлан ... ? (толаш (-ам) 'to come', 2Pl)
4. Нелеш ит нал, кызыт шкетын ... (кодаш (-ам) 'to stay', 1Sg)
5. Юля ала-мом ..., но аваже тудым чарыш. (каласаш (-ем) 'to say', 3Sg)

7.122. Insert the negated desiderative past I form of the given verb in the indicated person into the sentence.

1. Нуно мемнан ..., но мый нуным келыштарышым. (вучаш (-ем) 'to wait', 3Pl)
2. Кастене иктаж-могай кинон ... ? (ончаш (-ем) 'to look', 2Sg)
3. Юрист але бизнесъен нигунамат ... (лияш (-ям) 'to be, to become', 1Sg)
4. Пашашке таче ..., но каяш верештын. (каяш (-ем) 'to go', 1Pl)
5. Вера мыйым ..., но мый садак миенан. (ўжаш (-ам) 'to invite', 3Sg)

7.123. Negate the desiderative past I in the following sentences.

1. Коля эре Тартушто тунемнеже ыле.
2. Олаште кофем йўнена ыле, но сай кафем ышна му.
3. Йолташем-влак Шереметьев полатым ончалаш шукертсек мийынешт ыле.
4. Тый, палем, мыланна йынгыртынет ыле, но телефоннам монденат.
5. Ик каґашым тылат пуынем ыле.

7.124. Complete the following sentences, following the pattern: *Изи рвезылан эмым йўаш кўлеш ыле, но тудо ... > ынеж йў ыле.*

1. Ўдыр-влаклан пайремыште кодаш кўлеш ыле, но нуно ...
2. Тенгече финн тунемше-влак дене мутланаш лиеш ыле, но тый ...
3. Мылам эмлызе деке каяш кўлеш ыле, но мый ...
4. Володялан эрдене вич шагатлан кынелаш кўлеш ыле, но тудо ...
5. Польшдам йодаш кўлеш ыле, но ме ...

### 7.1.3.3. Desiderative Past II

**Formation:** The desiderative past II is formed by placing the particle *улмаш* (see 9.3 – page 333) after the present-tense form of the desiderative positive or negative, in both conjugation classes.

|            | Conjugation I         |                 | Conjugation II       |                 |
|------------|-----------------------|-----------------|----------------------|-----------------|
|            | лудаш (-ам) 'to read' |                 | илаш (-ем) 'to live' |                 |
|            | Positive              | Negative        | Positive             | Negative        |
| <b>1Sg</b> | луднем улмаш          | ынем луд улмаш  | илынем улмаш         | ынем иле улмаш  |
| <b>2Sg</b> | луднет улмаш          | ынет луд улмаш  | илынет улмаш         | ынет иле улмаш  |
| <b>3Sg</b> | луднеже улмаш         | ынеж луд улмаш  | илынеже улмаш        | ынеж иле улмаш  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | луднена улмаш         | ынена луд улмаш | илынена улмаш        | ынена иле улмаш |
| <b>2Pl</b> | луднеда улмаш         | ынеда луд улмаш | илынеда улмаш        | ынеда иле улмаш |
| <b>3Pl</b> | луднешт улмаш         | ынешт луд улмаш | илынешт улмаш        | ынешт иле улмаш |

7.125. Form the positive desiderative past II in all persons from the following first conjugation verbs.

1. йўаш (-ам) 'to drink'
2. лекташ (-ам) 'to leave'
3. вашлияш (-ям) 'to meet'



7.126. Form the negated desiderative past II in all persons from the following second conjugation verbs.

1. ойлаш (-ем) 'to talk'      2. пураш (-ем) 'to come in'      3. малаш (-ем) 'to sleep'

### Usage

a) The desiderative past II is used to refer to past wishes or intentions. As is the case with the compound past tenses II (see 7.1.1.5 – page 225) and IV (see 7.1.1.7 – page 230) it is typically used with indirect observations and inferences, and in combination with unexpected information.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Аза <u>кочнеже улмаш</u> , садлан шортын.  | The child had <u>wanted to eat</u> , that's why it was crying.                  |
| Аня изиж годымак туныктышо <u>лийнеже улмаш</u> .  | Anya had <u>wanted to become</u> a teacher from childhood on.                   |
| Йолташна-влак мемнан деке унала <u>пурынешт улмаш</u> , а меже тунам вес олаште лийынна. | Our friends <u>wanted to visit</u> us, but we were in another town at the time. |
| Катя школышко <u>ынеж кай улмаш</u> , садлан черланышыла койо.                           | Katya <u>didn't want to go</u> to school, so she pretended to be sick.          |
| Оксам нунылан банкыште <u>ынешт пу улмаш</u> .   | They <u>didn't want to give</u> them money at the bank.                         |
| Изи эргыда каласыш, те мемнам <u>ынеда ўж улмаш</u> .                                    | Your little son said that you <u>didn't want to invite</u> us.                  |

7.127. Insert the positive desiderative past II form of the given verb in the indicated person into the sentence.

- Диссертацийлан «Шонымо тайык» темым ойырымем ыле, но Йыван каласыш, тудат тиде йодышым ... (шымлаш (-ем) 'to research', 3Sg)
- Ават каласыш, тый ончыч театр студийыш ... (кошташ (-ам) 'to go', 2Sg)
- Вералан кызытсе паша огеш келше, ўмаштак вес паша верыш ... (куснаш (-ем) 'to move (intr.)', 3Sg)
- Ме нунын деч лўдынна, а нуно мыланна ... (полшаш (-ем) 'to help', 3Pl)
- Нелеш ида нал, те малаш ..., а ме вучыдымын унала пуренна. (возаш (-ам) 'to fall', 2Pl)

7.128. Insert the negative desiderative past II form of the given verb in the indicated person into the sentence.

- Петя ойлыш, колым аллергий верч ... Тиде чын мо? (кочкаш (-ам) 'to eat', 2Sg)
- Йоча-влак кугыен-влак деч полышым ... (йодаш (-ам) 'to ask', 3Pl)
- Маша мый денем ..., садлан телефонымат налын огыл. (кутыраш (-ем) 'to speak', 3Sg)
- Интервьюштыда лудынам, телевиденийште пашам ... Молан? (ышташ (-ем) 'to do', 2Pl)
- Акамьт начар игечылан көра ялышке ..., а мый шоненам, кумылышт уке. (кудалаш (-ам) 'to drive, to ride', 3Pl)

7.129. Negate the desiderative past II in the following sentences.

- Пий йоча-влак дене моднеже улмаш, а нуно туддеч куржыныт.
- Те эше куштынеда улмаш, а мый музыкым чарышым.
- Рвезе-влак футболышко шуктынешт улмаш, садлан машина дене писын кудалыныт.
- Кафештына уна шөрым йўнеже улмаш, а мый тудлан шўрым конденам.
- Тый канынет улмаш, а мый тылат пашам ышыктенам.

7.130. Transform the negative desiderative past II in the following sentences into positive desiderative past II forms.

1. Ёдыр-влак конкурсышто ынешт муро улмаш, но туныктышо-влак нуным пеш йодыныт.
2. Книгаште возеда, изида годым шымлызе ынеда лий улмаш.
3. Рвезе корным ынеж вончо улмаш, йолташыжым веле корно воктене вучен, а машина-влак тудым колташ шогалыныт.
4. Нелеш ит нал, уремышке таче ынет лек улмаш. Мыйын верчын веле лекташет верештын
5. Финн студент-влак Марий Эл гыч мӱнгышкӱ ынешт пӱртыл улмаш, но визышт пытен.

## 7.2. Non-finite verbal forms

### 7.2.0. General remarks

Non-finite verbal forms are not inflected for tense and mood, but maintain some verbal properties, for example the argument structure (i.e., they can still have objects). They can occur in positions usually taken by other parts of speech: nouns (i.e., they can be subjects or objects), adjectives (i.e., they can modify nouns), adverbs (i.e., they can modify verbs). Compare the usage of non-finite verbal forms with the usage of nouns, adjectives, and adverbs in the following sentences:

|                                       |  |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| Мый <u>школышко</u> толынам.          | I came <u>to school</u> .                  |
| Мый <u>тунемаш</u> толынам.           | I came <u>to study</u> .                   |
| <u>Тамле</u> тортым кочкам.           | I am eating a <u>tasty</u> cake.           |
| <u>Кевытыште налме</u> тортым кочкам. | I am eating a cake <u>from the store</u> . |
| Рвезе <u>писың</u> кая.               | The boy goes along <u>quickly</u> .        |
| Рвезе <u>мурен</u> кая.               | The boy goes along <u>singing</u> .        |

Mari makes extensive use of two infinitives (i.e., nominally used verbal forms), four participles (i.e., adjectivally used verbal forms), and five gerunds (i.e., adverbially used verbal forms – also called CONVERBS). As Mari has a strong preference for embedded clauses over bifinite constructions (i.e., it is more natural to say *Having picked up my bag, I left* than *I picked up my bag and left*, see [...] – page [...]) and as Mari tends to use preposed participial relative clauses rather than postposed ones using relative pronouns (i.e., *sleeping child* rather than *child that is sleeping*, see 15.2.1 – page 401), it is essential for an adequate command of Mari syntax to master all of these non-finite forms.

|   | <b>Suffix</b> | <b>I: кочк- 'to eat'</b>           | <b>II: ыште- 'to do'</b>          |
|---|---------------|------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| <b>Infinitive</b><br>7.2.1 – page 255                     | -аш           | кочкаш<br>'to eat'                 | ышташ<br>'to do'                  |
| <b>Necessitive infinitive</b><br>7.2.2 – page 257         | -ман          | кочман<br>'(one) must eat'         | ыштыман<br>'(one) must do'        |
| <b>Active participle</b><br>7.2.3 – page 259              | -ше           | кочшо<br>'eating'                  | ыштыше<br>'doing'                 |
| <b>Passive participle</b><br>7.2.4 – page 260             | -ме           | кочмо<br>'eaten'                   | ыштыме<br>'done'                  |
| <b>Future-necessitive participle</b><br>7.2.5 – page 263  | -шаш          | кочшаш<br>'to eat; to be eaten'    | ыштышаш<br>'to do; to be done'    |
| <b>Negative participle</b><br>7.2.6 – page 266            | -дыме         | кочдымо<br>'not eating; not eaten' | ыштыдыме<br>'not doing; not done' |
| <b>Affirmative instructive gerund</b><br>7.2.7 – page 267 | -(ын) / -ен   | кочкын<br>'eating'                 | ыштен<br>'doing'                  |
| <b>Negative gerund</b><br>7.2.8 – page 270                | -де           | кочде<br>'not eating'              | ыштыде<br>'not doing'             |
| <b>Gerund of prior action</b><br>7.2.9 – page 272         | -мек(е)       | кочмек(е)<br>'after eating'        | ыштымек(е)<br>'after doing'       |
| <b>Gerund of future action</b><br>7.2.10 – page 274       | -меш(ке)      | кочмеш(ке)<br>'before eating'      | ыштымеш(ке)<br>'before doing'     |
| <b>Gerund of simultaneous action</b><br>7.2.11 – page 276 | -шыла         | кочшыла<br>'while eating'          | ыштышыла<br>'while doing'         |

It should be noted that these labels should be seen as abstractions that the individual forms often do not adhere to (consequently, in the following general discussion, non-finite forms are referred to by their suffixes, rather than the labels used here that might not always seem appropriate). The individual forms will be discussed individually below, after some general remarks regarding the classification of different non-finite verbal forms.

**Participles:** The following parameters should be considered when comparing the usage of the four different participles used in Mari:

a) Voice (active/passive): Generally speaking, the participle in *-ше* is used in an active meaning, while *-ме* is used in a passive meaning. (For active usages of the participle in *-ме*, see below). The participles in *-шаш* and *-дыме* can be used actively and passively (though some restrictions apply to the passive usage of *-шаш*, see below).

|              | <b>Active</b> | <b>Passive</b> |
|--------------|---------------|----------------|
| <b>-ше</b>   | X             | -              |
| <b>-ме</b>   | (-)           | X              |
| <b>-шаш</b>  | X             | (X)            |
| <b>-дыме</b> | X             | X              |

|                                     |   |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| <u>унам вучышо</u> оза              | host <u>waiting for a guest</u>               |
| <u>вучымо</u> уна                   | <u>expected</u> guest                         |
| <u>почеламутым түнемшаш</u> студент | student <u>that should learn a poem</u>       |
| <u>түнемшаш</u> почеламут           | <u>poem to be learned</u>                     |
| <u>чодырашке коштдымо</u> ег        | person that <u>has not gone to the forest</u> |
| <u>коштдымо</u> чодыра              | <u>untrodden</u> forest                       |

b) Tense (future/present/past): In its basic function, the participle in *-шаш* communicates future-necessitive semantics (i.e., something that will or should happen), while the other participles generally communicate non-future circumstances. If context is given – e.g., through a temporal adverb – it is however possible to use all participles in all time frames.

|              | Past | Present | Future |
|--------------|------|---------|--------|
| <b>-шЕ</b>   | X    | X       | ~      |
| <b>-мЕ</b>   | X    | X       | ~      |
| <b>-шаш</b>  | ~    | ~       | X      |
| <b>-дымЕ</b> | X    | X       | ~      |

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>тенгече стадионышто куржталше рвезе</u> | boy <u>that ran in the stadium yesterday</u>              |
| <u>кызыт стадионышто куржталше рвезе</u>   | boy <u>that is running in the stadium now</u>             |
| <u>эрла стадионышто куржталше рвезе</u>    | boy <u>that will run in the stadium tomorrow</u>          |
| <u>ончыгече возымо серыш</u>               | letter <u>written the day before yesterday</u>            |
| <u>кызыт возымо серыш</u>                  | letter <u>being written now</u>                           |
| <u>кумышто возымо серыш</u>                | letter <u>that will be written the day after tomorrow</u> |
| <u>кодшо арняште ыштышаш паша</u>          | work <u>that should have been done last week</u>          |
| <u>кызыт ыштышаш паша</u>                  | work <u>that should be done now</u>                       |
| <u>вес арняште ыштышаш паша</u>            | work <u>that should be done next week</u>                 |
| <u>тенгече ыштен шуктыдымо сомыл</u>       | task <u>that was not finished yesterday</u>               |
| <u>таче ыштен шуктыдымо сомыл</u>          | task <u>that is not finished today</u>                    |
| <u>эрла ыштен шуктыдымо сомыл</u>          | task <u>that will not be finished tomorrow</u>            |

c) Polarity (positive/negative): while the participle in *-дымЕ* is by its very definition negated, the other participles denote a positive circumstance. The gerund in *-дымЕ* can be considered the negation of all other participles.

|              | Positive | Negative |
|--------------|----------|----------|
| <b>-шЕ</b>   | X        | -        |
| <b>-мЕ</b>   | X        | -        |
| <b>-шаш</b>  | X        | -        |
| <b>-дымЕ</b> | -        | X        |

|                            |  |
|----------------------------|--|
| <u>колым йоратыше ен</u>   | person <u>that loves fish</u>            |
| <u>колым йоратыдыме ен</u> | person <u>that does not love fish</u>    |
| <u>вучымо пӧлек</u>        | <u>expected present</u>                  |
| <u>вучыдымо пӧлек</u>      | <u>unexpected present</u>                |
| <u>эрла толшаш уна</u>     | guest <u>that will come tomorrow</u>     |
| <u>тенгече толдымо уна</u> | guest <u>that did not come yesterday</u> |

d) Usage as a verbal noun: All participles except for *-шЕ* are used as verbal nouns referring to the action as a whole. (The usage of *-шЕ* as the ending of agent nouns must be distinguished from this usage.) In this function, they can serve as subjects, objects, or as the reference word of postpositions.

|              | Used as verbal noun |
|--------------|---------------------|
| <b>-шЕ</b>   | -                   |
| <b>-мЕ</b>   | X                   |
| <b>-шаш</b>  | X                   |
| <b>-дымЕ</b> | X                   |

They keep the parameters discussed above in this function (*-дымЕ* remains negated, *-шаш* maintains its future-necessitive semantics), though *-мЕ* loses its passive semantics here: when

used as a verbal noun, it is neutral as regards voice and can carry either passive or active semantics, and can receive possessive and case suffixes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Йүд еда <u>кочмым</u> чарнаш күлеш.                    | One should refrain <u>from eating</u> late in the evening.                |
| Ик рвезе <u>вашлиймына</u> нерген почеламутым возен.   | A boy wrote a poem <u>about our meeting</u> .                             |
| <u>Вера ден Валян толшашыштым</u> ялыште пален огытыл. | Nobody knew in the village that Vera and Valya were to come.              |
| <u>У темым умылыдымо</u> верч тестым начар возенам.    | Due to <u>not understanding the new topic</u> , I did poorly on the exam. |

7.131. Choose the appropriate participle.

1. Пингвин ... кайык огыл. (чонештыше/чонештыме/чонештышаш/чонештыдыме)
2. Конгаште ... мелнам пелтыме үй дене кочкыт. (күэштше/күэштме/күэштшаш/күэштдыме)
3. Вес арнялан ... книга книгагудышто лийын огыл. (лудшо/лудмо/лудшаш/луддымо)
4. Эчан тора корнылан шолып ямдылалтын: Америкышке ... нерген нигöлан ойлен огыл. (кайышыже/кайымыже/кайышашыже/кайыдымыже)
5. Марий Элыште ... турист-влаклан поснак пүртүсна келша. (каныше/каныме/канышаш/каныдыме)
6. Ковам ... ең лийын: эре пашам ыштен, нигунам канен огыл. (нойышо/нойымо/нойышаш/нойыдымо)
7. Йолташем-влак Францийышке ... нерген каласкаленыт, фотом ончыктеныт. (коштшо/коштмо/коштшаш/коштдымо)
8. Эрласе концертыште ... артист черланен – ынде весым кычалаш күлеш. (мурышо/мурымо/мурышаш/мурыдымо)
9. Суас йылмым кокымшо ий ... студент-влак экспедицийлан ямдылалтыт. (тунемше/тунемме/тунемшаш/тунемдыме)
10. Ёдырем, ... еңлан омсам ит поч! (палыше/палыме/палышаш/палыдыме)

All four participles can take an ending *-ан*, an A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44), to form adjectives that denote a tendency or capacity, rather than a realized state.

| Verb                       | Participle                | Derived adjective       |
|----------------------------|---------------------------|-------------------------|
| почаш (-ам) 'to open'      | почмо 'opened'            | почман 'openable'       |
| илаш (-ем) 'to live'       | илыме 'lived'             | илыман 'habitable'      |
| лүдаш (-ам) 'to be afraid' | лүдшö 'scared, afraid'    | лүдшан 'timid, fearful' |
| малаш (-ем) 'to sleep'     | малыше 'sleeping'         | малышан 'sleepy'        |
| колаш (-ем) 'to die'       | колышаш 'dying'           | колышашан 'deadly'      |
| лияш (-ям) 'to become'     | лийшаш 'coming'           | лийшашан 'future'       |
| чарнаш (-ем) 'to stop'     | чарныдыме 'uninterrupted' | чарныдыман 'constant'   |
| күлаш (-ам) 'to be needed' | күлдымö 'unneeded'        | күлдыман 'worthless'    |

7.132. In the following pairs of sentences, the participle is more appropriate in one, and the derived adjective in the other. Which one is appropriate where?

- 1a. Экзамен деч ... студент тестым возаш толын огыл. (лүдшө/лүдшан)
- 1b. Меранг – пеш ... янлык. (лүдшө/лүдшан)
- 2a. Экшык ... айдеме укеат. (лийдыме/лийдыман)
- 2b. Тудо мондаш ... актрисе лийын. (лийдыме/лийдыман)
- 3a. Воктенна англичанла ... ең-влак шогеныт. (кутырышо/кутырышан)
- 3b. Оля – пеш ... , весела ўдыр. (кутырышо/кутырышан)
- 4a. ... пырыс, ойлат, мөнгө гыч кая. (колышаш/колышашан)
- 4b. Шымлызе-влак ... чер деч эмым кычалыт. (колышаш/колышашан)
- 5a. Йыван «Ида пуру!» ... омсашке пурен. (возымо/возыман)
- 5b. Ўстембалне авайлан ... серыш кия. (возымо/возыман)

Gerunds (converbs): Two gerunds, the (positive) gerund in *-н* and the (negative) gerund in *-де*, can be understood as multipurpose forms with wide semantics ranges that will be discussed below. They as a rule do not take possessive suffixes; as a strong tendency, the agent of this gerund is equal to the gerund of the superordinate (often finite) verb.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ямбердовын у ончержым <u>куанен</u> онченна. | We're enjoying looking (lit. <u>rejoicingly</u> looking) at Yamberdov's new exhibition. |
| Метрошто шукын <u>мален</u> шинчат.          | Many people sit in the metro <u>sleeping</u> .  |
| Нуно пашам <u>каныде</u> ыштат.              | They are working without respite (lit. <u>without relaxing</u> ).                       |
| Мый тидым <u>шоныде</u> каласышым.           | I did this <u>without thinking</u> .  |

Meanwhile, the gerunds in *-мек(е)*, *-меш(ке)*, and *-шыла* are used for temporal structuring: they denote if an action happened prior to, after, or simultaneously to, that marked by the superordinate (often finite) verb. Note that they always express relative, rather than absolute, temporal values: the correct reading of these gerunds is dependent on the tense of the verb modified by the gerund.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Эрла, <u>пашам ыштымеке</u> , кофем йўам.       | Tomorrow <u>after I work</u> I will drink coffee.  |
| Эрла, <u>пашам ыштымешке</u> , кофем йўам.      | Tomorrow <u>before I work</u> I will drink coffee. |
| Эрла, <u>пашам ыштышыла</u> , кофем йўам.       | Tomorrow <u>when I work</u> I will drink coffee.   |
| <u>Пашам ыштымеке</u> , южгунам кофем йўам.     | Sometimes I drink coffee <u>after I work</u> .     |
| <u>Пашам ыштымешке</u> , южгунам кофем йўам.    | Sometimes I drink coffee <u>before I work</u> .    |
| <u>Пашам ыштышыла</u> , южгунам кофем йўам.     | Sometimes I drink coffee <u>when I work</u> .      |
| Тенгече, <u>пашам ыштымеке</u> , кофем йўынам.  | Yesterday <u>after I worked</u> I drank coffee.    |
| Тенгече, <u>пашам ыштымешке</u> , кофем йўынам. | Yesterday <u>before I worked</u> I drank coffee.   |
| Тенгече, <u>пашам ыштышыла</u> , кофем йўынам.  | Yesterday <u>when I worked</u> I drank coffee.     |

As can be seen, the combination of these gerunds with finite verbal forms denoting a tense value of their own give speakers the ability to express complex temporal relationships for which English uses, for example, the future perfect tense (*I will have read this book by tomorrow*), and the past perfect/pluperfect tense (*I had already left by the time she arrived*).

The gerunds in *-мек(е)* and *-меш(ке)* take possessive suffixes; their agent, which can (but does not have to) differ from the agent of the superordinate (often finite) verb, can be marked by a preceding pronoun or noun. If the agent of the gerundial action is a noun, it can be in the nominative or the genitive. Inanimate nouns generally occur in the nominative, while animate nouns occur in either the nominative or genitive. When used with a genitive form, the gerund usually has a possessive suffix third person.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Кынелмеке</u> , Люда зарядкым ышта.                              | <u>After getting up</u> , Lyuda does calisthenics.                               |
| <u>Кочкаш шичмешке</u> , йоча-влак кидым мушкыт.                    | <u>Before sitting down to eat</u> , the children wash their hands.               |
| <u>Мӱнгышкӱ пурывекем</u> , йӱр йӱраш тӱнгале.                      | <u>After I got home</u> , it started raining.                                    |
| <u>Кайымешкет</u> , мый тылат ик секретым ойлем.                    | <u>Before you go</u> I'll tell you a secret.                                     |
| Лум шулымеке, ялыште мланде пашалан ямдылалтыт.                     | <u>After the snow melted</u> , the farmers get ready for working the land.       |
| <u>Йӱр чарнымешке</u> , нигуш она лек.                              | <u>Before the rain stops</u> , we're not going anywhere.                         |
| <u>Тунуктышын савырнымеке</u> же, тунемше-влак шпаргалкым луктыныт. | <u>After the teacher turned his/her back</u> , the students got out crib sheets. |
| <u>Уна-влакын толмешкышт</u> , жап шагал кодын.                     | There is only little time left <u>before the guests come</u> .                   |

Restrictions affecting the possessive suffixation and usage of *-шыла* will be discussed below.

7.133. Choose the appropriate gerund.

1. Вич ияш ӱдыр ... шога: курчакшым йомдарен.  
(шортын/шортде/шортмеке/шортмешке/шортшыла)
2. Ольош музыкым пеш йӱрата: урокымат радиом ... ышта.  
(колыштын/колыштде/колыштмеке/колыштмешке/колыштшыла)
3. Кече ..., шокшырак лие. (лектын/лекде/лекмеке/лекмешке/лекшыла)
4. Йоча-влак йомакым ... кият. (лудын/лудде/лудмеке/лудмешке/лудшыла)
5. Икана тувырым ... налынам – тувыр йӱрен огыл.  
(висен/висыде/висымеке/висымешке/ висышыла)
6. Венгрийышке тунемаш ..., венгрла сайрак кутыраш тӱнгалынат.  
(каен/кайыде/кайымеке/кайымешке/кайышыла)
7. Малаш ..., Петя пӱйым мушкеш. (возын/вочде/вочмеке/вочмешке/вочшыла)
8. Вӱдым ..., айдеме 2–10 кечым илен сенга. (йӱын/йӱде/йӱмеке/йӱмешке/йӱшыла)
9. Чодыраште ..., ик ведра понгым погенна.  
(коштын/коштде/коштмеке/кошtmешке/коштшыла)
10. Лум ..., ече дене мунчалташ кӱлеш.  
(шулен/шулыде/шулымеке/шулымешке/ шулышыла)

### 7.2.1. Infinitive in *-aw*

As in English, the infinitive is used as the dictionary form of verbs in most Mari dictionaries. (Especially older and dialect dictionaries use the indicative first person present instead.)

Attachment to verbal stem: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44) in both conjugation classes. As regards the relationship of the infinitive with the verbal stem, see 7.0.2 – page 196.

Usage:

1. The infinitive is frequently used as the subordinate word of other verbs. Often the infinitive denotes finality – i.e., the purpose of an action – when used like this; the final usage of the infinitive will be revisited in 15.7.2 – page 402.

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Кафешке <u>кочкаш</u> каена.         | We're <u>going to the café to eat</u> .                  |
| Йолташем мыйым <u>полшаш</u> йодын.  | My friend <u>asked me to help</u> .                      |
| Акам вич ияшын <u>лудаш</u> тунемын. | My big sister <u>learned to read</u> at the age of five. |

2. Some auxiliary verbs (see 7.3 – page 278) demand the infinitive by government.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Эрла ондак кынелаш кўлеш.</u>         | <u>(We) have to get up</u> early tomorrow.      |
| <u>Пураш лиеш мо?</u>                    | <u>Can (I) come in?</u>                         |
| <u>Шочмо гыч вес семян илаш тўғалам.</u> | <u>I will live differently</u> starting Monday. |

Note however that many auxiliaries – especially those relating to an ability to do something – govern the gerund in *-н* where their English counterparts govern the infinitive, e.g., *кепташ (-ам)* ‘to be able to’, see 7.3.3.1 – page 280.

3. The infinitive can be the subject of a sentence. These sentences are generally impersonal; the agent of the infinitive must be derived from context. However, possessive suffixation of the infinitive is possible; see below.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Самырык имным туныкташ куштылго.</u><br>(Калыкмут) | <u>Teaching a young horse</u> is easy. (proverb)                 |
| <u>Колаш неле огыл, шочаш неле.</u><br>(Калыкмут)     | <u>Dying</u> isn’t hard, <u>being born</u> is hard.<br>(proverb) |

**Possessive suffixation:** The infinitive can take possessive suffixes to indicate the agent of the infinitive.

|                                 |   |
|---------------------------------|---|
| <u>Каяшем кўлеш.</u>            | <u>I’ve got to go.</u>                  |
| <u>Кочкашда шўрым шолтенам.</u> | <u>I made some soup for you to eat.</u> |
| <u>Возашышт кагаз уке.</u>      | <u>They have no paper to write.</u>     |

Note that when the possessive suffix of the second person singular *-em* is attached to infinitive forms, it can express a desire of sorts, or a contemplation.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Кеч ик гана Мальдивыште канашет!</u> | <u>Just once to go to the Maldives on a holiday!</u> |
| <u>Эх, кызыт кайык гай чоҗешташет!</u>  | <u>Oh, now to fly like a bird!</u>                   |
| <u>Эх, япон йылмым палашет!</u>         | <u>Oh, to know Japanese!</u>                         |

Also note a construction in which the infinitive, generally marked with a possessive suffix third person (usually singular, but plural is possible as well), is followed by a finite form of the same verb, positive or negative. It used to acknowledge the validity of an action or process, while at the same time restricting it in its scope.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Чуваш йылмым умылашыже умылем, но ом кутыро.</u> | <u>Well, I understand Chuvash, but I don’t speak it.</u>      |
| <u>Сыраш тудо сырен огыл, но кумылжо волен.</u>     | <u>Well, s/he didn’t get angry, but his/her spirits fell.</u> |
| <u>Толашыже нуно толыт, но кунам, нигö ок пале.</u> | <u>Well, they’re coming, but when, who knows.</u>             |

**Case inflection:** The infinitive ending can be combined with the dative ending *-лан* in final clauses, resulting in the ending *-ашлан* (see 15.7.2.1 – page 402). Other than this, the infinitive does not take case suffixes.

**Infinitive + ыле ‘was’:** When this particle (see 9.3 – page 333) is placed after the infinitive, it can have a conditional meaning and express a (factual or counterfactual) desire.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Эх, тыгай шокшышто йўштылаш ыле!</u> | <u>Oh, to swim in such warm weather!</u> |
| <u>Тўня мучко кошташ ыле!</u>           | <u>To travel around the world!</u>       |
| <u>Эх, сўретче лияш ыле!</u>            | <u>Oh, had I only become a painter!</u>  |



7.134. Form the infinitive in *-аш* from the verbal stem.

1. кутыро-
2. кынел-
3. кае-
4. иле-
5. йў-
6. кўзё-
7. мушк-
8. пуо-
9. лект-
10. кой-

7.135. Insert the fitting infinitive. The options are given below.

1. Тыште тамакым ... ок лий.
2. Озавате уна-влакым ўстелтөрыш ... ўжеш.
3. Игечыже могай мотор! Можыч, велосипед дене ... каена?
4. Эр еда ... тазалыклан пайдале.
5. Эх, рвезылыкым ... ыле!

(пörтылташ, куржталаш, шупшаш, кудалышташ, шинчаш)

6. Йолташем-влак мыйым вокзалыште ... сөреныт.
7. Шочмо кечылан пörъенлан мом ... ?
8. Колым ... кочкам, но пешыжак ом йöрате
9. Парашют дене ... шучко.
10. Коча-кована шонго улыт. Нунылан ... кўлеш.

(кочкаш, тöршташ, вашлияш, полшаш, пöлеклаш)

## 7.2.2. Necessitive infinitive in *-ман*

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes.

Usage: This infinitive is used to indicate that something should be done. The person that should do something can either be omitted and left to context, or occur overtly in the dative case. Constructions using *-ман* are equivalent to those using *кўлаш (-ам)* ‘to have to’ in combination with the infinitive in *-аш* (see 7.2.1 – page 255).

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Телым <u>шокшын чийыман.</u>            | In winter, <u>one must dress warmly.</u>         |
| Кенжежым <u>шүко вўдым йўман.</u>       | In summer, <u>one must drink a lot of water.</u> |
| <u>Йыванлан</u> <u>книгам возыман.</u>  | <u>Yyvan must write a book.</u>                  |
| <u>Мыланна</u> <u>поездыш вашкыман.</u> | <u>We need to rush to our train.</u>             |

If one wishes to negate the infinitive in *-ман*, the particle *огыл* is placed immediately after the infinitive.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Илышыште <u>ала-мо ум ышташ тўғалаш</u><br><u>лўдман огыл.</u> | <u>One should not fear beginning something new</u><br><u>in life.</u> |
| <u>Тигр деке четлыкыш тылат пурыман</u><br><u>огыл.</u>        | <u>You must not go into the cage to the tiger.</u>                    |

Note that these negated sentences are not equivalent with those using *кўлаш (-ам)*: they denote that one must not or should not do something, while those using *кўлаш (-ам)* denote that one does not have to do something, is not obliged to do something, see also 7.3.4.1 – page 282.

Past-tense forms of these infinitive constructions can be formed using the particles *ыле* and *улмаш* (see 9.3 – page 333), where the forms with *ыле* denote first-hand information, and those with *улмаш* second-hand/inferred information:

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Мыланна мӧнгыштӧ кодман.</u>            | <u>We have to stay home.</u>                         |
| <u>Мыланна мӧнгыштӧ кодман ыле.</u>        | <u>We had to stay home.</u>                          |
| <u>Мыланна мӧнгыштӧ кодман улмаш.</u>      | <u>It turned out we had to stay home.</u>            |
| <u>Мыланна мӧнгыштӧ кодман огыл.</u>       | <u>We don't have to stay home.</u>                   |
| <u>Мыланна мӧнгыштӧ кодман огыл ыле.</u>   | <u>We didn't have to stay home.</u>                  |
| <u>Мыланна мӧнгыштӧ кодман огыл улмаш.</u> | <u>It turned out we didn't have to stay at home.</u> |

Suffixation: This infinitive does not take case suffixes or possessive suffixes.

7.136. Form the necessitive infinitive in *-ман* from the verbal stem.

1. му-
2. сӧрӧ-
3. тунем-
4. руо-
5. колышт-
6. ончо-
7. кӱ-
8. пале-
9. кие-
10. кочк-

7.137. Transform these sentences using the auxiliary verb *кӱлаш (-ам)* into sentences using the necessitive infinitive in *-ман*.

1. Марий орӱенлан погым ямдылаш кӱлын.
2. Качын родыж-влаклан пӧлекым пуаш кӱлын.
3. Сӱан деч вара эр эрдене орӱенлан таве вӱдым кондаш кӱлеш.
4. Тыгак эрдене тудлан кӱварым мушкаш кӱлеш.
5. Вара орӱенлан конгаште мелнам кӱэшташ кӱлеш.

7.138. In the following sentence, the subject does not want to do something, but must. Turn the sentences using the negated desiderative into positive sentences using the necessitive infinitive in *-ман*: *Пашам ынем ыште. → Мылам пашам ыштыман.*

1. Нуно ялыште ынешт иле.
2. Шокшо мончашке ынет пуро.
3. Пӱчӧ шылым ынена коч.
4. Тудо калык ончылно ынеж кушто.
5. Те сӧснам ынеда пукшо.

7.139. What is more appropriate in the following sentences, the infinitive in *-аш*, or the necessitive infinitive in *-ман*?

1. Ковам пеш тамле когылым ышта. Рецептм туддеч ... (йодаш/йодман)
2. Эх, иктаж-кушто шуко оксам ... ыле! (муаш/муман)
3. У фильм мылам йөршын ыш келше, ... огыл ыле. (ончаш/ончыман)
4. Коля почтышко серышым ... каен. (колташ/колтыман)
5. Йүкда мотор. Тыlanda калык ончылно ... күлеш. (мураш/мырман)
6. Шүжарем автошколыш ... тўнгалын: машинам виктараш тунемнеже. (кошташ/кошман)
7. Иван Петрович сўаныште молан лийын огыл? Тудымат ... ыле. (ўжаш/ўжман)
8. У ийым ... йолташмын пўртыштыжў погыненна. (пайремлаш/пайремлыман)
9. Те эше черле улыда – пашашке тыlanda ... огыл. (лекташ/лекман)
10. Ик тошто йолташем дене шукертсек вашлийын онал. Эрла тудлан ... (йынгырташ/йынгыртыман)

### 7.2.3. Active participle in *-ше*

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes.

Usage:

1. The active participle is often used as an attribute positioned before a noun. (English would generally position the *-ing*-form after the noun, or use it in a relative clause.)

|   |  |
|---|--|
| мари́й йылмы́м тунемше́ студент-влак    | students <u>studying</u> Mari          |
| Петрозаводскышто эртаралтше конференций | conference <u>held in</u> Petrozavodsk |
| причастийым шымлыше йылмызе             | linguist <u>studying</u> participles   |

Whether the participle is understood as present-tense or past-tense depends on context. As a tendency, it carries present-tense semantics with state verbs or auxiliary constructions (see 7.3.5 – page 283) with imperfective semantics, but past-tense semantics with transformative verbs and auxiliary constructions with perfective semantics.

State/imperfective verbs:

|                  |   |            |                        |   |           |
|------------------|---|------------|------------------------|---|-----------|
| илаш (-ем)       | → | илыше      | to live                | → | living    |
| саем толаш (-ам) | → | саем толшо | to improve (gradually) | → | improving |

Transformative/perfective verbs:

|                 |   |             |                         |   |          |
|-----------------|---|-------------|-------------------------|---|----------|
| колаш (-ем)     | → | колышо      | to die                  | → | dead     |
| саем каяш (-ем) | → | саем кайыше | to improve (completely) | → | improved |

2. The active participle can be used as a nominal predicative.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Изам спортым йўратыше лийын.                 | My elder brother <u>liked</u> sports.           |
| Экзамен деч ончыч Катя пеш тургыжланыше ыле. | Before the exam Katya was very <u>nervous</u> . |
| Весела да илышлан куаныше лийза!             | Be happy and <u>rejoice in</u> life!            |

3. By means of conversion (see 11.3.1 – page 373) many active participles are used as nouns: *тунемше* ‘studying → student’, *туныктышо* ‘teaching → teacher’. As a result, the active participle can in practice be used to form AGENT NOUNS from verbs.

Suffixation: Agent nouns formed by means of this participle are used as nouns, and can be inflected accordingly. In other functions, this participle does not take inflectional endings.

7.140. Form the active participle in *-uE* from the verbal stem.

1. нал-
2. лект-
3. иле-
4. кае-
5. йў-
6. шоно-
7. пуо-
8. кой-
9. лўйё-
10. мушк-

7.141. Form participial constructions from these sentences, following the pattern: *Ўдыр книгам лудеш. → книгам лудшо ўдыр.*

1. Петровмыт циркыш толыныт.
2. Имне-влак сем почеш куштат.
3. Клоун фокусым ончыкта.
4. Маска велосипед дене кудалыштеш.
5. Попугай марла кутыра.
6. Маймыл бананым кочкеш.
7. Программе ончышо-влакым өрыктара.
8. Пырыс-влак пий дене модыт.
9. Слон мече ўмбалне шога.
10. Йоча-влак воштылыт.

#### 7.2.4. Passive participle in *-мЕ*

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes.

Usage:

1. The passive participle is often used as an attribute positioned before a noun. (English would generally position the past participle after the noun, or use it in a relative clause.)

|                              |                               |
|------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <u>пу дене чоңымо порт</u>   | house <u>made of wood</u>     |
| <u>мөңгыштө ыштыме торт</u>  | cake <u>made at home</u>      |
| <u>кид дене возымо серыш</u> | letter <u>written by hand</u> |

2. It can appear as the predicate of an impersonal, passive sentence. Note that the past participle can also have an accusative object in such constructions – the passive participle retains the government of the finite verb.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Кўчык жапыште шуко пашам ыштыме.</u>              | In a short time, <u>a lot of work was done.</u>         |
| <u>Ўмаште мари́й йылме дене 30 книгам савыктыме.</u> | Last year <u>30 Mari-language books were published.</u> |
| <u>Тиде темым ятыр шымлыме.</u>                      | <u>This topic has been studied</u> a lot.               |

In such cases the passive participle is negated with the particle *огыл*.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Тыгай тамле шўрым нигунам кочмо огыл.</u>               | (I) <u>have never eaten such tasty soup.</u>                         |
| <u>Ме шуко вере лийынна, но Африкыште эше коштмо огыл.</u> | We have been many places, but <u>we have not yet gone</u> to Africa. |

The participle can in this function co-occur with *лияш (-ям)* 'to be; to become' as a future tense marker (see 7.5.5 – page 300). The form *ыле* 'was' (see 9.3 – page 333) to indicate that something was already done in the past.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Паша жапыште <u>ыштыме</u> лиеш.                       | The work <u>will be done</u> in time.                       |
| Кевыт-влак 21 шагат марте <u>почмо</u> лийыт.          | The stores <u>will be open</u> till 9 PM.                   |
| Эрлалан диссертаций <u>возен</u> пытарыме ок лий.      | The dissertation <u>won't be done</u> by tomorrow.          |
| Акамлан серышым <u>колтымо ыле</u> , но вашмут ыш тол. | (I) <u>had sent</u> my sister a letter, but no answer came. |
| Катям кужу жап <u>ужмо</u> огыл ыле.                   | (I) <u>had not seen</u> Katya in a long time.               |

3. Some passive participles have also been substantivized by means of conversion (see 11.3.1 – page 373). That is to say, they can be used as nouns referring to a thing or person that was the object of an activity: *палыме* 'known → acquaintance', *йöратыме* 'loved → darling, beloved'.

4. In many cases, the passive participle is used as a generic adjectival form of the verb from which it is derived, without passive semantics. Note the following examples: *шочмо кече* 'birthday', *илыме вер* 'place of residence', *кочмывер* (← *кочмо вер*) 'dining facility, cafeteria'.

5. Passive participles are widely used as verbal nouns that refer to the action as a whole (rather than to someone or something that was subjected to an action). Nominal forms of this sort are neutral as regards voice: they can have either passive or active semantics. They can occur as subjects, objects, or in combination with postpositions (see 6 – page 158). If a postposition governs a case other than the nominative, the appropriate case suffix is attached to the participle. The subject of the activity denoted by a participle can be marked with a possessive suffix.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Йот йылмым палыме</u> илышыште пеш кўлешан.               | <u>Knowing foreign languages</u> is very important in life.                 |
| <u>Йотэлышке</u> икымше гана <u>мийымым</u> сайын шарнем.    | I remember <u>going abroad</u> for the first time well.                     |
| Аспирант-влак <u>Сибирышке коштмышт нерген</u> каласкаленыт. | The postgraduate students were talking <u>about their trip to Siberia</u> . |
| <u>Черланымылан кōра</u> Васлий экспедицийышке каен огыл.    | <u>Due to falling ill</u> Vasliy didn't go on the expedition.               |

The subject of a passive participle can also be indicated by a noun placed before the participle. As a tendency, inanimate nouns occur in the nominative, while animate nouns occur in the genitive, with the participle taking a matching possessive suffix.

|                             |                             |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| <u>кече</u> лекме годым     | when <u>the sun</u> came up |
| <u>Анушын</u> толмыжо годым | when <u>Anush</u> came      |

As regards the usage of the passive participle as a subject, see [...] – page [...]. As regards the usage of the passive participle as an object, see [...] – page [...].

6. Passive participle + possessive suffixes and *шyаш (-ам)* 'to arrive, to come to': This construction, consisting of the passive participle with a possessive suffix and followed by a third person singular form of the verb *шyаш (-ам)* – in either the present tense or in one of the past tenses – is often used to express 'to want to do something; to feel like doing something'. Possessive suffixes can be used in conjunction with the genitive forms of the personal pronouns or nouns or the genitive forms can replace the possessive suffixes altogether (*кочмем* ~ *мыйын кочмем* ~ *мыйын кочмо*).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Пеш шокшо – <u>вўдым йўмё шуэш.</u>                           | It's quite hot – (I) <u>want to drink some water.</u>                         |
| Мыйын депрессий – <u>нигё дене кутырымо ок шу.</u>            | I'm depressed and <u>don't want to talk to anybody.</u>                       |
| Тендам <u>ужмо шуын</u> , садлан тольым.                      | I <u>wanted to see you</u> , that's why I came.                               |
| Кечывалым изиш маленам, садлан <u>йўдым малыме шуын</u> огыл. | I slept a bit during the day, and so <u>sleep didn't come to me at night.</u> |

The wish expressed like this is often of an emotional, inner, involuntary nature. It to some degree contrasts with the desiderative – see 7.1.3 – page 242 – which is as a tendency more used to express concrete, controlled intentions. Usage situations of these two constructs do, however, overlap.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Кочмем шуэш.   | I feel like eating. / I'm hungry. / I want to eat.     |
| Малымем шуэш.  | I feel like sleeping. / I'm sleepy. / I want to sleep. |
| Кечывал деч вара ик шагат наре малынем.                                  | I want/intend to sleep for an hour after lunch.        |
| Тений машинам налнем.  | I want/intend to buy a car this year.                  |
| Мороженныйым кочмо шуэш. ~<br>Мороженныйым кочнем.                       | I want to eat ice cream.                               |
| Пеш тылат полшынем, но ом керт. ~<br>Тылат пеш полшымо шуэш, но ом керт. | I would really like to help you, but I can't.          |

7.142. Form the passive participle in *-мЕ* from the verbal stem.

1. лўд-
2. шоно-
3. лукт-
4. кае-
5. петыре-
6. му-
7. вашлий-
8. кане-
9. кынел-
10. лўйё-

7.143. Transform these sentences so that they use a passive participle, following the pattern:  
*Омсам починым → Омсам почмо.*

1. Кўварым мушкыныт.
2. Пайремлан ўстелым погеныт.
3. Шуко унам ўжыныт.
4. Ивановыт деч посна ўстел коклашке шинчын огытыт.
5. Ойган мурым мурен огытыт.

7.144. Insert the given verb, as a passive participle used as a verbal noun, in the following sentences. Attach a case suffix if necessary.

1. Шинчаже компьютер дене шуко ... кёра коршта. (*шинчаш, (-ем)*)
2. Шагал ... кёра экзаменым начар кученам. (*тунемаш (-ам)*)
3. Корно ... кёра аварий-влак шукемыныт (*иянгаш (-ам)*).
4. Триллерым ... кёра Катя шкетын малаш лўдын (*ончаш (-ем)*).
5. Игече йўштё ... кёра мёр тений шагал шочын (*лияш (-ям)*).

7.145. Transform these sentences using the desiderative into sentences using the desiderative construction with the passive participle, following the pattern: *Малынем → Малынем шуэш.*

1. Юлышто йўштылнем.
2. Эчук ныл шагат эрдене ынеж кынел ыле.
3. Кастене киношко ынет кай?
4. Тошто йолташна-влаклан иктаж-мом онгайым пӧлеклынена.
5. Маринан яндар йўкшым эре колыштнем ыле.

### 7.2.5. Future-necessitive participle in *-шаш*

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes.

Usage:

1. The future-necessitive participle is often used as an attribute positioned before a noun. In this function, it can have either an active or passive meaning. It denotes an action that must/should be carried out or occur in the future: *ыштышаш наша* ‘work which must be done ~ work to do’, *лудшаш текст* ‘text that should be read ~ text to read’, *толшаш уна* ‘guest who will/must/should come’.

|                           |   |
|---------------------------|---|
| <u>чоҥештышаш</u> самолёт | plane <u>that will/should fly</u>                 |
| <u>тарванышаш</u> поезд   | train <u>that will/should move</u>                |
| <u>шындышаш</u> пеледыш   | flower <u>to be/that should be planted</u>        |
| <u>погышаш</u> мӧр        | strawberries <u>to be/that should be gathered</u> |

2. The participle can be coupled with inflected forms of *улаш (-ам)* ‘to be’ to create a necessitive construction. In this meaning, the participle by default carries active semantics: its agent is the person that should do something. The participle is not marked for person, the verb is inflected and negated as it is in its copulative (A = B) usage (see 7.5 – page 295). This construction has past-tense forms, created by placing the particles *ыле* or *улмаш* (see 9.3 – page 333) after the present-tense forms. The forms with *ыле* refer to first-hand knowledge, while those with *улмаш* refer to indirect/inferred knowledge. Forms of the first person singular and plural are not customary with *улмаш*. and are not customary in the first person singular and plural. Note the alternative forms in the past I positive: simple past tense I forms of the verb *улаш (-ам)* (see 7.5 – page 295) can be placed after the participle instead of the present-tense form + *ыле*: *лудшаш улам ыле ~ лудшаш ыльым* ‘I had to read’.

The forms of *лудаш (-ам)* 'to read':

|         |     | Positive               | Negative                   |
|---------|-----|------------------------|----------------------------|
| Present | 1Sg | лудшаш улам            | лудшаш омыл                |
|         | 2Sg | лудшаш улат            | лудшаш отыл                |
|         | 3Sg | лудшаш                 | лудшаш огыл                |
|         | 1Pl | лудшаш улына           | лудшаш огынал (онал)       |
|         | 2Pl | лудшаш улыда           | лудшаш огыдал (одал)       |
|         | 3Pl | лудшаш улыт            | лудшаш огытыл              |
| Past I  | 1Sg | лудшаш улам ыле/ылым   | лудшаш омыл ыле            |
|         | 2Sg | лудшаш улат ыле/ылыч   | лудшаш отыл ыле            |
|         | 3Sg | лудшаш ыле             | лудшаш огыл ыле            |
|         | 1Pl | лудшаш улына ыле/ыльна | лудшаш огынал (онал) ыле   |
|         | 2Pl | лудшаш улыда ыле/ыльда | лудшаш огыдал (одал) ыле   |
|         | 3Pl | лудшаш улыт ыле/ылыч   | лудшаш огытыл ыле          |
| Past II | 1Sg | лудшаш улам улмаш      | лудшаш омыл улмаш          |
|         | 2Sg | лудшаш улат улмаш      | лудшаш отыл улмаш          |
|         | 3Sg | лудшаш улмаш           | лудшаш огыл улмаш          |
|         | 1Pl | лудшаш улына улмаш     | лудшаш огынал (онал) улмаш |
|         | 2Pl | лудшаш улыда улмаш     | лудшаш огыдал (одал) улмаш |
|         | 3Pl | лудшаш улыт улмаш      | лудшаш огытыл улмаш        |

In contrast to the necessitive constructions using *күләш (-ам)* (see 7.3.4.1 – page 282) and the necessitive infinitive in *-ман* (see 7.2.2 – page 257) this construction is used more explicitly to express an obligation to do something, rather than a necessity which can arise for a wide array of reasons. It is however also frequently used in reference to expected or anticipated events.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Эргына вес ийын <u>армийышке кайышаш.</u>                              | Our son <u>has to go</u> to the army next year.                             |
| Паша деч посна ме <u>шинчышаш онал.</u>                                | We <u>shouldn't sit</u> around idly.  |
| Вашлиймашыш 6 шагатлан <u>мийышаш ылым</u> , но вараш кодым.           | I <u>was supposed to go</u> to the meeting at six o'clock, but I was late.  |
| Синоптик-влакын сөрымышт почеш, таче <u>йүршаш огыл ыле.</u>           | According to the weather forecasters it <u>shouldn't have rained</u> today. |
| План почеш, нуно пашам тенгечак <u>пытарышаш улыт улмаш.</u>           | According to the plan, they <u>should have finished</u> the work yesterday. |
| Васлий нимат <u>палышаш огыл улмаш</u> , а мый тудлан чылам каласышым. | Vasliy <u>wasn't supposed to know</u> anything, but I told him everything.  |
| Кенезым жапем ок лий, ялыште <u>лийшаш улам.</u>                       | I won't have time in the summer, I <u>will be/should be</u> in the village  |

3. This participle can also be used in necessitive constructions using *уло* 'there is' and *уке* 'there is not' (see 7.5.9 – page 303). The person that has to do something can optionally be marked by attaching a possessive suffix to the participle. In contrast with the construction using personal forms detailed above, this construction is used to express an inner need to do something, rather than external obligation.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Таче эше эмлымверышке <u>кайышашем уло.</u>   | I still <u>need to go</u> to the hospital today.                     |
| Иктаж-мом <u>каласышашет уло</u> гын, каласе! | If <u>you've got</u> something to say, say it!                       |
| Туддеч <u>лүдшаш уке</u> : тудо поро айдеме.  | You don't <u>need to be afraid</u> of him/her, s/he's a kind person. |
| Нимат <u>ыштышашда уке</u> гын, унала мийза!  | If you've <u>got</u> nothing to do, visit us!                        |

4. This participle is used in final constructions denoting the purpose of an action, see 15.7.3 – page 402.



5. The participle can be used as a verbal noun that refers to an action that should be carried out as a whole. When it is, it is implied that the action was expected at or after the time of reference. When used nominally, the participle can be used as an object, or the complement of a postposition. It can optionally take possessive suffixes. The subject can also be indicated by a noun placed before the participle. Inanimate nouns generally occur in the nominative, animate nouns generally in the genitive.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Йоча-влак <u>цирк толшашым</u> вученыт.                          | The children were waiting for the <u>circus to come</u> .                                  |
| Мӧнгӧ <u>пӧртылшашдам</u> нигӧ пален огыл.                       | Nobody knew <u>you were returning</u> home.  |
| Тренер-влак таҥасымаште кузе <u>сеҥышаш</u> нерген кангашеныт.   | The coaches were talking about <u>how to win</u> in the competition.                       |
| Экзамен деке <u>ямдылалтшаш</u> годым нуно компьютер дене модыт. | When they were supposed to be preparing for the exam, they were playing with the computer. |

7.146. Form the future-necessitive participle in *-шаш* from the verbal stem.

1. йод-
2. вучо-
3. чие-
4. му-
5. кошт-
6. мале-
7. пуо-
8. кочк-
9. колто-
10. лий-

7.147. Form participial constructions from these finite clauses, following the patterns: *Тиде пашам ышташ кӱлеш* → *ыштышаш паша*, *Тиде рвезе концертыште мураш тӱҥалеш* → *концертыште муреш рвезе*.

1. Тиде еҥ мыланна полшаш тӱҥалеш.
2. Тиде кумыж-совлам мушкаш кӱлеш.
3. Тиде паренгым ужалаш кӱлеш.
4. Тиде туныктышо тестым тергаш тӱҥалеш.
5. Тиде понгым кудалташ кӱлеш.

7.148. Form necessitive constructions using the future-necessitive particle in *-шаш*, in the indicated tense, person, and polarity (positive/negative).

1. Тиде секретым нигӧ ... (палаш (-ем), present, 3Sg, negative)
2. Тидым мый нигӧлан ... , а мый чылалан ойлышым. (каласаш (-ем), past II, 1Sg, negative)
3. Йоча-влак ача-аваштым ... (пагалаш (-ем), present, 3Pl, positive)
4. Те эше пашашке ... . Молан лектында? (лекташ (-ам), past I, 2Pl, negative)
5. Оля мемнан деке ... : жапше лийын, да пурен. (пураш (-ем), past II, 3Sg, negative)
6. Вес арняште машинам виктараш правам ... (налаш (-ам), present, 1Sg, positive)
7. Турфирмыште каласышт, аэропортышто мемнам ... (вашлияш (-ям), past II, 3Pl, positive)
8. Молан вараш кодынат? Эппак ... (кынелаш (-ам), past I, 2Sg, positive)
9. Тенгече турист-влаклан олам ... , но шым керт: черланышым. (ончыкташ (-ем), past I, 1Sg, positive)
10. Йолташ-влак, ме нимо деч ... (лӱдаш (-ам), present, 1Pl, negative)

### 7.2.6. Negative participle in -дыме

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes. As regards the denominal usage of this suffix to create privative adjectives (cf. English *-less*), see 11.6.5 – page 385.

#### Usage:

1. This participle is used as an attribute that precedes a noun. It is neutral as regards voice (active or passive) and tense: *луддымо* could, depending on context, have the meanings ‘not reading’, ‘not having read’, ‘not being read’ and ‘not having been read’.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Марий йылмым йөршын <u>палыдыме ен</u> тиде книгам огеш луд.     | A <u>person not knowing the Mari language</u> at all will not read this book.    |
| Салют йүк <u>почдымо окна</u> гочат шокта.                       | The sound of the fireworks can be heard also through an <u>unopened window</u> . |
| Марий-влак коклаште <u>марла кутырыдымо ен</u> тунам лийын огыл. | There were no <u>people not speaking Mari</u> among the Maris then.              |
| Ўстембалне <u>колтыдымо серыш</u> кия.                           | An <u>unsent letter</u> is lying on the table.                                   |

2. It can be used as a predicate. Here, too, it is neutral as regards voice and tense.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Шокшо чайымак йүаш йөратем: <u>шокшым шиждыме</u> улам. | I like to drink hot tea, I <u>don't feel the heat</u> . |
| Тиде пöрт <u>илыдыме</u> шога.                          | This house stands <u>uninhabited</u> .                  |
| Нине рвезе-влак нимо деч <u>луддымо</u> улыт.           | These boys are <u>not afraid</u> of anything.           |
| Ик совла <u>мушдымо</u> кодын.                          | One spoon was left <u>unwashed</u> .                    |

3. By means of conversion (see 11.3.1 – page 373), this participle can be used nominally: in this function, *луддымо* can mean ‘s/he that does/did not read’, or ‘it that is/was not read’.

4. The participle can be used as a verbal noun referring to the action (not occurring) that is not carried out as a whole. In this function, it can occur as a subject, object, or complement of a postposition. It can take possessive or case suffixes, if necessary.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Васлийын ийын моштыдымыжо</u> мыйым öрыктарен.          | It surprised me <u>that Vasliy can't swim</u> .                             |
| <u>Шыл кочдымыдам</u> пален онал.                          | We didn't know <u>you don't eat meat</u> .                                  |
| <u>Ача-авам колыштдымыжлан кöра</u> ўдыр туткарыш логалын. | The girl got into trouble <u>because she didn't listen to her parents</u> . |

The subject of this participle can also be indicated by a noun placed before the participle. As a tendency, inanimate nouns occur in the nominative, while animate nouns occur in the genitive, with the participle taking a matching possessive suffix.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Мўшкырем <u>шыл кўдымылан</u> верч коршта, шонем.      | My stomach is hurting because <u>the meat wasn't cooked</u> , I think |
| Экзаменышке <u>Ольошын толдымыжлан</u> нигö öрын огыл. | Nobody was surprised by <u>Olyosh not showing up for the exam</u> .   |

7.149. Form the negative participle in *-дымЕ* from the verbal stem.

1. чие-
2. му-
3. шотло-
4. кўл-
5. вашлий-
6. йөрө-
7. пыте-
8. лукт-
9. пуо-
10. кошт-

7.150. Form participial constructions from these finite clauses, following the patterns: *Тиде пашам ыштыме огыл* → *ыштыдыме паша*, *Тиде ең кызыт пашам огеш ыште* → *кызыт пашам ыштыдыме ең*.

1. Тиде паша чонлан огеш келше.
2. Тиде темым шымлыме огыл.
3. Тиде вашлиймаш огеш мондалт.
4. Тыгай шокшым чыташ огеш лий.
5. Тиде рвезе концертышке миен огыл.

### 7.2.7. Affirmative instructive gerund (converb) in *-н*

Attachment to verbal stem: *Ы-*suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45) in the first conjugation, *Е-*suffix (see 1.6.2 – page 43) in the second conjugation. Note that the ending of the gerund in first conjugation verbs can optionally be omitted after many polysyllabic stems, especially (but not only) ones containing derivational suffixes (see 11 – page 369). Thus, the gerund of *нумалаш (-ам)* ‘to bring, to carry’ can be *нумалын* or *нумал* and the gerund of *тунемаш (-ам)* ‘to learn, to study’ can be *тунемын* or *тунем*. As a tendency, the short forms are more used when the gerund immediately precedes its superordinate verb (see below), while the long forms are more typically used when it does not.

Маймылым воштылын, шинчавүдемат лекте.

Laughing at the monkey, tears came to my eyes.

Эчук воштыл колтыш.

Echuk burst out laughing.

The ending for second conjugation verbs is never dropped.

This gerund does not take possessive suffixes.

#### Usage:

1. These gerunds be used as free adverbials indicating either the manner in which an action is carried out, the means by which an activity is carried out, the cause of an activity, or an activity carried out simultaneously by the subject of the main verb. Note that Mari has a strong preference for using a gerund in combination with a finite verb over using two finite verbs. The two actions denoted by the gerund and the finite verb can occur simultaneously or one after another, depending on the context and the semantics of the verbs in question (if they denote punctual actions, a subsequent reading is more likely). Note that the free adverbial, with all its complements preceding it, can be somewhat lengthy and more resemble an English subordinate clause than an adverbial.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Ача эргыжым <u>күгешнен</u> онча.                                       | The father looks at his son <u>feeling pride</u> .                                  |
| Уремыште йоча-влак <u>модын</u> куржталыт.                              | Children are running around <u>playing</u> outside.                                 |
| Ме <u>маска</u> деч <u>лўдын</u> куржынна.                              | <u>Scared of the bear</u> , we ran.   |
| Тора корно деч ончыч аваж деч сугыным <u>налын</u> , Эчан каяш тарвана. | <u>Having received his mother's blessing before the long trip</u> , Echan sets off. |

Usually, the gerund and the superordinate (usually finite) verb share a subject. In examples where this is not the case, the agents of the two clauses are often in a part-whole relationship. When the subject of the gerund differs from that of the superordinate verb, it can be marked by a noun in the nominative preceding the gerund.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ўдыр колышо коважым <u>чон корштен</u> шарналта. | The girl remembers her dead grandmother <u>with a heavy heart</u> . |
| <u>Тендам ончен</u> , чонем куана.               | It gladdens my heart <u>seeing you</u> .                            |
| <u>Тыге пашам ыштен</u> , лектыш ок лий.         | If (you) <u>work like this</u> , it'll come to nothing.             |
| <u>Кечывал эрталтен</u> , йўр чарныш             | <u>A little bit after noon</u> , it stopped raining.                |

The usual positioning of the gerund in *-н*, or the phrase it ends, is immediately before the modified verb. If the modified verb has other dependents, however (e.g., an infinitive), these can separate the gerundial phrase from the finite verb. The gerundial phrase can also be placed elsewhere in the sentence for the sake of emphasis. This occurs especially in poetic language. When the gerundial phrase is separated from the superordinate verb, it is separated from the rest of the sentence by a comma, or commas.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Каче, <u>ўдыр дек миен</u> , вўдым подылаш йодеш. | The boy, <u>going to the girl</u> , asks her for a sip of water. |
|---|--|

## 2. The gerund is used in directional constructions.

Verbs of motion in Mari can be roughly divided into two categories: those that indicate a directionality but not a manner of movement – e.g., *лекташ (-ам)* ‘to leave’, *пураш (-ем)* ‘to enter’ – and those indicating a manner of movement but no directionality – e.g., *ияш (-ям)* ‘to swim’, *чонешташ (-ем)* ‘to fly’. The same distinction affects transitive verbs of motion, i.e., verbs relating to the transportation of something: *лукташ (-ам)* ‘to lead out’ and *пурташ (-ем)* ‘to bring in’ mark only a directionality, while *шўдыраш (-ем)* ‘to drag’ and *покташ (-ем)* ‘to drive (e.g., animals)’ only mark a method of transport.

If one wishes to express both the directionality and the manner of a movement – intransitive or transitive – one must create a verbal pairing consisting of a gerund in *-н* and a superordinate (often finite) verb. In these pairings, the first verb (the gerund) marks the manner of a motion, and the second verb the directionality:

| Verbal pairing        | Literal translation         | Factual translation |
|-----------------------|-----------------------------|---------------------|
| ийын лекташ (-ам)     | <i>to swimming leave</i>    | to swim out         |
| ийын пураш (-ем)      | <i>to swimming enter</i>    | to swim in          |
| чонештен лекташ (-ам) | <i>to flying leave</i>      | to fly out          |
| чонештен пураш (-ем)  | <i>to flying enter</i>      | to fly in           |
| шўдырен лукташ (-ам)  | <i>to dragging remove</i>   | to drag out         |
| шўдырен пурташ (-ем)  | <i>to dragging bring in</i> | to drag in          |
| поктен лукташ (-ам)   | <i>to driving remove</i>    | to drive out        |
| поктен пурташ (-ем)   | <i>to driving bring in</i>  | to drive in         |

Note that both elements of such a pairing must agree in transitivity. In most cases, the English counterparts to these couplings are phrasal verbs consisting of a verb and an adverbial particle indicating the directionality, the second verb of the pairing corresponds to the adverbial particle in English. Note that one adverbial particle in English generally corresponds to two verbs in Mari,

as adverbial particles can be used regardless of transitivity ('to come in', 'to push in'). An overview of directionalities, and what verbs can be used to indicate them in Mari:

| Directionality | Intransitive   | Transitive                  |
|----------------|----------------|-----------------------------|
| (coming)       | толаш (-ам)    | кондаш (-ем)                |
| (perforating)  | шўташ (-ем)    | шўтлаш (-ем)                |
| across, over   | вончааш (-ем)  | -                           |
| apart          | ойырлаш (-ем)  | ойыраш (-ем)                |
| around         | савырнаш (-ем) | -                           |
| away           | каяш (-ем)     | нангаяш (-ем), колташ (-ем) |
| down           | волаш (-ем)    | волташ (-ем)                |
| in, into       | пураш (-ем)    | пурташ (-ем)                |
| out            | лекташ (-ам)   | лукташ (-ам)                |
| past, by       | эрташ (-ем)    | -                           |
| together       | -              | чумыраш (-ем)               |
| up             | кўзааш (-ем)   | кўзыкташ (-ем)              |
| up to          | мияш (-ем)     | намияш (-ем)                |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Йоча-влак пörтышкö куржын пуреныт.  | The children <u>ran into</u> the house.  |
| Уна-влак такси дене кудал тольыч.   | The guests were <u>driving here</u> by taxi.   |
| Попугайна ала-кушко чонештен каен.  | Our parrot <u>flew off</u> somewhere.  |
| Пörтыштына лифт пудырген. Неле чемоданым визымше пачашыш шупшын кўзыктенам. | The elevator in our house broke. I <u>lugged</u> my heavy suitcase <u>up</u> to the fifth floor. |
| Ивановым визымше класс гыч школ директор деке вўден пуртышт.                | Ivanov from the fifth grade was <u>sent in</u> to the principal's office.                        |

While the pattern illustrated here is highly productive, it should be noted that not all pairings consisting of two verbs of motion (gerund + superordinate verb) adhere to it. Some examples of common pairings that do not adhere to the pattern detailed above:

| Verbal pairing     | Literal translation      | Factual translation              |
|--------------------|--------------------------|----------------------------------|
| толын шуаш (-ам)   | <i>to coming arrive</i>  | to arrive                        |
| лектын каяш (-ем)  | <i>to leaving go</i>     | to go out, to go away            |
| миен толаш (-ам)   | <i>to going come</i>     | to visit, to drop in, to drop by |
| миен пураш (-ем)   | <i>to coming enter</i>   | to visit                         |
| толын пураш (-ем)  | <i>to coming enter</i>   | to come in                       |
| пурен лекташ (-ам) | <i>to entering leave</i> | to drop in, to visit             |

3. The gerund is used in combination with numerous auxiliary verbs denoting different values: modal values relating to an ability (see 7.3.3 – page 280), denoting the presence of a benefactor in a benefactive construction (see 7.3.6 – page 294), and various aspectual values (see 7.3.5 – page 283).

4. Very rarely, gerunds in *-н* serve as adjectives: *шужен ий* 'year of famine (lit. starving year)'. Such occurrences are rare; the usage of the gerund in this function should be considered lexicalized.

7.151. Form the active instructive gerund in *-н* from the verbal stem.

1. кае-
2. йў-
3. тўрштў-
4. йодышт-
5. пуо-
6. пале-
7. куда́л-
8. шоно-
9. кошт-
10. вашлий-

7.152. Transform the following sentences with two finite verbs into sentences with a gerund and a finite verb, following the pattern: *Тудо кия да книгам лудеш → Тудо книгам лудын кия.*

1. Ик онгай книгам кычалынам да муым.
2. Ме ошкылына да веселан кутырена.
3. Турист-влак коштыт да олам ончат.
4. Кече мучко пашам ыштенат да ноенат.
5. Ўдыр-влак шогат да воштылыт.
6. Кастене шўрым шолтышым да кочкым.
7. Юля аважлан серышым возен да колтен.
8. Марина шинча да кофем йўэш.
9. Те пеледышым куштеда да ужаледа.
10. Йыван куржталеш да музыкым колыштеш.

7.153. Translate the following English phrases into Mari, using pairings of the verbs given below: with one verb as a gerund indicating the mode of movement, and a second verb indicating the directionality.

1. to walk by
2. to swim across
3. to push in
4. to pull down
5. to go apart

(волташ (-ем), вончаш (-ем), ияш (-ям), каяш (-ем), ойырлаш (-ем), ошкылаш (-ам), пурташ (-ем), шўкаш (-ем), шупшаш (-ам), эрташ (-ем))

7.154. Which verb is appropriate in the following sentences?

1. Ме тошкалтыш дене куржын (воленна/волтенна).
2. Рвезе имньыжым энгер деке вўден (мийыш/нарийыш).
3. Самолёт кавашке чонештен (кўзен/кўзыктен).
4. Тудым адак паша гыч поктен (лектыныт/луктыныт).
5. Кишке кудывечышкына нушкын (пурен/пуртен).

### 7.2.8. Negative gerund (converb) in *-де*

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes. This suffix is stressed. This gerund does not take possessive suffixes.

Usage: This gerund is used as an adverbial complement denoting something (manner, instrument, state, and condition) that does not occur. It can often be translated as ‘without ...ing’.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Нелеш ида нал, ручкадам <u>йодде</u> нальым. | Sorry, I took your pen <u>without asking</u> .               |
| Жапна уло, поездышке <u>вашкыде</u> шуктена. | We have time, we'll catch our train <u>without rushing</u> . |
| Серге серышым <u>тергыде</u> колтыш.         | Serge sent the letter <u>without checking it</u> .           |
| Катямыт мемнам <u>ужде</u> кайышт.           | Katya and her family left <u>without seeing us</u> .         |

Gerundial phrases with this gerund typically precede the verb they modify. Other dependents of the modified verb can occur between the gerundial phrase and the superordinate verb. When it does not immediately precede the verb it modifies, a gerundial construction is separated from the rest of the sentence by commas.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Эрдене пеш вашкенам – <u>кофем йӱде</u> ,<br>пашаш кайышым.      | I was in a real hurry in the morning – I went<br>to work <u>without drinking coffee</u> . |
| Тудо пеш ушан: <u>тунемде</u> , чылам пала.                      | S/he's quite smart: s/he knows everything<br><u>without studying</u> .                    |
| <u>Финн сауныш пурыде</u> , Финляндий гыч<br>мӱнгӱ она пӱртыл.   | We won't return home from Finland <u>without<br/>going to a Finnish sauna</u> .           |
| <u>Туныктышым умылыде</u> , тунемше<br>заданийым йонгылыш ыштен. | <u>Not having understood the teacher</u> , the<br>student did the exercise wrong.         |

The subject of gerund and the modified verb are usually the same. It is however possible for the gerund to have a different subject. In this case, it is indicated by a nominative form (genitive forms of personal pronoun can be used as well) preceding the gerund:

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Руаш оварен шуде</u> , мелнам огыт кӱэшт. | <u>If the dough doesn't rise</u> , you don't bake<br>pancakes. |
| <u>Аня толде</u> , ӱстел коклашке она шич.   | <u>Before Anya doesn't come</u> , we won't sit down<br>to eat. |
| <u>Ме кайыде</u> , моло кӱ кая?              | <u>If we don't go</u> , who else will go?                      |
| <u>Мемнан толде</u> , те пашам ида тӱнгал!   | Don't start work <u>before we come!</u>                        |

The negative gerund is frequently used in combination with the verb *лияш (-ям)* 'to be; to become', in a modal meaning 'to be allowed, to be possible' – see 7.3.3.3 – page 281 – in its negated third-person singular present form *ок/огеиш лий* 'it is not possible'. This construction has the meaning 'one cannot but ...', i.e., that one must absolutely do something.

Ача-авам колыштде ок лий. | One must listen to one's parents.

7.155. Form the negative in *-де* from the verbal stem.

1. йод-
2. сӱрӱ-
3. мушк-
4. руо-
5. му-
6. мие-
7. муро-
8. ий-
9. шарне-
10. шинч-

7.156. Turn these sentences with two finite clauses into sentences using gerundial constructions to form Mari proverbs, following the pattern: *Вўдыш от нуро гын, иаш от тунем* → *Вўдыш нурыде, иаш от тунем*.

1. Илышын кочыжым от пале гын, шерыжым от умыло.
2. Олма, жап шуын огыл гын, озажланат ок чеверге.
3. Маскажым ужын отыл гын, кышаж деч ит лўд.
4. Мардеж ок пуал гын, лышташ ок тарване.
5. Маскажым от лўйё гын, коваштыжым ит ужале.
6. Йот верыште от лий гын, мўнгысё ылышым аклаш от тўнгал.
7. Ваш-ваш от энгерте гын, илаш ок лий.
8. Имньым от кычке гын, орваш пурен ит шич.
9. Йёсым от чыте гын, сайым от уж.
10. Ик пашам огыт пыtare гын, вес пашам огыт тўнгал.

### 7.2.9. Gerund (converb) of prior action in -мек(е)

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes. The gerund has a short form and a long form that are equivalent as regards their meaning; the short form is more typical for spoken language.

Usage: This gerund is used to express an action occurring prior to the action expressed by the main conjugated verb (regardless of which tense this verb is in – the temporal reference is relative). In the English equivalents ‘after’ can generally be used.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Университетым тунем пытарымеке</u> , мом ышташ шонет?                | <u>After finishing the university</u> , what do you want to do?                     |
| <u>Изиш канымеке</u> , пашам кычалаш тўнгалам.                          | <u>After relaxing a bit</u> , I will start looking for work.                        |
| <u>Диссертацийым аралымеке</u> , Иванов университетыште туныкташ кодын. | <u>After defending his dissertation</u> , Ivanov stayed at the university to teach. |

Marking the subject of the gerund: If the agent of the gerundial action is a personal pronoun, it can be explicitly indicated with possessive suffixes. Note the parallel forms in the third person singular.

|            | лудаш (-ам) → лудмек(е) |
|------------|-------------------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | лудмекем                |
| <b>2Sg</b> | лудмекет                |
| <b>3Sg</b> | лудмекыже ~ лудмекше    |
| <b>1Pl</b> | лудмекына               |
| <b>2Pl</b> | лудмекыда               |
| <b>3Pl</b> | лудмекышт               |

It is also possible to use the genitive form of the pronoun along with the suffixed form of the gerund: *мыйын лудмекем*, *тыйын лудмекет*, etc. The agent can also be indicated with the genitive form of the pronoun alone: *мыйын лудмек(е)*, *тыйын лудмек(е)*, etc.

If the agent of the gerundial action is a noun, it can be in the nominative or the genitive. The nominative is used both in the case of inanimate and animate nouns, while the genitive is generally just used in the case of animate nouns. When the genitive is used, the gerund typically takes a possessive suffix: *кўтў толмек(е)* ‘after the herd comes/came’, *Ивук толмек(е)* ~ *Ивукын толмекыже* ‘after Ivuk comes/came’.



|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Кенгеж шумеке</u> , турист-влак шукемыныт.              | <u>Once summer came</u> , more and more tourists arrived.                           |
| <u>Экзамен-влак тўналмеке</u> , студент-влак шагал малат.  | <u>After the exams start</u> , students sleep little.                               |
| <u>Шўжарем марлан лекмеке</u> , туддене шуэнрак вашлийына. | <u>After my little sister got married</u> , we have been seeing less of each other. |
| <u>Уна-влакын кайымекрышт</u> , ме малаш возынна.          | <u>After the guests left</u> , we went to sleep.                                    |

A parallel form of the gerund in *-мек(е)* is the participial construction with the postposition *деч вара* (see 6.3.1 – page 194).

Пенсийыш лекмеке, тудын шуко яра жапше лие. ~  
Пенсийыш лекме деч вара тудын шуко яра жапше лие.

After retiring, s/he had a lot of free time.

7.157. Form the gerund of prior action in *-мек(е)* from the verbal stem.

1. йў-
2. мале-
3. пўртыл-
4. шоно-
5. поч-
6. руо-
7. вашлий-
8. сўрў-
9. лукт-
10. кие-

7.158. Attach the indicated possessive suffix to the gerund.

1. вучымеке, 1Sg
2. кынелмеке, 3Sg
3. тунеммеке, 1Pl
4. ончыктымеке, 3Sg
5. мушкылтмеке, 2 Pl
6. йўштылмеке, 1Sg
7. саламлымеке, 2 Sg
8. пурымеке, 3Pl
9. шочмеке, 2Sg
10. кутырымеке, 1Pl

7.159. Which of the given forms are correct? In some cases, both the given forms are.

1. Корным ... веле вончаш лиеш.  
(машина-влак шогалмеке/машина-влакын шогалмекышт)
2. ..., Петровмыт ялыш илаш кусненыт. (Йоча шочмеке/Йочан шочмекыже)
3. ..., кафешке каена. (Спектакль пытымеке/Спектакльын пытымекыже)
4. ..., Пошкырт кундемыш каяш ямдылалташ тўгалынна.  
(Родына-влак йынгыртымеке/Родына-влакын йынгыртымекышт)
5. ..., мланде пеш пенгыде лийын. (Йўр эртымеке/Йўрын эртымекыже)

7.160. Transform the following sentences using postpositional constructions into sentences using gerundial constructions with the gerund of future action in *-меш(ке)*, following the pattern: *Пыл эртен кайыме деч вара йӱр ок тол.* > *Пыл эртен кайымеке, йӱр ок тол.*

1. Юлян йынгыртымыж деч вара мый вокзалыш куржынам.
2. Финн-влак мончашке пуримо деч вара ерыште йӱштылыт.
3. Йӱштӧ толмо деч вара походыш коштын онал.
4. Английышке кайымет деч вара мый тыйым ужын омыл.
5. Марий Элыште илыме деч вара Юха марла марий гай кутыра.
6. Кином ончимо деч вара паркыш каена.
7. Йочан шочмыж деч вара Вера ялышке илаш куснен.
8. Кофем йӱмӧ деч вара вием ешаралтын.
9. Йӱр чарныме деч вара йоча-влак уремыш лектыныт.
10. Школым пытарыме деч вара кушко тунемаш пуренат?

### 7.2.10. Gerund (converb) of future action in *-меш(ке)*

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes. The gerund has a short form and a long form that are equivalent as regards their meaning; the short form is more typical for spoken language. It is important to note that possessive suffixes and enclitic particles can only be added to the long form.

Usage:

1. This gerund can be used to denote an action occurring subsequently to the action expressed by the main conjugated verb (regardless of what tense this verb is in – i.e., the temporal reference is relative). Thus, it can usually be translated into English as ‘before (doing something)’ or ‘until (doing something)’.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Книгам лудмешке</u> , эше ик серышым возем.        | <u>Before reading a book</u> , I'll still write a letter.         |
| <u>Корныш лекмешке</u> , Миклай чыла дене чеверласен. | <u>Before hitting the road</u> , Miklay said goodbye to everyone. |
| <u>Пашам ыштен пытарымешке</u> , канаш она кай.       | <u>Before finishing work</u> , I won't take a break.              |

2. It can be used as the equivalent of English ‘instead of, rather than (doing something)’.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Экзаменлан ямдылалтмешке</u> , нуно дискотекаш коштыт.    | <u>Rather than preparing for the exam</u> , they're going to the disco. |
| <u>Черетыште вучен шонымешке</u> , лучо йолташем деке пурем. | <u>Rather than standing in line</u> , I'll visit my friend.             |

Marking the subject of the gerund: If the agent of the gerundial action is a personal pronoun, it can be explicitly indicated with possessive suffixes attached to the long form of the gerund.

|            | лудаш (-ам) → лудмешке |
|------------|------------------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | лудмешкем              |
| <b>2Sg</b> | лудмешкет              |
| <b>3Sg</b> | лудмешкыже             |
| <b>1Pl</b> | лудмешкына             |
| <b>2Pl</b> | лудмешкыда             |
| <b>3Pl</b> | лудмешкышт             |

It is also possible to use the genitive form of the pronoun along with the suffixed form of the gerund: *мыйын лудмешкем*, *тыйын лудмешкет*, etc. The agent can also be indicated with the genitive form of the pronoun alone: *мыйын лудмеш(ке)*, *тыйын лудмеш(ке)*.

If the agent of the gerundial action is a noun, it can be in the nominative or the genitive. The nominative is used both in the case of inanimate and animate nouns, while the genitive is generally just used in the case of animate nouns. When the genitive is used, the gerund typically takes a possessive suffix: *күтү толмеш(ке)* 'before the herd comes/came', *Ивук толмеш(ке) ~ Ивукын толмешкыже* 'before Ivuk comes/came'.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Йүр түңалмешке</u> , мөңгышкө миен шуман.                               | (We) need to get home <u>before it starts raining</u> .                      |
| <u>Ончер почылтмешке</u> , вич кече кодын.                                 | There are five days left <u>before the exhibition starts</u> .               |
| <u>Уна толмешке</u> , тортым ида коч!                                      | Don't eat the cake <u>before the guests come!</u>                            |
| Ремонтым <u>пошкудо-влакын теңыз гыч</u><br><u>пörтылмешкышт</u> пытарена. | We'll finish the repairs <u>before the neighbors get back from the sea</u> . |

Constructions with the gerund in *-меш(ке)* often correspond to participial construction with the postpositions *деч ончыч* (see 6.3.5 – page 195), *марте* (see 6.1.49 – page 179), and *олмеш* (see 6.1.59 – page 181).

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Пенсийыш лекмешке</u> , туныктышо<br>Кужэнгерыште илен. ~<br><u>Пенсийыш лекме деч ончыч</u><br>туныктышо Кужэнгерыште илен.  | <u>Before retiring</u> , the teacher lived in Kuzhenger (Russian <i>Куженер</i> ).       |
| <u>Урок пытымешке</u> , вич минут кодын. ~<br><u>Урок пытыме марте</u> вич минут кодын.  | Five minutes are left <u>before the end of the class</u> .                               |
| <u>Интернетыште шинчымешке</u> , йолташ-<br>влак дене вашлий. ~<br><u>Интернетыште шинчыме олмеш</u><br>йолташ-влак дене вашлий. | <u>Rather than spending so much time on the Internet</u> , go meet up with your friends. |

7.161. Form the gerund of future action in *-меш(ке)* from the verbal stem.

- ойло-
- мушк-
- уж-
- кусар-
- му-
- мие-
- пуо-
- лий-
- шымле-
- кошт-

7.162. Attach the indicated possessive suffix to the gerund.

- возымешке, 1Pl
- кудалмешке, 3Sg
- мондымешке, 2 Sg
- вашлиймешке, 1 Sg
- нойымешке, 3Sg
- кочмешке, 1Pl
- йынгыртымешке, 3Pl
- йодмешке, 2Sg
- малымешке, 1Sg
- кычалмешке, 2Pl

7.163. Which of the given forms are correct? In some cases, both the given forms are.

1. ... , эше вўдым налын шуктем. (Поезд тарванымешке/Поездын тарванымешкыже)
2. ... , эн ончыч мый декем ача-авам йынгыртеныт.  
(Йолташ-влак саламлымешке/Йолташ-влакын саламлымешкышт)
3. ... , энгерыште ида йўштыл! (Вўд ырымешке/Вўдын ырымешкыже)
4. ... , эрлалан кинде ден шōрым налаш кўлеш.  
(Кевыт-влак петырымешке/Кевыт-влакын петырымешкышт)
5. Ожно самырык оръен ... кынелшаш ыле.  
(онъава ден онъача помыжалтмешке/онъава ден онъачан помыжалтмешкышт)

7.164. Transform the following sentences using postpositional constructions into sentences using gerundial constructions with the gerund of future action in *-меш(ке)*, following the pattern: *Шонгемме марте иле, шонгемме марте тунем. > Шонгеммешке иле, шонгеммешке тунем.*

1. Сессий тўналме марте кок арня кодын.
2. Офисыште шинчыме олмеш тый мом ыштет ыле?
3. Вашмутым пуымо деч ончыч Витя кужун шонен.
4. Шўдō гана колмо олмеш лучо ик гана ужаш.
5. Кастене шинчам нойымо марте лудам.
6. Ме кече лекме деч ончыч кынелына.
7. Малаш вочмо деч ончыч йоча-влак пўйым мушкыт.
8. Ёдыр-влак шинчавўд лекме марте воштылыт.
9. Акамын толмыж деч ончыч мый шкетын иленам.
10. Математикым тунемме олмеш лучо суахели йылме курсыш каем.

### 7.2.11. Gerund (converb) of simultaneous action in *-шыла*

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes.

Usage: This gerund is used to express an action occurring at the same time as the action expressed by the main conjugated verb (regardless of which tense this verb is in).

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Пашашке погынышыла, Ольош уверым<br>колыштеш.         | While getting ready for work, Olyosh is<br>listening to the news.             |
| Метро дене кудалшыла, шукын книгам<br>лудыт.          | Many people read books <u>when they take the<br/>metro.</u>                   |
| Эрдене пашашке кайышыла, Катя<br>кафеште кофем налеш. | <u>When going to work</u> in the morning, Katya<br>gets a coffee at the café. |

Marking the subject of the gerund: The agent of the gerund can be marked by a possessive suffix. When a possessive suffix is attached to this gerund, it is placed in the middle of the suffix: *-и* + possessive suffix + *-ла*. Such forms are not used in the first and second persons plural.

|     | лудаш (-ам) → лудшыла |
|-----|-----------------------|
| 1Sg | лудшемла              |
| 2Sg | лудшетла              |
| 3Sg | лудшыжла              |
| 1Pl | -                     |
| 2Pl | -                     |
| 3Pl | лудшыштла             |

It is not usual for the agent of this gerund to be marked with a pronoun or noun. Thus, sentences in which the main and subordinate clauses have different subjects are only possible if the subject of the subordinate clause is marked with a possessive suffix.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Вашкышемла</u> , кид гычем стакан камвозын.                 | <u>As I was rushing</u> , the glass fell out of my hand.                 |
| <u>Кужу жап коштыштыла</u> , йолышт ноен.                      | <u>As they were walking for a long time</u> , their legs got tired.      |
| <u>Сар нерген кутырышыжла</u> , шинчаж гыч шинчавудшат лектын. | <u>While s/he talked about the war</u> , tears welled from his/her eyes. |

If it is not possible to express the desired sentence within these constraints, the participial construction using the postposition *годым* (see 6.1.13 – page 168) must be used. This also happens in the first and second person plural, as the gerund in *-шыла* does not take the according possessive suffixes. If the usage of the gerund is permissible, the participial construction with *годым* and the gerundial construction can be used interchangeably.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Паша гыч толшыжла</u> Ивук кевытыш пурыш. ~<br><u>Паша гыч толмыж годым</u> Ивук кевытыш пурыш. | <u>On his way home from work</u> , Ivuk went to the shop. |
|--|---|

7.165. Form the gerund of simultaneous action in *-шыла* from the verbal stem.

- кане-
- ий-
- кие-
- кычал-
- күзö-
- йү-
- шинче-
- шого-
- кочк-
- колышт-

7.166. Attach the indicated possessive suffix to the gerund, if possible. If not possible, give a postpositional construction with *годым*.

- воштылшыла, 3Sg
- ончышыла, 2Sg
- куржшыла, 2Pl
- кучышыла, 1Sg
- волышыла, 3Pl
- пörтылшыла, 3Sg
- ыштышыла, 3Pl
- коштшыла, 2Sg
- вашештышыла, 1Sg
- модшыла, 1Pl

7.167. Transform the following sentences using postpositional constructions into sentences using gerundial constructions with the gerund of simultaneous action in *-шыла*, to form Mari proverbs and riddles, following the pattern: *Мичу танже нерген шонымо годым почеламутым возен.* > *Мичу, танже нерген шонышыла, почеламутым возен.* The solutions to the riddles are given in the key.

1. Його ең паша ыштыме годым кылма, кочмо годым ыра. (Калыкмут)
2. Кўшыч волымо годым шып вола, мландўмбақ шичмеке шып шинча, а кола гын, мўгыра. (Тушто)
3. Кайыме годым кўсенеш нангаем, мўнтеш пар имне дене конден ом керт. (Тушто)
4. Пече воктен коштмо годым ужар шокшо вўд дене когаргышым. (Тушто)
5. Ошкылмо годым шанчашым кышкен каем. (Тушто)

7.168. Transform the following sentences using postpositional constructions into sentences using gerundial constructions with the appropriate gerund: *-мек(е)*, *-меш(ке)*, or *-шыла*.

1. Пайрем годым унам вашлийме годым мурым муренит.
2. Унам ужатыме деч вара пўртым вигак огыт эрыкте.
3. Мўндыр корныш тарваныме деч ончыч изиш шинчалташ кўлеш.
4. Колышо-влакым уштымо годым кочкыт да «шужо» маныт.
5. Шўгарлашке мийыме деч вара мўнгышкў вик огыт кай: иктаж-кушко пурат.
6. Ачан ўстелтўрыш шичме марте йоча-влак кочкын огытыл.
7. Ўстелтўрыштў шинчыме годым кугу йўкын кутырен огытыл.
8. Кўсотыш пурымо деч ончыч кидым мушкыт.
9. Эмым йўмў олмеш, мончаш пуро! «Монча тазалыкым куча», – маныт.
10. Илян кече эртыме деч вара огыт йўштыл.

### 7.2.12. Nominalizations

Mari makes use of highly productive nominalizers to make nouns of verbs: a positive nominalizer *-маш* (see 11.5.8 – page 379) and a negative nominalizer *-дымаш* (see 11.5.9 – page 380).

### 7.3. Auxiliary verbs

Auxiliary verbs are verbs that add functional or grammatical information to another verb, such as English *can*, *may*, *will*, etc. This section will give a brief overview of auxiliary verbs used in Mari, organized by the grammatical information communicated by the auxiliary. The auxiliaries are sorted by their importance in most subsections that follow, but alphabetically in the subsection pertaining to aspectual auxiliaries (7.3.5 – page 283) due to the large number of auxiliaries of comparable relevance.

#### 7.3.1. The negation verb

The negation verb is an irregular verb with a defective paradigm – i.e., it does not have all forms a regular verb has, lacking non-finite forms completely, for example. It is used to express negation in the indicative present (see 7.1.1.1 – page 201), the indicative simple past I (see 7.1.1.2 – page 208), the imperative (see 7.1.2 – page 233), the desiderative (see 7.1.3 – page 242), and other forms derived from these tenses/moods.

The complement of the negation verb is the connegative form (see 7.1.0 – page 198).

|                          |     | Negation verb | Example: тол- 'to come' |
|--------------------------|-----|---------------|-------------------------|
| Indicative Present       | 1Sg | ом            | ом тол                  |
|                          | 2Sg | от            | от тол                  |
|                          | 3Sg | огеш ~ ок     | огеш ~ ок тол           |
|                          | 1Pl | огына ~ она   | огына ~ она тол         |
|                          | 2Pl | огыда ~ ода   | огыда ~ ода тол         |
|                          | 3Pl | огыт          | огыт тол                |
| Indicative Simple Past I | 1Sg | шым           | шым тол                 |
|                          | 2Sg | шыч           | шыч тол                 |
|                          | 3Sg | ыш            | ыш тол                  |
|                          | 1Pl | ышна          | ышна тол                |
|                          | 2Pl | ышда          | ышда тол                |
|                          | 3Pl | ышт           | ышт тол                 |
| Imperative               | 1Sg | -             | -                       |
|                          | 2Sg | ит            | ит тол                  |
|                          | 3Sg | ынже          | ынже тол                |
|                          | 1Pl | -             | -                       |
|                          | 2Pl | ида           | ида тол                 |
|                          | 3Pl | ынышт         | ынышт тол               |
| Desiderative             | 1Sg | ынем          | ынем тол                |
|                          | 2Sg | ынет          | ынет тол                |
|                          | 3Sg | ынеж          | ынеж тол                |
|                          | 1Pl | ынена         | ынена тол               |
|                          | 2Pl | ынеда         | ынеда тол               |
|                          | 3Pl | ынешт         | ынешт тол               |

Negation verb without connegative form: The connegative form can be omitted after the negation verb in the indicative present.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Те мыланна полшеда але <u>огыда</u> ?  | Will you help me or <u>not</u> ?                    |
| Озангыш эрла кудалына, <u>огына</u> ?  | Will we go to Kazan tomorrow or <u>not</u> ?        |
| Петровмыт кастене ярсат, <u>огыт</u> ? | Are the Petrovs free in the evening or <u>not</u> ? |

Note, however, that some alternative forms occur here: *огым* 'I don't' in the indicative present first person singular (instead of *ом*), *огым* 'you don't' in the indicative present second person singular (instead of *от*), *уме* 'don't' in the imperative second person singular (instead of *ум*).

|  |   |
|--|---|
| - Шўрым кочкат?                                  | - Will you eat soup?  |
| - Тау, <u>огым</u> . Шужышо омыл.                | - Thank you, <u>I won't</u> . I'm not hungry.               |
| Киношко мый денем кает, огыт?                    | Are you going to the movies with me, or <u>aren't you</u> ? |
| Кеч йод, кеч <u>ите</u> – тудо садак огеш полшо. | Ask or <u>don't</u> – s/he won't help anyway.               |

Word order: The negation verb and the connegative form are tied to one another tightly in Mari. It is unusual for other elements (e.g., adverbs, pronouns) to occupy the space between them and it is unusual for the word order to change – the connegative form by default follows the negation verb. Enclitic particles such as *-am* (see 9.1.1 – page 328), *-ак* (see 9.1.2 – page 330), and *гына* (see 9.5.19 – page 342) can, however, be attached to the negation verb and thus occupy the space between the negation verb and the connegative form. Very rarely, one can also encounter gerunds between the negation verb and the connegative form, when the gerund and the connegative form are an aspectual auxiliary construction – see 7.3.5 – page 283.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ме тудлан оңай пөлекым конденна, а тудо <u>огешат ончал</u> . | We brought him/her an interesting present, and <u>s/he won't even look at it</u> . |
| Ужмем нуным ок шу, <u>ыныштак тол</u> .                       | I don't want to see them, <u>if only they wouldn't come</u> .                      |
| – Кенгежше тений шыже гай.                                    | – Summer is like autumn this year.   |
| – <u>Ит гына ойдо</u> , йўштылашат огеш лий.                  | – <u>You don't say</u> , you can't even go swimming.                               |
| <u>Ида курныжланен шинче!</u>                                 | <u>Don't be greedy!</u>  |

### 7.3.2. Tense-marking auxiliaries

#### 7.3.2.1. улаш (-ам) 'to be' → simple past tense II

See 295 – page 7.5.

#### 7.3.2.2. тўнғалаш (-ам) 'to begin' → future

See 7.1.1.1 – page 201.

### 7.3.3. Modal auxiliaries denoting ability, etc.

#### 7.3.3.1. керташ (-ам) 'to be able to'

This verb is combined with the gerund in -н (see 7.2.7 – page 267). It denotes that the subject can, or cannot, carry out an action, without communicating the reason (i.e., possibility or lack thereof, ability or lack thereof, etc.).

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Пашам ыштен пытарымеке, <u>каен кертыда</u> .              | After finishing work, <u>you can go</u> .               |
| Кузе шонет, эрла марте тидым <u>ыштен пытарен кертына?</u> | What do you think, <u>can we finish</u> it by tomorrow? |
| Тенгече <u>мурен шым керт</u> : логарем корштен.           | <u>I couldn't sing</u> yesterday; my throat hurt.       |
| Нуно мыланна <u>полшен ышт керт</u> .                      | They <u>couldn't help</u> us.                           |
| Эрла йўр <u>лийын кертеш</u> .                             | There <u>could be rain</u> tomorrow.                    |

For the sake of emphasis and especially in poetic language, the gerund can follow the auxiliary:

Ом керт тидым ыштен, кеч-мом ойло. | I can't do this, say what you might.

#### 7.3.3.2. мошташ (-ем) 'to be able to'

This verb, like *керташ (-ам)* above, is combined with the gerund in -н (see 7.2.7 – page 267). It differs from *керташ (-ам)* in that it emphasizes that the ability has been learned or acquired. In these cases, however, *керташ (-ам)* is also possible.

|   |                             |
|---|-----------------------------|
| Мый марла <u>лудын моштем</u> (кертам). | <u>I can read Mari</u> .    |
| Мый марла <u>лудын ом мошто</u> (керт). | <u>I cannot read Mari</u> . |

In the following sentence, only *керташ (-ам)* is possible as the inability to read is due to external circumstances and not due to one's acquired abilities.

Таче мыйын шинчам коршта, лудын ом керт. | My eyes hurt today, I cannot read.

For the sake of emphasis and especially in poetic language, the gerund can follow the auxiliary:

Ом мошто мый мурен, кеч-мом ыште. | I can't sing, do what you will.



7.3.3.3. *лияш (-ям)* 'to be, to become' → 'to be allowed'

The third person singular forms of this verb are often used in combination with the infinitive (see 7.2.1 – page 255) in the sense of 'it is possible to' or 'one cannot, one should not'. If the person connected with the activity is cited, the dative case is used.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Тиде кевытыште марий сувенирым <u>налаш</u> <u>лиеш</u> .                 | You can <u>buy</u> Mari souvenirs in this store.                      |
| Тыште тамакым <u>шупшаш</u> <u>ок лий</u> .                               | You <u>can't smoke</u> here.  |
| Ожно <u>ўдырамаш-влак</u> лан кўсотышко <u>пураш</u> <u>ок лий</u> улмаш. | In the old days <u>women were not allowed to enter</u> sacred groves. |

For the sake of emphasis and especially in spoken language, the infinitive can follow the auxiliary:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ну ойлатыс тыланда, <u>ок лий</u> тыште тамакым <u>шупшаш</u> . Ода умыло мо? | But they're telling you <u>you can't smoke</u> here. Don't you understand? |
|---|--|

The negated third-person singular present form *ок/огеш лий* of this verb is frequently used in combination with the negative gerund in *-де* (see 7.2.8 – page 270). This construction has the meaning 'one cannot but ...', i.e., that one must absolutely do something.

|   |                                   |
|---|-----------------------------------|
| <u>Ача-авам</u> <u>колыштде</u> <u>ок лий</u> . | One must listen to one's parents. |
|---|-----------------------------------|

7.3.3.4. *толашаш (-ем)* 'to try, to strive' → improper, inadequate execution

When used in combination with the gerund in *-н* (see 7.2.7 – page 267), this verb can denote that the action indicated by the gerund is carried out improperly, insufficiently, and that it is considered disparagingly.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Изи ўдыр кўварым <u>мушкын</u> <u>толаша</u> – <u>аважлан</u> <u>полшынеже</u> . | The little girl is <u>trying to wash the floor</u> – she wants to help her mother. |
| Экзаменлан пешыжак тунемын онал, но ала-мом <u>возен</u> <u>толашенна</u> .      | We didn't study for the exam properly, but <u>wrote down</u> something or other.   |

7.3.3.5. *төчаш (-ем)* 'to try, to attempt' → improper, inadequate execution

When used in combination with the gerund in *-н* (see 7.2.7 – page 267), this verb can denote that the action indicated by the gerund is not carried out in a proper manner.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Изиш <u>мален</u> <u>төченна</u> , но шот дене ышна керт.                         | We <u>tried to sleep</u> a little, but couldn't really.                          |
| Турист-влак дене немычла <u>кутырен</u> <u>төченам</u> , но нуно мыйым ышт умыло. | I <u>tried to speak</u> German with the tourists, but they didn't understand me. |

7.169. Insert the appropriate verb, as an infinitive or gerund, depending on the auxiliary verb.

1. Аня чыла буквам огеш пале, но йоча книгаг ... толаша.
2. Эрла 8-ше март – Российыште пашам огыт ыште. Кече мучко ... кертына.
3. Самолётышто телефон дене ... лиеш мо?
4. Серге – мастар дизайнер. Ешыштыже чылан ... моштеныт.
5. Ачажым ончен, Петяжат шахматла ... төча.

(кутыраш, модаш, сўретлаш, канаш, лудаш)

6. Шкетын тыгай неле сумкам ... от керт, мый тылат полшем.
7. Пингвин ... огеш мошто.
8. Йолташем дене фитнес-клубышко изиш ... төченна.
9. Кўсотыштō пушенгым ... огеш лий.
10. Пошкудына кас еда пианино дене ... толаша.

(руаш, шокташ, чонгешташ, нумалаш, кошташ)

7.170. Insert the appropriate auxiliary into the sentence.

1. Тунемше-влак йодышлан ала-мом вашештен ... , но тичмаш вашмутым нигō огеш пу.  
(керт/моштат/лийыт/тōчат)
2. Тиде шўрым кочкаш ок ... : пеш шинчалан. (керт/мошто/лий/толаше)
3. Эля ден Юля ийын огыт ... : ача-авашт туныктен огытыл. (керт/мошто/лий/тōчō)
4. Ме акам дене машинам сайын виктарен ... . (керт/моштена/лийына/толашена)
5. Паспортым шагат наре кычал ... , нигушто муын ом керт.  
(кертам/моштем/лиеш/толашем)
6. Тиде секретым мый тыланда каласен ом ... . (керт/мошто/лий/толаше)
7. Йошкар-Олаште марий кочкышым кушто тамлен ончаш ... ?  
(кертеш/мошта/лиеш/толаша)
8. Тыште машинам шогалташ ок ... . (керт/мошто/лий/тōчō)
9. Карт деч да компас деч посна чодыраште йомын ... .  
(кертыда/моштеда/лиеш/тōчыда)
10. Ондален от ... : шинчат гыч чыла коеш. (керт/мошто/лий/толаше)

### 7.3.4. Modal auxiliaries denoting necessity, etc. ('to have to')

All of these auxiliaries are used in impersonal constructions and combine with the infinitive (see 7.2.1 – page 255). For all of them, the person that must carry out an activity can be marked with the dative. The infinitive precedes the auxiliary; alternations from this word order are only to be expected in poetic language.

#### 7.3.4.1. *кўлаш (-ам)* 'to have to'

The combination of this auxiliary with the infinitive is, in positive sentences, roughly equivalent to the necessitive infinitive in *-ман* (see 7.2.2 – page 257). The infinitive can take possessive suffixes in this construction.

|                                   |                                      |
|-----------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Эрла эр кынелаш кўлеш.            | (We) need to get up early tomorrow.  |
| Экзаменлан чот ямдылалташ кўлын.  | (I) had to study a lot for the exam. |
| Тыланда эмлызе деке каяшда кўлеш. | You should see a doctor.             |

In negated sentences, however, this auxiliary denotes that something does not have to be done, while those using the necessitive infinitive in *-ман* denote that something must not be done.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тыланда полшаш огеш кўд мо?            | Don't you have to help?                     |
| Тигр деке четлыкыш тылат пурыван огыл. | You must not go into the cage to the tiger. |

7.171. Transform the following sentences using the necessitive infinitive in *-ман* into sentences using the auxiliary *кўлаш (-ам)*.

1. Университетыште тылат эше мыняр ий тунемман?
2. Тенгече мылам ялышке кудалман ыле, но вучыдымын пашашке ўжыныт.
3. Мыланна поездышке вашкыман.
4. Изат пеш сайын пианино дене шокта – тудлан музыкант лийман.
5. Ожно марий ўдырлан урген, тўрлен, пидын моштыман улмаш.

### 7.3.4.2. верешташ (-ам) 'to get, to catch' → 'to have to'

In addition to the constructions using the necessitive infinitive in *-ман* (see 7.2.2 – page 257) the verb *кўлаш (-ам)* (see above) and the participle in *-шааш* combined with the verb *улаш (-ам)* 'to be' (see 7.5 – page 295) a number of verbs with different primary meanings can, in combination with the infinitive of a second verb, be used in necessitive constructions. Necessitive constructions of this type are typically used to indicate that an outcome was necessitated by circumstances or that one was compelled to follow a certain course of action. In all of these constructions, the person that must do something can be indicated by the dative and/or by a possessive suffix attached to the infinitive.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ик автобусыш вараш кодынна, весым<br>ынде ик шагат <u>вучаш верештеш</u> . | We missed one bus, now (we) <u>need to wait</u><br>for the next one for an hour. |
| Вес автобусшо пудырген, садлан мыланна<br>йолын каяш <u>логале</u> .       | The other bus broke down, so <u>we had to walk</u> .                             |
| Полшышо уке, чыла пашам <u>мылам ышташ<br/>возеш</u> .                     | Without somebody to help me, <u>I have to do</u> all<br>the work myself.         |
| Тошто компьютер олмеш ум <u>налашна<br/>пернен</u> .                       | Instead of the old computer, we <u>had to buy</u> a<br>new one.                  |
| Ик йонгылыш верчын пашам угыч<br><u>тўналаш тўкна</u> .                    | Because of one mistake (we) <u>have to start</u> the<br>work all over again.     |

### 7.3.4.3. логалаш (-ам) 'to get to, to find oneself (somewhere)' → 'to have to'

See *верештеш (-ам)* above.

### 7.3.4.4. возаш (-ам) 'to lie down' → 'to have to'

See *верештеш (-ам)* above.

### 7.3.4.5. пернаш (-ем) 'to strike against' → 'to have to'

See *верештеш (-ам)* above.

### 7.3.4.6. тўкнаш (-ем) 'to touch (intr.)' → 'to have to'

See *верештеш (-ам)* above.

## 7.3.5. Aspectual auxiliaries

### 7.3.5.1. General remarks on aspectual auxiliary constructions

Aspect is the quality of a verb which describes the internal temporal flow of an action: if it is carried out to completion or not, if it has a tangible result or not, how long a time period it lasts, etc. Compare, for example, the simple verb *to love* with the phrase *to fall in love* in English. The phrase *to fall in love* has the distinction that it denotes a transformative process in which an emotion comes into being, while the simple verb denotes the simple presence of an emotion, with no reference to its origin. The distinction here is aspectual. Another tool employed by English for such distinctions are adverbial particles – compare *to eat* and *to eat up*, *to die* and *to die out*, etc.

In Mari, a number of verbs (33 are given in the list below) – for example *шындаш (-ем)* 'to put, to place', *лекташ (-ам)* 'to go, to leave', *нытарааш (-ем)* 'to finish, to end', *каяш (-ем)* 'to go', and others – have transparent primary/lexical meanings, but can also occur as auxiliaries denoting verbal aspect. When they do, they lose their original lexical meaning, either partially or fully. They are coupled with a gerund in *-н* (see 7.2.7 – page 267), which carries the core semantics of the

pairing. These pairings are ubiquitous in Mari, and are referred to by many names in sources: aspectual converb constructions, paired verbs, analytical verb forms, and many others.

Translating these constructions is often difficult, as all aspectual auxiliaries can also be used in a literal sense – and in their literal sense, they can be modified by a gerund in *-н* being used as a free adverbial – and many of them also as directionality-marking verbs of motion coupled with a manner-marking verb of motion as a gerund. For example, the verb *кайш (-ем)* ‘to go’ can be used in its original lexical meanings in a sentence where it co-occurs with a gerund in *-н* being used as a free adverbial; it can be used as a directionality marker; or it can be used as an aspectual auxiliary:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Библиотекеште книга <sup>м</sup> <u>налын</u> , мый<br>мӱнгыш каем. | After taking out a book at the library,<br>I'll go home. |
| Кайык-влак шокшо вельш <u>чонештен</u><br>каят.                     | Birds fly off to warmer countries.                       |
| Пӱтынъ карман <u>йӱлен</u> каен.                                    | The whole fortress burned to the ground.                 |

The translation of auxiliaries, if they are translated at all, must be decided based on context.

As regards the aspectual value indicated by auxiliaries, these can very roughly be classified into imperfective values (denoting that an activity is not punctual, but rather is carried out over a long time period: e.g., *илаш (-ем)* ‘to live’, *кияш (-ем)*, *шинчаш (-ем)* ‘to sit’) and perfective values (denote that an activity is punctual and/or transformative nature to the activity, that there are tangible results, et cetera: e.g., *кайш (-ем)* ‘to go’, *колташ (-ем)* ‘to send’, *шинчаш (-ам)* ‘to sit down’). As the large number of auxiliary implies, however, individual auxiliaries can indicate more specific values, a finer classification is possible:

- Perfective:
  - INGRESSIVE (INCHOATIVE, INCEPTIVE, INITIAL-TRANSFORMATIVE) auxiliaries indicate the beginning of a situation, e.g., *кайш (-ем)* ‘to go’, *колташ (-ем)* ‘to send’.
  - RESULTATIVE (COMPLETIVE, FINAL-TRANSFORMATIVE) auxiliaries indicate the successful completion of a situation, e.g., *кодаш (-ам)* ‘to stay’, *кодаш (-ем)* ‘to leave (something)’.
  - EXHAUSTIVE auxiliaries indicate that the specified action is realized to the fullest possible extent and thus also extends to all possible subjects and objects, whether or not they are indicated, e.g., *ныташ (-ем)* ‘to end’, *нытапаш (-ем)* ‘to finish (something)’.
  - MOMENTARY (PUNCTUAL) auxiliaries indicate that the action is carried out over a short, poorly defined period of time, e.g., *ончаш (-ем)* ‘to look’.
  - DELIMITATIVE auxiliaries are used when a perfective situation occurs over a defined period of time, e.g., *эртапаш (-ем)* ‘to conduct, to carry (something) out’.
- Imperfective:
  - DURATIVE auxiliaries indicate that the given situation lasts for a certain period of time, e.g., *кошташ (-ам)* ‘to go, to wander’, *шинчаш (-ем)* ‘to sit’.
  - ITERATIVE (FREQUENTATIVE) auxiliaries indicate the repetition of a situation, the successive occurrence of several instances of the given situation, e.g., *онташ (-ем)* ‘to put, to set’, *савырпаш (-ем)* ‘to turn’.
  - GRADUAL (INCREMENTAL) auxiliaries indicate duration or repetition together with transformation, e.g., *толаш (-ам)* ‘to come’, *мияш (-ем)* ‘to go’.

Restrictions apply to couplings of gerunds with auxiliaries, with these restrictions pertaining to individual auxiliaries. Some auxiliaries are mainly coupled with intransitive verbs (e.g., *кодаш (-ам)* ‘to stay’, some are mainly coupled with transitive verbs (e.g., *кодаш (-ем)* ‘to leave

(something)'), and some can couple with either (e.g., *колташ (-ем)* 'to send'). The following listing will give a brief overview of the semantic communicated by individual auxiliaries, and restrictions that apply to the usage of an auxiliary.

(Partial) maintenance of original meaning: Note that the lexical meaning of an auxiliary is not lost completely in many cases. This is the most notable in relation with verbs of placement: Numerous verbs denoting that a subject places an object in a (standing, sitting, lying) position, that a subject itself takes up a (standing, sitting, lying) position, or that a subject is in a (standing, sitting, lying) position, can be found in the Mari language. The following is a graphical representation of prototypical verbs (i.e., excluding derived forms and verbs with additional semantic facets) of this type, where the verb above the arrow represents a transitive verb and the verb below the arrow represents the corresponding intransitive verb:



A tabular view:

|                          | Motion  |  | No motion                        |
|--------------------------|---|--|----------------------------------|
|                          | Transitive  | Intransitive                                 |                                  |
| <b>Standing position</b> | <i>шогалташ (-ем)</i><br>'to put, to set, to stand' | <i>шогалаш (-ам)</i><br>'to stand up'        | <i>шогаш (-ем)</i><br>'to stand' |
| <b>Sitting position</b>  | <i>шындаш (-ем)</i><br>'to put, to place'           | <i>шинчаш (-ам)</i><br>'to sit down'         | <i>шинчаш (-ем)</i><br>'to sit'  |
| <b>Lying position</b>    | <i>пышташ (-ем)</i><br>'to put, to place'           | <i>возаш (-ам)</i><br>'to lie down; to fall' | <i>кияш (-ем)</i><br>'to lie'    |

All of these verbs are used as aspectual auxiliaries. The verbs falling into the three columns communicate similar values to one another:

- The transitive verbs of motion (first column) *шогалташ (-ем)* 'to put, to set, to stand', *шындаш (-ем)* 'to put, to place', and *пышташ (-ем)* 'to put, to place' couple with transitive verbs and are resultativity markers.
- The intransitive verbs of motion (second column) *шогалаш (-ам)* 'to stand up', *шинчаш (-ам)* 'to sit down', and *возаш (-ам)* 'to lie down; to fall' couple with intransitive verbs and are resultativity markers.
- The intransitive verbs of static position (third column) *шогаш (-ем)* 'to stand', *шинчаш (-ем)* 'to sit', and *кияш (-ем)* 'to lie' couple with intransitive verbs and denote durativity.

While some highly idiomatic, lexicalized pairings using these auxiliaries exist in which the usage of one or the other is not predictable (e.g., *шонен пышташ (-ем)* 'to decide (lit. thinking put)', *йöратен шындаш (-ем)* 'to fall in love (lit. loving place)'), the choice of the appropriate auxiliary from the individual column seems to be governed by the underlying original lexical meaning: any difference between pairings using the auxiliaries from one of the columns above lies in the position in which an action is carried out or into which the subject or object of an action moves, rather than in aspect.

Also in other cases, the original lexical meaning of an auxiliary can, at least partially, be read into pairings using the auxiliary. This can account for the co-existence of numerous auxiliaries denoting fairly similar aspectual values that, at first glance, might seem excessive to an observer.

Frequency and productivity: Note that there are substantial differences as regards the frequency of use of individual auxiliaries. While a statistical overview cannot be provided here, the overview below will indicate which auxiliaries are especially commonly used.

Other means of expressing aspect: aspectual values can also be communicated by the choice of an appropriate tense form (see 7.1.1 – page 201), or by deverbal verbal derivational suffixes (see 11 – page 369).

#### 7.3.5.2. возаш (-ам) ‘to lie down’ → resultative; added property; lying position

This verb indicates the abruptness and finality of an activity. It is coupled with intransitive verbs. It can imply that a subject takes a lying position through the action, or that a property of some sort is added to the subject.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Йўшто вўдышто йўштылмō деч вара йолташем чот <u>черланен возо</u> . | After swimming in the cold water, my friend <u>fell</u> quite ill. |
| Ял воктене кумда пасу <u>шарлен возын</u> .                         | A large field <u>stretch</u> ed out beside the village.            |
| Кўсен гыч сравоч <u>лектын возын</u> .                              | The key <u>fell out</u> of the pocket.                             |

#### 7.3.5.3. илаш (-ем) ‘to live’ → continuous

This auxiliary is coupled with transitive and intransitive verbs to indicate the (very) lengthy, habitual execution of an activity.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ик палыме́м пакчасаскам веле <u>кочкын ила</u> .     | An acquaintance of mine <u>lives off</u> of only vegetables.                               |
| Ялысе калык газ пуртымым кумшо ий <u>вучен ила</u> . | The people in the village <u>have been waiting</u> to be connected to gas for three years. |
| Пошкудо-влак дене ваш-ваш <u>полшен илена</u> .      | Our neighbors and we <u>help each other all the time</u> .                                 |

#### 7.3.5.4. каяш (-ем) ‘to go’ → ingressive, tangible result

This verb is coupled with intransitive verbs to express that an activity starts, is momentary, and will possibly lead to a tangible result.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Кокам чот лўдмō дене ик йўдыштō <u>чалем кайыш</u> . | In her fear, my aunt <u>went gray</u> overnight.         |
| Тиде пеледыш вўд деч посна писын <u>кошкен кая</u> . | This flower <u>dries out</u> very quickly without water. |
| Киндылан ак чот <u>шергешт каең</u> .                | The price for bread <u>went up</u> by a lot.             |

It is also used in intransitive directional constructions to mark the directionality ‘away’ (see 7.2.7 – page 267).

#### 7.3.5.5. кияш (-ем) ‘to lie’ → durative; lying position

This verb is used to indicate a long-lasting activity. It is coupled with both transitive and intransitive verbs. It can imply that the action is carried out in a lying position.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ремонтым пörтыштö кокымшо тылзе <u>ыштен киена</u> . | We've <u>been doing</u> repairs in the house for two months.        |
| Кенгеж еда уныка-влакым ковашт <u>ончен кия</u> .    | Every summer, the grandmother <u>looks after</u> her grandchildren. |
| Статьям кумшо арня <u>возен кием</u> .               | I've <u>been writing</u> the article for three weeks.               |

#### 7.3.5.6. *кодаш (-ам)* 'to stay' → resultative, evident result, excessive

This auxiliary indicates that an activity is carried out to its completion, and that it had ostensible results. It is used in combination with intransitive verbs. It can also imply the excessive manifestation of a phenomenon.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Чимарий йöла таче марте <u>аралалт кодын</u> .                           | The customs of the Mari Traditional Religion <u>have been maintained</u> till today.         |
| Икана изиэм годым чодыраш <u>йомын кодынам</u> .                         | Once when I was little I <u>got lost</u> in the forest.                                      |
| Кок шагат гыч вöдым чарат. Вöдым чарымешке, вургемым <u>мушкын код</u> ! | The water will be turned off in two hours. Before they turn it off, <u>wash</u> the clothes! |

#### 7.3.5.7. *кодаш (-ем)* 'to leave (something)' → resultative, subject leaves

This auxiliary indicates that an activity is carried out to its completion, and that it had ostensible results. It is used in combination with transitive verbs. It can imply that the subject leaves after carrying out the action.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Кайымешкыже, Лиза үстембалне серышым <u>возен коден</u> . | Before leaving, Liza <u>wrote and left</u> a letter on the table. |
| Мöнгысö сравочым пашаште <u>монден коденам</u> .          | I <u>forgot</u> my key for home at work.                          |
| Эн сай персикым ужалыше шкаланже <u>ойырен коден</u> .    | The seller <u>put aside</u> the best peaches for himself/herself. |

7.172. Choose the appropriate auxiliary.

1. Кукшо игечылан көра пеледыш кошкен коден/возын.
2. Университетыште тунемме жап тыланда мо дене шарналт кодын/коден?
3. Икымше йöратымашыжым Ивук эреак шарнен кая/ила.
4. Эвика вожылмо дене чеверген кайыш/ила.
5. Пайремлан кече мучко шолтен возынна /киенна.
6. Йöр деч вара шудо писын кушкын каен/киен.
7. Циркысе номер деч вара тигрым четлыкеш петырен коденыт/кодыныт.
8. Олма Ньютон үмбак кöрлын киен/возын.
9. Иван Петрович школышто кумло ий наре туныктен коদেশ/ила.
10. Кызыт шымлымашлан материалым поген киём/возам.

#### 7.3.5.8. *колташ (-ем)* 'to send' → inchoative, momentary

This verb is very commonly used as an auxiliary, and combines with both transitive and intransitive verbs. It can indicate that: 1) the action is carried out to its conclusion or that 2) the action is inchoative (beginning).

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ольош иканаште ик литр вўдым <u>йўын колтыш</u> . | Olyosh <u>downed</u> a liter of water at once.                 |
| Театрыште ик палымым <u>ужын колтышым</u> .       | I <u>saw</u> an acquaintance at the theater.                   |
| Маймылым ужын, йоча-влак <u>воштыл колтышт</u> .  | Seeing the monkey, the children <u>broke out in laughter</u> . |

It is also used in transitive directional constructions to mark the directionality 'away' (see 7.2.7 – page 267).

### 7.3.5.9. кошташ (-ам) 'to go' → durative; many locations

This auxiliary is used to mark long-lasting, continuative, repeated actions, and that an action is carried out in many locations. It is coupled to transitive and intransitive verbs alike.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Петя аваж деч пийым налаш эртак <u>йодын коштеш</u> . | Petya is constantly <u> nagging</u> his mother for a dog. |
| Васлий йотэлыште вич ий <u>илен коштын</u> .          | Vasliy <u>spent</u> five years <u>living</u> abroad.      |
| Ача-аваже эргышт верч <u>ойгырен коштыт</u> .         | The parents <u>worry</u> about their son.                 |

### 7.3.5.10. кудалташ (-ем) 'to throw, to cast' → resultative; impetuous, sudden

This auxiliary is combined with transitive and intransitive verbs, and indicates the rapid, possibly not entirely controlled, execution of an action.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Эля акажлан <u>сырен кудалтыш</u> .                     | Elya <u>flew into a rage</u> at her elder sister.                |
| Десерт нерген йөршын <u>монден кудалтышна</u> .         | We completely <u>forgot</u> about dessert.                       |
| Ўдыр-влак вучыдымо пӧлеклан чот <u>ӧрын кудалтышт</u> . | The girls were quite <u>surprised</u> at the unexpected present. |

### 7.3.5.11. кышкаш (-ем) 'to throw, to cast' → resultative; impetuous, sudden; scattering

This auxiliary is combined with transitive and intransitive verbs, and indicates the rapid, possibly not entirely controlled, execution of an action. It can also imply that the object of the pairing is scattered through the action.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Сад орол олмам шолышташ пурышо йоча-влакым <u>вурсен кышкыш</u> .   | The garden keeper <u>gave</u> the children that broke in to steal apples <u>a good scolding</u> . |
| Сырыме дене южгунам ала-момат <u>ойлен кышкем</u> , а вара чаманем. | Sometimes in my anger <u>words slip out</u> that I regret later.                                  |
| Ава эргын тувыржым лу минутышто <u>эрыктен кышкен</u> .             | The mother <u>washed</u> her son's shirt in ten minutes.  |

### 7.3.5.12. лекташ (-ам) 'to go, to leave' → delimitative; unexpectedness

This auxiliary can be used to express finality or completeness (up to a set limit), but also that an activity is sudden or unexpected. It can be coupled with transitive and intransitive verbs.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| «Элнет» романым кум кечыште <u>лудын лектым</u> . | I <u>read</u> the novel "Elnet" within three days.                 |
| Уна-влак ондакрак <u>толын лектыныт</u> .         | The guests <u>arrived</u> early.                                   |
| Кастене уло ешге мончаште <u>мушкылт лекна</u> .  | In the evening, we <u>went</u> to the sauna with the whole family. |

It is also used in intransitive directional constructions to mark the directionality 'out' (see 7.2.7 – page 267).



7.3.5.13. *лукташ (-ам)* 'to lead out' → exhaustive; creation of something

This auxiliary is coupled with transitive verbs to express finality, or that something is created through the action.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Марий историй нерген у книгам <u>савыктен луктыныт</u> .                 | A new book about Mari history <u>was published</u> .                             |
| Ача-аваже ўдырыштым ик эн сай университетыште <u>туныктен луктыныт</u> . | The parents <u>sent</u> their daughter to study at one of the best universities. |
| Пуракым уло пўртыштў <u>ўштын лук!</u>                                   | <u>Sweep up</u> the dust in the whole house!                                     |

It is also used in transitive directional constructions to mark the directionality 'out' (see 7.2.7 – page 267).

## 7.173. Choose the appropriate auxiliary.

1. Туныктышо чыла тестым терген коштын/лектын.
2. Пошкудына-влак адак туманлен луктыныт/кышкеныт.
3. Тунемше-влак кенжеж каныш тўналмым вучен колтат/коштыт.
4. Оля пўрткоккла гыч тошто книгам муын луктын/кышкен.
5. Сар годсо жапым шарналтен, ковам шортын луктын/колтыш.
6. Тений мемнан институтышто латкум книгам ямдылен луктыныт/кышкеныт.
7. Йолташыжлан кузе полшаш, Эчан кужу жап шонен кудалтен/коштын.
8. Пачеретым мынярлан ужален колтенат/лектынат?
9. Маскам ужын, сонарзе-влак лўдын луктыныт/кудалтышт.
10. Университетым могай ийыште тунем лектында/луктында?

7.3.5.14. *мияш (-ем)* 'to go, to come' → gradual

This verb is paired with transitive and intransitive verbs, and indicates that an action is carried out over a long time, with the effects of said action possibly increasing gradually with time.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ий гыч ийыш нине ер-влак <u>куакшем мият</u> . | These lakes <u>become more shallow</u> each year. |
| Виян мардеж <u>эркышнен мия</u> .              | The high wind <u>is dying down</u> .              |
| Пашада <u>ушнен мийыже!</u>                    | <u>May</u> your work go well!                     |

It is also used in transitive directional constructions to mark the directionality 'up to' (see 7.2.7 – page 267).

7.3.5.15. *налаш (-ам)* 'to take' → delimitative; autobenefactive

See 7.4.5.2 – page 295.

7.3.5.16. *ончаш (-ем)* 'to look' → momentary; activity is tried

This auxiliary marks a momentary aspect, signifying that activities last only for a short time. It is also used to indicate that the subject attempts to do something. It is coupled with both transitive and intransitive verbs.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тылат <u>полшен ончем</u> , но нимат ом сўрў.              | I'll try to help you, but I can't promise anything.           |
| Подкогыльо ден команмелнам <u>кочкын онченда?</u>          | <u>Have you tried</u> the dumplings and the layered pancakes? |
| – Поро кас, Ивановым лиеш?                                 | – Good evening, could I (talk to) Ivanov?                     |
| – Тудо эше пашаште. Ик шагат гыч <u>йынгыртен ончыза</u> . | – He's at work. <u>Try calling</u> in an hour.                |

7.3.5.17. *онташ (-ем)* 'to place (several items)' → iterative, large scale

This auxiliary is coupled with transitive verbs and indicates a speedy, large-scale, repeated, and intense execution of an action.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Озавате шүрлан шылым <u>пүчкын опта</u> .                    | The housewife is <u>chopping up</u> meat for the soup.     |
| У ийлан пөлекым чылалан <u>ямдылен оптенна</u> .             | We <u>prepared</u> New Year's gifts for everybody.         |
| Тенгече йүдым пошкудынам палыдымевлак <u>кырен оптеныт</u> . | Last night our neighbor was <u>beaten up</u> by strangers. |

7.3.5.18. *ныаш (-эм)* 'to give' → resultative; benefactive

See 7.4.5.1 – page 294.

7.3.5.19. *ныташ (-ем)* 'to finish, to complete' → exhaustive

This transitive verb is coupled with transitive verbs. It indicates that an activity is carried out to its completion, to the exhaustion of an object (or of all possible objects).

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Диссертациетым кунам <u>возен пытарет</u> ?    | When will you <u>finish writing</u> your dissertation?    |
| Тиде пашам эрла марте <u>ыштен пытарем</u> .   | I <u>will finish</u> this work by tomorrow.               |
| Чодыраште шынга мемнам <u>кочкын пытарен</u> . | Mosquitoes <u>stung</u> us <u>all over</u> in the forest. |

7.3.5.20. *ныташ (-ем)* 'to end, to stop (intr.)' → exhaustive; all participate

This intransitive verb can be coupled with intransitive verbs to indicate the completeness or intensity of an action. It is also used to indicate that all prospective participants took part in an action.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Март мучашлан чыла лум <u>шулен пытен</u> .     | All the snow <u>melted</u> by the end of March.                    |
| Эчук икымше паша кечын чылт <u>ноен пытыш</u> . | Echuk <u>became completely exhausted</u> on his first day of work. |
| Йоча-влак осал пий деч <u>куржын пытеныт</u> .  | The children all ran away from the savage dog.                     |

7.174. Choose the appropriate auxiliary.

1. Ялысе корным ачалаш кум машина кўм конден оптеныт/миеныт.
2. Йөн лийме годым марий пурам йўын опыза/ончыза! Тудым коштымо ушмен гыч ыштат.
3. Мөнгыштö нигö уке: чылан ала-кушко каен пытеныт/пытареныт.
4. Кенгеж велеш кече кужем онча/мия.
5. «Марий Эл» ансамблын концертышкыже чыла билетым налын пытеныт/пытареныт.
6. Шыжым кевытлаште пакчасаскалан акым иземден мият/оптат.
7. Телылан шудым солен опташ/ончаш пошкудо-влакат полшеныт.
8. Йўштö Кугыза толмыжлан Ивук куанен миен/пытен.
9. Тиде тувырым кушто висен ончаш/опташ лиеш?
10. Марсель Прустын романжым нигунам лудын ом пыте/пытаре.

7.3.5.21. *пышташ (-ем)* 'to put, to place, to lay' → resultative; lying position; in advance

This auxiliary is primarily coupled with transitive verbs, and indicates the completion of an action. It in some cases implies that the object is put into a lying position through the action, or that the object of the action is procured in advance.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Шокшо вургемым чемоданышке <u>поген пыштенам</u> .                                       | I <u>packed</u> my warm clothing into a suitcase.                                       |
| Озавате үстембаке ош үстелшовычым <u>шарен пыштен</u> .                                  | The housewife <u>spread</u> a white tablecloth on the table.                            |
| Талешке кечын марий возышо-влак Чавайнын чапкүжө деке пеледышым <u>конден пыштеныт</u> . | On the Day of (Mari) Heroes, Mari writers <u>laid down</u> flowers at Chavayn's statue. |

7.3.5.22. *сенаш (-ем)* 'to win, to defeat' → exhaustive; 'to manage to'

This auxiliary is used to indicate the successful execution of a task. It is coupled with transitive and intransitive verbs alike. In some (but not all) cases, it can be translated into English as 'to manage'.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Сар годым <u>илен сенаш</u> йöсö ыле.             | It was hard to <u>survive</u> during the war.   |
| Тиде неле мешакым <u>тарватен сенаш</u> огеш лий. | This heavy bag cannot <u>be moved</u> .         |
| Эверестыш <u>күзен сенеда</u> ыле?                | Would you <u>manage to climb</u> Mount Everest? |

7.3.5.23. *темаш (-ам)* 'to fill up (intr.)' → exhaustive, sufficient

This verb is coupled with transitive and intransitive verbs, and denotes that an activity is carried out up to a certain limit, to exhaustion, to the satisfaction of the subject, etc.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Йүдым начар маленам – <u>мален темын омыл</u> .         | I didn't sleep well at night, I didn't <u>get a good night's rest</u> . |
| Ме шкеже <u>кочкын темынна</u> , но шинчана темын огыл. | We've <u>had our fill</u> , but it still looks so good.                 |
| Йоча-влак <u>модын темыныт</u> , ынде канымышт шуэш.    | The children <u>have played enough</u> , now they want to rest.         |

7.3.5.24. *толаш (-ам)* 'to come' → gradual

This auxiliary is frequently coupled with intransitive verbs and denotes a gradual increase in the effect of an action.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Марий йылмым тунемше-влак <u>шукем толыт</u> .  | Students of Mari are <u>increasing in number</u> .                   |
| Жап дене тўняончалтышна <u>вашталт толеш</u> .  | As time goes by our view of the world <u>changes</u> .               |
| Финн-угор калык кокласе кыл <u>виян толеш</u> . | The links between Finno-Ugric nations <u>are becoming stronger</u> . |

It is also used in intransitive directional constructions to mark the directionality 'coming' (see 7.2.7 – page 267).

7.3.5.25. *шинчаш (-ам)* 'to sit down' → resultative; sitting position

This auxiliary indicates that an action leads to a change of a state, that an activity is completed, etc. It is coupled with intransitive verbs and can imply that the subject takes a sitting position in some cases.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Пырыс пий деч машина йымаке <u>шылын шинчын</u> . | The cat <u>hid</u> from the dog under the car.              |
| Йӱр деч вара мланде чот <u>пентгыдем шинчын</u> . | After the rain, the land <u>became</u> much <u>harder</u> . |
| Верушын чурийже лӱдмӱ дене <u>ошем шинче</u> .    | Verush's face <u>went white</u> with fear.                  |

7.3.5.26. *шинчаш (-ем)* 'to sit' → durative; sitting position

This verb indicates that an activity lasts a long time. It is coupled with intransitive verbs and can imply that the action is carried out in a sitting position.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Шокшышто шыл <u>шопен шинча</u> .                        | The meat <u>is going bad</u> in the heat.            |
| Тошто йолташем дене кум шагат <u>мутланен шинченна</u> . | I <u>chatted</u> with my old friend for three hours. |
| Ӱстембалне чай <u>йӱкшен шинча</u> .                     | The tea <u>is becoming cold</u> on the table.        |

7.175. Choose the appropriate auxiliary.

1. Теве ончалза, тенгече кактусна пелед шинчен/шинчын.
2. Тыгай мотор сӱретым ончен темаш/сенгаш ок лий.
3. Оксам кушко шылтен темынат/пыштенат?
4. Пытартыш ийлаште олаштына илыш кӱкшыт саем толеш/шинча.
5. Ноябрь тылзыште энгерлаште вӱд кылмен пышта/шинчеш.
6. Калык тунам мландыжым тушман деч арален толын/сенген.
7. Йӱын шинчын/темын одал гын, эше чайым йӱза.
8. Олана эркын кушкын толеш/пышта.
9. Чемоданыштет кермыч мо? Нӱлтал темаш/сенгаш ок лий.
10. Ик экзаменлан кум арня тунем шинчым/шинченам.

7.3.5.27. *шогалаш (-ам)* 'to stand up' → resultative; standing position

This verb can be coupled mostly with intransitive verbs. It indicates that an action is carried out only once, rather than repeatedly or habitually. It can imply that the subject takes a standing position through the action.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Пӱрт ончылно куэ <u>ужарген шогалын</u> .                      | A birch tree <u>turned green</u> in front of the house.          |
| Машина-влак кенета <u>чарнен шогальыч</u> .                    | The cars suddenly <u>stopped</u> .                               |
| Ӱдыр-влак пайремыш эн мотор тувырыштым <u>чиен шогалыныт</u> . | The girls <u>put on</u> their best clothing for the celebration. |

7.3.5.28. *шогалташ (-ем)* 'to place, to stand' → resultative; standing position

This auxiliary is primarily coupled with transitive verbs, and indicates the completion of an action. It in some cases implies that the object is put into a standing position through the action.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Коча-ковам куд йочам <u>куштен шогалтен</u> .                     | My grandparents <u>raised</u> six children.        |
| Олаштына кум у школым <u>чонен шогалтеныт</u> .                   | Three new schools <u>were built</u> in our town.   |
| Ольошым школ вуйлатышын<br>пöлемышкыже <u>пуртен шогалтеныт</u> . | Olyosh <u>was sent</u> to the headmaster's office. |

### 7.3.5.29. шогаш (-ем) 'to stand' → durative, standing position

This auxiliary is frequently coupled with both transitive and intransitive verbs and denotes that their action is carried out over a long time. It can also imply that the action is carried out in a standing position.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Петров – лүмлё биолог: лыве-влакым<br>кумло ий утла <u>шымлен шога</u> . | Petrov is a famous biologist, <u>he has been studying</u> butterflies for more than 30 years. |
| Розаже могай сылнын <u>пелед шога!</u>                                   | How nicely the roses <u>are blooming!</u>   |
| Мемнан волонтер-влак йочапöртлан<br>кумшо ий <u>полшен шогат</u> .       | Our volunteers have helped the orphanage<br>for three years.                                  |

### 7.3.5.30. шугаш (-ам) 'to arrive, to reach' → exhaustive; attainment of a goal

This verb indicates the completion of an activity, the momentary execution of an activity, etc. It is mainly coupled with intransitive verbs.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Салам лийже! Кузе <u>миен шуында?</u>         | Hello! How was the trip? (lit. How <u>did you arrive?</u> ) |
| Чайлан вўд <u>ырен шуо</u> мо?                | Is the water <u>warm enough</u> for tea?                    |
| Кугезе кочам шўдö ий марте <u>илен шуын</u> . | My great-grandfather <u>lived</u> to the age of hundred.    |

### 7.3.5.31. шугаш (-эм) 'to throw, to cast' → resultative; energetic, impetuous, sudden

This auxiliary is combined with transitive verbs, and indicates the rapid, sudden, impetuous, energetic execution of an action.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Пöртым ачалыме годым кидым чот <u>түкен шуэнам</u> .                 | I <u>hit</u> my hand badly when fixing up the house.                           |
| Йўла почеш, сўаныште самырык мужыр<br>бокалым <u>пудыртен шуэн</u> . | Following the custom, the young couple<br><u>broke</u> a glass at the wedding. |
| Паренгым ик арняште <u>кўнчен шуэнна</u> .                           | We <u>dug up</u> the potatoes in one week.                                     |

### 7.3.5.32. шукташ (-ем) 'to carry out, to fulfill' → exhaustive; 'to manage to'

This verb indicates that an activity is successfully carried out to the end or up to a certain limit. It is coupled with transitive and intransitive verbs. In some (but not all) cases, it can be translated into English as 'to manage'.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Меран пире деч <u>утлен шуктен</u> .             | The rabbit <u>managed to escape</u> the wolf.           |
| Эрла марте тиде пашам <u>пытарен она шукто</u> . | We won't <u>manage to finish</u> this work by tomorrow. |
| Тиде темым те <u>умылен шуктенда</u> мо?         | Did you <u>manage to understand</u> this topic?         |

### 7.3.5.33. шындаш (-ем) 'to put, to place, to set' → resultative; sitting position

This auxiliary is primarily coupled with transitive verbs, and indicates the completion of an action. It in some cases implies that the object is put into a sitting position through the action.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Озавате уна-влаклан шўрымат <u>шолтен</u> , мелнамат <u>кўэшт шынден</u> . | The housewife <u>cooked</u> soup and <u>baked</u> pancakes for the guests. |
| Уна-влак чеслын <u>кочкын шынденыт</u> .                                   | The guests <u>dined</u> splendidly.  |
| Пўртыштў пеш шокшо – чыла окнам <u>почын шындаш</u> кўлеш.                 | It's quite hot in the house – (we) need to <u>open</u> all the windows.    |

### 7.3.5.34. *эрташ (-ем)* 'to lead, to take' → delimitative

This auxiliary can be paired with intransitive and transitive verbs alike, and indicates that an action is carried out over a set long time period.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Шуматкечын нигуш лектын омыл, книга <u>лудын эртаренам</u> .             | I didn't go anywhere on Saturday, I <u>spent it</u> reading a book.                  |
| Кеңеж канышым Петров теңыз серыште <u>киен эртарен</u> .                 | Petrov <u>spent</u> his summer holiday <u>lying</u> on the sea shore.                |
| Тошто йолташем дене кас мучко ончычсо жапым <u>шарналтен эртаренна</u> . | I <u>spent</u> the evening <u>reminiscing</u> about days gone by with my old friend. |

### 7.176. Choose the appropriate auxiliary.

1. Пытартыш метрош шинчын шуэн/шуктен онал – ынде таксим ўжыкташ логалеш.
2. Ковам дене когыльылан олмам эрыктена, начар ужашыжым пўчкын шуэна/шуына.
3. «Марий чодыра» пўртўс паркыште кок йўдым мален шынденна/эртаренна.
4. Кугыжаныш чекыште мемнам чарен шогалтеныт/шогалыныт да паспортым ончыкташ йодыныт.
5. Пресс-конференцийыште 20 журналист йодышым пуэн эртарен/шуктен.
6. Ик йолташем кажне кечын гаяк фейсбукуш у фотосўретым луктын шога/шогалта.
7. Тошто йўлем верыште у чодыра кушкын шогалтен/шогалын.
8. Почеламутым йўдвошт тунемынам, но алят тунем шуын/шоген омыл.
9. Ялыште капкам йўдлан vele петырен шуыт/шындат.
10. Мемнан кафедреште чылан конференцийлан ямдылалт шогат/шуат.

### 7.3.6. Benefactive and autobenefactive auxiliaries

All auxiliaries contained in this section are coupled with the gerund in *-н* (see 7.2.7 – page 267).

#### 7.4.5.1. *пуаш (-эм)* 'to give' → benefactive; resultative

This verb is paired with transitive verbs. It is often used to indicate the presence of a beneficiary of an action in so-called benefactive constructions. In many cases where this verb is used in this function, the natural English translation would contain a pronoun: '(to) me/you/...'. In Mari, this pronoun is often omitted.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ача-аваже Максимлан у модышым <u>налын пуэныт</u> .                 | His parents <u>bought</u> Maxim a new toy.                       |
| Озавате уна-влакчан чайым <u>темен пуа</u> .                        | The housewife <u>poured</u> tea for the guests.                  |
| Пўлек семын Ивановлан шўдў лотерей билетым <u>кучыктен пуэныт</u> . | Ivanov <u>was handed</u> a hundred lottery tickets as a present. |

In some cases, the verb rather indicates a completed action. This does not, however, exclude the possibility that the presence of a beneficiary is implied.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Самырык туныктышо у темым сайын <u>умылтарен пуэн.</u>          | The young teacher <u>explained</u> the topic well.                 |
| Мый тыланда эн кугу секретым <u>каласен пуэм.</u>               | I will <u>tell</u> you my biggest secret.                          |
| Романыштыже Чавайн марий калыкын илышыжым <u>ончыктен пуэн.</u> | In his novel, Chavayn <u>depicted</u> the life of the Mari people. |

#### 7.4.5.2. налаш (-ам) 'to take' → autobenefactive; delimitative

This verb is mostly (but not exclusively) coupled with transitive verbs to indicate the completion of an activity. Sometimes, it indicates that the subject of the sentence is also the beneficiary of an action.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Мыланна ончыкылык шотышто <u>кутырен налаш</u> кўлеш.     | We need to <u>have a talk</u> about the future.              |
| Володя интернет гыч шуко марий книгаг <u>возен налын.</u> | Volodya <u>downloaded</u> many Mari books from the Internet. |
| Петя корнышыкыжо пел сукур киндым <u>шулын нале.</u>      | Petya <u>cut himself</u> half a loaf of bread for the road.  |

#### 7.4.5.3. ончыкташ (-ем) 'to begin' → benefactive (demonstrating)

Like *пуаш (-эм)* (see above), this verb is used to indicate that there is a beneficiary to an action other than the patient (i.e., direct object) of the verb. It differs from *пуаш (-эм)* in that beneficiaries do not simply benefit from the action, but have the action illustrated to them in some manner.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Самырык композитор шке пьесыжым <u>шоктен ончыктен.</u>                      | The young composer <u>performed</u> his/her own piece.                             |
| Тиде пейзажыште сўретче марий пўртўсын сылнылыкшым <u>сўретлен ончыктен.</u> | In this landscape painting, the painter <u>depicted</u> the beauty of Mari nature. |
| Изи йоча-влак йочасад концертыште почеламутым <u>лудын ончыктеныт.</u>       | The little children <u>recited</u> poems at the kindergarten concert.              |

### 7.5. Verb of being

#### 7.5.0. General remarks

The complete paradigm of the verb of being is composed of forms from two verbs: *улаш (-ам)* 'to be' and *лияш (-ям)* 'to be; to become'. Some differences exist in the paradigm depending on if the verbs are used as a copula (A = B), or in other usages, such as existential clauses (see 7.5.9 – page 303) or sentences of predicative possession (see 7.5.11 – page 305). These distinctions will be discussed below; sections 7.5.1 – page 295 – through 7.5.8 – page 302 – primarily pertain to the usage as a copula.

#### 7.5.1. Present tense

Positive: Here the *улаш (-ам)* 'to be' is conjugated regularly (see 7.1.1.1 – page 201). The form *улаш* of the third person singular can be omitted; it can only be used as a copula, but not in existential clauses or clauses (see 7.5.9 – page 303) of predicative possession (see 7.5.11 – page 305).

|            |        |
|------------|--------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | улам   |
| <b>2Sg</b> | улат   |
| <b>3Sg</b> | (улеш) |
| <b>1Pl</b> | улына  |
| <b>2Pl</b> | улыда  |
| <b>3Pl</b> | улыт   |

|                                 |                                    |
|---------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Мый марий <u>улам</u> .         | I <u>am</u> a Mari.                |
| Тый мыняр ияш <u>улат</u> ?     | How old <u>are</u> you?            |
| Тудо пиалан ( <u>улеш</u> ).    | S/he <u>is</u> happy.              |
| Ме тыште кумытын <u>улына</u> . | There <u>are</u> three of us here. |
| Те Индий гыч <u>улыда</u> мо?   | <u>Are</u> you from India?         |
| Нуно йылмызе <u>улыт</u> .      | They <u>are</u> linguists.         |

The morphologically present-tense forms of *лияш* (-ям) carry future semantics; they will be discussed below in 7.5.5 – page 300.

**Negation:** The negation verb (see 7.3.1 – page 278) is melded with the connegative form (historically *ул*, here reduced to -ыл) in all persons. Note the double forms in the first and second persons plural, where the negation verb also has two forms each (*огына* ~ *она*, *огыда* ~ *ода*).

|            |               |
|------------|---------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | омыл          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | отыл          |
| <b>3Sg</b> | огыл          |
| <b>1Pl</b> | огынал ~ онал |
| <b>2Pl</b> | огыдал ~ одал |
| <b>3Pl</b> | огытыл        |

|                                  |  |
|----------------------------------|--|
| Мый мурызо омыл.                 | I <u>am not</u> a singer.              |
| Тый молан ямде отыл?             | Why <u>aren't</u> you ready?           |
| Ковам але шонго огыл.            | My grandmother <u>isn't</u> old yet.   |
| Ме лўдшан огынал.                | We <u>are not</u> timid.               |
| Те Васлий дене йолташ огыдал мо? | <u>Aren't</u> you friends with Vasliy? |
| Петровмыт нужна огытыл.          | The Petrovs <u>aren't</u> poor.        |

The form *огыл* of the third person singular is also used to negate miscellaneous constituents of a sentence, see 9.5.61 – page 353.

7.177. Give negative replies to the question, e.g.: *Тый эмлызе улат мо?* → *Уке, мый эмлызе омыл*. Use the first person plural when responding to questions in the second person plural.

1. Те марий улыда мо?
2. Ёпет ужарге мо?
3. Тый шўдў ияш улат мо?
4. Марий-влак тюрк улыт мо?
5. Марий йылме йўсў мо?

## 7.5.2. Simple past tense I

In the simple past tense I (see 7.1.1.2 – page 208), only positive forms of *улаш* (-ам) are used, and these are irregular: the stem vowel changes (*y* → *ы*), and contrary to the general rules, the stem-final -л is palatalized in all persons, including the first and second person plural. Forms of *лияш* (-ям) can be used as well: these forms are regular, and exist in negation as well. The positive forms



of *лияш* (-ям) are tendentially used when a transformation occurred, and can be translated as 'became'.

|            |     | Positive | Negative |
|------------|-----|----------|----------|
| улаш (-ам) | 1Sg | ыльым    | -        |
|            | 2Sg | ыльыч    | -        |
|            | 3Sg | ыле      | -        |
|            | 1Pl | ыльна    | -        |
|            | 2Pl | ыльда    | -        |
|            | 3Pl | ыльыч    | -        |
| лияш (-ям) | 1Sg | лийым    | шым лий  |
|            | 2Sg | лийыч    | шыч лий  |
|            | 3Sg | лие      | ыш лий   |
|            | 1Pl | лийна    | ышна лий |
|            | 2Pl | лийда    | ышда лий |
|            | 3Pl | лийыч    | ышт лий  |

As regards the usage of *ыле* 'was' as a particle, see 9.3 – page 333.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Театрыште ончышо-влак шукын <u>ыльыч</u> .                           | There <u>were</u> many spectators in the theater.                         |
| Спектакль онгай <u>ыле</u> .   | The play <u>was</u> interesting.  |
| Кум ий ончыч радиовудышö <u>лийым</u> .                              | I <u>became</u> a radio moderator three years ago.                        |
| Нелеш ида нал, йонгылыш <u>лийна</u> .                               | Sorry, we <u>were</u> wrong.  |
| Йўрлан верч паркыште концерт кужу <u>ыш</u> <u>лий</u> .             | Because of the rain, the concert in the park <u>didn't last</u> long.     |
| Футбол таҥасымаште мемнан рвезе-влак сенгыше <u>ышт</u> <u>лий</u> . | At the football competition, our boys <u>were</u> <u>not</u> the winners. |

7.178. Put these present-tense sentences into the simple past tense I.

1. Ме туныктышо она лий.
2. Йолташем-влак музыкант лийыт.
3. Эҥерыште вўд йўштö.
4. Тамакым шупшын, таза от лий.
5. Мый эмлызе лиям.
6. Циркыште йокрок ок лий.
7. Мо пеш весела улыда?
8. Тый поро улат.
9. Те черле одал.
10. Вашлиймаште нылытын улына.

### 7.5.3. Simple past tense II

Only *лияш* (-ям) is generally used in the simple past II (see 7.1.1.3 – page 215), as well as the irregular form *уламаш* 'was' in the third person singular.

|            | Positive      | Negative            |
|------------|---------------|---------------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | лийынам       | лийын омыл          |
| <b>2Sg</b> | лийынат       | лийын отыл          |
| <b>3Sg</b> | лийын ~ улмаш | лийын огыл          |
| <b>1Pl</b> | лийынна       | лийын огынал ~ онал |
| <b>2Pl</b> | лийында       | лийын огыдал ~ одал |
| <b>3Pl</b> | лийыныт       | лийын омыл          |

The usage of *улмаш* implies second-hand information, circumstances that were not directly observed, things that happened in the distant past, etc. As regards its usage as a particle, see 9.3 – page 333.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тенгече ме кече мучко<br>Козьмодемьянскыште <u>лийынна</u> . | Yesterday we <u>were</u> in Kozmodemyansk all day long. |
| Юринышто Шереметев полатыште <u>лийында</u> мо?              | <u>Have you been</u> to Sheremetev Castle in Yurino?    |
| Парашют дене төршташ тореш <u>лийын омыл</u> .               | I <u>was not</u> against a parachute jump.              |
| Экзамен-влак неле <u>лийын огытыл</u> .                      | The exams <u>weren't</u> difficult.                     |
| Иванов ожно миллионер <u>улмаш</u> .                         | Ivanov <u>used to be</u> a millionaire.                 |
| Тиде верыште кўсото <u>улмаш</u> .                           | There <u>used to be</u> a sacred grove here.            |

7.179. Put these present-tense sentences into the simple past tense II.

1. Те пеш онгай айдеме улыда.
2. Тый тракторист отыл мо?
3. Ме пиалан улына.
4. Тый кушто улат?
5. Мый мөнгыштө шкетын улам.
6. Те школышто одал мо?
7. Сноуборд дене мунчалташ мый коло ияш омыл.
8. Акам кусарыше.
9. Вашмутет чын огыл.
10. Турист-влак тоштерыште улыт.

#### 7.5.4. Compound past tense I-IV

Both *улаш* (-ам) and *лияш* (-ям) have forms in the compound past tenses III-IV (see 7.1.1.6 – page 228, 7.1.1.7 – page 230). In the compound past tense I, forms with *улаш* (-ам) are understood to have past semantics, while those with *лияш* (-ям) are understood to have conditional semantics. In the compound past tense II, forms with *улаш* (-ам) have the semantics 'to be', while those with *лияш* (-ям) have the semantics 'to become; to happen; to be allowed' (see also 7.3.3.3 – page 281).

## Compound Past Tense I:

|            |     | Positive   | Negative            |
|------------|-----|------------|---------------------|
| улаш (-ам) | 1Sg | улам ыле   | омыл ыле            |
|            | 2Sg | улат ыле   | отыл ыле            |
|            | 3Sg | улеш ыле   | огыл ыле            |
|            | 1Pl | улына ыле  | огынал ~ онал ыле   |
|            | 2Pl | улыда ыле  | огыдал ~ одал ыле   |
|            | 3Pl | улыт ыле   | огытыл ыле          |
| лияш (-ям) | 1Sg | лиям ыле   | ом лий ыле          |
|            | 2Sg | лият ыле   | от лий ыле          |
|            | 3Sg | лиеш ыле   | огеш ~ ок лий ыле   |
|            | 1Pl | лийына ыле | огына ~ она лий ыле |
|            | 2Pl | лийыда ыле | огыда ~ ода лий ыле |
|            | 3Pl | лийыт ыле  | огыт лий ыле        |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Самырык годым чолгарак <u>улына ыле</u> .          | <u>We were</u> sprier when we were young.                              |
| Ожно мый вожылшо <u>улам ыле</u> .                 | I <u>used to be</u> shy.   |
| Йошкар-Олаште илыме годым эмлызе <u>улам ыле</u> . | When I lived in Yoshkar-Ola, I <u>was</u> a doctor.                    |
| Эх, самырык <u>лиям ыле</u> !                      | Oh, <u>to be</u> young!  |
| Поян <u>лиям ыле</u> гын, пörтым налам ыле.        | If I <u>were</u> rich, I'd buy a house.                                |
| Ялыште илем гын, инженер <u>лиям ыле</u> мо?       | If I lived in the countryside, <u>would I have become</u> an engineer? |
| Тунам мый лүдшан <u>омыл ыле</u> .                 | I <u>wasn't</u> timid then.  |

## Compound Past Tense II:

|            |     | Positive     | Negative              |
|------------|-----|--------------|-----------------------|
| улаш (-ам) | 1Sg | улам улмаш   | омыл улмаш            |
|            | 2Sg | улат улмаш   | отыл улмаш            |
|            | 3Sg | улеш улмаш   | огыл улмаш            |
|            | 1Pl | улына улмаш  | огынал ~ онал улмаш   |
|            | 2Pl | улыда улмаш  | огыдал ~ одал улмаш   |
|            | 3Pl | улыт улмаш   | огытыл улмаш          |
| лияш (-ям) | 1Sg | лиям улмаш   | ом лий улмаш          |
|            | 2Sg | лият улмаш   | от лий улмаш          |
|            | 3Sg | лиеш улмаш   | огеш ~ ок лий улмаш   |
|            | 1Pl | лийына улмаш | огына ~ она лий улмаш |
|            | 2Pl | лийыда улмаш | огыда ~ ода лий улмаш |
|            | 3Pl | лийыт улмаш  | огыт лий улмаш        |

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тенгече ужно турист-влак венгр <u>улыт улмаш</u> .                             | The tourists we saw yesterday <u>were</u> Hungarians, <u>it turns out</u> .           |
| Опытан альпинист-влакланат Эльбрусыш күзаш куштылго <u>огыл улмаш</u> .        | Even for the experienced mountain climbers, Mount Elbrus <u>wasn't</u> easy to climb. |
| Паленат онал, нуно ожно спортсмен <u>улыт улмаш</u> .                          | We didn't know they <u>used to be</u> athletes.                                       |
| Тимофей южгунам пешак вожылшо <u>лиеш улмаш</u> , тунамже эре мутым куктыштын. | Timofey <u>used to become</u> shy on occasion, then he'd trip over his tongue.        |
| Тунам тыгай йонысыр чүчкыдын <u>лиеш улмаш</u> .                               | At that time such troubles <u>happened</u> frequently.                                |
| Вес корно денат каяш <u>лиеш улмаш</u> .                                       | (You) <u>could have</u> taken another road.   |

Умбаке тунемеш ыле гын, эмлызе лиеш  
улмаш.

If s/he had finished his/her degree, s/he  
would have become a doctor.

### Compound Past Tense III:

|            |     | Positive    | Negative                |
|------------|-----|-------------|-------------------------|
| лияш (-ям) | 1Sg | лийынам ыле | лийын омыл ыле          |
|            | 2Sg | лийынат ыле | лийын отыл ыле          |
|            | 3Sg | лийын ыле   | лийын огыл ыле          |
|            | 1Pl | лийынна ыле | лийын огынал ~ онал ыле |
|            | 2Pl | лийында ыле | лийын огыдал ~ одал ыле |
|            | 3Pl | лийыныт ыле | лийын огытыл ыле        |

Одо кундемаште экспедиций дене кум  
гана лийынам ыле.

I was on expeditions to Udmurtia three times.

Черланен отыл? Ончыч тыгай поро лийын  
отыл ыле.

Are you feeling alright? You weren't this kind  
before.

### Compound Past Tense IV:

|            |     | Positive      | Negative                  |
|------------|-----|---------------|---------------------------|
| лияш (-ям) | 1Sg | лийынам улмаш | лийын омыл улмаш          |
|            | 2Sg | лийынат улмаш | лийын отыл улмаш          |
|            | 3Sg | лийын улмаш   | лийын огыл улмаш          |
|            | 1Pl | лийынна улмаш | лийын огынал ~ онал улмаш |
|            | 2Pl | лийында улмаш | лийын огыдал ~ одал улмаш |
|            | 3Pl | лийыныт улмаш | лийын огытыл улмаш        |

Шке жапыштыже кочана кугу вуйлатыше  
лийын улмаш.

Back in his day our grandfather was an  
important leader.

Толмына годым те мӱнгыштӱ лийын одал  
улмаш.

When we came, you weren't at home.

### 7.5.5. Future

Mari employs the morphologically present-tense forms of *лияш (-ям)* 'to be; to become' to express the future of 'to be' (i.e., 'will be'). Both the positive and negative forms are formed by regular means (see 7.1.1.1 – page 201).

|     | Positive | Negative        |
|-----|----------|-----------------|
| 1Sg | лиям     | ом лий          |
| 2Sg | лият     | от лий          |
| 3Sg | лиеш     | огеш ~ ок лий   |
| 1Pl | лийына   | огына ~ она лий |
| 2Pl | лийыда   | огыда ~ ода лий |
| 3Pl | лийыт    | огыт лий        |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Алло, мый пробкышто шогем, ик шагат гыч веле пашаште <u>лиям</u> . | Hello, I'm stuck in a traffic jam, <u>I will</u> only be at work in an hour. |
| Кушкын шумеке, тый кө <u>лият</u> ?                                | What <u>will you be</u> when you grow up?                                    |
| Максим лўмлё йылмызе <u>лиеш</u> , шонем.                          | I think Maksim <u>will be</u> a famous linguist.                             |
| Марина Садован ик муржо «Пырля <u>она лий</u> нигунам» маналтеш.   | One song of Marina Sadova's is called "We <u>will never be</u> together".    |

7.180. Put these present-tense sentences into the future.

1. Мый президент омыл.
2. Нине пөрт-влак олаште эн кўкшö улыт.
3. Тый лекцийыште улат мо?
4. Тиде теме неле огыл.
5. Ме тиде унагудын озаже улына.
6. Киношко пырля мияш йолташем тореш огыл.
7. Мый 27 ияш улам
8. Те журналист улыда?
9. Ме миллионер онал.
10. Тўнö шокшо.

### 7.5.6. Imperative

In the imperative (see 7.1.2 – page 233) only the forms of *лияш* (-ям), positive and negative, are used. They are formed by regular means.

|            | Positive | Negative  |
|------------|----------|-----------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | -        | -         |
| <b>2Sg</b> | лий      | ит лий    |
| <b>3Sg</b> | лийже    | ынже лий  |
| <b>1Pl</b> | -        | -         |
| <b>2Pl</b> | лийза    | ида лий   |
| <b>3Pl</b> | лийышт   | ынышт лий |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Таза, кужу ўмыран <u>лийза</u> !             | <u>Be</u> healthy and <u>have</u> a long life! |
| Корныда пиалан <u>лийже</u> !                | <u>Have</u> a nice trip!                       |
| Кайымыда годым чарак-влак ынышт <u>лий</u> ! | <u>May there be no</u> obstacles on your path! |
| Пессимист <u>ит лий</u> !                    | <u>Don't be</u> a pessimist!                   |

Note the frequent usage of *лийже* 'may (it) be' in greetings, etc.

|                         |               |
|-------------------------|---------------|
| Салам <u>лийже</u> !    | Hello!        |
| Поро кас <u>лийже</u> ! | Good evening! |
| Тау <u>лийже</u> !      | Thank you!    |
| Перкан <u>лийже</u> !   | Bon appetite! |

### 7.5.7. Desiderative

In the desiderative (see 7.1.3 – page 242) only the forms of *лияш* (-ям), positive and negative, are used. They are formed by regular means. Past-tense forms are also possible.

|         |     | Positive      | Negative        |
|---------|-----|---------------|-----------------|
| Present | 1Sg | лийнем        | ынем лий        |
|         | 2Sg | лийнет        | ынет лий        |
|         | 3Sg | лийнеже       | ынеж лий        |
|         | 1Pl | лийнена       | ынена лий       |
|         | 2Pl | лийнеда       | ынеда лий       |
|         | 3Pl | лийнешт       | ынешт лий       |
| Past I  | 1Sg | лийнем ыле    | ынем лий ыле    |
|         | 2Sg | лийнет ыле    | ынет лий ыле    |
|         | 3Sg | лийнеже ыле   | ынеж лий ыле    |
|         | 1Pl | лийнена ыле   | ынена лий ыле   |
|         | 2Pl | лийнеда ыле   | ынеда лий ыле   |
|         | 3Pl | лийнешт ыле   | ынешт лий ыле   |
| Past II | 1Sg | лийнем улмаш  | ынем лий улмаш  |
|         | 2Sg | лийнет улмаш  | ынет лий улмаш  |
|         | 3Sg | лийнеже улмаш | ынеж лий улмаш  |
|         | 1Pl | лийнена улмаш | ынена лий улмаш |
|         | 2Pl | лийнеда улмаш | ынеда лий улмаш |
|         | 3Pl | лийнешт улмаш | ынешт лий улмаш |

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Кумдан палыме йылмызе <u>лийнет</u> мо?  | Do you <u>want to be</u> a widely-known linguist?   |
| Шымлызе <u>ынеда лий</u> мо?   | Don't you <u>want to be</u> a researcher?   |
| Изина годым изам дене Шварценеггер гай <u>виян лийнена ыле</u> .                     | When we were little, my big brother and I <u>wanted to be</u> as strong as Schwarzenegger.    |
| Туныктышо нигунам <u>ынем лий ыле</u> , но <u>ынде</u> визымше ий школышто туныктем. | I never <u>wanted to be</u> a teacher, but now I've been teaching at a school for five years. |
| Изиж годым принцессе Диана балерине <u>лийнеже улмаш</u> .                           | When she was young, Princess Diana <u>wanted to become</u> a ballerina, it turned out.        |
| Ивановмыт мемнан дене пырля ик <u>пöртыштö ынешт лий улмаш</u> .                     | <u>It turned out</u> the Ivanovs <u>didn't want to be</u> in a house with us.                 |

### 7.5.8. Non-finite forms

As a rule, non-finite forms (see 7.2 – page 250) of *лияш* (-ям) are more widely used than those of *улаш* (-ам). The following table shows which forms can be attested, with gaps signifying forms that are not used:

|                                | улаш (-ам) | лияш (-ям) |
|--------------------------------|------------|------------|
| Infinitive                     | улаш       | лияш       |
| Necessitive Infinitive         | -          | лийман     |
| Active Participle              | улшо       | лийше      |
| Passive Participle             | улмо       | лийме      |
| Future-Necessitive Participle  | -          | лийшаш     |
| Negative Participle            | -          | лийдыме    |
| Affirmative Instructive Gerund | -          | лийын      |
| Negative Gerund                | улде       | лийде      |
| Gerund of Prior Action         | -          | лиймек(е)  |
| Gerund of Future Action        | -          | лиймеш(ке) |
| Gerund of Simultaneous Action  | -          | лийшыла    |
| Nominalizer                    | улмаш      | лиймаш     |
| Negative Nominalizer           | -          | лийдымаш   |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Суртышто <u>улно</u> тошто арверым тоштерыш поген пуэнна. | We collected the old items ( <u>being</u> ) in the house and gave them to a museum. |
| Яра жапем <u>улмо</u> годым сүретлаш йöратем.             | When I <u>have</u> free time, I like to draw.                                       |
| Корным вончымо годым тўткө <u>лийман</u> .                | When crossing the road, one <u>must be</u> careful                                  |
| Теле тений йўштö <u>лийшаш</u> .                          | Winter <u>should be</u> cold this year.   |
| Латкандаш ияш <u>лиймеке</u> , Эчук Москошко илаш куснен. | When <u>he turned</u> eighteen, Echuk moved to Moscow.                              |
| Коктын <u>лиймаште</u> корно кўчыкракла чучеш.            | <u>When there are</u> two people, a trip feels shorter.                             |

### 7.5.9. Existential clauses

Present tense: Sentences of existence primarily occur in the third person and are used to express that something or someone exists (existed, will exist) or does (did, will) not exist. Some special forms are used here in contrast to non-existential usages of 'to be': *уло* 'there is', *уке* 'there is not', *улым* 'there are', *уке улым* 'there are not'.

|                       |                         |
|-----------------------|-------------------------|
| Юмо уло.              | There is a god.         |
| Юмо уке.              | There is no god.        |
| Клиент-влак улыт.     | There are customers.    |
| Клиент-влак уке улыт. | There are no customers. |

Existential constructions in other persons are rare, but possible. In these cases, the various (morphologically positive) forms of *улаш* (-ам) follow *уке*.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Фейсбукушто мый <u>уке улам</u> .                     | I <u>am not</u> on Facebook.  |
| Кушто ме <u>уке улына</u> , тушто эре сай. (Калыкмут) | Where <u>we are not</u> , it is always good. (→ The grass is always greener on the other side.) |

Future tense: Regular forms of *лияш* (-ям), positive and negative, can be used in reference to future existence or non-existence:

|             |                          |
|-------------|--------------------------|
| Сар лиеш.   | There will be a war.     |
| Сар ок лий. | There will not be a war. |

One can, however, also encounter morphologically positive forms of *лияш* (-ям) following *уке*, as an alternative method of negation. In contrast to the regular forms (where *лияш* (-ям) is negated by a negation verb), the forms using *уке* stress the complete absence, non-existence or disappearance of a concept.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Айдеме уке лиеш</u> , но поро пашаже курымешлан кодеш.      | A person <u>ceases to exist</u> , but his/her good deeds remain forever.                        |
| <u>Ялнаже</u> эркын йомеш, коло ий гыч <u>укеат лиеш дыр</u> . | Our village is slowly disappearing, in twenty years it probably <u>will not exist anymore</u> . |
| <u>Уке лиям</u> гын, мыйым ит мондо.                           | Don't forget me when <u>I'm gone</u> .  |
| <u>Ме уке лийына</u> гын, кө тыланда полшаш тўңалеш?           | Who will help you <u>when we are gone</u> ?   |

#### Simple past I:

Both forms of *улаш* (-ам) and *лияш* (-ям) can be used in the simple past tense I in existential clauses. While forms of *улаш* (-ам) more indicates a stability of state ('there was'), forms of *лияш* (-ям) more indicate a change of state ('it happened; it came to be').

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Йошкар-Олаште Сомбатхей микрорайон олмышто ончыч <u>куп ыле</u> . | There <u>used to be a swamp</u> where the district Szombathely of Yoshkar-Ola is now. |
| У паша верым муаш <u>нелылык уке ыле</u> .                        | <u>There was no problem</u> finding a new job.  |
| Вучыдымын Индийышке миен толаш <u>йөн лие</u> .                   | Suddenly <u>a possibility arose</u> to go to India.                                   |
| <u>Уке лийыч</u> , шерге йолташем, но шўмыштем кодат эрелан.      | <u>You are no more</u> , my dear friend, but you will forever remain in my heart.     |
| Туныктышына черланен, садлан <u>марий йымле урок ыш лий</u> .     | Our teacher fell ill, so <u>there was no Mari class</u> .                             |

### Simple past II:

As in copulative usage (see 7.5.3 – page 297), only *лияш (-ям)* is generally used in the simple past II, as well as the irregular form *улмаш* ‘was’ in the third person singular. Here too, the usage of *улмаш* implies second-hand information, circumstances that were not directly observed, things that happened in the distant past, etc. As in the future tense, *лияш (-ям)* can be negated by regular means, or by placing the particle *уке* after morphologically positive forms of the verb. The forms using *уке* again stress the complete absence, non-existence or disappearance of a concept.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Чарла Кремль олмышто 2009-ше ий марте <u>парк лийын</u> .   | At the spot of the Charla Kremlin, <u>there was a park</u> till 2009.                                   |
| Ожно Аламнер курыкышто <u>карман улмаш</u> .  | There <u>used be a fortress</u> on the mountain Alamner.  |
| Мемнан жапыште оласе школаште <u>марий йылме урок лийын огыл</u> .                                    | In our days, <u>there were no Mari classes</u> in city schools.   |
| Ик ий ончыч сай йолташна, кужу жап черланен кийымеке, <u>уке лийын</u> .                              | A year ago, our dear friend <u>passed away</u> after a long illness.                                    |
| Ожно марий-влак гармоньым шоктен огытыл: <u>тыгай семўзгар</u> марий-влак коклаште <u>уке улмаш</u> . | The Mari didn’t play the accordion in the old days: <u>there was no such instrument</u> among the Mari. |
| Оля коча-коважым шарналта: « <u>Уке лийында</u> , да чонемлан йокрок чучеш».                          | Olya remembers her grandparents: “ <u>You passed on</u> , and my soul yearns for you.”                  |

**Non-finite forms:** The particle *уке* is used in combination with infinite forms – infinitives, participles, gerunds, nominalizations – to create non-finite verbal forms referring to non-existence.

|                   |                             |
|-------------------|-----------------------------|
| уке лияш (-ям)    | to be absent                |
| уке лийше         | absent                      |
| уке лиймет годым  | in your absence             |
| ачана уке лиймеке | once our father was no more |
| уке лиймаш        | absence                     |

**Locational existential sentences:** Sentences denoting the existence or absence of something in a specific location, are formed in an analogous fashion.

|                               |   |
|-------------------------------|---|
| Ялыште <u>памаш уло</u> .     | There <u>is a spring</u> in the village.            |
| Ялыште <u>памаш уке</u> .     | There <u>is no spring</u> in the village.           |
| Ялыште <u>пайрем лиеш</u> .   | There <u>will be a celebration</u> in the village.  |
| Ялыште <u>пайрем ок лий</u> . | There <u>will be no celebration</u> in the village. |

Especially in combination with numerals and other quantifiers, the form *уло* is in practice frequently omitted: *Йошкар-Олаште мыняр театр?* ‘How many theaters are there in Yoshkar-Ola?’.

To summarize, third-person singular forms are:



|                | Positive               | Negative   |
|----------------|------------------------|--|
| <b>Present</b> | уло                    | уке  |
| <b>Future</b>  | лиеш                   | огеш ~ ок лий, уке лиеш                                    |
| <b>Past</b>    | ыле, лие, лийын, улмаш | лийын огыл, ыш лий, уке лийын, уке ыле, уке лие, уке улмаш |

### 7.5.10. Locational sentences

Such constructions can occur in all persons. When inflected in the present tense, the verb *улаш* (-ам) denotes the present tense and *лияш* (-ям) the future. In the third person singular present, the form *уло* is optional. The negation follows the normal pattern for 'to be' as shown in 7.5.1 – page 295: *омыл*, etc.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ме чодыраште <u>улына</u> .              | <u>We are</u> in the forest.                   |
| Ме чодыраште <u>онал</u> .               | <u>We are not</u> in the forest.               |
| Мый концертыште <u>лиям</u> .            | <u>I will be at</u> the concert.               |
| Мый концертыште <u>ом лий</u> .          | <u>I will not be</u> at the concert.           |
| Шинчалыкем вес сумкаште.                 | My glasses <u>are</u> in the other bag.        |
| Шинчалыкем вес сумкаште <u>огыл</u> .    | My glasses <u>are not</u> in the other bag.    |
| Йоча-влак школышто <u>улыт</u> .         | The children <u>are</u> at school.             |
| Йоча-влак школышто <u>огытыл</u> .       | The children <u>are not</u> at school.         |
| Турист-влак унагудышто <u>лийыт</u> .    | The tourists <u>will be</u> at the hostel.     |
| Турист-влак унагудышто <u>огыт лий</u> . | The tourists <u>will not be</u> at the hostel. |

7.181. Answer the following questions, using the word or phrase given in parentheses.

1. Ик арня гыч те кушто лийыда? (Канар отро)
2. Йолташет-влак эрла кушто лийыт? (Озан)
3. Авай, шӧр кушто? (холодильник)
4. «Орӱен мелна» спектакль кушто лиеш? (Шкетан театр)
5. Эргым, тый кызыт кушто улат? (кевыт)
6. Уна-влакна кушто улыт? (метро)
7. Йомдаренна тендам, кушто улыда? (ала-могай пасу)
8. Нелеш ида нал, мый кушто улам? (Петров урем)
9. Марина, таче кастене тый кушто лият? (мӧнгӧ)
10. Ме кушто улына? (Марий Элын эн сӧрал верже)

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ме чодыраште <u>ылына/лийынна</u> .                        | <u>We were</u> in the forest.                |
| Ме чодыраште <u>ышна лий/лийын онал</u> .                  | <u>We were not</u> in the forest.            |
| Мый концертыште <u>ылым/лийынам</u> .                      | <u>I was</u> at the concert.                 |
| Мый концертыште шым <u>лий/лийын омыл</u> .                | <u>I was not</u> at the concert.             |
| Шинчалыкем вес сумкаште <u>ыле/лийын</u> .                 | My glasses <u>were</u> in the other bag.     |
| Шинчалыкем вес сумкаште <u>уке ыле/ыш лий/лийын огыл</u> . | My glasses <u>were not</u> in the other bag. |
| Йоча-влак школышто <u>ылыч/лийыныт</u> .                   | The children <u>were</u> at school.          |
| Йоча-влак школышто <u>уке ылыч/ышт лий/лийын огытыл</u> .  | The children <u>were not</u> at school.      |

### 7.5.11. Predicative possession ('to have')

Mari has no verb meaning *to have*. The following construction is used instead: 1) possessor word (noun/pronoun) in the genitive, 2) the possessed word with the appropriate possessive suffix,

and 3) a form of the verb of the verb of being. These forms are shown in the table below and are the existential forms discussed in 7.5.9 – page 303.

|                | Positive               | Negative   |
|----------------|------------------------|--|
| <b>Present</b> | уло                    | уке  |
| <b>Future</b>  | лиеш                   | огеш ~ ок лий, уке лиеш                                    |
| <b>Past</b>    | ыле, лие, лийын, улмаш | лийын огыл, ыш лий, уке лийын, уке ыле, уке лие, уке улмаш |

**Possessor = Noun:** If the possessor is a noun, it is in the genitive. The possessed is then generally marked with an appropriate possessive suffix: third person singular or plural. The possessive suffix is omitted on occasion, but this is comparatively uncommon, and not accepted by prescriptive grammarians.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Мишан <u>машина(же)</u> уло.                  | Misha <u>has</u> a car.                  |
| Мишан <u>машина(же)</u> уке.                  | Misha <u>does not have</u> a car.        |
| Мишан <u>у машина(же)</u> лиеш.               | Misha will <u>have</u> a new car.        |
| Мишан <u>у машина(же)</u> ок лий.             | Misha will not <u>have</u> a new car.    |
| Пошкудем-влакын <u>машина(шт)</u> уло.        | My neighbors <u>have</u> a car.          |
| Пошкудем-влакын <u>машина(шт)</u> уке.        | My neighbors <u>do not have</u> a car.   |
| Пошкудем-влакын <u>у машина(шт)</u> лиеш.     | My neighbors <u>will have</u> a car.     |
| Пошкудем-влакын <u>у машина(шт)</u> ок лий.   | My neighbors <u>will not have</u> a car. |
| Пошкудем-влакын <u>машина(шт)</u> лийын.      | My neighbors <u>had</u> a car.           |
| Пошкудем-влакын <u>машина(шт)</u> лийын огыл. | My neighbors <u>did not have</u> a car.  |

**Possessor = Pronoun:** If the possessor is a pronoun, there are three possibilities: 1) the possessed is marked with a possessive suffix and the personal pronoun is omitted, 2) the possessed is marked with a possessive suffix and the personal pronoun is used in the genitive, or 3) no possessive suffix is attached to the possessed, but the personal pronoun is used in the genitive. The last variant is comparatively uncommon, and not accepted by prescriptive grammarians.

|                     |                         |
|---------------------|-------------------------|
| Эргышт уло.         | They have a son.        |
| Эргышт уке.         | They do not have son.   |
| Мыйын йочам лиеш.   | I'll have a baby.       |
| Мыйын йочам ок лий. | I will not have a baby. |
| Мыйын олма уло.     | I have an apple.        |
| Мыйын олма уке.     | I don't have an apple.  |

7.182. Who will have (nor not have) what when? Form sentences of possession from: possessor, possessed item, tense, polarity (positive/negative).

1. Ме, каныш, future, negative
2. Кокам, шуко груша, present, positive
3. Нуно, кумыл, past, negative
4. Мый, кок ака, present, positive
5. Те, сай туныктышо, past, positive
6. Йоча-влак, у компьютер, future, positive
7. Юля, окса, present, negative
8. Имне-влак, вий, past, negative
9. Тый, яра жап, present, negative
10. Тудо, экзамен, future, positive

## 8. Adverbs

### 8.0. General remarks

Adverbs are words that typically modify a verb, but can in addition modify other parts of speech as well (adjectives, other adverbs, etc.). They can be considered to be a highly heterogeneous class of words, both in their formation and in their functions.

Formation: Many adverbs cannot be analyzed or segmented morphologically (e.g., *вапа* 'then, later', *арам* 'in vain'). In the case of others, formational affixes can be distinguished. These can be (productive or non-productive) case suffixes (e.g., *телым* 'in winter' ← *теле* 'winter' + accusative suffix, *йымалне* 'at the bottom' ← *йымал* 'bottom' + *-не* '(unproductive) locative suffix') or one of various other suffixes (e.g., *менгечсек* 'since yesterday' ← *менгече* 'yesterday' + adverbial suffix *-сек*). More details are given below and in 8.2.2 – page 315.

Function: As regards their function and meaning, adverbs can be divided into several classes. It should be noted that for every language there are various possibilities for their classification. As the purpose of this learner's grammar is a practical, rather than a theoretical one, only the following categories will be differentiated: temporal adverbs (adverbs of time), spatial adverbs (adverbs of place), and modal adverbs (adverbs of manner and extent). This latter category (modal adverbs) will be treated as a catch-all group encompassing adverbs with a wide range of meanings.

Comparison: Many adverbs, particularly (but not exclusively) the modal adverbs are subject to comparison and can be used in the comparative and superlative degrees as adjectives can; the comparative and superlative degrees are formed by the same general mechanisms (see 3.2 – page 101).

Adverbial pronoun: A group distinct from the adverb classes mentioned above are those of a pronominal nature, comprising the interrogative, indefinite, and negative adverbs (e.g., *кунам* 'when', *ала-кунам* 'sometime', *нигунам* 'never'). For practical reasons these will be treated in the chapter on pronouns, see 5.7 – page 152.

Descriptive Words: The so-called descriptive words of an onomatopoetic nature will also be briefly treated at the end of this chapter. They imitate various acoustic, visual, and emotive phenomena.

### 8.1. Temporal adverbs

Answering the question *кунам* 'when', adverbs of time can indicate specific points in time (e.g., *эрла* 'tomorrow', *кызыт* 'now') or express references of a more indeterminate nature (*тунам* 'then', *ожно* 'once, before'). Here are some of the more common temporal adverbs:

|          |                          |
|----------|--------------------------|
| але      | still                    |
| вара     | then, late               |
| вашке    | soon, early              |
| вескана  | next time, another time  |
| икана    | once, one day            |
| икече    | recently, not long ago   |
| кастене  | in the evening           |
| коклан   | sometimes                |
| кумышто  | the day after tomorrow   |
| кызыт    | now                      |
| нигунам  | never                    |
| ончыгече | the day before yesterday |
| ончыч    | first, earlier           |
| ожно     | once, before             |
| таче     | today                    |
| тегак    | in future, again         |
| тений    | this year                |
| тенгече  | yesterday                |
| тетла    | any more, in future      |
| ўмаште   | last year                |
| шаңге    | recently, not long ago   |
| чўчкыдын | frequently               |
| шукерте  | long ago                 |
| шуэн     | rarely, seldom           |
| ынде     | now                      |
| южгунам  | sometimes, now and then  |
| эр       | early                    |
| эрдене   | in the morning           |
| эрла     | tomorrow                 |
| эре      | always                   |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Кызыт</u> ме тунемына, а <u>вара</u> канаш каена.      | <u>Now</u> we are studying, later we'll go and relax.                     |
| <u>Ончыгече</u> мемнан университетыште конференций лийын. | <u>The day before yesterday</u> there was a conference at our university. |
| Те <u>эрла</u> кушко кудалаш шонеда?                      | Where are you planning to go <u>tomorrow</u> ?                            |
| Акаммыт мемнан деке пеш <u>шуэн</u> унала толыт.          | My elder sister and her family very <u>rarely</u> visit us.               |
| Тетла тыге <u>нигунам</u> ит ыште!                        | <u>Never</u> do this again!   |

8.1. Insert the appropriate adverb. The options are given below.

1. ... ме марла начарын умыленна, а кызыт пеш сайын.
2. ... Шкетан театрыште у спектакльым ончыктеныт.
3. Марий Элыште лум ... шулен огыл.
4. Эн сай йолташем дене ... вашлийына.
5. ... мый эр кочкышым ом коч, кофем гына йўам.

(але, эрдене, ончыч, чўчкыдын, тенгече)

6. Спортым мый пешыжак ом йӧрате: ... веле паркышке куржталаш лектам.
7. ... марий йылме дене тестым возена. Ямдылалташ кок кече веле уло.
8. Айда таче ... але киношко, але концертышке каена!
9. Яллаште пеш ... кыненыт: ныл-вич шагатлан.
10. ... кенгеж толеш.

(эр, кастене, вашке, южгунам, кумышто)

**Temporal Adverbs formed with case suffixes:** The following cases are used to form temporal expressions of different sorts. They were discussed in the sections covering the cases in question.

- accusative (see 2.4.2 – page 71), especially in combination with seasons and times of day, e.g., *теле* 'winter' → *телым* 'in winter', *кечывал* 'noon' → *кечывалым* 'at noon'.
- The inessive (see 2.4.5 – page 82), especially in combinations with months and concrete units of time ('day', 'week', 'year'), e.g., *январь* 'January' → *январьыште* 'in January', *кече* 'day' → *кечыште* 'on (a) day'.
- The dative (see 2.4.4 – page 2.4.4), especially when denoting temporal limits and concrete time periods over which something happens, e.g., *таче* 'today' → *тачалан* 'for today'.

Numerous temporal adverbs are formed by the instructive suffix *-н*, which is formally identical to the genitive in contemporary Mari: *шочмо* 'Monday' → *шочмын* '(on) Monday'. These are discussed below. For a discussion on which suffixes are used in references to dates, years, seasons, etc., see 4.7 – page 120.

### 8.1.1. Derivation of temporal adverbs

Three common derivational suffixes used to form temporal adverbs are *-н*, *-нек* [-*nek*], and *-сек*.

#### 8.1.1.1. *-н*

When the adverbial suffix *-н* (see 8.4.1 – page 319) is attached to nouns, the resulting adverbs are used as expressions of time. They are consistently used with the days of the week:

|           |           |            |              |
|-----------|-----------|------------|--------------|
| шочмо     | Monday    | шочмын     | on Monday    |
| кушкыжмо  | Tuesday   | кушкыжмын  | on Tuesday   |
| вўргече   | Wednesday | вўргечын   | on Wednesday |
| изарня    | Thursday  | изарнян    | on Thursday  |
| кугарня   | Friday    | кугарнян   | on Friday    |
| шуматкече | Saturday  | шуматкечын | on Saturday  |
| рушарня   | Sunday    | рушарнян   | on Sunday    |

These adverbials are also used in reference to concrete units of time ('day', 'week', 'month'), though the inessive (see above) can be used here as well:

|      |      |                           |                |
|------|------|---------------------------|----------------|
| кече | day  | тиде кечын ~ тиде кечыште | on this day    |
| ий   | year | тиде ийын ~ тиде ийыште   | (in) this year |
| арня | week | тиде арнян ~ тиде арняште | (in) this week |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Шошым</u> мланде паша тўнгалеш                                 | <u>In spring</u> field work begins.   |
| <u>Май да июнь</u> тылзылаште марий мландыште шуко кумалтыш эрта. | Many prayer ceremonies take place <u>in May and June</u> in the Mari lands. |
| <u>Вес арнялан</u> тендан могай план? Мом ыштышаш улыда?          | What plans do you have <u>for next week</u> ? What do you have to do?       |
| <u>Кугарнян</u> шуко студент ялыш кудалеш.                        | Many students go to the countryside <u>on Friday</u> .                      |

8.2. Insert the appropriate adverb. The options are given below.

1. Тиде ... июльышто йолташем-влак дене пырля Карелийышке кок арнялан кудалаш шонена.
2. ... мом кочкаш ыштена: шўрым але подкогыльым?
3. ... вўргечын онгай футбол матч лиеш. Айда тудым стадионышто ончена!
4. Тыят вет ... пашам от ыште? Айда Юл серыште пикникым ыштена!
5. Таче ... нимынярат мален шым керт: пошкудем дене адак дискотеке лийын.

(каслан, йўдым, рушарнян, тиде арняште, кенгежым)

#### 8.1.1.2. -нек [-nek]

This suffix is used to derive adverbs from adjectives with the meaning 'when (still) ...'. It is especially used in conjunction with temporary, transitory properties, indicating that something occurred before the quality in question disappeared.

|         |                  |            |  |
|---------|------------------|------------|--|
| волгыдо | light            | волгыдынек | when (still) light                     |
| иле     | damp; green; raw | иленек     | when (still) alive/damp/raw            |
| илыше   | alive            | илышынек   | when (still) alive                     |
| кукшо   | dry              | кукшынек   | when (still) dry                       |
| кўчымō  | raw              | кўчымынек  | when (still) raw                       |
| ночко   | wet              | ночкынек   | when (still) wet                       |
| свежа   | fresh            | свежанек   | when (still) fresh                     |
| ужарге  | green            | ужаргынек  | when (still) green                     |
| чара    | bare, naked      | чаранек    | (when) naked                           |
| чонан   | alive            | чонаннек   | when (still) alive                     |
| чумыраш | round            | чумырашнек | when (still) round, when (still) whole |
| шокшо   | hot              | шокшынек   | when (still) hot                       |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Команмелнам <u>шокшынек</u> кочман.                          | You should eat komanmelinas (layered pancakes) <u>when they're still warm</u> .        |
| Мўрым <u>свежанек</u> веле ужалаш лиеш.                      | One can only sell strawberries <u>fresh</u> .  |
| Олмажым <u>ужаргынек</u> молан кочкат? Эше тамле огылыс.     | Why are you eating the apples <u>when they're still green</u> ? They're not tasty yet. |
| Корныш <u>волгыдынек</u> лекман.                             | (We) should get going <u>when it's still light</u> .                                   |
| Вургем кошкымым вучаш жап уке: <u>ночкынек</u> чияш логалеш. | No time to let the clothes dry: (we've) got to put them on <u>wet</u> .                |

In addition, -нек is coupled with some adjectives to create adverbs with the meaning 'since ..., from ...'.

|         |                  |            |                                  |
|---------|------------------|------------|----------------------------------|
| водо    | evening          | водынек    | since evening                    |
| изи     | small, little    | изинек     | from childhood                   |
| рвезе   | young man; young | рвезынек   | from one's youth                 |
| самырык | young            | самырыкнек | from childhood, from one's youth |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Эргым <u>изинек</u> лудаш йōратен.        | My son has loved to read <u>ever since he was a child</u> .       |
| <u>Самырыкнек</u> фотосўретче лийнем ыле. | I wanted to become a photographer <u>ever since I was young</u> . |

8.3. Insert the appropriate adverb in *-нек*, derived from the adjectives given below.

1. Аня школ сумкам ... поген ямдыла.
2. Ме Йыван дене ... йолташ улына.
3. Понгым ... кочкаш ок йөрө.
4. Тиде десерт ... веле тамле.
5. Шудым ... солен шуктыман.

(күчымö, кукшо, йүштö, водо, изи)

The suffix *-нек* can also be attached to quantifiers and some nouns to create adverbs with the meaning 'all ...', 'the whole ...': *ныл* 'four' → *нылынек* 'all four', *ора* 'heap, pile' → *оранек* 'wholly, completely'. As regards this usage, see 4.7 – page 120.

#### 8.1.1.3. *-сек*

This suffix can be added to a few words with a temporal meaning to indicate the beginning of something, i.e., answering the question *кунамсек* 'since when, how long'. The most important formations are listed below.

|           |                             |              |   |
|-----------|-----------------------------|--------------|---|
| водно     | yesterday evening           | воднысек     | since yesterday evening                   |
| икече     | the last time; not long ago | икечсек      | since the last time;<br>for a long time   |
| кечывалым | at noon                     | кечывалымсек | since noon                                |
| ожно      | earlier, long ago           | ожнысек      | from olden times                          |
| тенгече   | yesterday                   | тенгечсек    | since yesterday                           |
| тока      | recently, lately            | токасек      | for a long time,<br>for some time already |
| тунам     | then                        | тунамсек     | since then                                |
| ўмаште    | last year                   | ўмашсек      | since last year                           |
| шанге     | recently, not long ago      | шангысек     | since long ago                            |
| шукерте   | long ago                    | шукертсек    | for a long time                           |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Валя аважын толмыжым <u>воднысек</u> вуча.  | Valya has been waiting for her mother to come <u>since yesterday evening</u> .                           |
| Тый декет пураш <u>икечсек</u> шоненам.   | I've been thinking of visiting you <u>for a long time</u> .  |
| Тыге ышташ күлеш манын, <u>токасек</u> тыланда ойлена.                                      | We've been telling you <u>for some time already</u> that it must be done like this.                      |
| Ўмаште фирмыштына у директор пашам ышташ тўнгалын. <u>Тунамсек</u> парышна эре кугем толеш. | Last year a new director started working in our company. Our revenue has been rising <u>since then</u> . |
| Марий-влак <u>ожнысек</u> мўкшым онченит.   | Maris have been keeping bees <u>from olden times</u> .   |

Regarding the postposition *годсек* 'since', e.g., *эр годсек* 'since morning', see 6.1.12 – page 168.

8.4. Insert the appropriate adverb in -сек, derived from the words given below.

1. Одо йылмым тунемаш ... шоненам, но эре жапем лийын огыл.
2. Алло, Верук! Кунам толат? Тыйым тыште ... уна вуча.
3. Тений машинам налаш шонем: ик ий наре, ..., оксам погем.
4. Кугезе-влакеш ... тиде ялыште иленит.
5. Йӱр кокымшо кече, ..., йӱреш.

(ожно, тенгече, ӱмаште, шанге, шукерте)

## 8.2. Spatial adverbs

### 8.2.1. Non-compound spatial adverbs

Three-part directional system: It is typical for the Mari adverbs of space that their great majority can roughly be classified into a three-part directional system indicating 'motion toward', 'no motion', and 'motion away from'. Thus, they answer the following questions:

|           |       |                  |
|-----------|-------|------------------|
| куш(ко)   | кушан | motion towards   |
| кушто     |       | no motion        |
| кушеч(ын) |       | motion away from |

Oftentimes these adverbs form 'families' of a sort, with different forms answering to the questions shown above derived from the same stem. The suffixes attached to the stem (in many cases originally a nominal stem) indicate whether 'motion toward', 'no motion', or 'motion away from' is meant. To some extent these suffixes are those used in the normal nominal system (illative *-ш(ке)*, lative *-еш*, inessive *-умЕ*; see 2.4.6 – page 84, 2.4.7 – page 88, 2.4.5 – page 82), complemented by the postposition *гыч* – see 6.1.17 – page 169. In most cases, however, suffixes are used that are no longer productive in nominal declension. One can differentiate between a 'productive row' and 'unproductive row':

| Unproductive row |     | Productive row |     | Directionality   |
|------------------|-----|----------------|-----|------------------|
| -к(Е)            | -ан | -ш(ке)         | -еш | motion towards   |
| -н(Е)            |     | -ште           |     | no motion        |
| -ч(ын)           |     | ... гыч        |     | motion away from |

Note that the suffix *-ан*, like its productive counterpart *-еш*, is used to create lative forms that can indicate 'motion toward' as well as 'no motion'. As regards the usage of lative forms, see 2.4.7 – page 88.

Some families of adverbs of space only use suffixes from the unproductive row, while others only use forms from the productive row, and yet again others use suffixes from both rows. Compare the following three families, where all forms created by suffixes of the unproductive row are shaded in gray:

1. Unproductive row only, e.g., *шенгел* 'back, rear, hind (noun/adjective)' →

|            |          |                 |
|------------|----------|-----------------|
| шенгек(е)  | шенгелан | back, backwards |
| шенгелне   |          | at the back     |
| шенгеч(ын) |          | from the back   |

2. Productive row only, e.g., *тора* 'distance; distant (noun/adjective)' →

|           |      |                   |
|-----------|------|-------------------|
| тораш(ке) | тора | into the distance |
| тораште   |      | in the distance   |
| тора гыч  |      | from the distance |

3. Forms from both rows, e.g., interrogative adverbs:



|           |       |            |
|-----------|-------|------------|
| куш(ко)   | кушан | (to) where |
| кушто     |       | where      |
| кушеч(ын) |       | from where |

**Short and Long Forms:** Numerous adverbs of space formed by suffixes of the unproductive row have short and long forms, e.g., *шенгеч* ~ *шенгечын* 'from behind', *воктен* ~ *воктене* 'beside'. The short and long forms are equivalent in meaning. Note that short forms are not always possible due to the restrictions of pronunciation: for example, there is no short form of the adverb *шенгелне* 'at the back'.

**Adverb ~ Postposition:** Many of the adverbs of space can also be used as postpositions, see 6.2 – page 185.

**List of the Most Common Three-Directional Adverbs of Space:** When these families of adverbs are transparently derived from a nominal stem still in use in contemporary Mari, this stem is provided as well.

|            |          |                        |
|------------|----------|------------------------|
| воктек(е)  | воктелан | beside, next to        |
| воктен(е)  |          | near, next to, beside  |
| воктеч(ын) |          | through, by, via, past |

*йымал* 'bottom, foot, lower part; lower' →

|           |         |                      |
|-----------|---------|----------------------|
| йымак(е)  | йымалан | down, under          |
| йымалне   |         | at the bottom, below |
| йымач(ын) |         | from below           |

*кӧргӧ* 'inside, interior, inner part' →

|            |        |                |
|------------|--------|----------------|
| кӧргыш(кӧ) | кӧргеш | inside, inward |
| кӧргыштӧ   |        | inside, within |
| кӧргӧ гыч  |        | from within    |

|           |       |            |
|-----------|-------|------------|
| кӱш(кӧ)   | кӱшан | upward, up |
| кӱшнӧ     |       | up, above  |
| кӱшыч(ын) |       | from above |

|           |       |                  |
|-----------|-------|------------------|
| лиш(ке)   | лишан | near (to)        |
| лишне     |       | close by, nearby |
| лишыч(ын) |       | from close by    |

*мӱндыр* 'distant, faraway, remote' →

|             |          |                            |
|-------------|----------|----------------------------|
| мӱндырк(ӧ)  | мӱндыран | far off, into the distance |
| мӱндырнӧ    |          | far off, far away          |
| мӱндырч(ын) |          | from afar                  |

*ончыл* 'front (noun, adjective)' →

|                     |         |                 |
|---------------------|---------|-----------------|
| ончык(о)            | ончылан | forward, ahead  |
| ончылно (ончыч(ын)) |         | in front, ahead |
| ончыч(ын)           |         | from the front  |

өрдыж 'side' →

|           |          |                               |
|-----------|----------|-------------------------------|
| өрдыжкө   | өрдыжан, | to the side, aside            |
| өрдыжтө   | өрдыжеш  | at the side, at some distance |
| өрдыж гыч |          | from the side                 |

покшел 'middle, center (noun, adjective)' →

|            |          |                        |
|------------|----------|------------------------|
| покшек(е)  | покшелан | into the middle/center |
| покшелне   |          | in the middle/center   |
| покшеч(ын) |          | from the middle/center |

тора 'distant place, distance; distant, far, remote' →

|           |       |                          |
|-----------|-------|--------------------------|
| тораш(ке) | торан | into the distance, far   |
| тораште   |       | in the distance, afar    |
| тора гыч  |       | from far away, from afar |

тудо ~ ту (pronominal stem, see 5.2.2 – page 139) →

|           |       |            |
|-----------|-------|------------|
| туш(ко)   | тушан | (to) there |
| тушто     |       | there      |
| тушеч(ын) |       | from there |

|           |      |              |
|-----------|------|--------------|
| түгө      | түан | outside, out |
| түнө      |      | out          |
| түгыч(ын) |      | from outside |

тиде ~ ты (pronominal stem, see 5.2.2 – page 139) →

|           |       |            |
|-----------|-------|------------|
| тыш(ке)   | тышан | (to) there |
| тыште     |       | there      |
| тышеч(ын) |       | from there |

шенгел 'backside, back; back, rear, hind' →

|            |          |                 |
|------------|----------|-----------------|
| шенгек(е)  | шенгелан | back, backwards |
| шенгелне   |          | at the back     |
| шенгеч(ын) |          | from behind     |

|          |      |                   |
|----------|------|-------------------|
| ўлык(ө)  | ўлан | downwards, down   |
| ўлнө     |      | below, underneath |
| ўлыч(ын) |      | from below        |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Тудо черле. <u>Воктеке</u> ит мий!                                    | S/he is ill. Don't go <u>close</u> (to him/her)!                         |
| Ме кумшо пачашыште илена, а <u>йымалне</u> эн сай йолташна-влак илат. | We live on the third floor, and our best friends live <u>below</u> (us). |
| <u>Ончылно</u> ял коеш.   | The village lies <u>ahead</u> (of us).                                   |
| <u>Кўшыч</u> сценышке ала-кө розам кудалтен.                          | Somebody threw flowers onto the stage <u>from above</u> .                |

Non-three-directional adverbs of space: While most spatial adverbs form families within the three-directional system presented here, several stand outside of it, e.g., *ваумареш* 'towards, in the opposite direction', *йыр* 'around'.

8.5. Insert the appropriate adverb. The options are given below.

1. ... ончал-ян! Мыняр шўдыр! А тылзыже могай!
2. Мом чияш, ом пале. Кузе шонет, ... йўштö мо?
3. – Ручкам кушто?  
– ... ончал: ўстел йымаке камвозын чай.
4. Машинатым ... шогалте да тышке тол.
5. Могай күкшö пöрт! Тудым эше ... ужынна.

(ўлыкö, күшкö, тўнö, тора гыч, öрдыжеш)

### 8.2.2. Compound spatial adverbs

A fair number of families of adverbs of space within the three-directional system of space are formed through compounding with the elements *-бал/-вал* (← noun *ўмбал* 'surface, outer face'), *-вел* (← noun *вел* 'side; region, area'), and *-йымал* (← noun/adjective *йымал* 'bottom').

In addition to the usage of the suffixes seen above (see 8.2.1 – page 312), many of these compound spatial adverbs also employ an alternative ending in answer to the question 'from where', namely the unproductive separative suffix *-ым*, formally identical with the accusative suffix (see 2.4.2 – page 71). This separative marker is used with the nouns *вел* 'side; region, area' (e.g., *ту велым* 'from that direction'), *могыр* 'body; side, direction' (e.g., *вес могырым* 'from the other direction'), and in compound adverbs of space using *-бал/-вал*, *-вел*, and *-йымал*.

For example, *корно* 'road' → *корнымбал* 'road surface' →

|                            |             |                   |
|----------------------------|-------------|-------------------|
| корнымбак(е)               | корнымбалан | onto the road     |
| корнымбалне                |             | on the road       |
| корнымбач(ын), корнымбалым |             | from/off the road |

Note that adverbs of this type can, in contrast to other adverbs, take possessive suffixes, e.g., *ўстембалне* 'on the table' → *ўстембалнышт* 'on their table'.

A fair number of Mari place names contain these compounding elements, for example *Нурвел* (Russian *Нурбель*), *Ўштымбал* (Russian *Иштымбал*). These place names can also employ these alternative endings: *Нурвелыш(ке)* ~ *Нурвек(е)* 'to Nurvel', *Ўштымбал гыч* ~ *Ўштымбач(ын)* 'from Üshtymbal', etc.

8.2.2.1. Compound spatial adverbs in -бал (-вал)

|                          |                                   |  |
|--------------------------|-----------------------------------|--|
| арка 'hill, mound'       | → аркамбал 'hill, mound'          | → аркамбалне 'on the hill', ...                |
| ваче 'shoulder'          | → вачүмбал 'top of shoulder'      | → вачүмбалне 'on one's shoulders', ...         |
| вүта 'shed, pen, barn'   | → вүтамбал 'hayloft'              | → вүтамбалне 'in the hayloft', ...             |
| йолгопа 'sole'           |                                   | → йолгопавалне 'on one's soles', ...           |
| казна 'bottom of stove'  | → казнамбал 'place under stove'   | → казнамбалне 'under the stove', ...           |
| конга 'stove'            | → конгамбал 'stove bench'         | → конгамбалне 'on the stove bench', ...        |
| корно 'road'             | → корнымбал 'road surface'        | → корнымбалне 'on the road', ...               |
| күвар 'floor'            | → күварвал 'surface of the floor' | → күварвалне 'on the floor', ...               |
| лөка 'sweating shelf'    | → лөкамбал 'sweating shelf'       | → лөкамбалне 'on the sweating shelf', ...      |
| мланде 'land, ground'    | → мландымбал 'surface'            | → мландымбалне 'on the face of the Earth', ... |
| олым 'straw'             | → олымбал 'bench'                 | → олымбалне 'on the bench', ...                |
| оңа 'board'              | → оңамбал 'shelf'                 | → оңамбалне 'on a shelf', ...                  |
|                          | тембал 'close, near'              | → тембалне 'close, nearby', ...                |
|                          | тумбал 'distant, remote'          | → тумбалне 'in the distance, far off', ...     |
|                          | түжвал '(the) outside; outer'     | → түжвалне 'outside', ...                      |
| түня 'world'             | → түнямбал 'face of the Earth'    | → түнямбалне 'in the (whole) world', ...       |
|                          | умбал 'distant, far, remote'      | → умбалне 'at a distance, far away', ...       |
|                          | → үмбал 'top, surface'            | → үмбалне 'on', ...                            |
| үстел 'table'            | → үстембал 'table surface'        | → үстембалне 'on the table', ...               |
| шөлдыра 'sleeping bench' | → шөлдыравал 'sleeping bench'     | → шөлдыравалне 'on a sleeping bench', ...      |

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Черле улат гын, <u>конгамбаке</u> малаш воч. | If you're sick, lie down to sleep <u>on the stove bench</u> . |
| Ала-кушто <u>тембалне</u> пий опта.          | Somewhere <u>in the distance</u> a dog is barking.            |
| Йошкар леведышна <u>умбачын</u> коеш.        | Our red roof can be seen <u>from afar</u> .                   |
| Сумкетым <u>олымбалаң</u> пыштен кодо.       | Leave your bag <u>on the bench</u> .                          |
| <u>Мландываке</u> нарынче лышташ йога.       | Yellow leaves are falling <u>to the ground</u> .              |

8.6. Insert the appropriate adverb. The options are given below.

1. Пиетым ... кодо, пожалуйста: мыйын аллергий.
2. Кө мыйын книгаң ... налын?
3. ... , автобусым вучен, кок ең шога
4. Вучыдымын ... ужар попугай шинчын.
5. ... 7 миллиард утла ең ила.

(үстембачын, түнямбалне, түжвалан, вачүмбаке, корнымбалне)

8.2.2.2. Compound spatial adverbs in -вел

Note the alternative forms that occur in the case of adverbs using this compounding element.

йыр 'around' → йырвел 'area, surroundings' →

|                                    |                    |                |
|------------------------------------|--------------------|----------------|
| йыревек(е), йырвелке, йырвелыш(ке) | йырвелан, йырвелеш | to all sides   |
| йырвелне, йырвелыште               |                    | on all sides   |
| йырвеч(ын), йырвелым               |                    | from all sides |

тудо ~ ту (pronominal stem, see 5.2.2 – page 139) → тувел 'that way' →

|                                |         |                            |
|--------------------------------|---------|----------------------------|
| тувек(е), тувелке, тувелыш(ке) | тувелан | there, in that direction   |
| тувелне, тувелыште             |         | there, over there          |
| тувеч(ын), тувелым             |         | from there, from that side |

*тиде* ~ *ты* (pronominal stem, see 5.2.2 – page 139) → *тывел* ‘this, here’ →

|                                |         |                              |
|--------------------------------|---------|------------------------------|
| тыбек(е), тывелке, тыvelyш(ке) | тывелан | here, towards here, this way |
| тывелне, тыvelyште             |         | here, in this area           |
| тывеч(ын), тыvelyм             |         | from here, in this direction |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Йырвеч</u> кайык муро шокта.                | Bird song can be heard <u>from all sides</u> .                         |
| Айда <u>тувеке</u> каена: тушто снеге шукрыак. | Let’s go <u>in that direction</u> , there are more strawberries there. |
| <u>Тывелне</u> мый ончыч иленам                | I used to live <u>in this area</u> .                                   |

**Cardinal directions:** The cardinal directions are compounded from the times of day (*йүд* ‘night’, *эр* ‘morning’, *кечывал* ‘noon’, *кас* ‘evening’, see 4.9 – page 132) and the word *вел* ‘side, direction, region’ → *йүдвел* ‘north’, *эрвел* ‘east’, *кечывалвел* ‘south’, *каcвел* ‘west’.



‘North’ and ‘south’ have the alternative names *йүдйымал* and *кечывалйымал* respectively, see below in 8.2.2.3 – page 318.

Directionality is marked in the same way as other compound spatial adverbs in *-вел*, though the suffixes of the productive row can be used as well. In the following tables, the preferentially used form is given first, followed by admissible, but less frequent, forms.

*йүдвел* ‘north’ →

|                                   |           |                  |
|-----------------------------------|-----------|------------------|
| йүдvelyш(ке), йүдбек(е), йүдвелке | йүдvelyш, | (into the) north |
| йүдвелне, йүдvelyште              | йүдвелан  | (in the) north   |
| йүдвел гыч, йүдvelyм, йүдвеч(ын)  |           | from the north   |

*эрвел* ‘east’ →

|                                |          |                 |
|--------------------------------|----------|-----------------|
| эрvelyш(ке), эрбек(е), эрвелке | эрvelyш, | (into the) east |
| эрвелне, эрvelyште             | эрвелан  | (in the) east   |
| эрвел гыч, эрvelyм, эрвеч(ын)  |          | from the east   |

*кечывалвел* ‘south’ →

|   |               |                  |
|---|---------------|------------------|
| кечывалvelyш(ке), кечывалбек(е), кечывалвелке | кечывалvelyш, | (into the) south |
| кечывалвелне, кечывалvelyште                  | кечывалвелан  | (in the) south   |
| кечывалвел гыч, кечывалvelyм, кечывалвеч(ын)  |               | from the south   |

*касвел* ‘west’ →

|                                   |           |                 |
|-----------------------------------|-----------|-----------------|
| касvelyш(ке), касбек(е), касвелке | касvelyш, | (into the) west |
| касвелне, касvelyште              | касвелан  | (in the) west   |
| касвел гыч, касvelyм, касвеч(ын)  |           | from the west   |

The intercardinal directions (northwest, etc.) are, as in English, expressed by compound forms. Alternative forms exist, however (given in decreasing frequency):

| Northwest     | Southwest         | Southeast        | Northeast    |
|---------------|-------------------|------------------|--------------|
| йӱдвел-касвел | кечывалвел-касвел | кечывалвел-эрвел | йӱдвел-эрвел |
| касвел-йӱдвел | касвел-кечывалвел | эрвел-кечывалвел | эрвел-йӱдвел |
| йӱд-касвел    | кечывал-касвел    | кечывал-эрвел    | йӱд-эрвел    |
| кас-йӱдвел    | кас-кечывалвел    | эр-кечывалвел    | эр-йӱдвел    |

Adverbs are formed from these nouns by the same mechanisms detailed above: *йӱдвел-касвелне* ~ *касвел-йӱдвелне* ~ *йӱд-касвелне* ~ *кас-йӱдвелне* 'in the northwest', etc.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Кече <u>эрвелне</u> лектеш.   | The sun rises <u>in the east</u> .                                     |
| Шуко палымем <u>йӱдвелыште</u> пашам ышта.                          | Many acquaintances of mine work <u>in the north</u> .                  |
| <u>Касвелышке</u> вич менгым ошкылына гын, турист базыш миен шуына. | If we walk five kilometers <u>west</u> , we'll reach a tourist center. |
| Озаг Йошкар-Ола деч <u>кечывалвел-эрвелне</u> верлана.              | Kazan is <u>to the southeast</u> of Yoshkar-Ola.                       |
| Мардеж <u>йӱдвел-касвелым</u> пуалеш.                               | The wind blows <u>from the northwest</u> .                             |

8.7. Insert the appropriate adverb. The options are given below.

1. Шӱжарем ... илаш кодын.
2. ... мемнан деке антициклон толын.
3. Санкт-Петербург Йошкар-Ола деч ... верлана.
4. Шыжым кайык-влак ... шокшо эллашке чонгештат.
5. Кече ... шинчеш.

(касвелне, кечывалвеке, эрвечын, йӱдвелеш, йӱдвел-касвелне)

### 8.2.2.3. Compound spatial adverbs in -йымал

конгла 'gore, gusset' → конлайымал 'armpit' → конлайымалне 'under one's arm', ...  
 пӧрт 'house' → пӧртийымал 'cellar' → пӧртийымалне 'in the cellar', ...

Also note alternative names for two cardinal directions (see above in 8.2.2.2 – page 316): *йӱдйымал* 'north' (→ *йӱдйымалне* 'in the north', ...), *кечывалйымал* 'south' (→ *кечывалйымалне* 'in the south', ...).

### 8.3. Adverbs pertaining to language in -ла

The stressed adverbial suffix *-ла* (an N-suffix, see 1.6.6 – page 48) is added to words denoting nationalities to form adverbs pertaining to languages. Note the irregular form *марла* '(in) Mari' ← *марий*.

| Noun  |          | Adverb          |               |
|-------|----------|-----------------|---------------|
| руш   | Russian  | руш <u>ла</u>   | (in) Russian  |
| чуваш | Chuvash  | чуваш <u>ла</u> | (in) Chuvash  |
| эстон | Estonian | эстон <u>ла</u> | (in) Estonian |
| немыч | German   | немыч <u>ла</u> | (in) German   |
| уэльс | Welshman | уэльс <u>ла</u> | (in) Welsh    |

These adverbs are typically used with certain verbs, such as *кутыраш (-ем)* 'to speak', *возаш (-ем)* 'to write', *каласаш (-ем)* 'to say, to speak', *йодаш (-ам)* 'to ask', *мураш (-ем)* 'to sing': *марла кутыраш (-ем)* 'to speak (in) Mari', *рушла возаш (-ем)* 'to write (in) Russian'.

|                                      |  |
|--------------------------------------|--|
| Мый <u>курукмарла</u> лудаш тунемам. | I am learning to read <u>Hill Mari</u> . |
| Тый <u>финнла</u> кутырет?           | Do you speak <u>Finnish</u> ?            |
| Мый <u>рушла</u> кутырен ом мошто.   | I can't speak <u>Russian</u> .           |

This suffix can be combined with the illative suffix (see 2.4.6 – page 84), or the postposition *гыч* (see 6.1.17 – page 169), to refer to translations into or from a language.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Мый кызыт <u>марла гыч англичанлашке</u> кусарем.           | I'll translate from Mari into English now.              |
| Тиде предложений <u>рушла гыч марлашке</u> кузе кусаралтеш? | How is this sentence translated from Russian into Mari? |

This suffix is not to be confused with the (unstressed) comparative case suffix *-ла* (see 2.4.8 – page 91), the plural suffix *-ла* (see 2.1.2.3 – page 59), or the clitic *-ла* (see 9.1.4 – page 331).

#### 8.4. Modal adverbs

As mentioned above, due to the nature of this learners' grammar the term modal adverb will be used as a catch-all category for adverbs not of a specific temporal or spatial nature, as a further distinction would not serve any practical purpose. These adverbs answer such questions as *кузе?* 'how', *молан?* 'why, for what reason', *кунар?* 'to what extent'.

In this section the distinction will be made between modal adverbs derived from adjectives with the modal suffix *-н* and those that are not.

##### 8.4.1. Deadjectival modal adverbs in *-н*

Adverbs can be formed from adjectives with the productive adverbial (instructive) suffix in *-н* (Ы-suffix, see 1.6.4 – page 45). These adverbs are formally identical to the genitive (see 2.4.3 – page 74); the historical relationship between these forms is a matter of debate. As regards temporal adverbs formed with this suffix, see 8.1.1.1 – page 309. As regards collective numerals formed with this suffix, see 4.5 – page 117. When attached to verbal stems, this ending forms affirmative instructive gerunds (converbs) (see 7.2.7 – page 267).

When this suffix is attached to adjectives, it is similar in usage to the English suffix *-ly* (e.g., *slow* → *slowly*). It should be noted, though, that it is also used in combination with verbs of perception where English uses morphologically adjectival forms in the position of adverbs, e.g., 'This train looks slow.' (rather than 'slowly').

| Adjective |                 | Adverb           |                         |
|-----------|-----------------|------------------|-------------------------|
| весела    | merry, cheerful | весела <u>н</u>  | merrily, cheerfully     |
| сай       | good            | сай <u>ын</u>    | well                    |
| шокшо     | warm            | шокшы <u>н</u>   | warmly                  |
| пайдале   | useful, helpful | пайдалы <u>н</u> | profitably, efficiently |

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Колышт, тудо могай <u>моторын</u> мур! | Listen how <u>beautifully</u> s/he sings!                    |
| Олмажым мо пеш <u>шергын</u> ужаледа?  | Why are you selling the apples <u>at such a high price</u> ? |
| Поездна <u>писын</u> кудалеш.          | The train is moving <u>rapidly</u> .                         |
| Ава эргыжым <u>порын</u> ончале.       | The mother looked at her son <u>kindly</u> .                 |
| Йолташем дене <u>кужун</u> кутыренна.  | I talked to my friend <u>for a long time</u> .               |

8.8. Form adverbs in *-н* from the following adjectives.

1. йўштö
2. начар
3. кугу
4. шулдо
5. осал
6. кўчык
7. яндар
8. сылне
9. чевер
10. ныжылге

8.9. Form adverbs of the given adjective, and insert them into the sentence.

1. Урокна эре ... эрта. (оңай)
2. Концертлашке кызыт ... коштына. (чўчкыдö)
3. Марина пеш ... куштен мошта. (тале)
4. Тыге ... чиет гын, вашке кылмет. (вичкыж)
5. Ковам дене эре ... кочкам. (тамле)

8.10. Insert the appropriate adverb in *-н* of the adjectives given below.

1. Миклай мыйым ала-молан ок йöрате: эре ... онча.
2. Ончыкто-ян, кидетым ... мушкынат?
3. Йöратымаш нерген мурыжо могай ... шокта!
4. Тыште фруктым пеш ... ужалат.
5. Пеш кужун вашештет, тидым ... каласаш ок лий мо?

(яндар, шулдо, осал, кўчык, ныжылге)

This suffix can also be attached to nouns to form adverbs, though it is less productive in this function, and the meaning of the resulting adverb is less predictable.

| Noun  |                     | Adverb             |                          |
|-------|---------------------|--------------------|--------------------------|
| йол   | foot; leg           | йол <u>ын</u>      | on foot                  |
| йўк   | voice; sound        | йўк <u>ын</u>      | loudly, aloud            |
| кумыл | mood                | кумыл <u>ын</u>    | willingly, gladly        |
| лўм   | name                | лўм <u>ын</u>      | intentionally, knowingly |
| пале  | marking, mark, sign | пал <u>ын</u> (ак) | noticeably, considerably |

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Школышко кандаш менгым <u>йолын</u><br>кошташ верештын. | (I) had to go eight kilometers <u>on foot</u> to school. |
| Тышке <u>лўмын</u> тылат верч тольым.                   | I came here <u>specifically</u> for you.                 |
| <u>Уло кумылын</u> тыланда полшем.                      | I'll <u>gladly</u> help you.                             |

#### 8.4.2. Other modal adverbs

Numerous other adverbs exist that are either not morphologically analyzable (or at least not transparently so), or that are formed by various derivational or compounding processes. In the following a list of some of the more common adverbs belonging to this group are given.



|            |                                   |
|------------|-----------------------------------|
| арам       | in vain, uselessly                |
| арамеш     | in vain, for nothing              |
| вашке      | fast, quickly, soon               |
| изиш       | a bit, a little                   |
| йӧршеш     | totally, fully                    |
| йӧршын     | totally, fully, completely        |
| кенеташте  | instantly, immediately            |
| комдык     | on one's back, face-up            |
| кумык      | face-down, upside down            |
| моткоч     | exceedingly, extremely            |
| пеш        | very, greatly                     |
| поснак     | especially, particularly          |
| путырак    | very, extremely                   |
| пыкше      | barely, hardly                    |
| пырчат     | not at all                        |
| тӱвыт      | completely, totally               |
| тӱргоч     | too much, excessively             |
| укелан     | in vain, for nothing              |
| унала      | on/for a visit                    |
| утларак    | more, to a greater extent; mostly |
| утыжден(е) | too, overly, excessively          |
| утыр       | more and more, increasingly       |
| чот        | very, a lot                       |
| чылт       | completely, totally, utterly      |
| шӧрын      | slantwise, sideways               |
| шыпак      | quietly, softly                   |
| эркын      | softly, calmly                    |
| ялт        | completely, totally               |
| яралан     | unnecessarily, for no reason      |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Тый <u>йӧршын</u> нимат от умыло?         | Don't you understand anything at all?                       |
| Кас велеш пашаште <u>чот</u> ноенам.      | Towards evening I got <u>quite</u> tired.                   |
| <u>Арам</u> ме тудым кок шагат вученна.   | We waited for him/her for two hours <u>in vain</u> .        |
| Тестлан <u>утларак</u> тунемман ыле.      | (I) should have studied <u>more</u> for the test.           |
| Тӱнӧ <u>ялт</u> пычкемыш: ниможат ок кой. | It's <u>completely</u> dark outside, you can't see a thing. |

8.11. Insert the appropriate adverb. The options are given below.

1. Нуно мари́й музыкым колышташ йӧратат, ... Александр Речкинын мурымыжым.
2. Вашлиймына нерген Эчан ... монден: ни толын огыл, ни йынгыртен огыл.
3. Мый кофеман улам: кофем йӱаш ... йӧратем.
4. Экзамен деч ончыч йӱдвошт ... мален омыл.
5. Кызыт ..., 5 минут, канена да умбаке тунемына.

(изиш, моткоч, поснак, чылт, пырчат)

*(to become) more and more ..., much more ...*: The adverbs *утыр* 'more and more' and *утларак* 'more' (especially as *утыр да утыр ~ утларак да утларак* 'more and more') can be used in expressions indicating gradual increases. It should be noted that in many cases where English uses the verb *to become* together with an adjective (e.g., *to become older and older*), Mari can use verbs derived from adjectives by means of the productive translative derivational suffixes *-аң* (see

11.7.2 – page 388) and *-ем* (see 11.7.4 – page 388): *коя* ‘fat’ → *коянаш (-ам)* ‘to become fat’, *сай* ‘good’ → *саемаш (-ам)* ‘to get better, to improve’, etc.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Йыван <u>утыр да утыр шергакан</u> машина дене кудалыштеш. | Yyvan is driving <u>more and more expensive</u> cars.                  |
| Пытартыш кечылаште игече <u>утыр да утыр йӱкшемден</u> .   | In the last few days the weather <u>has become colder and colder</u> . |
| Ййла эртыме семын Вадим <u>утларак да утларак коянын</u> . | As the years went by, Vadim <u>became fatter and fatter</u> .          |

## 8.5. Comparison of adverbs

### 8.5.1. Positive degree

The positive degree of adverbs is not overtly marked, i.e., it is the base form of an adverb. Constructions of equivalency (*as ... as*) can be formed using an adverb, and by marking the object of comparison with the postpositions *гай* (see 6.1.10 – page 167) or *семын* (see 6.1.67 – page 183), or the comparative case suffix *-ла* (see 2.4.8 – page 91). The clitic *-ак* (see 9.1.2 – page 330) can be attached to the postpositions under consideration for the sake of emphasis. As personal pronouns are not inflected in the comparative case, only the postpositions *гай* and *семын* are used when the object of comparison is a personal pronoun.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Йоча <u>изаже гай куштылгын</u> тунемеш. ~<br>Йоча <u>изаже семын куштылгын</u> тунемеш. ~<br>Йоча <u>изажла куштылгын</u> тунемеш. | The child has <u>as easy a time</u> studying <u>as its</u> elder brother. |
| Жапше <u>кайык гай писын</u> чоҥешта. ~<br>Жапше <u>кайык семын писын</u> чоҥешта. ~<br>Жапше <u>кайыкла писын</u> чоҥешта.         | Time flies <u>as quickly as a bird</u> .                                  |
| Эля <u>дыве гай куштылгын</u> кушта. ~<br>Эля <u>дыве семын куштылгын</u> кушта. ~<br>Эля <u>дывыла куштылгын</u> кушта.            | Elya dances <u>as lightly as a butterfly</u> .                            |
| Тендан <u>гай моторын</u> мурен она мошто. ~<br>Тендан <u>семын моторын</u> мурен она мошто.  | We cannot sing <u>as beautifully as you do</u> .                          |
| <u>Нунын гаяк моторын</u> мурена. ~<br><u>Нунын семынак моторын</u> мурена.   | We sing <u>as beautifully as they do</u> .                                |
| Тудо <u>мый гаемак</u> писын куржын. ~<br>Тудо <u>мыйын семынак</u> писын куржын.   | S/he runs <u>as quickly as I do</u> .                                     |

8.12 Rearrange the words to form present-tense sentences, inflecting them where necessary.

1. порын, аважла, мутланаш, ўдыр
2. семын, марла, сайын, Микко, марий-влак, кутыраш
3. Мишук, ошкылаш, нелын, маскала
4. актрисе, лудаш, гай, почеламут, сылнын, Катя
5. рвезе-влак, спортсмен-влак, футболла, чын, гай, модаш, талын, изи

### 8.5.2. Comparative degree

The comparative form of adverbs is formed, just as is the case with adjectives (see 3.2.2 – page 101), with the stressed suffix *-пак*, an N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

While subject to semantic restraints, many temporal and spatial adverbs can be used in the comparative degree with comparison being, however, most typical of modal adverbs. Note that in the case of deadjectival modal adverbs in *-н* (see 8.4.1 – page 319) there are two possible suffix

orderings: a) adverbial ending -н + comparative suffix -пак, or b) comparative suffix -пак + adverbial ending -н. The first ordering is more frequent.

| Positive   |             | Comparative   |                      |
|--|-------------|---|----------------------|
| вашке  | soon, early | вашкерак  | sooner, more quickly |
| тораште  | far off     | тораштырак  | further off          |
| сайын<br>(← сай 'good')                                  | well        | сайынрак ~<br>сайракын                                      | better               |
| шокшын<br>(← шокшо 'warm')                               | warmly      | шокшынрак ~<br>шокшыракын                                   | more warmly          |
| Тиде машина <u>писынрак</u> кудалеш.                     |             | This car goes <u>faster</u> .                               |                      |
| Таче <u>ондакрак</u> кынелынам.                          |             | I got up <u>earlier</u> today.                              |                      |
| Кызыт тоштерыш <u>шуэнрак</u> коштына.                   |             | We go to the museum <u>more rarely</u> now.                 |                      |
| <u>Эркинрак</u> ойлыза, пожалуйста! Мый тендам ом умыло. |             | Speak <u>more slowly</u> , please! I cannot understand you. |                      |
| <u>Лишкырак</u> толза, пожалуйста! Мый тендам ом кол.    |             | Come <u>closer</u> , please! I can't hear you.              |                      |

8.13. Form the comparative degree of the following adverbs.

1. вара
2. умбаке
3. йымачын
4. ожно
5. чот
6. изин
7. ошын
8. сылнын
9. веселан
10. ныжылгын

8.14. Insert the given adverb into the sentence in the comparative degree.

1. Вараш кодына. ... кай! (писын)
2. ... чийза: театрыш каена. (моторын)
3. ... ойлыза: жапна уке. (күчыкын)
4. Пушенгыш ... күзеда гын, онгайрак фото лектеш. (күшкө)
5. Тиде документым ... лудаш күлеш. (түткын)

Object of Comparison: When using the comparative degree of an adverb, a point of reference is often included. (In English, this point of reference is marked with the word *than*, e.g., *He ran more quickly than the others*.) In Mari use is made of the postposition *деч* which follows the object of comparison. As in the case of adjectives, the comparative suffix can be omitted when the object of comparison is marked.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Трамвай <u>автобус деч</u> <u>эркынрак</u> кудалеш.                  | Streetcars go <u>more slowly than</u> buses.                    |
| Ануш <u>Эчан деч</u> <u>писын</u> куржеш.                            | Anush runs <u>more quickly than</u> Echan.                      |
| Коля математикым <u>Йыван деч</u> <u>начарракын</u> пала.            | Kolya is <u>worse</u> in math <u>than</u> Yyvan.                |
| Тиде тувыр <u>весе деч</u> <u>ошыракын</u> коеш.                     | This shirt looks <u>whiter than</u> the other.                  |
| Ме <u>нунын деч</u> <u>торашкырак</u> каяш шонена.                   | We are planning to go <u>further than</u> they are.             |
| Йолташем <u>мый дечем</u> <u>чүчкыдынрак</u> йот эллашке кудалыштеш. | My friend goes abroad <u>more frequently than</u> I <u>do</u> . |

To express a degree of comparison – ‘twice as’, ‘three times as’, etc. – the postpositions *пачаш* ‘time, times’ or *гана* ‘time, times’ can be used:

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тудо мый дечем кок пачаш/гана писынрак куржеш. | S/he runs <u>twice as fast as me</u> .          |
| Мый туддеч кум пачаш/гана кужунрак маленам.    | I slept <u>three times as long as him/her</u> . |

8.15. Rearrange the words to form present-tense sentences (and a past-tense sentence in the case of sentence 5), inflecting them where necessary, and putting the adverb into the comparative degree (either with or without the comparative ending *-пак*). Note that in some cases, there is more than one valid answer; multiple possibilities are given in the exercise key here.

1. миллиардер, миллионер, илаш, нужнан
2. гитар, Валя, Сергей, сайын, шокташ
3. веселан, тиде, йоча хор, весе, мураш
4. илаш, йолташна-влак, ме, тораште
5. лудаш, тунемаш, шольым, вара, мый

*күзерак* ‘how’, *тыгерак* ‘like this’, *тугерак* ‘like that’: These forms are typical of informal language, and are semantically equivalent to the words from which they are derived: *күзе*, *тыге*, *туге*.

### 8.5.3. Superlative degree

The superlative degree of adverbs is formed with the particle *эн* before the positive degree, just as with adjectives.

| Positive                   | Comparative            | Superlative | Translation |
|----------------------------|------------------------|-------------|-------------|
| вара                       | варарак                | эн вара     | soon, early |
| торашке                    | торашкырак             | эн торашке  | far (off)   |
| сайын<br>(← сай ‘good’)    | сайынрак ~ сайракын    | эн сайын    | good        |
| шокшын<br>(← шокшо ‘warm’) | шокшынрак ~ шокшыракын | эн шокшын   | warm, hot   |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Орина урокышко <u>эн ондак</u> толеш.                   | Orina comes to class <u>first</u> .             |
| Самолёт дене Марий Элышке <u>эн вашке</u> логалаш лиеш. | You get to Mari El <u>the fastest</u> by plane. |
| Классыштына Ольош <u>эн моторын</u> мура.               | In our class Olyosh sings <u>the nicest</u> .   |

8.16. Form the comparative and superlative forms of the following adverbs.

1. куштылгын
2. эркын
3. порын
4. осалын
5. шулдын

8.17. Insert the appropriate adverb in the superlative degree. The options are given below.

1. Эвика начарын ужеш, садлан ... шинче.
2. Лиза ... йот йылме дене кутыраш йӧрата.
3. Тиде спортсмен ... тӧрштен.
4. Ивук группыштына ... куржталеш
5. ... мылам олмам кӱрын кертат?

(писын, ончыко, торашке, кӱшыч, чот)

## 8.6. Descriptive words

The designation 'descriptive word' (Mari: *оңартыш мут*) a specific category of imitative, onomatopoeic words is meant which are used to express what a speaker hears, sees or feels. These descriptive words are indeclinable. i.e., no suffixes can be attached to them. In Mari philology, the descriptive words are treated as a separate part of speech. We do not do this as they syntactically always function as a different part of speech, most commonly as adverbs.

While English can also use descriptive, onomatopoeic words, the usage of such words is far more wide-spread in Mari. Due to their imitative and many times emotive character, the translation of Mari descriptive words can present difficulties.

Various categories of the Mari descriptive words can be distinguished based on a) semantics, b) form, and c) usage in sentences.

### 8.6.1. Semantic categories

Three broad semantic categories can be roughly distinguished: a) descriptive words imitative of aural impressions, b) descriptive words imitative of visual impressions, and c) descriptive words imitative of emotive, perceptual impressions. Some examples, with usage examples:

#### a) Aural impressions

\* *тр-р-р* '(chattering or clicking sound)'

Автоматчик-влак тр-р-р лӱйкален  
толыныт.

The submachine gunners came up, firing  
away.

\* *кырлӱк-кырлӱк* '(rough cough, barking cough)'

Салтак, чарныде, кырлӱк-кырлӱк  
кокыралтыш.

The soldier couldn't stop coughing roughly.

#### b) Visual impressions

\* *выр-выр* '(light object rotating when falling)'

Фотосӱрет выр-выр ӱлыкӧ камвозо.

The photograph whirled down to the ground.

\* *йылт-йолт* '(flashing, shining)'

Волгенче йылт-йолт койын колтыш.

There was a flash of lightning.

#### c) Emotive, perceptual impressions

\* *ючик* '(uneasiness, fear, surprise)'

Чонемлан ючик чучо.

I felt uneasy.

\* *выче-выче* 'amicably, sincerely, politely, gently'

Нуно вараксимла выче-выче келшен илат

They live in perfect harmony like swallows.

### 8.6.2. Form categories

Regarding their form Mari descriptive words can be a) single words, b) repeating words, or c) pair words.

#### a) Single words

\* *шпон* '(clap, knock, strike)'

Котомкам шпон пыштыш.

| S/he dumped down the knapsack.

\* *шуй* '(fear, terror)'

Шўмлан шуй чучеш.

| It's terrifying.

#### b) Repeating words

For other words formed by means of reduplication, see 11.4 – page 376.

\* *шолт-шолт* '(hit, knock)'

Омсам шолт-шолт пералтышым.

| I rapped on the door.

\* *пушт-пушт* '(chuffing, snorting, bubbling)'

Пучымыш пушт-пушт шолеш.

| The porridge is bubbling.

c) Pair words: These are similar to repeating words, but their components differ slightly. The difference is seen in the vowels, but there are also pair words differing in the initial consonant used as well. Compare this formation mechanisms with partial reduplication (see 11.4 – page 376).

\* *тырын-тўрын* '(rocking, swaying, swinging)'

Йўшў матрос тырын-тўрын лие.

| The drunken sailor staggered.

\* *чыли-вули* '(sparkling, glittering, shining, gleaming)'

Ший чыли-вули йўла.

| The silver is sparkling.

### 8.6.3. Usage categories

Descriptive words can have varying functions in sentences. They are used chiefly as a) adverbial modifiers (adverbs), b) nominal determiners (adjectives), or c) predicates. Many descriptive words can have more than one of these functions.

#### a) Adverbial modifier

\* *ньыге-нюго* '(unease, restlessness, anxiety)'

Чонжылан ньыге-нюго чучеш.

| S/he's getting anxious.

\* *йор-йор* '(pouring water, gushing water)'

Фонтан гыч вўд йор-йор йога.

| Water is gushing from the fountain.

#### b) Nominal determiner

\* *арик-турик* 'negligent, careless'

Тыгай арик-турик ең дене пашам ит ыште.

| Don't work with such a slacker.

\* *выче-выче* 'amicable, sincere, polite, gentle'

Выче-выче шомакше дене чонемым савырен.

| S/he won me over with his/her gentle words.

## с) Predicate

\* *шын-шын* 'packed, crowded'

Кевытыште шын-шын.

| It's crowded in the shop.

\* *лыб-лыб* '(trembling, gentle shaking)'

Түрвыжӧ лыб-лыб лие.

| His/her lips trembled.

## 9. Particles

### 9.0. General remarks

This category of endings and words is broad and poorly defined. In this book, we include in it: a) clitics that are phonetically and orthographically connected to a wide array of host words, b) words that are not inflected but in at least one function do not clearly belong to any of the other parts of speech handled in this book (e.g., adverbs, postpositions, conjunctions – though some of the words covered in this chapter also function as members of those groups). It should be noted that different grammatical descriptions categorize uninflected words in different manners – some words that were included here in this book are assigned to other categories in other works on Mari.

### 9.1. Emphatic clitics etc. orthographically attached to base words

These clitics are enclitics (suffixes) attached to host words belonging to different word classes and expressing various nuances: emphasizing, distinguishing, heightening, strengthening, determining, or intensifying.

#### 9.1.1. *-am*

Attachment to base word: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44).

|       |                |   |        |
|-------|----------------|---|--------|
| йол   | 'foot, leg'    | → | йолат  |
| паша  | 'work'         | → | пашат  |
| вуй   | 'head'         | → | вуйат  |
| кино  | 'film; cinema' | → | киноат |
| корно | 'road'         | → | корнат |
| кече  | 'sun; day'     | → | кечат  |

9.1. Add the enclitic *-am* to the following words.

1. ме
2. имне
3. пий
4. пире
5. арня
6. метро
7. родо
8. еш
9. коча
10. шольо

This enclitic can be attached to words of different classes in the meaning 'also, even, and':



|   |   |
|---|---|
| Еңым пагалет гын, <u>тыйымат</u> пагалат.<br>(Калыкмут)                   | If you respect others, they will respect <u>you as well</u> . (Proverb)                 |
| Кечыштат шем тамга уло, маныт.<br>(Калыкмут)                              | It's said <u>even the sun</u> has black spots.<br>(proverbs)                            |
| Сибирьышке каеда гын, <u>мыят</u> тендан дене<br>пырля кудалам.           | If you go to Siberia, I'll come along with you<br><u>too</u> .                          |
| Пайремна <u>тендан деч поснат</u> веселан<br>эртен.                       | Our party went well <u>even without you</u> .   |
| Мончам але сауным Финляндийыште веле<br>огыл, <u>Российыштат</u> йоратат. | The bathhouse or sauna isn't only popular in<br>Finland, but <u>in Russia as well</u> . |

When it occurs in negative sentences, it has the meaning 'either, also not, not even':

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Ава деч посна <u>мүкшат</u> ок иле. (Калыкмут)              | <u>Not even a bee</u> can live without a mother.<br>(Proverb)             |
| Кийыше кў йымач <u>вўдат</u> ок його.<br>(Калыкмут)         | <u>Not even water</u> will flow under a lying stone.<br>(Proverb)         |
| Нелеш ида нал, пеш вашкем: <u>ик яра<br/>минутемат</u> уке. | Sorry, I'm in a big hurry, I don't have <u>even one<br/>free minute</u> . |
| Пиалым <u>эн кугу оксаланат</u> от нал.                     | You cannot buy happiness <u>even for all the<br/>money in the world</u> . |
| У темым <u>эн ушан тунемшат</u> умылен огыл.                | <u>Even the smartest student</u> didn't understand<br>the new topic.      |

The enclitic can occur several times in a sentence, linking multiple elements together. If the sentence is positive, it then has the meaning 'both ... and'; if the sentence is negative, the meaning is 'neither ... nor'.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Мый <u>шылымат, колымат</u> кочкам.  | I eat <u>both meat and fish</u> .   |
| Лўдшö енлан <u>мераңат</u> — пире, <u>пундышат</u><br>— маска. (Калыкмут)  | For a coward, <u>a rabbit</u> is a wolf <u>and a stump</u> a bear.  |
| <u>Университетыштат</u> тунемат, <u>пашамат</u><br><u>ыштет, актёр студийышкат</u> коштат. Кузе<br>чылам шуктет? | You study <u>at university</u> , you <u>work</u> , you go <u>to<br/>the actors studio</u> . How do you manage it all? |
| Чын <u>тулешат</u> ок йўлö, <u>вўдешат</u> ок йом.<br>(Калыкмут)   | Truth will <u>neither burn in fire</u> and <u>nor</u> will it<br>drown <u>in water</u> . (Proverb)                    |
| Эчук <u>тамакымат</u> огеш шупш, <u>аракамат</u> ок<br>йў.   | Echuk does not smoke ( <u>tobacco</u> ) <u>nor</u> drink<br><u>alcohol</u> .  |

9.2. Replace the phrase using a conjunction with one using the clitic *-am* (twice) in the following sentences, e.g.: *Ануш ден Эчан* → *Анушам, Эчанам*.

1. Ачам ден авам школышто пашам ыштат.
2. Пöлекым налаш да пуаш йöратем.
3. Васлий школышто да университетыште эн сайын тунемын.
4. Йўдым да кечывалым эре ик тўрым тўрлат. (Тушто)
5. Йошкар пондашан, йошкар калпакан, марий пайрем годым да тыглай кечын ик семын мурат. (Тушто)

Often it has an emphatic meaning that cannot be translated in a straight-forward manner.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Илышыште <u>чылажынат</u> шке верже уло.<br>(Калыкмут)                      | <u>Everything</u> in life has its own place. (Proverb)                |
| Колымаш деч <u>нигушкат</u> шылаш ок лий.<br>(Калыкмут)                     | There is <u>nowhere</u> to hide from death. (Proverb)                 |
| Кö кок гана шенгекеже ончалеш, тудо <u>нимомат</u> огеш йомдаре. (Калыкмут) | He who looks back twice will not lose <u>anything</u> . (Proverb)     |
| Шочмо йылмым <u>нигузеат</u> мондаш ок лий.                                 | One must not forget one's native tongue <u>in any way</u> .           |
| Унам ыштымыланда тау! Ынде <u>каяшат</u> жап шуын.                          | Thank you for hosting us. Now it's <u>already</u> time <u>to go</u> . |

As regards the usage of this enclitic as a coordinating conjunction linking clauses, see [...] – page [...].

### 9.1.2. -ак

**Attachment to base word:** A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44). Stress is subject to variation here: it can be stressed, but often is not.

|       |                |   |        |
|-------|----------------|---|--------|
| йол   | 'foot, leg'    | → | йолак  |
| паша  | 'work'         | → | пашак  |
| вуй   | 'head'         | → | вуйак  |
| кино  | 'film; cinema' | → | киноак |
| корно | 'road'         | → | корнак |
| кече  | 'sun; day'     | → | кечак  |

Frequently, this enclitic is used as an intensifying particle.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Финн-угор йылме-влакым <u>университетыштак</u> тунемаш тўнгалында? | Did you start studying Finno-Ugric languages <u>already at the university</u> ? |
| Чайым мылам темет? Вўд <u>шокшак</u> эше.                          | Will you pour me some tea? The water's still <u>hot</u> .                       |
| Эргым, школышто <u>сайынак</u> тунем!                              | Son, study <u>hard</u> at school!   |
| Тиде книга тылат кўлеш гын, <u>пуашак</u> верештеш.                | If you need this book, (I) have <u>to give</u> it (to you).                     |
| Айста <u>кызытак</u> Йошкар-Олашке билетым налына.                 | Let's buy tickets to Yoshkar-Ola <u>right now</u> .                             |

Often it is used to stress an identity or equivalency, often in combination with pronominal forms (see 5.2.3 – page 140).

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Тиде <u>тыяк</u> улат мо? Мый тыйым шым пале.   | Is it <u>really you</u> ? I didn't recognize you.  |
| Ужат ту мотор вазым? Мемнан дене мўнгыштў <u>тыгаяк</u> уло.                                | Do you see that beautiful vase? We have <u>one just like it</u> at home.                           |
| Кочам пеш шуко пален. Мый <u>тынарак</u> палынем.   | My grandfather knew a lot. I want to know <u>just as much</u> .                                    |
| Кум ий ончыч Миша университетым тунем пытарен. <u>Тунамак</u> тудым Китайышке пашаш ўжыныт. | Three years ago Misha graduated from university. He got a job offer from China <u>right then</u> . |
| Мый Йошкар-Олаште шочынам, <u>тыштак</u> школыш да университетыш коштынам.                  | I was born in Yoshkar-Ola, I went to school and university <u>right here</u> .                     |
| Тиде авторын икымше романже пеш онгай, а кокымшыжо <u>тынарак</u> онгай огыл.               | This author's first novel is very interesting, but his/her second one isn't <u>as</u> interesting. |

9.3. Attach either the clitic *-am* or *-ак* to the underlined word, as appropriate.

1. Ача-авам журналист улыт. Мый журналист лияш шонем.
2. Мемнан ялысе пörтыштö нимат вашталтын огыл: чыла тошто семын кодын.
3. Ончал, тыгай телефоным мый шўжаремлан пöлекленам.
4. Марий-влак совет жапыште чимарий йўлаштым монден огытыл: кўсотыш шолып коштыныт.
5. Вучаш огеш лий, таче кастене вашлияшна кўлеш.
6. Марий ешлаште чылан сурт коклаште иктаж-мом ыштеныт: эн изи-влак полшеныт.
7. Южо яллаште марий-влак одо йылмым, суас йылмым паленыт.
8. Анна Петровна историй нерген моткоч онгайын каласкален. Тудо мыланна географийым туныктен.
9. Кынервуй тыште, да пурлаш ок лий. (Калыкмут)
10. Рывыж пеш чоя, но тудым кучат. (Калыкмут)

### 9.1.3. -с

Attachment to base word: BI-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45).

The suffix is attached to words of different classes, in many cases verbs.

|                  |                       |
|------------------|-----------------------|
| палена → паленас | we know → oh, we know |
| палем → палемыс  | I know → oh, I know   |

A literal translation is difficult. It can set the focus on the element to which it is attached, and impart various emotional nuances.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Те молан толын одал? Ме тендам <u>вученнас</u> .         | Why didn't you come? We <u>were waiting</u> for you <u>after all</u> . |
| Тый мом шортат? Чыла <u>сайыс</u> .                      | Why are you crying? Everything is <u>fine</u> .                        |
| Сравочетым муын от керт? Тудо верыштак <u>лийшашыс</u> . | Can't you find your key? It <u>should be</u> right in its place.       |

### 9.1.4. -ла

Attachment to base word: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48). This suffix is not to be confused with the plural suffix *-ла* (see 2.1.2.3 – page 59), the (unstressed) comparative case suffix *-ла* (see 2.4.8 – page 91), or the adverbial suffix *-ла* (see 8.3 – page 318).

This suffix is frequently attached to spatial adverbs, postpositions, or to nouns marked with the illative or inessive case.

|                   |                                   |
|-------------------|-----------------------------------|
| тушко → тушкыла   | (to) there → in that direction    |
| тушто → туштыла   | there → towards there             |
| олашке → олашкыла | to the city → towards the city    |
| йымач → йымачла   | from under → somewhere from under |

It weakens a spatial reference. When attached to adverbs, postpositions, or nouns with an illative meaning (movement towards), it marks that a movement is carried out in a direction, towards a target, but not all the way into/up to it. When it is attached to adverbs, postpositions, or nouns with an inessive meaning, the spatial reference is widened to a greater area, to the surroundings of the noun, etc. When it is attached to adverbs or postpositions with a separative meaning, it marks that something is coming from a general direction.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Пий опытым колын, пире-влак <u>чодырашкыла</u> кудалыныт.  | Hearing the dogs bark, the wolves ran <u>towards the forest</u> .          |
| Тиде корно <u>энер</u> векрыла кая.                        | This road leads <u>towards the river</u> .                                 |
| Йошкар машина <u>тушкыла</u> , аэропорт могырышко, кудале. | The red car drove <u>in that direction</u> , to the airport.               |
| Ала-кушто <u>пурла велыштыла</u> поезд кайыме йӱк шокта.   | Somewhere <u>on the right-hand side</u> , you can hear a train driving by. |
| <u>Шенгечла</u> мыйым ала-кӧ кычкырал.                     | Somebody yelled at me <u>from behind</u> .                                 |

9.4. Weaken the underlined spatial reference by adding the clitic *-ла* to it.

1. Ме кызыт Юл серышке кудалына.
2. Метрий бинокль дене ончыко онча.
3. Шолыштшо-влак пакча шенгеч пуреныт.
4. Ял могырышко эше кок менгым ошкылман, вара пурлашке савырныман.
5. Тоштер тышечын шолаште лийшаш.

9.5. Add either the clitic *-ам*, *-ак*, *-с*, or *-ла* to the underlined words, as appropriate.

1. Мемнан деке боксышко рвезе-влак веле огыл, ӱдыр-влак коштыт.
2. Молан тиде тувыр тылат огеш келше? Пеш мотор.
3. Ала-кушто уремыште салют йӱк шокта.
4. Ӱмаште ме Карелийыште каненна. Тушто Петровмыт дене палыме лийынна.
5. Катялан япон тӱвыра пеш келша: тудо япон йылмым тунемаш тӱнгалын.
6. Тыге тетла илаш огеш лий – шочмын вес семын илаш тӱнгалам.
7. Ала-кушеч кӱшычын ӱмбакем вӱдым кышкеныт.
8. Ида вашке: поезд марте жапна уло.
9. – Те кофем але чайым утларак йӱратеда?  
– Кофем, чайым ик семын йӱратем.
10. Турист-влак корно деч ӱрдыжкӧ корангыныт да йомыныт.

### 9.1.5. Possessive suffix third person singular *-жЕ ~ -шЕ ~ -ыжЕ ~ -ж*

The possessive suffix of the third person singular – see 2.2.1.2 – page 63 – can serve the function of a determining or emphatic clitic. When used in this function, the suffix can follow other possessive suffixes, and also be attached to non-nominal forms, e.g., inflected verbal forms.

The possessive suffix third person singular can indicate that something or someone has already been spoken of, that someone or something has already been introduced in the conversation, or that something is part of a larger group that was previously introduced. It is especially used to stress a contrast, or can simply mark an emphasis.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| - Тенгече театрышке миенам.   | - I went to the theater yesterday.   |
| - Ну мо, <u>спектакльже</u> онгай лийын?                            | - And, was <u>the play</u> interesting?  |
| Тый чай ден кофем налынат вет. Чайым муынам, а <u>кофеже</u> кушто? | I know that you bought tea and coffee. I found the tea, but where is <u>the coffee</u> ? |
| Мемнан индеш чыве уло. <u>Иктыже</u> ала-кушан йомын.               | We have nine chickens. <u>One of them</u> has gone off somewhere.                        |
| Тау, <u>кофеже</u> тендан чапле.                                    | Thank you, your <u>coffee</u> is tasty.  |
| <u>Мыйже</u> тендам шарнем, а те мыйым шарнеда мо?                  | <u>Well I</u> remember you, but do you remember me?                                      |
| <u>Уна-влакнаже</u> кушто улыт?                                     | Where are <u>our guests</u> ?  |
| Йүкшö Петян мотор, но <u>муренже</u> ок мошто.                      | Petya has a nice voice, but he <u>just</u> can't <u>carry</u> <u>a tune</u> .            |
| <u>Иктыже</u> нимат ок ыште, <u>весыже</u> тудлан полша. (Калыкмут) | <u>One of them</u> does nothing, <u>and the other</u> helps. (Proverb)                   |

## 9.2. Imperative clitics -ян, -я, orthographically attached to base word

The suffixes -ян and -я can be attached to the forms of the imperative second person (see 7.1.2 – page 233) to add a more inviting, less commanding tone to a statement. They are predominantly used with positive forms. Note that the suffixes are separated from the stem with a hyphen in orthography, and that final vowels of second conjugation verbs are not reduced. The two clitics are equivalent in meaning; the clitic -ян is used more frequently.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Тол-я тышке.                                      | Come here, <u>please</u> .                               |
| Омсам <u>почса-я</u> .                            | <u>Open</u> the door, <u>please</u> .                    |
| <u>Вучалте-ян</u> , тый сравоchым налаш монденат. | <u>Hang on</u> , you forgot to take the key.             |
| Ўдырем, чайым мылам <u>кондо-ян</u> .             | My daughter, <u>please bring</u> me some tea.            |
| Витя, Юрий, сумкам нумалаш <u>полшыза-ян</u> .    | Vitya, Yurik, <u>help</u> carry the bag, <u>please</u> . |

## 9.3. Imperative particles айда, айста, and тек

Verbs in the imperative mood (see 7.1.2 – page 233) – which has forms in the second and third, but not first, person – can be preceded by the imperative particle *айда*. It gives a milder, more inviting tone to a command or suggestion.

|            |                      |                                     |
|------------|----------------------|-------------------------------------|
| <b>2Sg</b> | Кай! Айда кай!       | Go! Oh, go!                         |
| <b>3Sg</b> | Кайыже! Айда кайыже! | S/he should go! Oh, s/he should go! |
| <b>2Pl</b> | Кайыза! Айда кайыза! | Go! Oh, go!                         |
| <b>3Pl</b> | Кайышт! Айда кайышт! | They should go! Oh, they should go! |

This particle is also used in combination with indicative forms of the first person, plural or singular (in the singular, the pronoun is generally not dropped), to indicate a suggested action.

|            |                      |                      |
|------------|----------------------|----------------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | Эчук, айда мый каем. | Echuk, I'll go then. |
| <b>1Pl</b> | Эчук, айда каена.    | Echuk, let's go.     |

However, when addressing two people or more, or one person with whom one generally uses the formal pronoun *те*, the particle *айда* is not used; a particle *айста* is used here instead.

|            |                                |                               |
|------------|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | Рвезе-влак, айста мый каем.    | Boys, I'll go then.           |
|            | Иван Петрович, айста мый каем. | Ivan Petrovich, I'll go then. |
| <b>1Pl</b> | Рвезе-влак, айста каена.       | Boys, let's go.               |
|            | Иван Петрович, айста каена.    | Ivan Petrovich, let's go.     |

In the third person singular and plural, a particle *тек* can be used in combination with the imperative to add emphasis. Alternatively, *тек* can be used in combination with the indicative to create forms of equivalent meaning.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Юля гитарым шокташ <u>тунемже</u> . ~<br><u>Тек</u> Юля гитарым шокташ <u>тунемже</u> . ~<br><u>Тек</u> Юля гитарым шокташ <u>тунемеш</u> . | Yulya <u>should learn</u> to play the guitar. |
| <u>Толышт</u> . ~<br><u>Тек толышт</u> . ~<br><u>Тек толыт</u> .  | They <u>should come</u> .                     |
| <u>Тек</u> йоча-влак уремыште <u>модышт</u> .   | The children <u>should play</u> outside.      |

9.9. Which imperative particle is appropriate in the given sentences?

1. ... мый тылат полшем.
2. ... вашкерак омсам поч!
3. ... чылан Байкал деке кудалына!
4. ... ме тый денет коктын марла веле кутыраш тўнгалына.
5. Ёдыр-влак, ... кастене кафешке каена.

9.4. Tense/evidentiality-marking particles *ыле* and *улмаш*

These particles are the third person singular past-tense forms of 'to be', in the simple past tense I (see 7.5.2 – page 296) and simple past tense II (see 7.5.3 – page 297) respectively. They are used in a number of past-tense structures. In informal language, *улмаш* is sometimes realized as *улмашын*, in all functions.

As a rule, structures formed using the particle *ыле* are used in reference to actions that were directly observed, rather than inferred, while those using *улмаш* tend to imply an uncertainty of sorts, or an inference, and in some cases also that an event was unexpected and surprising. That is to say, the usage of these particles indicates a past value, while the choice of which particle one uses communicates an evidential value – a judgement on the source of information.

a) They are used to create the forms of the compound past tenses I–IV (see 7.1.1.4 – page 222, 7.1.1.5 – page 225, 7.1.1.6 – page 228, 7.1.1.7 – page 230). The positive forms of the verb *ышташ* (-ем) 'to do' in all four compound past tenses are:

|            | I          | II           | III         | IV            |
|------------|------------|--------------|-------------|---------------|
| <b>1Sg</b> | ыштем ыле  | ыштем улмаш  | ыштенам ыле | ыштенам улмаш |
| <b>2Sg</b> | ыштет ыле  | ыштет улмаш  | ыштенат ыле | ыштенат улмаш |
| <b>3Sg</b> | ышта ыле   | ышта улмаш   | ыштен ыле   | ыштен улмаш   |
| <b>1Pl</b> | ыштена ыле | ыштена улмаш | ыштенна ыле | ыштенна улмаш |
| <b>2Pl</b> | ыштеда ыле | ыштеда улмаш | ыштенда ыле | ыштенда улмаш |
| <b>3Pl</b> | ыштат ыле  | ыштат улмаш  | ыштеныт ыле | ыштеныт улмаш |

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Йынгыртымет годым <u>мушкылтам ыле</u> .      | I <u>was taking a bath</u> when you called.                   |
| Пашаште лиймем годым тудо <u>мала улмаш</u> . | While I was at work, <u>it turned out s/he was sleeping</u> . |
| Корныш лекмешке <u>кочкынна ыле</u> .         | <u>We ate</u> before we hit the road.                         |
| Те экзаменлан <u>ямдылалтын одал улмаш</u> .  | <u>It turns out you didn't prepare</u> for this exam.         |

9.6. Enter *ыле* or *улмаш* in the following sentences, as appropriate.

1. Те омсашке тўкалтенда ..., а меже колын онал: телевизорым онченна.
2. Музыкальный школыш коштмет годым кажне кечын пианино дене шоктет ... . Шоктыметым видеошкат войзенам.
3. Ават каласыш, лўмын толмыланна тортым ыштенат ... .
4. У пашам тўналме деч ончыч мыланна чылам сайын умылтареныт ... .
5. Школышто тунеммыж годым Оля хорышто мур ... . Хорын концертышкыже ме шуко гана коштынна.
6. Те мемнам уремыште вучеда ... , а ме шоненна, те мемнан деке пачерышке кўзеда, сандене лектын онал.
7. Ожно Ивук баскетболла модеш ... , но тиде нерген тудо нигунам ойлен огыл.
8. Тый денет кушто да кузе палыме лийынна ..., йўршын ом шарне.
9. Икана самырыкем годым Юлым ийын вонченам ... .
10. Изиэм годым ача-авам дене ялыште илена ..., ту жапым сайын шарнем.

b) The particles are used to create past-tense forms of a number of constructions such as the necessitive construction using the infinitive in *-ман*, (see 7.2.3 – page 259), the desiderative (see 7.1.3 – page 242), and the future-necessitive participle in *-шаш* (see 7.2.5 – page 263). The particles are simply placed after the present-tense forms, positive or negative:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Мылам кайыман.  | I have to go.  |
| Мылам кайыман ыле.  | I had to go.   |
| Мылам кайыман улмаш.  | It turns out I would have had to go.   |
| Мылам кайыман огыл.   | I do not have to go.   |
| Мылам кайыман огыл ыле.   | I did not have to go.  |
| Мылам кайыман огыл улмаш.   | It turns out I did not have to go.   |
| Уна-влаклан тортым <u>налман ыле</u> , но кевытыште свежа торт лийын огыл.        | <u>We had to buy</u> a cake for the guests, but there was no fresh cake in the store.            |
| Пошкудем тенгече мый декем <u>пурынеже улмаш</u> , но мый тунам пашам ыштенам.    | <u>It turned out</u> my neighbor <u>wanted to visit</u> me yesterday, but I was at work then.    |
| Йолташем дене 7 шагатлан <u>вашлийшаш улына ыле</u> , но тудо ала-молан кучалтын. | My friend and I <u>were supposed to meet</u> at 7 o'clock, but s/he was held up for some reason. |
| Тиде корно дене <u>кайыман огыл улмаш</u> – ынде мўнгеш пўртылаш верештеш.        | <u>It turned out</u> (we) <u>shouldn't have taken</u> this road, now we need to go back.         |
| Тый молан парашют дене <u>ынет тўрштў ыле</u> ?                                   | Why <u>didn't</u> you <u>want to go</u> skydiving?   |

9.7. Enter *ыле* or *улмаш* in the following sentences, as appropriate.

1. Йолташда каласыш, те президентлан серышым возынеда ... . Возенда мо вара?
2. Вара иже пален налынна, авай мемнам Санкт-Петербургышко тунемаш ынеж колто ... .
3. Мый палем, ончыч Миша Москошко поезд дене кудалнеже ..., но билет кодын огыл
4. Чылан шарнат, тунам те мыланна ынеда полшо ..., а кызыт мемнан деч полышым вучеда.
5. Тый вет черле улат – йүштö шöрым тылат йүман огыл ... . Монденат мо вара?
6. Кугарнян тунемшаш онал ..., но ме тидым пален онал да университетышке миенна.
7. Презентацийым шочмо марте ямдылен пытарыман ..., но мыйын компьютерем пудырген, садлан жапыште тудым ыштен шуктен омыл.
8. Чынак мо телевиденийлан интервьюм пуышаш улат ... ? Мыламже молан шыч ойло?
9. Авам каласкален, нунын ял гыч школышко кече еда лу менгым коштман ... .
10. Тачысе кечым тенгыз серыште эртарышаш улына ..., но йүрлан көра унагудыштак кодынна.

c) The particles can be used independently as the third person singular past-tense forms of the verb *улаш* (-ам) 'to be'. The form *ыле* is the usual form in the simple past tense I (see 7.5.2 – page 296). In the simple past tense II (see 7.5.3 – page 297), the forms of *лияш* (-ям) 'to be, to become' are more commonly used, and the form *улмаш* alternates with the form *лийын*. Also in this function, the usage of *улмаш* implies second-hand information, circumstances that were not directly observed, etc.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Эше вич ий ончыч тиде пöртыштö <u>студент кафе ыле</u> . Ме тушко чүчкыдын коштынна. | Five years ago still there <u>was a student café</u> in this house. We went there often.                   |
| Археолог-влакын шымлымышт почеш, ожно Йошкар-Ола олмышто <u>марий илем улмаш</u> .   | According to archeological research, <u>there used to be a Mari settlement</u> where Yoshkar-Ola is today. |
| Тенгечсе спектакль <u>пеш онгай ыле</u> .  | Yesterday's play <u>was very interesting</u> .   |
| Оксам шкаф йымалан <u>шылтыме улмаш</u> , а ме тудым чыла вере кычалынна.            | <u>It turned out the money was hidden</u> under the dresser, and we were looking for it everywhere.        |

d) After imperative forms of the second person (see 7.1.2 – page 233), *ыле* can be used to weaken requests. It can also be used to express a desire of sorts or a contemplation in combination with imperative forms of the third person, or the infinitive (see 7.2.1 – page 255).

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мыйым паша гыч ик кечылан <u>колтыза ыле</u> . | <u>Would you let</u> me off work for a day?        |
| У ий вашкерак <u>толжо ыле</u> .               | <u>If only</u> New Year would <u>come sooner</u> . |
| Кеч ик гана кайык гай <u>чонешташ ыле</u> .    | <u>Oh to fly</u> like a bird but once!             |



9.8. Enter *ыле* or *улмаш* in the following sentences, as appropriate.

1. Пошкудо-влак каласышт, вес олыкышто снеге моткоч шуко ... . Мыланна тушко каяш кўлеш ыле.
2. Экзамен куштылго огыл ... . Палем ыле гын, шукырак тунемам ыле.
3. Эше телым пöртна воктене сай кевыт ..., а кызыт tudo петыралтын.
4. Ковам ойлен, ожно кызытсе ялна верыште нимат уке ... .
5. Мемнан жапыште ни сото телефон, ни компьютер уке ... .
6. Паленат омыл, кугезе ковамын латкок йочаже ... .
7. Самырыкем годым илыш веселарак ... .
8. Математике дене тест неле огыл ... . Мыят тудым сайын возенам.
9. Тенгечсе спектакль онгай ... . Жал, мый каен омыл.
10. Унверситетыште мемнан группышто лу ўдыр да кум рвезе ... .

## 9.5. Other particles

The following list consists of particles communicating a wide range of values. Note that while numerous words here also serve other functions – e.g., *гын* is originally a conjunction ‘if’, *коеш* is originally a verbal form ‘it seems’ – this section only pertains to the usage of these words as particles.

The exact range of meanings communicated by a particle in one language is difficult to translate into another language. Some basic semantic facets communicated by particles, or functions carried out by them, are (note that some particles occur more than once in this listing, as they have several meanings and usages):

- Demonstrative: *теве* ‘here, look here’, *тевыс* ‘here, look here’, *уна* ‘there, look there’
- limiting, specifying: *веле* ‘only, just’, *гына* ‘only, just’, *иже* ‘not until’, *керек* ‘at least’, *кеч* ‘at least’, *лач(ак)* ‘only, exclusively’, *тевак* ‘almost, nearly’, *теве* ‘almost, nearly’, *тевыс* ‘almost, nearly’, *улыжат* ‘only, no more than’, *чуч* ‘almost, nearly’, *чылт* ‘right, just’, *ялт* ‘right, just’
- intensifying/emphatic: *вара* ‘well, then’, *веле* ‘more and more’, *вет* ‘so, indeed, well’, *гын* ‘as for ...’, *гына* ‘rather, fairly’, *да* ‘really’, *дык* ‘well, so’, *ито* ‘even’, *кеч* ‘if only’, *лаваса* ‘certainly’, *ман* ‘how about that’, *просто* ‘just, simply’, *садак* ‘after all’, *садызак* ‘after all’, *то-то* ‘there you are’, *тудо* ‘well, of course’, *тушто* ‘there, here’, *уж* ‘indeed’, *уже* ‘already’, *чай* ‘probably’, *э/эй* ‘o how’, *эсогыл* ‘even’, *эре* ‘more and more’, *эртак* ‘more and more’
- expressing approximative number: *ик* ‘roughly, about’, *иктаж* ‘roughly, about’, *лиеш* ‘soon’
- additive: *адак* ‘still, yet, more’, *да монь* ‘and the like’, *да мо да* ‘and the like’, *монь* ‘and the like’
- interrogative: *а* ‘so, huh’, *ала* ‘maybe, probably’, *але* ‘really’, *але вара* ‘really, indeed’, *вет* ‘isn’t it’, *гала* ‘really’, *кузе* ‘what, come again’, *кунам* ‘how, when’, *ма* ‘are/is you/...’, *мо* ‘are/is you/...’, *мо вара* ‘then’, *моли* ‘perhaps’, *неужели* ‘really’, *ну* ‘is that so’, *разве* ‘then’
- affirmative, expressing trust, affirmation: *ане* ‘yes; so, well’, *да* ‘yes’, *йöра* ‘fine, okay’, *кернак(ак)* ‘absolutely’, *конешне* ‘of course’, *лаваса* ‘sure’, *лач(ак)* ‘just’, *но* ‘yes, uh-huh’, *ну* ‘really’, *-огыла* ‘well then’, *неш йöра* ‘very good’, *товат(ат)* ‘for sure’, *товро* ‘certainly’, *туге* ‘yes’, *туге вет* ‘indeed’, *туге шол* ‘that’s how it is’, *тызак* ‘yes, really’, *тыге* ‘yes, really’, *чынак(ак)* ‘indeed’, *чынжым(ак)* ‘indeed’, *шол* ‘indeed’
- expressing different degrees of doubt: *ала* ‘could be’, *ала-ала* ‘hardly’, *ала мо* ‘possibly’, *аман* ‘apparently’, *векат* ‘probably’, *витне* ‘apparently’, *гай* ‘it seems’, *докан* ‘it seems’, *дыр* ‘perhaps’, *коеш* ‘it seems’, *кузе* ‘how ...’, *мо* ‘really’, *можыч* ‘maybe’, *наверне*

‘probably’, *очыни* ‘probably’, *пожале* ‘most likely’, *ужамат* ‘apparently’, *ужат* ‘apparently’, *чай* ‘apparently’, *шонет* ‘it seems’

- denial: *уке* ‘no’, *уке шол* ‘no (emphatic)’
- comparison: *веле* ‘like, as though’, *пуйто* ‘it’s like’, *чылт* ‘just like’, *ялт* ‘quite like’
- exclamative: *кузе* ‘how’, *дык* ‘well, so’, *могай* ‘what kind of, how’
- indifference: *керек* ‘makes no difference’, *садак* ‘makes no difference’, *садыгак* ‘makes no difference’
- supposing: *лиеш* ‘if ...’, *лийже* ‘let’s imagine’
- negative: *-мочет* ‘forgetting about ...’, *-моэт* ‘forgetting about ...’, *огыл* ‘not’
- miscellaneous other functions: *икманаш* ‘in a word’, *-можо* ‘it’s not about ...’, *мутлан* ‘for example’, *на* ‘okay, here you are’, *ну* ‘so, well’, *пожалуйста* ‘please’, *поро лий(за)* ‘please’, *тугат* ‘even without that’, *тугеже* ‘that means’

Numerous particles introduced in this section are subject to syntactic restrictions; they cannot occur freely in any position. For example, *гына* ‘only, just’ must immediately follow the word it modifies, and can thus never be found in sentence-initial position. Likewise, other particles contained in this section, rather than modifying one host word (as *гына* does), occur as sentences of their own, and are generally found separated from the rest of the clause by a comma.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| – Тый театрыште пашам ыштет вет?               | – You work in theater then?                             |
| – <u>Туге</u> , лу ий наре.                    | – <u>Yes</u> , about ten years already.                 |
| – Алло! Кушто улат?                            | – Hello? Where are you?                                 |
| – <u>А</u> ? Нимат ок шокто: метрошто кудалам. | – <u>Huh</u> ? I can’t hear you, I’m in the subway.     |
| Тый ноен отыл? <u>Можыч</u> , кофем йўына?     | Aren’t you tired? <u>Maybe</u> let’s drink some coffee? |

If a particle can either modify an individual constituent of a clause, or can occur as a clause of its own, examples in the overview below will be included illustrating both usages.

Also note that some of these particles, in spite of being written as independent words, are closely bound to their host words in pronunciation. For example, *гына* ‘only, just’ forms a stress unit together with its host word (see 1.5.6 – page 31); the initial *z* is in pronunciation subject to assimilation: *мый гына* /təj gəna/ ‘only you’, but *тылат гына* /təlat kəna/ ‘only for you’ (see 1.5.7 – page 34). The same applies to all particles orthographically realized with an initial *z* or *ð*.

### 9.5.1. *a* ‘so, huh’

This particle is used in informal speech, and is used to prompt an answer.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Тый молан ош тувырым йошкар носки дене пырля мушкынат, <u>а</u> ? | <u>So</u> why did you wash the white shirt together with red socks? |
| – Алло! Кушто улат?   | – Hello? Where are you?   |
| – <u>А</u> ? Нимат ок шокто: метрошто кудалам.                    | – <u>Huh</u> ? I can’t hear you, I’m in the subway.                 |

### 9.5.2. *адак* ‘still, yet, more’

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Квартетыште Катя, Оля, <u>адак</u> кок ўдыр мурат. | Katya and Olya sing in the quartet, <u>and then still</u> two girls. |
| Мый тылат чылам пуышым. <u>Адак</u> мо кўлеш?      | I gave you everything. <u>What else</u> do you need?                 |

### 9.5.3. *ала* ‘maybe, probably, could be; hardly, doubtful, who knows’

This emphatic particle is used especially in questions to indicate uncertainty, or with suggestions.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тынар пашам ыштет! Изиш каналтет <u>ала</u> ?                                | You work so much! Won't you relax a bit <u>maybe</u> ?                                |
| Чайым йўуна <u>ала</u> ?   | Should we drink tea <u>then</u> ?   |
| Тый огыл гын, мыланна кō полша ыле, <u>ала</u> .                             | If you had not helped us, who would have, <u>then</u> .                               |
| – Толза мемнан деке Пошкырт кундемыш<br>– Тау, <u>ала</u> иктаж-кунам миена. | – Come visit us in Bashkortostan!<br>– Thank you, we'll <u>probably</u> come some day |
| Йўр огыл гын, <u>ала</u> аварийышке она логал ыле.                           | If it hadn't been for the rain, <u>probably</u> we wouldn't have had the accident.    |

#### 9.5.4. *ала-ала* 'hardly, doubtfully, who knows'

|   |  |
|---|--|
| – Самолётышко, шонет, шуктена?  | – Do you think we'll catch our plane?  |
| – <u>Ала-ала...</u> Корнышто машина шуко оклий гын, <u>шуктышаш улына</u> . | – <u>Who knows</u> ... if there aren't many cars on the road, we should make it. |
| – Телевизор дене каласышт, вашке шокшо толшаш.                              | – They said on TV that it will get hot soon.                                     |
| – <u>Ала-ала</u> , мый синоптик-влаклан ом ўшане.                           | – <u>Who knows</u> , I don't trust meteorologists.                               |

#### 9.5.5. *ала мо* 'probably, possibly, apparently'

Note that in contrast to the pronoun *ала-мо* 'something' (see 5.7.2 – page 153), this particle consists of two elements separated by a space instead of a hyphen.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Тендан дене кужун шинченна, ынде каена <u>эркын ала мо</u> . | We've been sitting at your place for a while, now it's <u>probably</u> time to slowly get going. |
| Тый мыйым от колышт <u>ала мо</u> .                          | You <u>apparently</u> aren't listening to me.  |
| Йўр тўнгалнеже <u>ала мо</u> .                               | I <u>guess</u> it's trying to rain.  |
| Те лўмлō артист улыда <u>ала мо</u> .                        | You're probably a famous artist.   |

#### 9.5.6. *(-)але* '(emphatic particle); really'

This particle can follow verbs (especially in the imperative) to add a familiar, informal tone. It is separated from the verb with a hyphen in orthography.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Лишкырак тол- <u>але</u> !                  | <u>Oh</u> come closer!                    |
| Мый тендан деке вескана пурем- <u>але</u> . | I'll visit you another time <u>then</u> . |

It can also occur (without a hyphen) in questions, expressing doubt.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Тый молан оксам йодде налынат? <u>Але</u> мый тылат ом пу ыле?     | Why did you take money without asking? Wouldn't I have given you any <u>then</u> ? |
| Зонтикым от нал мо? <u>Але</u> уремыш ончалын отыл? Йўр вет йўреш. | Won't you take an umbrella? Haven't you looked outside <u>then</u> ? It's raining! |

#### 9.5.7. *але вара* 'really, indeed, is it possible'

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Мый чынак президент дене вашлийынам. <u>Але вара</u> тый мылам от ўшане? | I really met the president. <u>Don't you</u> believe me?                                 |
| – Шенген визым ыштыктенат мо?  | – Did you apply for a Schengen visa?   |
| – Эше уке.   | – Not yet.   |
| – Молан? <u>Але вара</u> Венгрийыш ынет кудал?                           | – Why not? <u>Don't you</u> want to go to Hungary?                                       |
| Те молан мемнан деч полышым йодын одал? <u>Але вара</u> йолташ онал?     | Why didn't you ask us for help? <u>Aren't we</u> friends?                                |
| Вера молан джунглиш ынеж кудал? <u>Але вара</u> кишке деч лўдеш?         | Why doesn't Vera want to go to the jungle? <u>Is it possible</u> she's afraid of snakes? |

### 9.5.8. *аман* 'apparently, it looks like, it would seem; still, however'

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Мо кумылет уке? Таче шагал маленат <u>аман</u> .       | Why are your spirits down? <u>I guess</u> you didn't sleep much last night.         |
| Шұрым мо пеш шагал кочкынат? Келшен оғыл <u>аман</u> . | Why did you eat so little soup? <u>I guess</u> you didn't like it.                  |
| Жапет шагал гынат, полшынет <u>аман</u> ?              | Even if you have little time, you <u>still</u> want to help?                        |
| Концертышке <u>аман</u> кает? А ойленат, кинош кает.   | Are you going to the concert <u>then</u> ? But you said you're going to the movies. |

### 9.5.9. *ане* 'yes; so, well; isn't that so; why don't you...'

The word *туге* (see 9.5.81 – page 358) is more commonly used in the meaning 'yes'.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| – Те марла умыледа?                            | – Do you understand Mari?                                     |
| – <u>Ане</u> , мари́й йылмым кок ий тунемынам. | – Yes, I've been studying Mari for two years.                 |
| Кофелан сакырым <u>ане</u> кондо, пожалуйста.  | <u>Why don't you</u> bring some sugar for the coffee, please. |

### 9.5.10. *аянт* 'perhaps, possibly, could be, maybe; hardly, I doubt it'

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Анят</u> , шұдө ий гыч айдеме Марсышке чонешташ тўналеш.             | <u>Perhaps</u> humans will start flying to Mars in a hundred years.              |
| Концерт тыгай кужу лиеш манын, палем ыле гын, <u>аянт</u> , ом кай ыле. | If I had known the concert would be this long, <u>I doubt</u> I would have gone. |

### 9.5.11. *вара* 'well, then (emphatic particle)'

See also *мо вара* 'so what, well, really' (9.5.47 – page 349).

|                          |                               |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Кузе <u>вара</u> иледа?  | How is life <u>then</u> ?     |
| Кушеч <u>вара</u> улыда? | <u>So</u> where are you from? |

### 9.5.12. *векат* 'probably, perhaps, it seems, I guess'

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Иванов адак икымше урокышко толын оғыл: мален кодын, <u>векат</u> . | Ivanov again didn't come to the first class. He <u>probably</u> overslept. |
| Кайык-влак ўлыч чонештылыт. Вашке йўр лийшаш, <u>векат</u> .        | Birds are flying low. <u>It seems</u> rain is coming soon.                 |
| Йўкда пеш мотор. <u>Векат</u> , радиошто пашам ыштеда.              | Your voice is quite beautiful. You <u>probably</u> work in radio.          |

9.10. Insert the fitting particle. The options are given below.

1. ..., чодырашке таче она кай: йўр лиеш, шонем.
2. Аваже, кочкына ...? 13 шагат шуэш, мўшкыр шужен.
3. Эх, Миша, нимат тый от пале: экзаменлан йўршын тунемын отыл ...
4. Иванов, тый молан школышко куголям конденат, ... ?
5. – Книга тылат келшен?  
– ..., пеш оңай роман.

(а, ала, аман, ане, векат)

6. Эчук мемнам ужын огыл ... : мемнан могырышко ончалынат огыл.
7. ..., Вера мылам сырен: ик арня ни ок возо, ни ок йынгырте.
8. – Эрла вашлийына мо ...?  
– Айда вашлийына.
9. – Мый шонем, тиде матчыште «Спартак» сеҗа.  
– ..., «Зенит», шонем, виянрак.
10. Сумкам нумалаш мылам полшо-...  
(ала-ала, ала мо, але, анят, вара)

### 9.5.13. *веле* 'only, just; like, as though; so, just; more and more'

This particle immediately follows its host word. In its most common meaning ('only, just') it is comparable in usage to *гына*, see 9.5.19 – page 342.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Лапландийыште мый ик гана <u>веле</u> лийынам.                            | I have been to Lapland <u>only</u> once.  |
| Ончал, тиде пыл шўмла <u>веле</u> коеш.                                   | Look, this cloud looks <u>just</u> like a heart.  |
| Мый тудым вурсем, а тудо воштылеш <u>веле</u> .                           | I am scolding him/her, and s/he is <u>just</u> laughing.  |
| Кырат гынат, ок шорт, утларак <u>веле</u> куанен тўршталта. (Тушто: мече) | You can kick it and it won't cry; it'll <u>just</u> jump around happily even more. (Riddle: ball) |

### 9.5.14. *вет* 'so, indeed, well, as you know, really, you see; isn't it'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Ойлышым <u>вет</u> , розеткиш парням чыкаш ок лий маньн.          | <u>Well</u> , I told you you shouldn't stick your finger into the socket. |
| Айда шукрыак шокшо вургемым налына: Сибирьышке каена <u>вет</u> . | Let's take more warm clothes: we're going to Siberia <u>after all</u> .   |
| Тый <u>вет</u> йылмызе улат?                                      | You're a linguist, <u>aren't you</u> ?                                    |
| Те Марий Элышке миеда <u>вет</u> ?                                | You're going to Mari El <u>probably</u> ?                                 |

### 9.5.15. *витне* 'apparently, evidently, looks like'

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Эргым, уке улмына годым пачерыште кугу пайремым эртаренат, <u>витне</u> .        | Son, <u>it looks like</u> you had a big party in the apartment when we weren't here.                 |
| Пошкудо-влак омсам огыт поч: мўнгыштў уке улыт, <u>витне</u> .                   | The neighbors aren't opening the door. I <u>guess</u> they're not at home.                           |
| Кастене пашаште кучалташ верештеш – театрышке, <u>витне</u> , каен ом шукто.     | I'll be held up at work in the evening, I <u>guess</u> I won't make it to the theater.               |
| Марий частице дене тестым шагалын сайын возенят: тиде, <u>витне</u> , неле теме. | Very few people did well in the exam on Mari particles. <u>Looks like</u> this is a difficult topic. |

### 9.5.16. *гай* 'it seems, ... might, like'

As regards this word's usage as a postposition, see 6.1.10 – page 167. The usage of this particle is especially common in combination with certain verbs of sensory perception such as *чучаш* (-ам) 'to seem, to appear', *кояш* (-ям) 'to seem, to appear, to look like, to resemble', and *шокташ* (-ем) 'to sound'.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Йўр лийшаш <u>гай</u> .   | <u>It seems like</u> it's going to rain.                                   |
| Марафоним куржаш вием уло <u>гай</u> чучеш.                                 | It seems <u>like</u> I have it in me to run a marathon.                    |
| Кафеште яра ўстел уке <u>гай</u> .  | <u>It seems like</u> there are no free tables in the café.                 |
| Сценыште шым ияш <u>гай</u> рвезе йоратымаш нерген ойган почеламутым лудын. | A <u>maybe</u> seven-year-old boy read a sad poem about love on the stage. |

### 9.5.17. *гала* 'indeed, really, again; not only'

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Йоршын шонгемынам, нимат ом шарне. Лўмда кузе <u>гала</u> ? | I've become so old, I can't remember anything. What's your name <u>again</u> ? |
| Тудо пеш поян: пўртым <u>гала</u> , отромат налын кертеш.   | S/he's very rich: s/he can <u>not only</u> buy a house, but even an island.    |
| Францийыште <u>гала</u> , Москошто лийын омыл.              | I've <u>not only</u> never been to France, but not even to Moscow.             |

### 9.5.18. *гын* 'as for ..., ... for one (emphatic, interrogative, contrastive)'

When this word (see also [...] – page [...]) is used as a particle, it has different functions: emphatic, interrogative, contrastive.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Эрла <u>гын</u> могай игече лиеш?                                  | What will the weather be like tomorrow <u>then</u> ?                             |
| Те мемнам шарнеда <u>гын</u> ?                                     | <u>So</u> do you remember us?  |
| Молан тый Петялан кум олмам пуэнат, а мылам <u>гын</u> иктым веле? | Why did you give Petya three apples, but me <u>then</u> only one?                |
| Шуматкечын мом ыштет? Мый <u>гын</u> походыш каяш темлем.          | What are you doing on Saturday? I <u>for one</u> would suggest going for a hike. |

### 9.5.19. *гына* 'only, just; barely; rather, fairly; (emphatic particle)'

This particle immediately follows its host word. In its most common meaning ('only, just'), it is comparable in usage to *веле*, see 9.5.13 – page 341.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ўдырамашын ойгыжым ўдырамаш <u>гына</u> пала. (Калыкмут)                 | Only a woman knows the sorrows of a woman. (Proverb)                                     |
| Мўнгышкў пурышым <u>гына</u> , кудашынат шуктен омыл.                    | I <u>just</u> got home, I haven't even had time to get undressed.                        |
| Изи <u>гына</u> , чевер <u>гына</u> – шинчавўдым йоктара. (Тушто: шоган) | <u>It's quite</u> small, <u>it's quite</u> cute, but it'll make you cry. (Riddle: onion) |

It frequently follows interrogative pronouns (see 5.5 – page 147) in negated sentences expressing that in actuality, a great number of people or things are carrying out an action.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ўстембалне <u>могай гына</u> кочкыш уке!                                    | <u>And what</u> sorts of food <u>won't you find</u> on the table!            |
| Коля <u>қушто гына</u> лийын огыл: Африкыштат, Америкыштат, Австралийыштат. | <u>Where</u> Kolya <u>hasn't been</u> : In Africa, in America, in Australia. |

### 9.5.20. *гынат* 'some, any; even'

See 5.7.4 – page 155.

### 9.5.21. *да* ‘yes; so, well, indeed; yes?, right?, isn’t it?; if only; (emphatic particle)’

In the meanings ‘yes; so, well, indeed; yes?, right?, isn’t it?’, the usage of this particle is typical of spoken language; *мызе* (see 9.5.81 – page 358) is more typically used in literary language.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| – Петров тыште?  | – Is Petrov here?  |
| – <u>Да</u> , мый тыште улам.                            | – <u>Yes</u> , I’m here.   |
| Тый Германий гыч улат, <u>да</u> ?                       | You’re from Germany, <u>yes</u> ?  |
| Жапем уке гынат, вич минутлан <u>да</u> пурем тый декет. | While I don’t have the time, I’ll drop in <u>if only</u> for five minutes. |
| Молан тый сырет? Мый сайым веле тылат шонем <u>да</u> .  | Why are you angry? I <u>do</u> wish you only the best.                     |

### 9.5.22. *да мо да* ‘and the like, and so on’

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language. In literary language, *да монь* (9.5.22 – page 343) is used instead.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Яра жапыште кидпашам ышташ йöратем: ургем, пидам, тўрлем <u>да мо да</u> .   | I like doing handicraft in my free time. I sew, I knit, I embroider, <u>and so on</u> . |
| Витя спорт дене кылым куча: куржталеш, футболла модеш, иеш <u>да мо да</u> . | Vitya’s into sports. He runs, plays football, swims, <u>and so on</u> .                 |
| Кевытыште киндым, пакчасакам, муным налман <u>да мо да</u> .                 | (We) need to get bread, vegetables, eggs <u>and so on</u> in the store.                 |

### 9.5.23. *да монь* ‘and the like, and so on, and whatnot’

See also *монь* ‘and the like, and so on’ (9.5.52 – page 351).

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Университетыште тунемме годым Эчан тўрлö пашам ыштен: официант, гид, кусарыше лийын <u>да монь</u> . | Echan did different jobs when he was at university: he was a waiter, a guide, a translator, and <u>so on</u> . |
| Пакчаште паренгым, кешырым, ковыштам <u>да монь</u> куштена.   | We’re growing potatoes, carrots, cabbage and <u>so on</u> in the garden.                                       |

### 9.5.24. *докан* ‘probably, perhaps, it seems; (emphatic particle)’

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Корно деч вара нойында <u>докан</u> .             | You’re <u>probably</u> exhausted from your trip.                       |
| Могай моторын чиенат! Театрыш кает <u>докан</u> ? | You’re dressed so nicely! You’re <u>probably</u> going to the theater? |
| Кава могай пылан – йўр лиеш <u>докан</u> .        | The sky is so cloudy, <u>it seems</u> it will rain.                    |

When this particle follows imperative forms, it can give them a rude undertone.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Ончал <u>докан</u> , кузе пашам ыштыман.    | <u>So</u> look how the work needs to be done.                  |
| Толжо <u>докан</u> – омсамат тудлан ом поч. | <u>Oh</u> let him/her come, I won’t open the door for him/her. |

### 9.5.25. *дык* ‘well, so (emphatic particle)’

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Кодшо вуйлатыше, шарнем, тыге вурсен кертеш ыле <u>дык</u> ! | The last boss, I remember, could <u>really</u> chew (us) out! |
| <u>Дык</u> мыняр тудым вучаш лиеш?                           | <u>So</u> how long should (we) wait for him/her?              |

This particle is frequently used in an emphatic construction where it is preceded and followed by the same word, with the meaning ‘that really is ...’, ‘well that’s a ...’, ‘that’s how to’, etc.

Мардеж дык мардеж: уремышкат лекташ лүдат.

That really is a wind, you're almost afraid to go outside.

Канаш дык канаш: йолташ-влак дене, пүртүсыштө.

That's how to relax, being with your friends out in nature.

9.11. Insert the fitting particle. The options are given below.

1. Вашке шошо толшаш ... : лумат шула, кечыжат кужурак.
2. Тылат, палем, поп-музык келша, а мый ... рокым утларак йöратем.
3. Марий-влак кокла гыч 67% ... марла кутыра.
4. – Тый мороженныйым йöратет?  
– ..., пеш йöратем: килограмм дене кочкын кертам.
5. Эчук, ватет тыйым ок пукшо, ... : чот пытенат.

(веле, витне, да, гай, гын)

6. Теле ... теле: 45 градус йүштö!
7. Эрдене мый кофем ... йўам, нимат ом коч.
8. Монденам, «Ял ўмбалне мужыр йўксö» фильмыште кө ... тўн рольым модеш?
9. Сўаныште весела лийын ... . Жал, каен кертын онал.
10. Ит шорт, Митю, тый ... рвезе улат.

(гына, докан, вет, дык, гала)

### 9.5.26. *дыр* 'probably, perhaps, it seems'

Татьяна Денисовам паледа дыр? Тудо лўмлö марий мурызо.

You probably know Tatiana Denisova? She's a famous Mari singer.

Те вет олаште шочында? Марла ода мошто дыр?

You were born in town then? You probably don't know Mari?

– Петя таче толеш?

– Is Petya coming today?

– Толеш дыр. Ок тол ыле гын, каласа ыле.

– He's probably coming. If not, he'd say.

Шўржö могай шинчалан! Йöратен шынденат дыр.

The soup is so salty! Perhaps you've fallen in love.

### 9.5.27. *иже* 'not until, only, only then; only, exclusively'

This particle immediately follows its host word.

Тенгече иже Эстоний гыч пöртылынна.

We only got back from Estonia yesterday.

Пашам пытарымеке иже, тый денет вашлийын кертына.

We can't meet with you until we finish the work.

Чўктымö утюг нерген уремыште иже шарналтышым.

I remembered that the iron was turned on only when I was outside.

Омартасе мўкш-шамыч шошым каят да шыжым иже толыт. (Тушто: школ)

The bees in this hive leave in spring and don't come back till autumn. (Riddle: school)

### 9.5.28. *ук* 'roughly, about, circa, around'

The number *ук* 'one' can precede other numerals to denote a rough measure. It is rather informal in this usage; *уктаж* (see 9.5.29 – page 345) is more frequently used in this meaning.

As regards the usage of *ук* as a numeral, see 4.1 – page 106. As regards the usage of *ук* as a pronoun, see 5.7.5 – page 156.



|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ял марте <u>ик</u> вич менге кодын.                        | There are <u>about</u> five kilometers left to the village.    |
| Мылам парентгым <u>ик</u> шым килом висалтыза, пожалуйста. | Weigh out seven kilos of potatoes <u>or so</u> for me, please. |

### 9.5.29. *иктаж* ‘roughly, about, circa, around’

This particle can precede other numerals to denote a rough measure. It frequently co-occurs with the postposition *наре* (see 6.1.55 – page 180).

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тиде урем дене <u>иктаж</u> вич минут кайыза.  | Go down this street for <u>some</u> five minutes.         |
| Уна-влак <u>иктаж</u> кум шагат гыч толыт.     | The guests are coming in three hours <u>or so</u> .       |
| <u>Иктаж</u> ныл ий гыч вес элышке каяш шонем. | I’m thinking of going abroad in four years <u>or so</u> . |

### 9.5.30. *икманаш* ‘in a word, in one word, in short’

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Джазымат, рокымат, этном да поп-музыкамы – икманаш, чылам йөрәтем да колыштам.                           | Jazz, rock, ethno music, pop – <u>in a word</u> , I like and listen to it all.   |
| Экзаменыште заданий-влакат куштылго лийын огытыл, жапымат шагал пуэныт. <u>Икманаш</u> , пеш неле лийын. | The tasks on the exam weren’t easy, and they gave us little time. <u>In short</u> , it was difficult.                                      |
| Ават тыйым вуча, мемнанат тыйым ужмо шуэш. <u>Икманаш</u> , тол унала вашкерак.                          | Your mother is waiting for you, we also would like to see you. <u>In a word</u> , come for a visit soon.                                   |
| Ялыште мемнам чаплын пукшеныт, йүктеныт, мончаш пуртеныт – <u>икманаш</u> , пеш сайын вашлийыныт.        | They fed us a lot in the village, they gave us lots to drink, they took us to the sauna – <u>in a word</u> , we got a very nice reception. |

### 9.5.31. *ито* ‘even’

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Жал, чайлан нимат уке. Печеньым <u>ито</u> кочкын пытарыме.               | It’s a pity, there’s nothing for tea. <u>Even</u> the cookies have been eaten up. |
| Кугу шокшо ик тылзе шога. Эрдене <u>ито</u> юалге уке.                    | It’s been really hot for a month. <u>Even</u> in the morning it’s not cool.       |
| Тест неле лийын. Эн ушан тунемше <u>ито</u> шуко йонгылышым ыштен.        | The test was hard. <u>Even</u> the smartest student made a lot of mistakes.       |
| Финн-влак салмиякким моткоч йоратат. Мороженыйыш <u>ито</u> тудым пыштат. | Finns really like salmiakki. They <u>even</u> put it into ice cream.              |

### 9.5.32. *йöра* ‘good, fine, okay’

← *йöраш (-ем)* ‘to be suitable, to do’

|  |   |
|--|---|
| – Нелеш ит нал, коло минут гыч йынгыртен кертат?                                   | – Sorry, can you call me in twenty minutes?   |
| – <u>Йөра</u> , нимат огыл, йынгыртем.   | – <u>Okay</u> , no problem, I'll call (you then).   |
| – Айда таче нигуш она кай, йөра?   | – Let's not go anywhere today, okay?  |
| – <u>Йөра</u> .  | – <u>Okay</u> .   |
| Поезд таче вич минутлан ондакрак тарванен. <u>Йөра</u> мый жапыште вокзалыш толым. | The train left five minutes early today. <u>Good</u> then that I came to the train station in time. |
| Уремыште пеш йүштө улмаш. <u>Йөра</u> эше шокшо кофтым пеленем налынам.            | It was very cold outside. <u>Good</u> then that I took my warm jacket along.                        |

### 9.5.33. *керек* 'at least, even; well, good, okay; all the same, makes no difference'

As regards indefinite forms created with this word, see 5.7.1 – page 152.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Жапда уке, палем, но <u>керек</u> лучко минутлан чайым йүаш пурыза. | I know you don't have time, but <u>do at least</u> come in for tea for fifteen minutes. |
| Шинчалеш <u>керек</u> сакырым шаве, садак мўян ок лий. (Калыкмут)   | <u>You can</u> add sugar to salt, it still won't become sweet. (Proverb)                |
| <u>Керек</u> , кеч-мом ойлыза, а мый мөнгө каем.                    | Say what you will, <u>well okay</u> , I'm going home.                                   |
| – Комедийым але триллерым ончынет?                                  | – Do you want to see a comedy or a thriller?  |
| – Мылам <u>керек</u> .  | – <u>It's all the same</u> to me.   |

### 9.5.34. *кернак(ак)* 'really, truly, absolutely, definitely, for sure'

The frequently used form *кернакак*, containing the clitic *-ак* (see 9.1.2 – page 330), is more emphatic.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ольош <u>кернак</u> черле: мый тудым эмлымверыште ужинам.  | Olyosh <u>really</u> is sick: I saw him in the hospital.               |
| <u>Кернак</u> , кушто ме уке улына, тушто эре сай.         | <u>It's true that</u> the grass is always greener on the other side.   |
| Иванов <u>кернак</u> лу йылмым пала, але тиде манеш-манеш? | Does Ivanov <u>really</u> know ten languages, or is this just a rumor? |
| Те <u>кернакак</u> кенгежым Марий Элыш миеда?              | Are you <u>really</u> going to Mari El in the summer?                  |

### 9.5.35. *кеч* 'I wish, if only; at least, if only'

As regards indefinite forms created with this word, see 5.7.1 – page 152.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Индийышке <u>кеч</u> ик гана мияш ыле!                   | To go to India <u>but</u> once!                                      |
| Уремыште пылан, пычкемыш. <u>Кеч</u> кече ончалже ыле!   | It's cloudy and dark out. <u>If only</u> the sun would shine!        |
| Ой мыняр кутырет! <u>Кеч</u> вич минут шып лийын кертат? | Oh how much you talk! Can you be quiet <u>even</u> for five minutes? |
| Нигон жапше уке. <u>Кеч</u> тый мылам полшен кертат?     | Nobody has time. Can you <u>at least</u> help me?                    |

### 9.5.36. *коеш* 'it seems, looks like'

← *кояш (-ям)* 'to appear; to seem'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Коля экзаменлан йөршын тунемын огыл, <u>коеш</u> .                                    | Kolya didn't learn for the exam at all, <u>it seems</u> .   |
| Петя урокыштак мала – географий тудлан онай огыл, <u>коеш</u> .                       | Petya is sleeping in class. <u>It seems</u> geography doesn't interest him.                         |
| Паркыште ур-влак кид гычак кочкыт – айдеме деч пырчат огыл <u>лүд</u> , <u>коеш</u> . | The squirrels eat from people's hands in the park. They don't fear people at all, <u>it seems</u> . |
| Корнышто пробкыш логалынна – вашлиймашыш вараш кодына, <u>коеш</u> .                  | We hit a traffic jam on the road. <u>Looks like</u> we'll be late to the meeting.                   |

### 9.5.37. *конешне* 'of course, certainly, sure'

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Күлеш гын, меат, <u>конешне</u> , тыланда полшена.  | If necessary, we too can help you, <u>of course</u> .                |
| – Нелеш ида нал, пураш лиеш?                        | – Excuse me, may I come in?  |
| – <u>Конешне</u> , пура!                            | – <u>Of course</u> , come in!  |
| – Кузе шонет, эрла марий спектакльыш каяш але огыл? | – What do you think, should (I) go to the Mari play tomorrow or not? |
| – <u>Конешне</u> , кай! А мыйым от үж мо?           | – Go, <u>of course</u> ! And won't you invite me?                    |

9.12. Insert the fitting particle. The options are given below.

1. Пиццышке сырым, помидорым, понгтым, оливкым – ..., холодильникеште мо уло, чылам пышташ лиеш.
2. – Мемнам вучалтен кертыда?  
– ..., вучалтена.
3. Коля – эн сай, ўшанле йолташем. Тудлан ... миллионым пу, тунамат тудо мыйым ок ужале.
4. Финляндийыште саунышко шуко коштынат ...
5. Команмелнам ышташ ... кум-ныл муно күлеш.

(дыр, керек, ик, икмана, йөра)

6. ... ик гана кайык гай чонешташ ыле!
7. – Марий йылмым школышто туныктат мо?  
– ..., туныктат, но утлакшым яллаште.
8. Вескана финн-угор шымлызе-влакын конгрессышт вич ий гыч ... лиеш.
9. Марина чўчкыдын Шкетан театрыш, марий концертыш коштеш, тыгак «Эрвелмарий» ансамблыште кушта. Марий тўвырам йөрата, ...
10. ..., кажне еглан шке шочмо кундемже шерге.

(коеш, иже, кеч, кернакак, конешне)

### 9.5.38. *кузе* 'what? come again?; how ... (strengthening)'

As regards the usage of this word as an interrogative 'how', see 5.5 – page 147.

|                                      |   |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| – Ачай, авай, эрла мый ўдырым налам. | – Dad, mom, I'm getting married tomorrow!         |
| – <u>Кузе</u> ?! Тиде чын мо?        | – <u>Come again</u> ?? Is that true?              |
| – Вашке у машинам налам.             | – I'll buy a new car soon.                        |
| – А оксажым кушеч налат?             | – But where will you get the money?               |
| – <u>Кузе</u> кушеч? Тый пуэт.       | – <u>What do you mean</u> , where from? From you. |
| Ой, изи ўдыржō <u>кузе</u> кушта!    | Oh <u>how</u> the little girl dances!             |
| <u>Кузе</u> мур! Суксо гай.          | <u>How</u> s/he sings! Like an angel.             |

### 9.5.39. *кунам* 'how, when (used in rhetorical questions)'

As regards the usage of this word as an interrogative 'when', see 5.5 – page 147.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Конкурслан тынар ямдылалтынат гын, <u>кунам</u> от сенге? Икымше верым налат, ужат. | If you prepared for the competition this much, <u>how then</u> won't you win? You'll come in first, you'll see. |
| Теңыз серыште ошмаште изи шергашым <u>кунам</u> муам? Конешне, ом му.               | <u>How</u> am I going to find a little ring on the sea shore in the sand? Of course I won't.                    |
| Чодыраште шкетын йомынам гын, <u>кунам</u> ом лүд? Мемнан дене вет маскажат коштеш. | If I got lost in the forest on my own, <u>how could I</u> not be scared? There are even bears about, after all. |
| – Салам лийже! Те мыйым шарнеда? Ик ий ончыч Москошто конференцийште вашлийынна.    | – Good day! Do you remember me? We met a year ago at a conference in Moscow.                                    |
| – <u>Кунам</u> ом шарне? Мутат уке, шарнем.   | – <u>How could I not</u> remember (you)? Of course I remember (you).  |

### 9.5.40. *лаваса* 'sure, certainly, of course'

This particle is comparatively rare in usage.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Тыгай йүштö игечыште мөңгыштö шокшо чайым йуаш сай, <u>лаваса</u> . | It's good to drink tea at home in such cold weather, <u>of course</u> . |
| Молан кычкырет? Соңгыра омыл <u>лаваса</u> .                        | Why are you screaming? I'm not deaf, <u>you know</u> .                  |

### 9.5.41. *лач(ак)* 'only, exclusively; isn't that so, isn't that right, isn't it'

The frequently used form *лачак*, containing the clitic *-ак* (see 9.1.2 – page 330), is more emphatic.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ялна пытен гаяк: кызыт <u>лач</u> ик пörтыштö ик еш ила.                                 | Our village has almost died out. There is <u>just</u> one house with a family living in it left. |
| Вашкыза! <u>Лач</u> тиде арняште мемнан кевытыште чыла вургемым пел аклан налын кертыда. | Hurry! <u>Only</u> this week you can buy all the clothes for half-price in our store.            |
| – Айста Галям пашашке налына.  | – Let's hire <u>Galya</u> .  |
| – Мыят шонем, <u>лач</u> тыгай ең мыланна күлеш.   | – I agree, we need <u>just</u> that kind of person.  |
| <u>Лачак</u> мо Америкышке илаш куснет?  | <u>Is it true that</u> you are moving to America?  |

### 9.5.42. *лиеш* '(denotes irreality, uncertainty); soon, shortly'

← *лияш (-ям)* 'to be; to become' (see 7.5 – page 295)

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Айда шоналтена: мутлан, шуко оксат да яра жапет уло <u>лиеш</u> , мом ышташ тўнгалат? | Let's think: for example, <u>if you had</u> a lot of money and free time, what would you do?           |
| Диссертацийым араленат <u>лиеш</u> , вараже могай пашам шукташ шонет?                 | <u>Let's presume</u> you've defended your dissertation, what kind of work are you planning to do then? |
| Эркын 13 ий <u>лиеш</u> йотэлыште илем.   | <u>Soon</u> it'll be thirteen years that I've been living abroad.                                      |

### 9.5.43. *лийже* 'let's imagine, let's suppose, suppose'

← *лияш (-ям)* 'to be; to become' (see 7.5 – page 295)

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Президент улат <u>лийже</u> . Эн ончыч мом ыштет ыле?  | <u>Let's imagine</u> you're the president. What's the first thing you would do?  |
| Йӧра, ялышке илаш куснет <u>лийже</u> . Но вет тушто мланде пашам ыштыман, а тый тидым нигунам ыштен отыл. | Okay, <u>suppose</u> you move to the countryside. But there one has to work on the fields, and you have never done this. |
| Фирмым почат <u>лийже</u> , а вараже кузе пашам виктарынет?  | <u>Let's suppose</u> you open a company, how will you direct the work then?  |
| Йӧра, тиде гана те сенгында <u>лийже</u> , но вескана ме виянрак да писырак лийына.                        | Okay, <u>let's say</u> you won this time, but next time we will be stronger and faster.                                  |

#### 9.5.44. *ма* '(interrogative particle)'

The usage of this particle as an interrogative particle indicating a polar (yes/no) question resembles the usage of *мо* (see 9.5.46 – page 349), but is more typical of spoken language.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Тыгай неле сумкам нумал сенет <u>ма</u> ?                                       | <u>Will you</u> manage to carry such a heavy bag?  |
| Омат пале, автобус жапыште миен шуэш <u>ма</u> : игече пеш начар, корно яклака. | I don't even know <u>whether</u> the bus will come on time. The weather's quite bad and the roads are muddy. |
| Пашашке таче от кай <u>ма</u> ?   | <u>Aren't you</u> going to work today?   |
| Коват йодеш, кенгежым ялышке миет <u>ма</u> ?                                   | Your grandmother is asking <u>whether</u> you are going to the countryside in the summer.                    |

#### 9.5.45. *ман* 'well I never, how about that'

← *манаш (-ам)* 'to say'

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Илышыже <u>ман</u> : кушко гына ок кондо! Австралийышкат миен шуынам. | <u>Well that's</u> life: where won't it take you! I've even made it to Australia.              |
| Игечыже <u>ман</u> : январь тылзе, а уремыште лум шула.               | <u>Well that's</u> the weather <u>for you</u> : it's January, and the snow is melting outside. |

#### 9.5.46. *мо* '(interrogative particle); really, isn't that so'

This word is placed after an element that is subject to a polar (yes/no) question (see [...] – page [...]) - most commonly the finite verb of a sentence. As regards the usage of this word as an interrogative pronoun 'what', see 5.5 – page 147.

See [...] – page [...] – as regards the formation, and answering, of polar (yes/no) questions.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Те кусарыше улыда <u>мо</u> ?            | <u>Are you</u> a translator?                   |
| Марий калык кочкыш тамле <u>мо</u> ?     | <u>Is the Mari national cuisine</u> tasty?     |
| Тый конференцийышке от кай <u>мо</u> ?   | <u>Aren't you</u> going to the conference?     |
| Ончыкылык нерген шонен отыл <u>мо</u> ?  | <u>Didn't you</u> think about the future?      |
| Экзамен верч <u>мо</u> тыге тургыжланет? | <u>Is it the exam</u> you're so worried about? |
| Алло! Метрошто <u>мо</u> кудалат?        | Hello! Are you <u>on the metro</u> ?           |

The word combination *мо тиде*, followed by a noun, can be used to express denial or doubt,

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Мо тиде</u> паша? Теве цементым лугымаш – тиде паша. | <u>You call this</u> work? Mixing cement – that's work!                            |
| <u>Мо тиде</u> кофе? Теве Италийыште кофе дык кофе.     | <u>You call this</u> coffee? What they've got in Italy, that's what I call coffee. |

#### 9.5.47. *мо вара* 'so what, well, really, then'

See also *вара* 'well, then' (9.5.11 – page 340).

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Киношко каена <u>мо вара</u> ? Кумылет уло мо? | Are we going to the movies <u>then</u> ? Are you in the mood? |
| Манси йылмым тунемат <u>мо вара</u> ? Неле мо? | Are you studying Mansi <u>then</u> ? Is it difficult?         |

### 9.5.48. *могай* ‘what kind of, how (expressing doubt/denial, intensification)’

As regards the usage of this word as an interrogative ‘what kind of’, see 5.5 – page 147.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Вүдшö <u>могай</u> йүштö!                     | <u>How</u> cold the water is!   |
| Марий пүртүсшö <u>могай</u> сылне!            | <u>How</u> beautiful Mari nature is!                                  |
| <u>Могай</u> тиде кенез? Кок тылзе йүр йүреш. | <u>What kind of</u> summer is this? It’s been raining for two months. |

9.13. Insert the fitting particle. The options are given below.

1. ... тудо мурыз: ни йүкшö уке, ни сценыште шкенжым кучен ок мошто.
2. Книгам эрла марте лудын пытарем: ... 20 лаштык кодын.
3. – Эрла парашют дене төрштем. Ончаш толат мо?  
– ...?! Ушет каен?
4. Салам, ала-кушко вашкет ...?
5. Вашке лу ий ... гидлан пашам ыштем.  
(кузе, ма, лиеш, лач, могай)
6. Могай тыште мотор! Тыгай сылне верыште ... лийынам? Ик ганат лийын омыл.
7. Лотерей дене миллионым модын налынат ... . Тынар окса дене мом ыштет ыле?
8. Игече кечан гын, кумылжат веселарак, ... .
9. Пүртүсшö ...: олаште тыгайым от уж.
10. Самырык театрыште у спектакльым ужынат ... ?  
(мо, лийже, ман, лаваса, кунам)

### 9.5.49. *-мозо* ‘what’s ..., it’s not about ..., who cares about ...’

< *мо* ‘what’

This particle is separated from the preceding word by a hyphen. Its usage is typical of spoken language. It follows nouns (including nominalized participles, see 11.3.1 – page 373) marked with the possessive suffix third person singular (in a determinative/emphatic function, see 9.1.5 – page 332) and indicates that something is not the important thing, or the reason, in a particular situation.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Оксаже-мозо</u> , паша эн ончыч чонлан келшыше лийшаш. | <u>It’s not about the money</u> , it’s more important that you like your work.     |
| <u>Понгыжо-мозо</u> , яндар южлан көра чодыраш миенна.    | We went to the forest <u>not because of the mushrooms</u> , but for the fresh air. |
| <u>Нойымыжо-мозо</u> , йүдлан садак ала-кушан шогалман.   | <u>Not (just) because we’re tired</u> , we should find a place to spend the night. |
| <u>Келшымыже-мозо</u> , пашаште мом ойлат, тудым ыштыман. | <u>If you like it or not</u> , what they tell you to do at work, you have to do.   |

### 9.5.50. *можыч* ‘perhaps, maybe, possibly’

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Тый ноен отыл? <u>Можыч</u> , кофем йўына?  | Aren't you tired? <u>Maybe</u> let's drink some coffee?                                  |
| Эрла, <u>можыч</u> , Чебоксарыш каем. Кастене пале лиеш.                          | Tomorrow, <u>maybe</u> , I'll go to Cheboksary. I'll know in the evening.                |
| – Оля кушто?<br>– Ом пале. <u>Можыч</u> , тудо кевытышке лектын?                  | – Where is Olya?<br>– I don't know. <u>Maybe</u> she went to the store?                  |
| – <u>Можыч</u> , тудо мӱнгышкӱ каен?<br>– <u>Можыч</u> . Туддеч чылам вучаш лиеш. | – <u>Maybe</u> s/he went home?<br>– <u>Maybe</u> . You can expect anything from him/her. |

### 9.5.51. *моли* 'maybe, perhaps, aren't (you)'

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Те йотэл гыч улыда <u>моли</u> ? Верысе калык гай ода кой.  | Aren't you from abroad? You don't look like the local people.  |
| Пошкудо-влак пайремым эртарат <u>моли</u> ?<br>Тиде йоча нигунам ок нойо <u>моли</u> ? Кечыгут тыш-туш куржталеш. | Are the neighbors having a party <u>or what</u> ?<br>Doesn't this child ever get tired <u>then</u> ? It's been running back and forth all day. |

### 9.5.52. *монь* 'and the like, and so on, and others, et cetera, etc.'

See also *да монь* 'and the like, and so on' (9.5.22 – page 343).

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Маша диетым куча: шоколадым <u>монь</u> йӱршын ок коч. | Masha is on a diet, and not eating chocolate <u>and the such</u> at all.     |
| Витя эре пашам ышта – канаш <u>монь</u> жапше уке.     | Vitya is always working, he has no time for relaxation <u>and the like</u> . |

### 9.5.53. *-мочет* 'forgetting about ..., ignoring ...'

< *мо* 'what'

This particle is separated from the preceding word by a hyphen. Its usage is typical of spoken language. It follows nouns (including nominalized participles, see 11.3.1 – page 373) marked with the possessive suffix second person singular (in a determinative/emphatic function, see [...]) and indicates that something is not taken into consideration or done in a particular situation.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тортет- <u>мочет</u> , йоча-влак пӱлекым почаш куржыныт.           | <u>Forgetting about the cake</u> , the children ran to open the presents.                 |
| Экзаменет- <u>мочет</u> , рвезе-влак адак футболла модыт.          | <u>Not thinking about the exam</u> , the boys are playing football outside.               |
| Васлий пашаш вашка. <u>Кочмет-мочет</u> , писын чия да лектын кая. | Vasliy is rushing to work. <u>Without eating</u> , he gets dressed quickly and heads out. |
| Аня сырен да, <u>чеверласымет-мочет</u> , пӱрт гыч куржын лекте.   | Anya got angry and, <u>without saying goodbye</u> , ran out of the house.                 |

### 9.5.54. *-моэм* 'forgetting about ..., ignoring ...'

< *мо* 'what'

This particle is separated from the preceding word by a hyphen. Its usage is typical of spoken language. It is a less commonly used alternative of *-мочет*, see 9.5.53 (page 351).

### 9.5.55. *мутлан* 'for example'

← *мут* 'word'

|  |   |
|--|---|
| – Кунам вашлийына?<br>– Айда вес арняште. <u>Мутлан</u> , вүргечын.  | – When will we meet?<br>– Let's say next week. <u>For example</u> on Wednesday.   |
| – Йöратыме марий мутет уло мо?<br>– Тыгайже шуко уло, <u>мутлан</u> , «үштервоштыр», «чүчкыдын».                       | – Do you have a favorite Mari word?<br>– There are many, <u>for example</u> , “үштервоштыр” (“broom”) and “чүчкыдын” (“frequently”).              |
| – Самырык марий мурызо кокла гыч көм колышташ темлет?<br>– <u>Мутлан</u> , Александр Речкыным, Марина Садовам, Аринам. | – Which young Mari singers do you suggest (I) listen to?<br>– <u>For example</u> , Aleksandr Rechkin, Marina Sadova, Arina.                       |
| – Күсотыштö те лийында мо?<br>– Шуко гана. Пытартыш гана, <u>мутлан</u> , кенжежым Унчо ялыште.                        | – Have you been to a sacred grove?<br>– Many times. Last time, <u>for example</u> , in summer in the village of Uncho (Russian <i>Шоруньжа</i> ). |

#### 9.5.56. *на* ‘okay, here, here you are, take it’

|  |   |
|--|---|
| – Кочкашна иктаж-мо уло?<br>– Мелна уло. <u>На</u> , коч!  | – Do we have anything to eat?<br>– There are pancakes. <u>Here</u> , eat! |
| – Ковай, а ушкаллан киндым пуаш лиеш?<br>– <u>На</u> , пу! | – Grandmother, can I feed bread to the cow?<br>– <u>Okay</u> , go ahead!  |
| – Мыят олмам кочнем.<br>– <u>На</u> !                      | – I also want to eat an apple.<br>– <u>Here</u> !                         |
| – Мыйын сумкам пуэт?<br>– <u>На</u> , кучо!                | – Will you give me my bag?<br>– <u>Here</u> , take it!                    |

#### 9.5.57. *наверне* ‘probably, most likely, in all likelihood; certainly, for sure’

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Те вет тенгече Йошкар-Олашке толында?<br>Какшан серым ужында, <u>наверне</u> ? | So you came to Yoshkar-Ola yesterday?<br>You've seen the shore of the Kokshaga, <u>probably</u> ? |
| Курткем тоштемьн – ум налаш күлеш, <u>наверне</u> .                            | My jacket's gotten old. <u>I guess</u> I have to buy a new one.                                   |
| Ме каена, <u>наверне</u> : унаште сай, а мөнгыштö сайрак.                      | We're leaving, <u>probably</u> : it's good to be a guest, but it's better to be at home.          |

#### 9.5.58. *неужели* ‘really?, is it possible?’

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Неужели</u> Ивук мыйым кудалта, огешат чамане мо?                                  | Ivuk will <u>probably</u> break up with me, has he no pity?                                   |
| <u>Неужели</u> Иван Смирновым ода пале? Тудо вет пеш лүмлö марий артист.              | <u>Is it possible</u> you don't know Ivan Smirnov? He's quite a famous Mari actor, after all. |
| – Компьютерем пудырген – чыла данный йомын.<br>– <u>Неужели</u> нимат ышташ огеш лий? | – My computer broke; I've lost all my data.<br>– Is there <u>really</u> nothing one can do?   |
| <u>Неужели</u> 50 ияш улыда? Пеш самырыкын койыда.                                    | <u>Is it possible</u> you're 50? You look very young.   |

#### 9.5.59. *но* ‘yes, uh-huh; exactly, precisely, indeed’

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.



|  |  |
|--|--|
| – Эчук ожно спортсмен лийын мо?                              | – Was Echuk once an athlete?                       |
| – Спортсмен <u>но</u> : футболла модын.                      | – <u>Indeed</u> , he was: he played football.      |
| – Оля каласыш, пуйто тый санскрит йылмым тунемаш тўнгалынат. | – Olya said that you’ve started studying Sanskrit. |
| – Тўнгалынам <u>но</u> .                                     | – <u>Yes</u> , I have.                             |
| – Тый вет эрла ялышке кает?                                  | – So you’re going to the countryside tomorrow?     |
| – <u>Но</u> , кок кечылан.                                   | – <u>Yes</u> , for two days.                       |
| – Юлялан мурызоз лияш кўлеш.                                 | – Yulya has to become a singer.                    |
| – <u>Но</u> , мыят тыге шонем.                               | – <u>Exactly</u> , I think so too.                 |

### 9.5.60. *ну* ‘really, quite; well, so; is that so, really; uh-huh’

In the meanings ‘is that so, really; uh-huh’, the usage of this particle is typical for spoken language.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ала-кў поездышке <u>ну</u> куржеш, <u>ну</u> куржеш. | Somebody is <u>really</u> running for the train. |
| <u>Ну</u> , мом кастене ыштена?                      | <u>Well</u> , what will we do in the evening?    |
| <u>Ну</u> , каена.                                   | <u>Well</u> , let’s go.                          |
| – Тенгече 30 килоан колым кученам.                   | – I caught a 30 kilo fish yesterday.             |
| – <u>Ну</u> ?  | – <u>Really</u> ?                                |
| – Ноенат мо?   | – Are you tired?                                 |
| – <u>Ну</u> , омам шуэш.                             | – <u>Uh-huh</u> , I want to sleep.               |

### 9.5.61. *огыл* ‘not’

The third person singular present tense form of the negation verb (see 7.3.1 – page 278) *огыл* ‘(s/he/it) is not’ can be used to negate other parts of speech, functioning then as a negation particle. It is placed after the constituent it negates, though a number of particles can occur between the negated constituent and *огыл*.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тиде мотор шергакан машина, чаманаш логалеш, <u>мемнан огыл</u> .    | This beautiful and expensive car, unfortunately, is <u>not ours</u> .                                   |
| Сумкат <u>неде огыл</u> гын, айда нумалаш полшем.                    | If your bag is <u>not heavy</u> , I’ll help carry it.   |
| <u>Чодыраште йомаш огыл</u> манын, пеленна компасым налынна.         | In order <u>not to get lost in the forest</u> , we took a compass along.                                |
| <u>Шоңшо огыл</u> – иман, <u>шудо огыл</u> – ужалге. (Тушто: кактус) | It’s <u>not a hedgehog</u> , but it’s prickly. It’s <u>not grass</u> , but it’s green. (Riddle: cactus) |
| <u>Кочкашат огыл</u> , <u>йўашат огыл</u> , тендам ужаш толынна.     | We <u>didn’t come to eat or to drink</u> , we came to see you.  |

9.14. Insert the fitting particle. The options are given below.

- Дискотекешке от кошт вет?  
– Ом кошт ...: тыгайлан шонго улам.
  - Могай финн-угор йылмым эше тунемнет?  
– ..., эрзя ден мокша йылмым.
  - Тый черле улат гын, ..., тылат иктаж-могай эмым кондаш?
  - ... ушкалым ик ганат лўштен одал? Толза мемнан деке ялышке, мый тендам туныктем.
  - У сумкам налыннат ...? Тыгай дене тыйым але ужын омыл.
- (можыч, моли, неужели, но, мутлан)

6. – Вес арняште президент дене вашлиям.  
– ...? Кернакак мо?
7. Кайык ... – муным мунча. (Тушто: парентге).
8. – Эрла гыч мемнан университетыште вес вуйлатыше лиеш.  
– Кузе?!! Мый ом ўшане.  
– ..., луд, интернетыште тыге возат.
9. Катя утларак гуманитар предметым йӱрата, математикым ... пешыжак огеш умыло.
10. Иван Ямбердов нерген колында, ... . Тудо лўмлӱ марий сўретче.
- (наверне, монь, на, ну, огыл)

### 9.5.62. -огыла 'it's just as well, well then, well'

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language. It is attached to the word it follows with a hyphen.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Паша гыч каяш йодыт гын, каем-огыла.          | If I'm asked to leave my job, <u>fine</u> , I'll go.       |
| Экзаменлан кумытаным налам гынат, йӱра-огыла. | Even if I get a three on the exam, it's <u>still</u> okay. |
| Тек вурсат мыйым-огыла – мый ом сыре.         | <u>So</u> let them yell at me, I won't get angry.          |
| Кузе каласеда, туге ыштена-огыла.             | The way you say, <u>well</u> that's how we will do it.     |

### 9.5.63. очыни 'probably, most likely, surely'

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Катя концертышке ок кай, очыни: пашаже ятыр.                 | Katya won't go to the concert, <u>most likely</u> – she has a lot of work to do. |
| Те Хельсинким сайын паледа, очыни. Кум ий тыште иледа, туге? | You <u>must</u> know Helsinki well. You lived there for three years, didn't you? |
| Кызыт вашкет, очыни. Кунам вашлийын кертына?                 | You're <u>probably</u> in a hurry now. When can we meet?                         |
| Очыни, одыла мурат: одо йылме гай шокта.                     | They're <u>probably</u> singing in Udmurt – it sounds like Udmurt.               |

### 9.5.64. пеш йӱра 'very good, great'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| - Ончал, мыняр колым кученам.                 | - Look how many fish I caught.                                    |
| - Пеш йӱра. Кастене тугеже кол шўрым шолтена. | - <u>Very good</u> . Then we'll cook fish soup in the evening.    |
| - Поездлан билетым налынат мо?                | - Did you buy a ticket for the train?                             |
| - Налынам.                                    | - I did.  |
| - Пеш йӱра тугеже. Огеш код манын, лўдынам.   | - <u>Very good</u> then. I was afraid there wouldn't be any left. |
| Марла умыледа гын, пеш йӱра.                  | If you understand Mari, <u>great</u> .                            |
| Мылам полшет гын, пеш йӱра ыле.               | If you'd help me, it'd be <u>great</u> .                          |

### 9.5.65. пожале 'probably, very likely, most likely'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Жап шагал кодеш – вокзалыш, пожале, такси дене каена. | There isn't much time left. We'll <u>most likely</u> take a taxi to the train station.        |
| Сусыр огыл гын, Витя таңасымаште, пожале, сенга ыле.  | If it hadn't been for his injury, Vitya would <u>very likely</u> have won at the competition. |
| Ўстелым, пожале, покшкеке шындына.                    | <u>Probably</u> we'll put the table in the middle.  |
| Те, пожале, чыным ойледа. Тыланда ўшаныме шуэш.       | You're <u>probably</u> telling the truth. (I) want to believe you.                            |

### 9.5.66. *пожалуйста* 'please; by all means, go ahead; you're welcome'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Каласыза, <u>пожалуйста</u> , вокзал деке могай автобус кая?        | Tell me, <u>please</u> , which bus goes to the station.                             |
| Шичса, <u>пожалуйста</u> .  | Sit down, <u>please</u> .   |
| Кочмыда шуэш гын, <u>пожалуйста</u> : шўрат уло, чайымат йўаш лиеш. | If you're hungry, <u>help yourselves</u> : there's soup, and you can drink the tea. |
| - Полшымыланда тау!   | - Thanks for your help!   |
| - <u>Пожалуйста</u> .   | - <u>You're welcome</u> .   |

### 9.5.67. *поро лий(за)* 'please'

The singular form *поро лий* is used to address one person; the plural form *поро лийза* is used to address several people, or someone with whom one uses the pronoun *me*.

|                                       |                                    |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| <u>Поро лий</u> , вўдым кондо.        | <u>Please</u> bring some water.    |
| Эркынрак ойло, <u>поро лий</u> .      | Speak more slowly, <u>please</u> . |
| <u>Поро лийза</u> , мемнам вучалтыза. | <u>Please</u> wait for us.         |
| Омсам почса, <u>поро лийза</u> .      | Open the door, <u>please</u> .     |

### 9.5.68. *просто* 'just, simply, absolutely'

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| - Алло, Миша?                          | - Hello, Misha.                                   |
| - Салам! Иктаж-мо лийын мо?            | - Hello! Has something happened?                  |
| - Уке, <u>просто</u> кутыралтынем ыле. | - No, I <u>just</u> wanted to talk a little.      |
| - Молан от йўштыл? Ийын от мошто мо?   | - Why aren't you swimming? Can't you swim?        |
| - Моштем, <u>просто</u> вўд йўштö.     | - I can, <u>it's just</u> that the water is cold. |

### 9.5.69. *пуйто* 'as if, it's like'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Тиде ўдыр <u>пуйто</u> ала-могай йомак гыч лектын.    | <u>It's like</u> this girl walked out of some kind of fairy tale. |
| Тый мом мыйым адак туныктет? <u>Пуйто</u> чыла палет. | Why are you lecturing me again? <u>As if</u> you knew everything. |
| Ўпшö тудын пуйто порсын.                              | <u>It's like</u> his/her hair is silk.                            |
| Айда тылат полшем. <u>Пуйто</u> тылат польш огеш кўл. | Let me help you. <u>As if</u> you didn't need help.               |

### 9.5.70. *разве* 'then (in rhetorical questions)'

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|                               |                                       |
|-------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| Те <u>разве</u> эше ода мале? | You're not sleeping yet <u>then</u> ? |
| Тиде <u>разве</u> кевыт огыл? | This isn't a store <u>then</u> ?      |

### 9.5.71. *садак* 'all the same, makes no difference; after all, nonetheless'

|   |  |
|---|--|
| - Кушан шинчена?                                      | - Where shall we sit?  |
| - Шке ойырыза, мыланна <u>садак</u> .                 | - Decide yourselves, <u>it doesn't matter</u> to us.                                 |
| Айда понгым поген ужалаш тўналына, <u>садак</u> окса. | Let's start picking and selling mushrooms, it won't be much, but <u>still</u> money. |

### 9.5.72. *садыгак* 'all the same, makes no difference; after all, nonetheless'

< *садыге* 'so, thus' (see 5.2.3 – page 140)

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Могай игече лиеш, мыланна <u>садыгак</u> .<br>Йўран лиеш гынат, олам ончаш каена. | No matter what the weather's like, it's <u>all the same</u> to us. Even if it's rainy, we'll go look at the city. |
| Йёсö лиеш гынат, <u>садыгак</u> артистлан тунемаш пурем.                          | Even if it's hard, I'll <u>still</u> start studying to become an actor.   |

### 9.5.73. *содыки* 'all the same, nevertheless, after all'

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| <u>Содыки</u> толынат? Ынет тол ыле вет.                    | You came <u>all the same</u> ? You didn't want to come.                       |
| Тыланда сöрасаш кўлеш: <u>содыки</u> эн сай йолташ лийында. | You have to make up with each other: you were best friends <u>after all</u> . |

9.15. Insert the fitting particle. The options are given below.

- Алло, Вася! Кушто улат? 10 минут гыч экзамен тўналеш.  
– Кузе 10 минут гыч? ... тудо эрла огыл лийшаш ыле?
- Моско гыч Йошкар-Олашке поезд дене кудалына, ...: тыге йöнанрак лиеш.
- Мыланна кок билетым Волжск марте пуыза, ... .
- Книга пешыжак онгай огыл гынат, поездыште лудаш йöра ... .
- Таче 10 шагат маленам, ... мален темын омыл.

(огыла, очыни, пожалуйста, разве, садак)

- Айда пöртым сöрастарена: ... У ий лиеш.
- Вараш кодмылан нелеш ида нал: пробкышто шогенам.  
– ... Йошкар-Олаште тынар машина уло.
- ... , каласыза, куштырак тыште марий пöлекым налаш лиеш?
- Кастене нигуш она кай, ... : мöнгыштö кодына.
- Мо шўлыкан улат? Иктаж-мо лийын мо?  
– Нимат лийын огыл, ... таче кумылем уке.

(пожале, поро лийза, просто, пуйто, содыки)

### 9.5.74. *тевак* 'almost, nearly'

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Тўткö лий: <u>тевак</u> камвонат.                   | Be careful, you're <u>about</u> to fall.                             |
| Маринан кумылжо волен, <u>тевак</u> шорташ тўналеш. | Marina's mood fell; she's <u>near</u> to tears.                      |
| Йыван, балетым ончен, <u>тевак</u> мален колта.     | Watching the ballet, Yyvan is <u>almost</u> falling asleep.          |
| Зонтикым сайрак кучо: <u>тевак</u> чонгешт кая.     | Better hold onto your umbrella, it's <u>almost</u> being blown away. |

### 9.5.75. *теве* 'here, there, look, look here; almost, nearly'

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <u>Те</u> ве тиде пöртыштö Йыван Кырля илен.           | <u>It was</u> in this house that Yyvan Kyrlya lived.                            |
| <u>Те</u> ве йолташет толеш, вашлияш кай.              | <u>Look</u> , your friend is coming, go meet him/her.                           |
| – Нелеш ида нал, мый паша гыч каем.                    | – Sorry, I'm quitting my job.   |
| – <u>Те</u> ве кузе! Эн неле пагытыште мемнам кодынет. | – Well <u>isn't that just fine</u> ! In our hour of need, you want to leave us. |
| Шеклане, <u>те</u> ве вуетым перет.                    | Be careful, you're <u>almost</u> hitting your head.                             |

**9.5.76. *тевыс* ‘here, there, oh look, oh look here; almost, nearly’**

|   |  |
|---|--|
| – Мыйын шергем ужын отыл?   | – You haven’t seen my comb?  |
| – <u>Тевыс</u> : воштончыш ончылно кия.                           | – <u>There</u> , it’s in front of the mirror.                                      |
| – Юля таче огеш тол.  | – Yulya isn’t coming today.  |
| – Кузе ок тол? <u>Тевыс</u> мемнан деке лишемеш.                  | – What do you mean, she’s not coming? <u>There she is</u> , walking towards us.    |
| Кружкам сайрак кучо: <u>тевыс</u> кофем шке ўмбакет велен колтет. | Hold on to the mug better. <u>Look, you’re about to</u> pour coffee over yourself. |

**9.5.77. *товат(am)* ‘really, truly, indeed, for sure, undoubtedly, no doubt’**

The frequently used form *товатат*, containing the clitic *-am* (see 9.1.1 – page 328), is more emphatic.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Марий кундемыште мыланна, <u>товат</u> , келшен. Вес кенгежымат тушко мияш шонена.                 | We <u>really</u> liked it in Mari El. We’re thinking of coming next summer too.  |
| «Кугарня» газет 1-ше апрельыште «Воштылаш, <u>товатат</u> , сулык огыл» мыскара фестивалым эртара. | The newspaper “Kugarnya” (“Friday”) is putting on a humor festival “Laughing <u>really</u> isn’t a crime” on April 1 <sup>st</sup> . |
| – Салам лийже, билет тергымаш.   | – Good day, ticket inspection.   |
| – Ой, билетым, <u>товатат</u> , налынам, но ала-куш йомын, нигушто ом му.                          | – Oh, I <u>really did</u> buy a ticket, but I lost it somewhere, I can’t find it anywhere.   |
| Мундыраштем имыже, ой, кунаре. <u>Товатат</u> , мый шотлен ом пытаре! (Тушто: шоншо)               | Oh how many needles are sticking out of my ball of yarn. <u>Truly</u> , I can’t count them all! (Riddle: hedgehog)                   |

**9.5.78. *товро* ‘of course, certainly, naturally; good, right, okay, fine’**

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language; it occurs comparatively rarely.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Эстон-влаклан финн йылмым тунемаш куштылго, <u>товро</u> . | <u>Of course</u> , studying Finnish is easy for Estonians. |
| – Йылмызе улыда гын, <u>товро</u> , шуко йылмым паледа.    | – If you’re a linguist, you must know many languages.      |
| – Уке, кок йот йылмым веле сайын палем.                    | – No, I only know two foreign languages well.              |
| – Айда эрла вашлийына.                                     | – Let’s meet tomorrow.                                     |
| – Айда, <u>товро</u> .                                     | – <u>Okay</u> , let’s.                                     |

**9.5.79. *мо-мо* ‘that’s why, so that’s why, there you are’**

|   |  |
|---|--|
| – Чайже шокшо.  | – The tea’s hot.   |
| – <u>То-то</u> , йўкшымым вучалте.                            | – <u>Well</u> wait for it to cool down.                            |
| – Ит сыре, йонгылыш лийынам.                                  | – Don’t be angry, I was wrong.                                     |
| – <u>То-то</u> , вескана, иктаж-мом ойлымеке, сайрак шоналте. | – <u>There you are</u> , next time think before you say something. |
| <u>То-то</u> аза магыра: кочмыжо шуэш улмаш.                  | <u>That’s why</u> the child is crying: it was hungry.              |

**9.5.80. *мыгам* ‘as it is, already, even without that’**

← *мыге* ‘so, thus; yes, true, right’, see 5.2.3 – page 140 – and 9.5.81 – page 358. This particle is formed using the clitic *-am* (see 9.1.1 – page 328).

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Айда книга-влакым она нангай: чемодан <u>тугат</u> пеш неле. | Let's not take the books: the suitcase is <u>already</u> heavy.                 |
| Компьютер коклаште шуко ит шинче: шинчат <u>тугат</u> начар. | Don't sit in front of the computer so much, your eyes are bad <u>as it is</u> . |
| Шпаргалке мыланем огеш кўл: мый <u>тугат</u> чыла палем.     | I don't need a crib sheet, I know everything <u>anyway</u> .                    |
| - Тыланда шинчал кўлеш?                                      | - Do you need salt?   |
| - Тау, огеш кўл: салат <u>тугат</u> шинчалан.                | - No, I don't, the salad is salty <u>already</u> .                              |

### 9.5.81. *туге* 'yes, true, right'

See 5.2.3 – page 140 – as regards the pronominal usage 'so, thus' of this word. See [...] – page [...] – as regards the formation, and answering, of polar (yes/no) questions.

|                                  |   |
|----------------------------------|---|
| - Те курыкмарлат кутыреда?       | - Do you speak Hill Mari as well?       |
| - <u>Туге</u> , кутырем изиш.    | - <u>Yes</u> , I speak a little.        |
| - Тый театрыште пашам ыштет вет? | - You work in theater then?             |
| - <u>Туге</u> , лу ий наре.      | - <u>Yes</u> , about ten years already. |
| - Куан ден ойго иквереш коштыт.  | - Joy and sorrow go hand in hand.       |
| - <u>Туге</u> , чын ойлет.       | - <u>Yes</u> , you speak the truth.     |

### 9.5.82. *туге вет* 'indeed, isn't it so'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| «Оңай марий йылме» книга почеш тунемында, <u>туге вет</u> ?                   | You studied with the textbook "Оңай марий йылме", <u>isn't it so</u> ?  |
| Йоча-влак дене <u>туге вет</u> : изи улыт — ик ойго, кушкын шуыт — шўдō ойго. | <u>Isn't it like this</u> with children: when they're small you've got one worry, and when they grow up, a hundred of them. |

### 9.5.83. *туге шол* 'indeed, that's how it is'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| - Лив йылмым тунемын одал вет?                                | - You haven't studied Livonian, then?                           |
| - <u>Туге шол</u> , лив йылмым палыше туныктышына лийын огыл. | - <u>Indeed</u> , we didn't have a teacher that knows Livonian. |
| - Илышыште кеч-мо лийже, оптимист кодаш кўлеш.                | - No matter what happens in life, you have to stay an optimist. |
| - <u>Туге шол</u> , чыным ойлет.                              | - <u>That's how it is</u> , you're right.                       |

### 9.5.84. *тугеже* 'therefore, then, that means'

See 5.2.3 – page 140 – as regards the pronominal usage of this word.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| - Тачылан паша пытен.                        | - Work is done for today.                            |
| - <u>Тугеже</u> ме каен кертына?             | - We can go <u>then</u> ?                            |
| - Мый веган улам.                            | - I'm a vegan.                                       |
| - <u>Тугеже</u> тый мунымат от коч?          | - <u>Then</u> you don't eat eggs either?             |
| - Ме Морко район гыч улына.                  | - We're from Morko (Russian <i>Морку</i> ) District. |
| - <u>Тугеже</u> те олыкмарий улыда?          | - <u>That means</u> you're Meadow Maris?             |
| - Олма мемнан тамле, шере.                   | - Our apples are tasty and sweet.                    |
| - <u>Тугеже</u> мылам кум килом, пожалуйста. | - <u>Then</u> three kilos for me, please.            |

### 9.5.85. *мудо* 'well, of course (emphatic particle)'

As regards this word's usage as a personal pronoun 's/he' and demonstrative pronoun 'that', see 5.1 – page 136 – and 5.2.1 – page 137 – respectively.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Пеш кўлеш гын, йўдымат пашам ыштет <u>тудо</u> .                                      | If necessary, you'll work at night too <u>of course</u> .   |
| Поездышке шуктена <u>тудо</u> , но мый эше кевытышке пурынем ыле. Тушкыжо она шукто.  | <u>Well</u> we'll catch our train, but I had wanted to go to the store still. We won't make it there. |
| Пырысым мыят йөрәтем <u>тудо</u> , но пошкудем гай иканаште лу пырысым кучаш – өрмаш. | I love cats too <u>of course</u> , but keeping ten cats at once like my neighbor does is crazy.       |
| Чипсым кочкаш тамле <u>тудо</u> , но пайдаже нимогай уке.                             | Potato chips are nice to eat <u>of course</u> , but they are not good for you.                        |

9.16. Insert the fitting particle. The options are given below.

1. – Эстонийыште марий-влак шукын улыт вет?  
– ..., шукын – марий рушарня школымат йоча-влаклан почыныт.
2. – Шинчалыкем кушто вара?  
– ..., сангаштет.
3. – Марий мончаштыже могай сай!  
– Кернак мо? Меат ... пурена.
4. Чодыра гыч корнышко мераҥ кудал лектын: ... машина йымаке логалеш.
5. Кризис жапыште пашам муаш неле, ...

(тевак, тевыс, товро, туге, тугеже)

6. ... машина огеш кудал улмаш: бензиным темаш монденам.
7. – «Яндекс. Кусарыше» тыланет кўлеш мо?  
– Огеш кўл, мый ... кусарен кертам.
8. ... тыште, тиде ужар пörтыштö, ме илена.
9. Финн йылмым изиш умылем ..., но кутырен ом мошто.
10. Мый, ..., чыным ойлем. Ондален йörшын омамошто.

(теве, товатат, тугат, то-то, тудо)

### 9.5.86. *тышто* 'there, here (expresses doubt, disdain, denial, objections)'

See 5.2.3 – page 140 – as regards the pronominal usage 'there' of this word. As a particle, this word follows question words, see 5.5 – page 147.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| – Мый нимат ом умыло.  | – I don't understand a thing.   |
| – Мом <u>тышто</u> умылаш: чылам сайын умылтарыме.           | – What's not to understand <u>here</u> ? Everything was explained clearly.          |
| – Яра жапыште мом ыштеда?                                    | – What do you do in your free time?   |
| – Могай <u>тышто</u> яра жап: эре ала-могай паша лектеш.     | – <u>What</u> free time? Some work to do always pops up.                            |
| – Вич ий гыч, шонет, илышет могай лиеш?                      | – What will your life be like in five years do you think?                           |
| – Эрлажат мо лиеш, ом пале, могай <u>тышто</u> вич ий.       | – I don't even know what tomorrow will bring, <u>much less</u> five years from now. |
| – Кузе таче маленат?   | – How did you sleep last night?   |
| – Могай <u>тышто</u> малаш: йўдвошт экзаменлан ямдылалтынам. | – <u>What do you mean</u> , sleep. I studied for the exam all night.                |

### 9.5.87. *тыге* ~ *тыгак* 'yes, really, indeed'

See 5.2.3 – page 140 – as regards the pronominal usage 'like this' of *тыге*. The form *тыгак*, containing the clitic -ак (see 9.1.2 – page 330), is more emphatic.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| – Те вет икымше гана кенгурум ниялтеда?                                 | – This is the first time you’re petting a kangaroo?  |
| – <u>Тыге</u> , икымше. Изиш лүдамат.                                   | – <u>Yes</u> , the first time. And I’m a bit scared. |
| – Уке гыч улым ышташ пеш йөсө.  | – It’s hard to make something from nothing.          |
| – <u>Тыге</u> , Олю, <u>тыге</u> .                                      | – <u>Indeed</u> , Olyu, <u>indeed</u> .              |
| – Йот йылмым тунемаш куштылго огыл.                                     | – It’s not easy to learn a foreign language.         |
| – Тидыже <u>тыгак</u> .   | – <u>How true that is</u> .                          |
| Ме тендан дене 2016-шо ийыште<br>Лахтиште вашлийынна, <u>тыгак</u> вет? | We met you in 2016 in Lahti, isn’t it <u>so</u> ?    |

### 9.5.88. *уж* ‘to be sure, indeed, certainly (emphatic particle)’

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Ойло <u>уж</u> чылам, тўналынат гын.          | <u>Oh</u> say it all then, if you’ve already begun. |
| Изишыже <u>уж</u> марла кутыреда, шонем.      | You <u>must</u> speak a bit of Mari, I think.       |
| Умбаке кузе кайыман, те <u>уж</u> шке паледа. | You <u>must</u> know the way from here yourselves.  |

### 9.5.89. *ужамат* ‘as I see, as I can see, it’s visible, it’s apparent’

← *ужаш (-ам)* ‘to see’

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Тыланда, <u>ужамат</u> , финн-угор йылме-влак онай улыт.        | You’re interested in Finno-Ugric languages, I <u>can see</u> .       |
| <u>Ужамат</u> , тый мыйым шыч пале.                             | <u>It’s clear</u> you didn’t recognize me.                           |
| Ала-мом кычалыда, <u>ужамат</u> . Мый тыланда полшен кертам мо? | You are looking for something, <u>I can see</u> . Can I help you?    |
| Марий монча, <u>ужамат</u> , йотэлысе уна-влаклан чот келшен.   | <u>As I see</u> , the foreign guests liked the Mari sauna very much. |

### 9.5.90. *ужат* ‘see, you see, there you are, it turns out, apparently’

← *ужаш (-ам)* ‘to see’

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Тыят тыште улат, <u>ужат</u> . А мый шонышым, тый мөнгө каенат.                                      | <u>See</u> , you’re here too. And I thought you went home.                            |
| Шылым те ода коч, <u>ужат</u> . Тугеже мый тыланда пакчасаска дене рагум ыштем.                      | <u>So it turns out</u> you don’t eat meat. Then I’ll make you a vegetable ragout.     |
| Турист-влакет ушкалым нигунам лўштен огытыл, <u>ужат</u> . Ончыктем мый тугеже нунылан, мом ыштыман. | <u>See</u> , the tourists had never milked a cow. So I’m showing them how it is done. |
| Лифт адак пудырген, <u>ужат</u> : йолын кўзыман.   | The elevator is broken again, <u>apparently</u> : (I) have to walk up.                |

### 9.5.91. *уже* ‘already, by now, yet’

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Мый тыйым лучко минут <u>уже</u> вучем. Кушто улат?  | I’ve been waiting for you for ten minutes <u>already</u> . Where are you? |
| Шўрда пеш тамле: <u>уже</u> кокымшо кўмыжым кочкина. | Your soup is quite tasty. We’re <u>already</u> eating our second helping. |
| Фестиваль <u>уже</u> эрла тўналеш.                   | The festival begins tomorrow <u>already</u> .                             |
| Ўдырем <u>уже</u> вич ияш.                           | My daughter is <u>already</u> five years old.                             |



### 9.5.92. *уке* 'no (negative answer to a question)'

As regards this word's usage in existential negation ('there is not') and predicative possession ('I don't have', etc.), see 7.5.9 – page 303, and 7.5.11 – page 305, respectively.

See [...] – page [...] – as regards the formation, and answering, of polar (yes/no) questions.

|                                       |  |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| – Тый ханти улат?                     | – You're a Khanty?                           |
| – <u>Уке</u> , мый манси улам.        | – <u>No</u> , I'm a Mansi.                   |
| – Ваня тыйым ондален.                 | – Vanya cheated you.                         |
| – <u>Уке</u> , тыгай лийын огеш керт. | – <u>No</u> , that can't be.                 |
| – Айда кушталтена.                    | – Let's dance.                               |
| – Ой, <u>уке</u> , куштымем ок шу.    | – Oh, <u>no</u> , I don't want to dance.     |
| Ме таче иктаж-куш каена, <u>уке</u> ? | Are we going somewhere today <u>or not</u> ? |

### 9.5.93. *уке шол* 'no (emphatically), not at all, unfortunately not'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| – Тый киндым налынат вет?                           | – Did you buy bread then?   |
| – Уке <u>шол</u> , йөршын монденам.                 | – <u>No</u> , I completely forgot.                                    |
| – Эстон йылмым палет вет?                           | – Do you know Estonian then?  |
| – Уке <u>шол</u> , тунемнем ыле, но жап лийын огыл. | – <u>Not at all</u> , I wanted to learn it, but didn't have the time. |

### 9.5.94. *улыжат* 'only, no more than, in all, altogether'

← *уло* 'there is; whole' (see 7.5.9 – page 303)

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Ковам <u>улыжат</u> ныл классым пытарен.           | My grandmother finished four (school) grades <u>in all</u> . |
| Экзамен марте <u>улыжат</u> ик арня кодын.         | <u>Only</u> one week is left before the exam.                |
| Мемнан кафедрыште <u>улыжат</u> вич ег пашам ышта. | <u>No more than</u> five people work at our department.      |
| Катя тестыште <u>улыжат</u> ик йонгылышым ыштен.   | Katya <u>only</u> made one mistake on the exam.              |

### 9.5.95. *уна* 'there, look there, here'

Usage of this particle is typical of spoken language.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| – Кудо телефоным ойыреда?                | – Which telephone are you going to pick?                   |
| – <u>Уна</u> тидым, йошкартым.           | – This one <u>here</u> , the red one.                      |
| <u>Уна</u> ончо, могай мотор пöрт!       | Look <u>there</u> , what a beautiful house!                |
| <u>Уна</u> тышке шичса.                  | Sit down <u>here</u> .                                     |
| <u>Уна</u> сўан машина-влак толыт, ужат? | <u>There</u> the wedding cars are coming; do you see them? |

### 9.5.96. *чай* 'probably, apparently, presumably; after all'

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Те Российыште иленда <u>чай</u> : рушла акцент деч посна кутыреда.                   | You have <u>presumably</u> lived in Russia: you speak Russian without an accent.           |
| Корно деч вара эн ончыч мушкылтнада <u>чай</u> ?                                     | You <u>probably</u> first want to have a shower after your trip?                           |
| Марий тўвыра нерген tudo шуко палышаш: <u>чай</u> этнографий тоштерыште пашам ыштен. | S/he must know a lot about Mari culture: s/he worked in the ethnographic museum after all. |
| Курыкышко кўзаш неле ок лий, шонем: <u>чай</u> спортсмен улына.                      | Climbing the mountain won't be hard, I think: we're athletes <u>after all</u> .            |

9.17. Insert the fitting particle. The options are given below.

1. Венгр ўдырет марла сайын кутыра, ...: радиоштат, телевиденийштат интервьюм пуэн.
2. – Те соктам иктаж-кунам кочкында мо?  
– ..., кочкын онал. А мо тиде тыгай?
3. – Янош, венгр йылмыштат вет «шөр» мут уло?  
– ..., уло, но тудо сырам ончыкта.
4. – Тазалыкда кузе?  
– Могай ... тазалык: шинчам ок уж, йолем ок кошт, вуем коршта.
5. Кочам ден ковам ... 50 ий пырля илат.

(тушто, тыге, уже, ужат, уке)

6. Моско гыч Йошкар-Олаш автобус дене толында гын, йўдвошт мален одал ...
7. Араб йылмым мемнан группо гыч ... визытын тунемына.
8. – Мыйын телефоным ужын отыл?  
– ... тушто ўстембалне кия.
9. Тый дечет посна нигузе ом керт, полшо ... мылам, пожалуйста.
10. Уна-влакым вашлияш чот ямдылалтында, ...: ўстембалне мо гына уке!

(уж, ужамат, улыжат, уна, чай)

### 9.5.97. *чуч* (гына) 'almost, nearly'

Note that verbs used in combination with this word are negated in Mari.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Самолётышке <u>чуч</u> вараш кодын онал.                         | We <u>almost</u> missed our flight.                   |
| Икана чодыраште <u>чуч</u> йомын омыл.                           | I once <u>almost</u> got lost in the forest.          |
| Катя парняжым кўзё дене <u>чуч гына</u> пўчкын огыл.             | Katya <u>almost</u> cut her finger with the knife.    |
| Ече дене тагасымаште мемнан команде <u>чуч гына</u> сенген огыл. | Our team <u>almost</u> won in the skiing competition. |

### 9.5.98. *чылт* 'right, directly, just (by, etc.); just when; just, just like'

|   |  |
|---|--|
| <u>Чылт</u> университетна воктене сай кафе уло.                 | <u>Right</u> beside our university, there's a good café.             |
| Саню ден Ивук <u>чылт</u> коктын тынар пашам ыштен огыт шукто.  | Sanyu and Ivuk won't manage this much work <u>all</u> by themselves. |
| <u>Чылт</u> пörтышкө пурен шуктышым, виян йўр тўнгале.          | <u>Just when</u> I entered the house, a heavy rain started falling.  |
| Шкеже <u>чылт</u> сорла, но тўредаш огеш лий.<br>(Тушто: тылзе) | It's just like a sickle, but it can't cut. (Riddle: moon)            |

### 9.5.99. *чынак(ак)* 'really, indeed, truly, in fact, right'

← *чын* 'truth; true'

The frequently used form *чынакак*, containing the clitic *-ак* (see 9.1.2 – page 330), is more emphatic.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Чынак, шулдо колын лемже шопо.                   | Soup made from a cheap fish is <u>indeed</u> sour.                         |
| Шке кид дене ыштыме пӧлек, чынак, эн шерге.      | A present you make with your own hands is <u>really</u> the most valuable. |
| Чынакак, сай кумыл дене шолтымо кочкыш тамлырак. | <u>It's true that</u> food made in good spirits is more tasty.             |
| Жап, чынакак, ойгымат паремда.                   | Time <u>does indeed</u> heal sorrows.                                      |

### 9.5.100. чынжым(ак) 'indeed, really, it's true, as a matter of fact, actually'

← чын 'truth; true'

The frequently used form чынжымак, containing the clitic -ак (see 9.1.2 – page 330), is more emphatic.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Чынжым, илыш писын эрта.                          | Life <u>really does</u> go by quickly.                                   |
| Чынжымак, йолташын акшым туткар годым веле палет. | You <u>truly</u> only know the value of a friend when you're in trouble. |
| Чынжымак, экзаменыште жапым шагал пуэныт.         | <u>Really</u> , we were given only little time for the exam.             |
| Чынжым, сайлан гына ўшанаш кўлеш.                 | <u>It's true</u> , one just has to believe in good.                      |

### 9.5.101. шкет(ын) 'only, just'

See 5.3.4 – page 145.

### 9.5.102. шол 'well, really, indeed (emphatic particle); unfortunately'

|  |   |
|--|---|
| – Тылатат польш кўлеш мо?  | – Do you also need help?  |
| – Кўлеш <u>шол</u> .   | – I <u>really</u> do.   |
| – Концертлан ямдылалташ жапна шагал кодеш.                           | – We don't have much time to get ready for the concert.                   |
| – Туге, ик арня кодын <u>шол</u> .                                   | – Yes, there's <u>really</u> (only) a week left.                          |
| Пытартыш автобусыш ышна шукто – ынде йолын каяш логалеш <u>шол</u> . | We didn't catch the last bus, now we have to walk, <u>unfortunately</u> . |
| Тиде тыглай паша огыл <u>шол</u> .                                   | It's not a simple matter, <u>unfortunately</u> .                          |

### 9.5.103. шонет 'it seems, it's like, it's as if'

← шонаш (-ем) 'to think'

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Кава пылан, мардежан – теве йўр тўналеш, <u>шонет</u> . | The sky is cloudy, it's windy – it's going to start raining, <u>it seems</u> .        |
| Курык пеш кўкшын коеш – кўзен от сенге, <u>шонет</u> .  | The mountain looks quite high – <u>it looks like</u> you wouldn't manage to climb it. |
| Иванов мала, <u>шонет</u> . А тудо тыге шонкала.        | <u>You'd think</u> that Ivanov is sleeping. He's actually just thinking.              |

### 9.5.104. э ~ эй 'oh, oh how, oh and how'

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Миша мыскарам пеш каласкален мошта: вашлийына да э воштылта, э воштылта. | Misha really can tell jokes. We meet, and <u>oh and how</u> he makes us laugh. |
| Изи Витю камвозын да эй шортеш.  | Little Vityu fell and <u>oh how he's</u> is crying.                            |

### 9.5.105. эн 'most (superlative particle)'

See 3.2.3 – page 104 – and 8.5.3 – page 324.

**9.5.106. эсогыл 'even'**

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Түнө пеш йүштө, <u>эсогыл</u> шинчавунемат<br>пөршангын.  | It's quite cold outside, <u>even</u> my eyelashes are<br>covered with frost.   |
| Фильм нелырак лийын, <u>эсогыл</u><br>шинчавүдемат лектын.  | The film was quite sad, I <u>even</u> shed some<br>tears.  |
| Аварий деч вара Ольош чылам монден,<br>аважымат <u>эсогыл</u> огеш шарне.                             | After the accident Olyosh forgot everything,<br>he doesn't <u>even</u> remember his mother.                            |
| Тунар кугу, <u>эсогыл</u> чыла мландым петыра,<br>Тунар изи – име нер пурымашкат пура.<br>(Тушто: юж) | It's so big it <u>even</u> covers all of the land, it's so<br>small it fits into the eye of a needle.<br>(Riddle: air) |

**9.5.107. эре 'more and more, increasingly, ever'**

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Изи йоча <u>эре</u> утларак да утларак шортен.       | The little child cried <u>ever</u> more and more.          |
| Альпинист-влак <u>эре</u> күшкө да күшкө<br>күзеныт. | The mountaineers climbed <u>ever</u> higher and<br>higher. |
| Жап <u>эре</u> писынрак да писынрак кая.             | Time is passing <u>more and more</u> quickly.              |
| Игече <u>эре</u> йүкшемда да йүкшемда.               | The weather is getting colder <u>and</u> colder.           |

**9.5.108. эртак 'more and more, increasingly, ever'**

The synonymous particle *эре* (see 9.5.107 – page 364) is considerably more common in usage.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Бензинлан ак <u>эртак</u> шергештеш да<br>шергештеш.            | The price for gas is going up <u>more and more</u> .                |
| Турист-влак чодырашке <u>эртак</u> келгыш да<br>келгыш пуреныт. | The tourists went <u>ever</u> deeper and deeper<br>into the forest. |

**9.5.109. ялт 'just, quite (like); right, just, directly'**

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Октябрь тылзе гынат, түнө <u>ялт</u> кенез. | It might be October, but it's <u>just like</u> summer<br>outside. |
| Юл тыште <u>ялт</u> теңыз.                  | The Volga is <u>quite like</u> the sea here.                      |
| Ме <u>ялт</u> вокзал воктен илена.          | We live <u>right</u> by the train station.                        |
| <u>Ялт</u> кугорныш шумеш йолын ошкылынна.  | We went on foot <u>right</u> up to the railroad.                  |

9.18. Insert the fitting particle. The options are given below.

- Шенген визет ямде огыл мо?  
– Ямде огыл ...
- Бассейныште шергашым ... йомдарен омыл.
- ..., пиалым оксала от нал.
- Галя кутырымыж ден ... аваже.
- Йыван пеш кутырышан: иктаж-мом йодат, да ... каласкала.

(чылт, чынак, шол, чуч, э/эй)

- Туныктышо ... нелырак да нелырак йодышым пуэн.
- Сото телефонлан чылан тунемынна, да кузе, ..., ожно тиддеч посна иленит.
- Тунар ноенам, ... кутыренат ом керт.
- ..., поро пошкудо родо гаяк.
- Йолташем ... теңыз воктене ила.

(ялт, чынжымак, шонет, эсогыл, эре)

## 10. Conjunctions

### 10.0. General remarks

Manners of linking clauses with conjunctions are discussed in other sections of this book. Hence, the following overview of the most important conjunctions in Mari serves more as an index of sort, referring to the sections in which the usage of the conjunction in question is covered.

### 10.1. List of conjunctions

#### 10.1.1. *а* ‘and, or’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.2. *ала* ‘sometimes ... sometimes; either ... or; now ... now; or’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.3. *але* ‘or’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.4. *ато* ‘otherwise, or else’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.5. *вет* ‘really, you see, you know’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.6. *вом* ‘there, here, and here’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.7. *гын* ‘if’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.8. *гынат* ‘even if’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.9. *да* ‘and’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.10. *даже* ‘even’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.11. *ден* ‘and’

See [...] – page [...].

#### 10.1.12. *дык* ‘if’

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.13. *если* ‘if’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.14. *зато* ‘but, on the other hand’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.15. *и* ‘and’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.16. *и то* ‘and that, and even’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.17. *керек* ‘even if’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.18. *кеч* ‘even if’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.19. *коли* ‘if’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.20. *кузе* ‘how’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.21. *кунам* ‘when’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.22. *кунар(е)* ‘how many, how much’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.23. *куш(ко)* ‘(to) where’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.24. *кушан* ‘where’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.25. *кушто* ‘where’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.26. *ма* ‘whether, if’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.27. *манын* ‘that; so that, in order to’**

See [...] – page [...].

[Do we want to give *ман* as an alternative, or is that too colloquial?]

**10.1.28. *молан манаш гын* ‘because’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.29. *мыняр(е)* ‘how many, how much’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.30. *ни* ‘neither ... nor’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.31. *но* ‘but’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.32. *ны* ‘neither ... nor’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.33. *потомушто* ‘because’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.34. *нуйто* ‘as if, as though; that’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.35. *раз* ‘if, since’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.36. *садлан* ‘therefor, thus’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.37. *садлан верчын* ‘therefor, thus’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.38. *садлан көра* ‘therefor, thus’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.39. *садлан лийын* ‘therefor, thus’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.40. *санден(е)* ‘therefor, thus’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.41. *так* ‘as soon as, when, the moment’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.42. *теве* ‘now ... now, sometimes ... sometimes’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.43. *тек* ‘though, even if’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.44. *то* ‘then; now ... now, sometimes ... sometimes’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.45. *только* ‘but, only’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.46. *тузак* ‘so, like that, just like that’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.47. *туге гын* ‘in that case, if that is so’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.48. *туге гынат* ‘nevertheless, yet, still, however, in spite of this’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.49. *тыгак* ‘also, too, as well’**

See [...] – page [...].

**10.1.50. *я* ‘or’**

See [...] – page [...].



## 11. Word formation

### 11.0. Introductory remarks

This chapter gives a brief overview of word formation in Mari. The main means for forming new words from existing words in Mari are onomatopoeia, composition, conversion, reduplication, and derivation. Each of these points will be considered individually, with the most attention paid to derivational morphology.

Loan words also play an important role in the expansion of Mari vocabulary as well. The primary source of loan words today is Russian; older loan words (esp. from Turkic languages) have been well-integrated into Mari and are generally not recognized as loan words by contemporary speakers. The adaptation of Russian loan words was discussed in 1.5.9 – page 38.

Derivation: Derivation is the formation of a new word on the basis of an existing one through a derivational affix. Suffixes dominate over prefixes in Mari; prefixes are only used to create indefinite forms, e.g.: *кӧ* ‘who’ → *иктаж-кӧ* ‘someone’, *кушто* ‘where’ → *ала-кушто* ‘somewhere’ (see 5.7 – page 152).

In the following, a summary of nominal (11.5 – page 377), adjectival (11.6 – page 382), and verbal derivation (11.7 – page 387) will be presented. Whereas there are a great many suffixes which have been used to form nouns, adjectives and verbs, many of these are no longer widely used and only appear in few words. Rather than listing all possible suffixes regardless of their prevalence and productivity, only the more common and important ones will be covered. Information on how derivational suffixes are attached to their base forms is provided only in the case of derivational suffixes where this happens by regular, predictable means.

Also note that as some suffixes have more than one function, they may occur in listings more than once.

### 11.1. Onomatopoeia

See 8.6 – page 325.

### 11.2. Composition

#### 11.2.1. Basic principles

Composition – the formation of compound words – is an important method in Mari word formation, comprising several subtypes. Typically, the elements are simply juxtaposed with no change. Some morphophonological tendencies can, however, be noted:

Written together or written separately: As is the case in English, some variance exists in the orthographic realization of compounds. According to the most recent orthographic reform (2011), subordinating nominal compounds (in which the first element determines and specifies the latter) are written together, while coordinative compounds (in which two elements of equal semantic weight are juxtapositioned) are written with a hyphen:

|            |         |                 |         |   |                  |                  |
|------------|---------|-----------------|---------|---|------------------|------------------|
| <i>кун</i> | ‘swamp’ | + <i>вӱтеле</i> | ‘wader’ | → | <i>кунвӱтеле</i> | ‘godwit’         |
| <i>шӧр</i> | ‘milk’  | + <i>торык</i>  | ‘curds’ | → | <i>шӧр-торык</i> | ‘dairy products’ |

Note, however, that when a noun is through conversion used as an adjective (see 11.3.2 – page 374), the two elements of the resulting collocation are written separately:

|           |         |               |         |   |                |               |
|-----------|---------|---------------|---------|---|----------------|---------------|
| <i>кӱ</i> | ‘stone’ | + <i>нӧрм</i> | ‘house’ | → | <i>кӱ нӧрм</i> | ‘stone house’ |
|-----------|---------|---------------|---------|---|----------------|---------------|

It is oftentimes difficult to draw a line between a compound (written together) and a collocation (written separately). Especially in the following cases, where the resulting combination of two words is a commonly used term, they are likely to be interpreted as compounds, and written together:

- If one or two of the elements have lost their original semantics, e.g., *ава* 'mother' + *рок* 'soil' → *аварок* 'subsoil', *руш* 'Russian' + *арня* 'week' → *рушарня* 'Sunday', *шем* 'black' + *нӧрт* 'house' → *шемнӧрт* 'smoke sauna' (but *шем нӧрт* 'black house'), *аза* 'baby' + *тувыр* 'shirt' → *азадывыр* 'placenta' (but *аза тувыр* 'baby shirt').
- If the combination of nouns denotes an animal, plant, or astronomical body: *нур* 'field' + *музо* 'hazel grouse' → *нурмузо* 'partridge', *лон* 'lowland' + *шудо* 'grass' → *лоншудо* 'burdock', *корка* 'ladle' + *шӱдыр* 'star' → *Коркашӱдыр* 'Big Dipper'.
- If the second element is *иге* 'animal young' or *лу* 'bone': *лудо* 'duck' + *иге* → *лудиге* 'duckling', *эрде* 'thigh' + *лу* 'bone' → *эрдылу* 'thighbone'.

Note that older orthographic norms to some extent followed other principles. Thus, in older sources, one can find the elements of such compounds written separately.

**Voicing or fricativization of the word-initial consonant of the second element:** If the first element of a compound ends in a vowel or voiced consonant, *н*, *к*, and *м* in the initial position of the compound's second element have a tendency to become *в*, *з*, and *д* both in pronunciation and in orthography, see also 1.5.7 – page 34.

|                     |                       |   |                                 |
|---------------------|-----------------------|---|---------------------------------|
| <i>шӱргӧ</i> 'face' | + <i>пылыш</i> 'ear'  | → | <i>шӱргывылыш</i> 'face, looks' |
| <i>уна</i> 'guest'  | + <i>кудо</i> 'house' | → | <i>унагудо</i> 'hotel'          |
| <i>кава</i> 'sky'   | + <i>тӱр</i> 'edge'   | → | <i>кавадӱр</i> 'horizon'        |

**Vowel loss at point of juncture:**

|                      |                       |   |                                |
|----------------------|-----------------------|---|--------------------------------|
| <i>юм</i> 'god'      | + <i>она</i> 'board'  | → | <i>юмона</i> 'icon'            |
| <i>из</i> 'small'    | + <i>тер</i> 'sleigh' | → | <i>издер</i> 'sled'            |
| <i>рӱдӧ</i> 'center' | + <i>ола</i> 'city'   | → | <i>рӱдола</i> 'capital (city)' |

**Usage of hard sign ӱ:** Note the appearance of this symbol in orthography when the second word of the compound starts in *е*, *ю*, or *я*, see also 1.5.5 – page 26.

|                             |                       |   |  |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------|---|--|
| <i>ончыл</i> 'front'        | + <i>ен</i> 'person'  | → | <i>ончылӱен</i> 'pioneer, trailblazer'             |
| <i>йыр</i> 'around'         | + <i>юж</i> 'air'     | → | <i>йырӱюж</i> 'atmosphere'                         |
| <i>пӱнчер</i> 'pine forest' | + <i>ял</i> 'village' | → | <i>Пӱнчерӱял</i> '(name of several Mari villages)' |

11.1. Form compounds from the given words, following the principles detailed above. Try to guess the meaning. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. вуй 'head' + корка 'ladle'
2. каза 'goat' + парня 'finger'
3. вакш 'mill' + ер 'lake'
4. изи 'small' + арня 'week'
5. шӱм 'heart' + тувыр 'shirt'
6. йол 'foot, leg' + пундаш 'bottom'
7. паша 'work' + тар 'pay'
8. йол 'foot, leg' + ече 'ski'
9. книга 'book' + кудо 'hut'
10. эмлыме 'healing' + вер 'place'

### 11.2.2. Nominal compounds

Nominal compounds in Mari are numerous and are generally classified as belonging to one of two major groups, subordinating and coordinative compounds.

Subordinating nominal compounds: These compounds typically consist of two elements, the first of which determines and specifies the latter. The two elements are juxtaposed with no flectional elements. The second element is typically a noun, whereas the first can be several of different parts of speech. The most common combinations are as follows.

Noun + noun:

|                            |   |
|----------------------------|---|
| йол + ече → йолъече        | 'foot, leg' + 'ski' → 'ice skates'            |
| уй + понго → уйвонго       | 'butter' + 'mushroom' → 'slippery jack'       |
| олык + вўтеле → олыквўтеле | 'meadow' + 'wader (bird)' → 'redshank (bird)' |

Adjective + noun:

|                         |                                      |
|-------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| изи+ тер → издер        | 'small' + 'sleigh' → 'sled'          |
| кугу+ парня → кугыварня | 'big' + 'finger' → 'thumb'           |
| шем+ энгыж → шемэнгыж   | 'black' + 'raspberry' → 'blackberry' |

Coordinative nominal compounds: These typically consist of two elements having equal semantic weight, generally separated by a hyphen in orthography. The elements can be either closely related in meaning or construed as contrasting opposites. This strategy is sometimes used to create class nouns: by juxtapositioning two elements within a class, a reference is made to the class as a whole.

|                         |  |
|-------------------------|--|
| ача + ава → ача-ава     | 'father' + 'mother' → 'parents'                  |
| иза + шольо → иза-шольо | 'elder brother' + 'younger brother' → 'brothers' |
| шөр + торык → шөр-торык | 'milk' + 'curds' → 'dairy products'              |
| шўм + мокш → шўм-мокш   | 'heart' + 'liver' → 'innards'                    |

11.2. Form coordinative compounds from the given words. Try to guess the meaning of the compound. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. сурт 'farm' + пече 'fence'
2. ака 'elder sister' + шўжар 'younger sister'
3. кўмыж 'dish' + совла 'spoon'
4. ўдыр 'girl' + рвезе 'boy'
5. тувыр 'shirt' + йолаш 'pants'

11.3. Match the following words to create meaningful compounds. Try to guess the meaning of the compound. Translations are given in the exercise key.

- |                       |                       |
|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. книга 'book'       | a. парня 'finger'     |
| 2. пакча 'garden'     | b. корно 'road'       |
| 3. покшел 'middle'    | c. вўд 'water'        |
| 4. коча 'grandfather' | d. сўретче 'artist'   |
| 5. руш 'Russian'      | e. касвел 'west'      |
| 6. шинча 'eye'        | f. копа 'hand'        |
| 7. кўртньо 'iron'     | g. арня 'week'        |
| 8. кид 'hand, arm'    | h. кудо 'hut'         |
| 9. фото 'photo'       | i. саска 'fruit'      |
| 10. йўдвел 'north'    | j. кова 'grandmother' |

### 11.2.3. Adjectival compounds

Compound adjectives are far rarer than nominal compounds. One typical method of formation is the combination (generally with a hyphen) of two adjectives, especially those of color.

|                                   |                                       |
|-----------------------------------|---------------------------------------|
| ошалге + күрен → ошалге-күрен     | 'whitish' + 'brown' → 'light brown'   |
| шемалге + ужарге → шемалге-ужарге | 'blackish' + 'green' → 'dark green'   |
| ший + шөртньö → ший-шөртньö       | 'silver' + 'gold' → 'silver and gold' |

### 11.2.4. Verbal compounds

There are various types of verbal compounds in Mari, all differing in their structure.

#### Adverb + verb:

*ваш* 'mutually; together' + *лияш* (-ям) 'to be; to become' → *вашлияш* (-ам) 'to meet'

#### Two juxtaposed verbs:

|                            |                               |
|----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| ужалаш (-ем) + налаш (-ам) | 'to sell' + 'to take; to buy' |
| → ужалаш-налаш (-ем/-ам)   | → 'to trade, to deal in'      |
| кочкаш (-ам) + йўаш (-ам)  | 'to eat' + 'to drink'         |
| → кочкаш-йўаш (-ам/-ам)    | → 'to eat and drink'          |

When two juxtapositioned full verbs are conjugated, both verbs are conjugated in an identical manner:

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Кузерак <u>иледа-кутыреда</u> ? Чыла сай мо?                                   | How are you doing (lit. <u>living-talking</u> )? Is everything alright?   |
| Коваже уныкажым кенгеж гоч <u>пукшен-йўктен</u> , садланак уныкаже чот тырлен. | The grandmother <u>gave</u> her grandchild (a lot) <u>to eat (and drink)</u> throughout summer, so he gained a lot of weight. |
| Сўаныште чылан <u>муреныт-куштеныт</u> .                                       | Everybody was <u>singing and dancing</u> at the wedding.  |

#### 11.4 Conjugate the given verbal compound as necessary in the given context.

1. Те тенгече йолташет дене мо нерген (ойлаш-кутыраш (-ем)-(-ем))?
2. Мишан ача-аваже уке улмаш, 18 ий марте тудым кокаже (пукшаш-чикташ (-ем)-(-ем)).
3. Пагалыме уна-влак, (йўаш-кочкаш (ам)-(-ам)), ида вожыл!
4. Аня ден Таня пошкудо улыт, ваш-ваш эре (пураш-лектат (-ем)-(-ам)).
5. – Кузе пашада кая?  
– Тау, меже (илаш-шўлаш (-ем)-(-ем)). Теже кузе вара?

#### Truncated form of gerund + full verb:

|   |
|---|
| <i>каяш</i> (-ем) 'to go' → <i>каен</i> + <i>возаш</i> (-ам) 'to lie down' → <i>камвозаш</i> (-ам) 'to fall'      |
| <i>налаш</i> (-ам) 'to take' → <i>налын</i> + <i>каяш</i> (-ем) 'to go' → <i>нангаяш</i> (-ем) 'to take'          |
| <i>налаш</i> (-ам) 'to take' → <i>налын</i> + <i>мияш</i> (-ем) 'to go, to come' → <i>намияш</i> (-ем) 'to bring' |
| <i>пураш</i> (-ем) 'to go in' → <i>пурен</i> + <i>каяш</i> (-ем) 'to go' → <i>пуренгаяш</i> (-ем) 'to fall'       |

These compounds were originally auxiliary constructions, see 7.3.5 – page 283. The original pairings, with the same meanings, can still be encountered on occasion. Auxiliary constructions in which the elements are written separately can be considered compounds of sorts as well.

### 11.2.5. Adverbial compounds

Adverbial compounds are frequent and can be formed in various ways.

### Combination of words of various types with an adverb in -a:

The suffix /-a/ occurs in compound adverbs of the following type:

|                              |   |
|------------------------------|---|
| ныл + йол + /-a/ → ныйлола   | 'four' + 'foot, leg' + /-a/ → 'on all fours'    |
| чара + кид + /-a/ → чарагида | 'bare' + 'hand, arm' + /-a/ → 'with bare hands' |
| шала + вуй + /-a/ → шалавуя  | 'shaggy' + 'head' + /-a/ → 'with a shaggy head' |

It is not used outside of compounds.

11.5. Create compound adverbs in /-a/ from the given words. Try to guess the meaning of the compound. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. шке 'own' + вуй 'head'
2. кид 'hand, arm' + шўм 'sense of feeling (in hands)'
3. тувыр 'shirt' + мел 'cut in front of shirt'
4. пел 'half' + йол 'foot, leg'
5. яра 'free' + кид 'hand, arm'

### Combination of words of various types with postposition:

|                    |  |
|--------------------|--|
| тўр + гоч → тўргоч | 'edge' + 'through' → 'overly, excessively' |
| у + гыч → угыч     | 'new' + 'from, out of' → 'again, anew'     |

### Pairing of two adverbs:

мөнгеш + оньыш → мөнгеш-оньыш | 'back' + 'further' → 'back and forth'

### Pairing of two gerunds:

The gerund in -н (see 7.2.7 – page 267) frequently forms compounds with a negative non-finite form of the same verb. The negative form can either be the negative gerund in -де (see 7.2.8 – page 270), or the negative participle in -дыме (see 7.2.6 – page 266) coupled with the adverbial ending -н (see 8.4.1 – page 319), resulting in the ending -дымын. These forms have an emphatic meaning of sorts in some cases, and in others denote that an activity is carried out intermittently.

вучаш (-ем) 'to wait' → вучен-вучыдымын 'quite unexpectedly'  
→ вучен-вучыде 'quite unexpectedly'

шижаш (-ам) 'to feel, to sense' → шижын-шиждымын 'quite imperceptibly'  
→ шижын-шижде 'quite imperceptibly'

чыташ (-ем) 'to endure, to bear' → чытен-чытыдымын 'quite impatiently'  
→ чытен-чытыде 'quite impatiently'

## 11.3. Conversion

In the process of conversion, also called zero derivation, a new word is derived from an existing word with no change in form. In these cases, a word belonging to a certain word class (noun, verb, adjective, adverb, etc.) starts being used in another class. Thus, an original noun can be used as a verb, an original verb can be used as a noun, an original adjective can be used as a noun, etc. There are various types of conversion processes in Mari.

### 11.3.1. Adjective-to-noun conversion

Nouns and adjectives, when not formally identified by specific derivational suffixes, are not easily distinguishable by means other than semantic ones. In some cases, it is not readily apparent whether the word that can serve as either an adjective or a noun is originally a noun or adjective, e.g., *йўшмө* 'cold ~ (the) cold', *шокио* 'hot ~ heat'. In other cases, an (original) adjective can easily

be used as a noun without any formal substantivizing element. Here, the adjectives are employed with the usual nominal suffixes: *самырык* 'young → young (one)', *самырык-влак* 'young ones, the young', etc.

Adjectives formed with the derivational suffixes *-лык* (see 11.6.6 – page 385) and *-аш* (see 11.6.4 – page 384) are also easily susceptible to conversion (adjective → noun). Both these suffixes bear the meaning 'intended for, meant for'.

|                                |  |
|--------------------------------|--|
| <i>шинча</i> → <i>шинчалык</i> | <i>eye</i> → meant for the eyes (→ eyeglasses) |
| <i>шўй</i> → <i>шўяш</i>       | <i>neck</i> → meant for the neck (→ necklace)  |

The four participles (active, passive, future-necessitive and negated participles) are all used as attributes in the manner of underived adjectives and in this capacity are also prone to conversion (adjectival participle → noun). In such cases these forms are often equivalents to agent nouns, as illustrated by the following examples.

Active participle (see 7.2.3 – page 259):

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <i>тунемаш (-ам)</i> → <i>тунемше</i>    | <i>to learn</i> → learning (→ pupil)   |
| <i>туныкташ (-ем)</i> → <i>туныктышо</i> | <i>to teach</i> → teaching (→ teacher) |

Passive participle (see 7.2.4 – page 260):

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <i>палаш (-ем)</i> → <i>палыме</i>     | <i>to know</i> → known (→ acquaintance)       |
| <i>йöраташ (-ем)</i> → <i>йöратыме</i> | <i>to love</i> → loved (→ darling, loved one) |

Future-necessitive participle (see 7.2.5 – page 263):

|                                     |  |
|-------------------------------------|--|
| <i>колаш (-ем)</i> → <i>колышаш</i> | <i>to die</i> → dying (→ the dying)                |
| <i>каяш (-ем)</i> → <i>кайышаш</i>  | <i>to go</i> → having to go (→ those that must go) |

Negative participle (see 7.2.6 – page 266):

|                                     |   |
|-------------------------------------|---|
| <i>лўдаш (-ам)</i> → <i>лўддымö</i> | <i>to fear</i> → fearless (→ daredevil) |
| <i>ужаш (-ам)</i> → <i>уждымо</i>   | <i>to see</i> → blind (→ the blind)     |

11.6. Insert the appropriately inflected nominalized form of the appropriate participle in the following sentences.

1. Книга презентаций деч вара журналист ... шонымыштым пален налын. (лудаш (-ам))
2. Чын йолташем улат. Тыйын ... нигунам ом мондо. (полшаш (-ем))
3. Уна-влакын эрла ... нерген пален онал. (толаш (-ам))
4. Пайрем акций! Кажне луымшо ... мемнан кевыт деч пöлекым пуэна. (налаш (-ам))
5. Туныктышо лекцийышке ... экзаменышке пуртен огыл. Тыгай-влак визытын лийыныт. (кошташ (-ам))

### 11.3.2. Noun-to-adjective conversion

In compounds, nouns are often used as defining attributes.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| <i>кў</i> + <i>пöрт</i> → <i>кў пöрт</i>           | 'stone' + 'house' → 'stone house'       |
| <i>порсын</i> + <i>тувыр</i> → <i>порсын тувыр</i> | 'silk' + 'shirt' → 'silk shirt'         |
| <i>теле</i> + <i>вургем</i> → <i>теле вургем</i>   | 'winter' + 'clothes' → 'winter clothes' |

The dividing line between these pairings, and compounds (see 11.2 – page 369) is unclear.

### 11.3.3. Renominalization of genitive forms

Genitive forms, especially of pronouns, can be used as nominals meaning ‘my one, mine’, ‘your one, yours’, ‘his/her own one, his/hers’, etc. In this case, they can be declined as nouns. Other suffixes, also case suffixes, can follow the genitive suffix.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| – Тый мыйын сравоchым ужынат?  | – Have you seen my key?   |
| – <u>Оляным</u> ужынам, а <u>тыйыным</u> ужын омыл.                                  | – I’ve seen <u>Olya’s</u> , but I haven’t seen <u>yours</u> .                               |
| Пошкудын йочаже-влак мӱнгыштӱ тунемыт, а <u>мемнан-влак</u> уремыште футболла модыт. | Our neighbor’s children are studying at home, and <u>ours</u> are playing football outside. |
| Швеций гыч пашашке <u>шкенан-влаклан</u> изирак пӱлек-влакым конденам.               | I brought some small presents from Sweden <u>for our people</u> at work.                    |
| Маркус, финнла-марла мутеретым пуэн кертат? <u>Шкемыным</u> Юхалан пуэнам.           | Markus, can you give me your Finnish-Mari dictionary? I gave <u>mine</u> to Juha.           |
| <u>Еңыным</u> шутыланет гын, <u>шкендын</u> йомеш. (Калыкмут)                        | If you covet <u>other people’s things</u> , <u>your own</u> will disappear. (Proverb)       |
| Йолагай шке пашажым нелылан шотла, <u>весыным</u> куштылгеш ужеш. (Калыкмут)         | A lazy person considers his own work difficult, and <u>that of others</u> easy. (Proverb)   |

11.7. Insert the given genitive forms, renominalized and inflected properly, into the following sentences.

1. Шке авалан икшыве – кукуиге, ... – коракиге. (еңын) (Калыкмут)
2. Пошкудын машинажым кум гана шолыштыныт, ... ик гана веле. (мемнан)
3. Йыван шке пашажым мокта, а ... вурса. (весын)
4. Кеч-кӱат ... йӱрата. (шкенжын)
5. Мемнан йоча-влаклан Йӱштӱ Кугыза пинегым пӱлеклен, а ... мом? (тендан-влак)

### 11.3.4. Noun-to-verb conversion

There are numerous cases of homonymy between semantically connected nominal and verbal stems in Mari. The conjugation class of the verb is not easily predictable in these cases. Some semantic categories can be distinguished. In one type, the verb denotes an activity carried out by means of the noun mentioned (instrumental verbs):

|                 |   |                        |  |              |   |                    |
|-----------------|---|------------------------|--|--------------|---|--------------------|
| <u>мушкыndo</u> | → | <u>мушкындаш (-em)</u> |  | fist         | → | to hit with a fist |
| пужар           | → | пужараш (-em)          |  | plane (tool) | → | to plane           |

In another type, the verb denotes the bringing about of what the noun mentions (ornative verbs):

|              |   |                     |  |        |   |                 |
|--------------|---|---------------------|--|--------|---|-----------------|
| <u>тушто</u> | → | <u>тушташ (-em)</u> |  | riddle | → | to set a riddle |
| пече         | → | печаш (-em)         |  | fence  | → | to fence (in)   |
| лум          | → | лумаш (-ам)         |  | snow   | → | to snow         |
| йӱр          | → | йӱраш (-ам)         |  | rain   | → | to rain         |

Other verbs derived from nouns with zero derivation do not fit so neatly into these two patterns, e.g.:

|       |   |               |  |        |   |            |
|-------|---|---------------|--|--------|---|------------|
| каҥаш | → | каҥашаш (-em) |  | advice | → | to consult |
|-------|---|---------------|--|--------|---|------------|

### 11.3.5. Adjective-to-verb conversion

A number of Mari adjectives can also form verbs with no further derivational processes. In this case the verb has the typical meaning of transformation into the state expressed by the adjective (translative verbs):

|         |   |                |  |          |   |                   |
|---------|---|----------------|--|----------|---|-------------------|
| шемалге | → | шемалгаш (-ем) |  | blackish | → | to darken (intr.) |
| шопо    | → | шопаш (-ем)    |  | sour     | → | to turn sour      |

### 11.3.6. Verb-to-verb conversion (conjugation class shift)

The split between the first and second conjugation class affecting all verbs in Mari was discussed in 7.0 – page 196. There are, however, a good number of verbs that form pairs of first and second conjugation verbs with identical infinitives, and related meanings. These must be considered as separate verbs since they not only bear different meanings, but have different verbal stems and are conjugated differently and have distinct verbal stems. Generally speaking, the first conjugation verb is intransitive or reflexive, and the second conjugation verb transitive or non-reflexive. It should also be noted that apart from these verbs the two conjugations are not intrinsically connected with transitivity/intransitivity or reflexivity/non-reflexivity, i.e., transitive and intransitive (reflexive/non-reflexive) verbs can be found in both conjugation classes.

|              |   |              |  |                    |   |                   |
|--------------|---|--------------|--|--------------------|---|-------------------|
| кодаш (-ам)  | ↔ | кодаш (-ем)  |  | to remain          | ↔ | to leave (sth.)   |
| темаш (-ам)  | ↔ | темаш (-ем)  |  | to fill up (intr.) | ↔ | to fill (sth.) up |
| шинчаш (-ам) | ↔ | шинчаш (-ем) |  | to sit down        | ↔ | to sit            |

This phenomenon is also often present in verbs derived with the homonymous suffixes *-алт* (see 11.7.12 – page 391 and 11.7.16 – page 395), respectively forming first-conjugation verbs with intransitive, passive, reflexive, impersonal meanings, or second-conjugation verbs with momentary meanings (that remain transitive if the base verb is transitive):

|                 |   |                 |  |               |   |           |
|-----------------|---|-----------------|--|---------------|---|-----------|
| вашталташ (-ам) | ↔ | вашталташ (-ем) |  | to be changed | ↔ | to change |
| шарналташ (-ам) | ↔ | шарналташ (-ем) |  | to remember   | ↔ | to remind |

Note in addition that the conversion phenomenon described here is not connected with cases of homonymous verbs (in the infinitive) with unrelated meanings belonging to different conjugations, such as *колаш (-ам)* 'to hear' ~ *колаш (-ем)* 'to die'.

#### 11.8. Which verbal form is appropriate in the following sentences?

1. Тошто йолташем дене студент годсо жапым шарналтенна/шарналтынна.
2. Акам латкандаш ияш годым лўмжым вашталтын/вашталтен: Елена олмеш Алёна лийын.
3. Театрышке билетым ўстембалан кодынам/коденам.
4. Пөртна уна дене темен/темын.
5. Чылан ўстел коклашке шинчыныт/шинченит.
6. Йоча годсо жап поснак У ий годым шарналта/шарналтеш.
7. Шольым театрышке каен огыл, мөнгыштө коден/кодын.
8. Ме луымшо радамыште шинчынна/шинченна.
9. Йоратыме актёр-влакем чот вашталтыныт/вашталтеныт: шонгемыныт.
10. Айста бокалыш шампанскийым темена/темына да келшымаш верч йўына!

### 11.4. Reduplication

The simple repetition (full reduplication) of the same word typically expresses heightened intensity or expressivity.



|                     |                               |
|---------------------|-------------------------------|
| угыч → угыч-угыч    | again → again and again       |
| ваш → ваш-ваш       | towards → mutually            |
| вучен → вучен-вучен | waiting → waiting and waiting |

Another common method is partial reduplication, in which the word is repeated with some alterations. The word first occurs in its base form, and then is repeated with one of its vowels replaced with another one.

|                        |                               |
|------------------------|-------------------------------|
| кадыр → кадыр-кудыр    | crooked → crooked             |
| тыгыде → тыгыде-тагыде | small → small, tiny           |
| шўк → шўкшак           | junk, rubbish → junk, rubbish |

In still another form of reduplication the meaning of an adjective beginning with the structure CVC can be intensified through the prefixation of this CVC element with the second C becoming *n*.

|                     |                                |
|---------------------|--------------------------------|
| шем(е) → шеп-шем(е) | black → jet-black, pitch-black |
| таза → тап-таза     | healthy → quite healthy        |
| тыныс → тып-тыныс   | quiet → completely peaceful    |

11.9. Form emphatic forms of the following adjectives, following the pattern *маза* 'healthy' → *тап-маза* 'quite healthy'.

1. леве 'warm'
2. сар(е) 'yellow'
3. якте 'bright, light'
4. юалге 'cool'
5. шыма 'gentle'
6. томам 'bad, poor'
7. яра 'empty'
8. тымык 'quiet'
9. чара 'bare, naked'
10. тура 'steep'

## 11.5. Nominal derivation

### 11.5.1. Vocative forms

See 2.4.1.3 – page 69.

### 11.5.2. Denominal/deverbal agent noun suffix *-зЕ*

Attachment to base word: When attached to stems ending in a consonant other than *-p*, the vowel *-ы* is inserted between the stem and the suffix. When attached to stems ending vowel or *-p*, the suffix is attached directly to the stem, with final *-E* reduced to *-ы*.

This frequent suffix is used to create agent nouns from both nouns and verbs.

|                 |                                |
|-----------------|--------------------------------|
| паша → пашазе   | work → worker                  |
| йылме → йылмызе | tongue; language → linguist    |
| кўсле → кўслезе | gusli, psaltery → gusli player |
| кол → колызо    | fish → fisher                  |
| сонар → сонарзе | hunt → hunter                  |
| сар → сарзе     | war → warrior                  |

Deverbal examples:

|              |   |         |  |              |   |             |
|--------------|---|---------|--|--------------|---|-------------|
| ургаш (-ем)  | → | ургызо  |  | to sew       | → | tailor      |
| тўрлаш (-ем) | → | тўрлызё |  | to embroider | → | embroiderer |
| шымлаш (-ем) | → | шымлызе |  | to research  | → | researcher  |

### 11.5.3. Denominal agent noun suffix -чЕ

Attachment to base word: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

This suffix is similar in function to the aforementioned suffix -зЕ (see 11.5.2 – page 377), but in contrast to it is only attached to a small number of nominal stems.

|       |   |         |  |                |   |                |
|-------|---|---------|--|----------------|---|----------------|
| шоя   | → | шояче   |  | lie            | → | liar           |
| сомыл | → | сомылчо |  | work, activity | → | hard worker    |
| кўтў  | → | кўтўчё  |  | herd           | → | shepherd       |
| кевыт | → | кевытче |  | shop, store    | → | seller, vendor |

### 11.5.4. Denominal purposive/quality suffix -лык

Attachment to base word: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

This suffix has numerous functions.

a) It is used to create abstract nouns referring to a state, a property or a quality. It is especially productive in combination with the suffix -дыМЕ, which serves as the ending of the negative participle (see 7.2.6 – page 266) and as a denominal privative suffix (see 11.6.5 – page 385), resulting in an ending -дымылык.

|          |   |             |  |            |   |                   |
|----------|---|-------------|--|------------|---|-------------------|
| поро     | → | порылык     |  | good       | → | goodness          |
| шыде     | → | шыдылык     |  | angry      | → | anger             |
| пашадыме | → | пашадымылык |  | unemployed | → | unemployment      |
| палыдыме | → | палыдымылык |  | ignorant   | → | lack of knowledge |

11.10. Attach the suffix -лык to the following words. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. яндар 'clean'
2. лўддымё 'fearless'
3. таза 'healthy'
4. оксадыме 'moneyless'
5. вийдыме 'weak'
6. поян 'rich, wealthy'
7. йўндымё 'uncomfortable'
8. пушкыдо 'soft'
9. икгай 'similar'
10. мотоп 'beautiful'

b) It is used to create nouns which in some way denote purpose, function, or destination of the base word. In contrast to the abstract nouns mentioned above, the exact meaning of these new words cannot usually be readily deduced.

|       |   |          |  |          |   |              |
|-------|---|----------|--|----------|---|--------------|
| шинча | → | шинчалык |  | eye      | → | glasses      |
| шынга | → | шынгалык |  | mosquito | → | mosquito net |
| ава   | → | авалык   |  | mother   | → | womb         |

As regards the usage of this suffix as an adjectival derivational suffix, see 11.6.6 – page 385.

### 11.5.5. Denominal purposive suffix *-au*

Attachment to base word: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44).

This suffix creates nouns that denote something that is meant or intended to be used in connection with the concept expressed by the base word.

|       |   |        |           |   |          |
|-------|---|--------|-----------|---|----------|
| йол   | → | йолаш  | leg, foot | → | trousers |
| парня | → | парняш | finger    | → | thimble  |

As regards adjectives formed with this suffix, see 11.6.4 – page 384. The suffix is also used in fractions, see 4.3 – page 115.

### 11.5.6. Denominal collective suffix *-ep*

Attachment to base word: E-suffixes (see 1.6.2 – page 43).

This suffix forms collective nouns primarily from nouns and is used above all in connection with trees and other plants to denote a forest, bush or grove in which said plant grows. Formations that break with this custom can be found as well, however.

|       |   |        |        |   |             |
|-------|---|--------|--------|---|-------------|
| кож   | → | кожер  | fir    | → | fir grove   |
| якте  | → | яктер  | pine   | → | pine forest |
| укш   | → | укшер  | branch | → | brushwood   |
| кү    | → | күэр   | stone  | → | stones      |
| мут   | → | мутер  | word   | → | dictionary  |
| тошто | → | тоштер | old    | → | museum      |

### 11.5.7. Denominal quality suffix *-m*

This unproductive suffix forms abstract nouns from adjectives.

|       |   |        |       |   |                  |
|-------|---|--------|-------|---|------------------|
| кужу  | → | кужыт  | long  | → | length           |
| күжгө | → | күжгыт | thick | → | thickness, width |
| келге | → | келгыт | deep  | → | depth            |

### 11.5.8. Deverbal action suffix (nominalizer) *-маш*

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes.

|         |   |           |               |   |               |
|---------|---|-----------|---------------|---|---------------|
| воштыл- | → | воштылмаш | to laugh      | → | laughter      |
| коран-  | → | коранмаш  | to move away  | → | moving away   |
| нал-    | → | налмаш    | to take       | → | taking        |
| кочк-   | → | кочмаш    | to eat        | → | eating        |
| му-     | → | мумаш     | to find       | → | finding       |
| умыло-  | → | умылымаш  | to understand | → | understanding |
| йöрате- | → | йöратымаш | to love       | → | love          |
| каласе- | → | каласымаш | to say        | → | statement     |
| пуо-    | → | пуымаш    | to give       | → | giving        |
| кае-    | → | кайымаш   | to go         | → | going         |

11.11. Create nominalized forms in *-маш* of the following verbs.

1. шымлаш (-ем) 'to research'
2. шонаш (-ем) 'to think'
3. вашлияш (-ам) 'to meet'
4. мошташ (-ем) 'to be able to'
5. лудаш (-ам) 'to read'
6. мушкаш (-ам) 'to wash'
7. чияш (-ем) 'to put on'
8. лўдаш (-ам) 'to fear'
9. йўаш (-ам) 'to drink'
10. шуаш (-эм) 'to throw'

This is a common and productive suffix that serves to form nouns from verbs. The nouns formed denote above all an abstract action or state.

|  |  |
|--|--|
| <u>Лўдмаш</u> таңым кычалеш. (Калыкмут)                      | <u>Fear</u> looks for a friend. (Proverb)                  |
| Почеламутым <u>қусарымаш</u> шуко йодышым луктеш.            | <u>Translating</u> poems brings up many questions.         |
| Скандинав <u>қоштмаш</u> тазалыклан пайдале.                 | Nordic <u>walking</u> is good for your health.             |
| Концерт годым йоча-влак шке <u>моштымашыштым</u> ончыктеныт. | The children showed their <u>abilities</u> at the concert. |
| Йот йылмым <u>түнеммашым</u> кузе куштылемдаш лиеш?          | How can one make <u>learning</u> foreign languages easier? |
| Те кызыт могай <u>шымлымашым</u> эртареда?                   | What kind of <u>research</u> are you carrying out now?     |

The privative suffix *-дымаш* (see 11.5.8 – page 379) can be seen as the negative counterpart of this form.

The suffix *-маш* can be used in an emphatic negation of sorts. It is followed by the particle *уке*, the person is marked with the nominative form of a personal pronoun (more rarely a noun), and/or a possessive suffix. This construction is used to stress that one does not engage in an activity at all, not just in the context at hand. In some cases, a fitting English translation would include the phrase 'at all'.

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Мый тамакым <u>шупшмаш</u> уке.           | I <u>don't smoke</u> (tobacco) <u>at all</u> .       |
| Те кофем <u>йўмаш</u> уке, тыге вет?      | You <u>don't drink</u> coffee <u>at all</u> , right? |
| Ме нелылык деч <u>лўдмашна</u> уке.       | We <u>do not fear</u> any obstacles.                 |
| Газетым молан <u>лудмашет</u> уке?        | Why <u>don't you read</u> newspapers?                |
| Ковай мемнан нигунам <u>вурсымаш</u> уке. | Grandma never <u>scolds</u> us.                      |

11.12. Create emphatically negated sentences, following the pattern: *Мый шылым ом коч. → Мый шылым кочмаш уке.*

1. Ольош нигёлан огеш сыре.
2. Ме киношко она кошт.
3. Те рок-музыкым ода колышт.
4. Тый эр еда от куржтал.
5. Мый телевизорым йөршын ом ончо.

### 11.5.9. Deverbal privative suffix *-дымаш*

Attachment to verbal stem: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48) in both conjugation classes.

|         |   |             |               |   |                   |
|---------|---|-------------|---------------|---|-------------------|
| воштыл- | → | воштылдымаш | to laugh      | → | not laughing      |
| коран-  | → | корандымаш  | to move away  | → | not moving away   |
| нал-    | → | налдымаш    | to take       | → | not taking        |
| кочк-   | → | кочдымаш    | to eat        | → | not eating        |
| му-     | → | мудымаш     | to find       | → | not finding       |
| умыло-  | → | умылыдымаш  | to understand | → | not understanding |
| йөрәте- | → | йөрәтыдымаш | to love       | → | lack of love      |
| каласе- | → | каласыдымаш | to say        | → | not staying       |
| пуо-    | → | пуыдымаш    | to give       | → | not giving        |
| кае-    | → | кайыдымаш   | to go         | → | not going         |

11.13. Create negative nominalized forms in *-дымаш* of the following verbs.

1. вучаш (-ем) 'to wait'
2. вожылаш (-ам) 'to be ashamed'
3. мошташ (-ем) 'to be able to'
4. шуаш (-ам) 'to reach, to arrive'
5. вашкаш (-ем) 'to hurry'
6. лекташ (-ам) 'to go out, to leave'
7. ўшанаш (-ем) 'to believe'
8. кояш (-ам) 'to appear'
9. лўдаш (-ам) 'to fear'
10. шонаш (-ем) 'to think'

This negative nominalizer can be considered the negated counterpart to the nominalizer *-маш* (see 11.5.8 – page 379). The nouns created by the suffix denote the non-occurrence of the action denoted by the verb.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Мемнан коклаште <u>келшыдымашым</u><br>корандаш күлеш.               | We need to overcome the <u>enmity</u> between us.                   |
| Машинам виктарен <u>моштыдымаш</u> верч<br>Катям пашаш налын огытыл. | Katya didn't get the job because she <u>cannot</u><br>drive a car.  |
| Витян койышыштыжо мылам<br><u>чытыдымаш</u> огеш келше.              | I don't like the lack of <u>patience</u> in Vitya's<br>character.   |
| Англичан йылмым <u>палыдымаш</u> шуэнрак<br>да шуэнрак вашлиялтеш.   | <u>Lacking knowledge</u> of English is becoming<br>rarer and rarer. |

### 11.5.10. Deverbal resultative suffix *-ш*

Attachment to verbal stem: Ы-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45).

This fairly common, but not very productive deverbal suffix is used to form nouns denoting the results of an action, the object of an action, or the action itself.

|               |   |         |          |   |           |
|---------------|---|---------|----------|---|-----------|
| йодаш (-ам)   | → | йодыш   | to ask   | → | question  |
| модаш (-ам)   | → | модыш   | to play  | → | game; toy |
| пеледаш (-ам) | → | пеледыш | to bloom | → | flower    |
| кочкаш (-ам)  | → | кочкиш  | to eat   | → | food      |

### 11.5.11. Deverbal resultative suffix *-тыш*

Nouns formed with this suffix denote the results of an action, or in some cases the action itself.

|               |            |                   |              |
|---------------|------------|-------------------|--------------|
| ойыраш (-ем)  | → ойыртыш  | to separate (tr.) | → difference |
| тўғалаш (-ам) | → тўғалтыш | to begin          | → beginning  |
| коқыраш (-ем) | → коқыртыш | to cough          | → cough      |

11.14. What word are the following nouns derived from? Translations of the base words are given in the exercise key.

1. тўғалтыш 'beginning'
2. куэр 'birch grove'
3. писылык 'velocity'
4. серыш 'letter (mail)'
5. ўшаныдымаш 'hopelessness'
6. сўретче 'artist, painter'
7. кугыт 'size'
8. ешартыш 'addition, increase'
9. эмлызе 'doctor'
10. шўраш 'groats'
11. лекмаш 'departure'
12. нерлык 'muzzle'
13. тумер 'oak forest'
14. илыш 'life'
15. пиалдымылык 'unhappiness'
16. нелыт 'weight'
17. шўяш 'necklace; (animal) collar'
18. мурызо 'singer'
19. каныш 'pause, rest; holidays'
20. келшымаш 'harmony; agreement'

11.15. Enter a noun derived from the given word into the sentence, inflected appropriately.

1. ... могай понго кушкеш, паледа мо? (пўнчө)
2. Черкышке да кўсотышкө ўдырамаш-влак ... дене огыт кошт: тувырым але юбкым чият. (йол)
3. Лифтна пудырген – ынде 8-ше пачашыш ... дене кўзаш верештеш. (тошкалаш (-ам))
4. Тазалык – эн кугу ... (поян) (Калыкмут)
5. Окса ... годым ме чодыраште снегым поген ужаленна. (ситааш (-ем))
6. Аня балет школышто тунемеш: тудо ... лийнеже. (кушташ (-ем))
7. Президент журналист-влак дене ... эртарен. (вашлияш (-ам))
8. Эльбрусын ... 5642 метр. (кўкшө)
9. Тый начарын ужат – тылат ... кўлеш. (шинча)
10. «Лияш але лияш огыл?» ... кө пуэн? (йодаш (ам))

## 11.6. Adjectival derivation

### 11.6.1. Denominal possessive derivational suffix *-ан*

Attachment to base word: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44).

Adjectives formed with this productive suffix are used to express the presence or possession of what the base word, or phrase, denotes.

|               |                                     |
|---------------|-------------------------------------|
| пыл → пылан   | cloud → cloudy                      |
| ача → ачан    | father → having a father            |
| пиал → пиалан | happiness → happy                   |
| кече → кечан  | sun; day → sunny; having (a) day(s) |
| ўй → ўян      | butter → buttery, greasy            |

11.16. Attach the suffix *-ан* to the following nouns. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. уш 'mind, intellect'
2. мўй 'honey'
3. мардеж 'windy'
4. шудо 'grass'
5. йоча 'child'

Some pairings with nouns:

|                    |                          |
|--------------------|--------------------------|
| <u>пылан</u> кече  | <u>cloudy</u> day        |
| <u>ўян</u> кинде   | <u>bread</u> with butter |
| <u>пиалан</u> илыш | <u>happy</u> life        |

Note that this derivational suffix can be attached to entire phrases, not just individual nouns:

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ме <u>қум пөлеман</u> пачерыште илена.                   | We live in a <u>three-room</u> apartment.                         |
| <u>Кок сылне кужу уреман</u> ялыште шочынам.             | I was born in a village <u>with two beautiful long streets</u> .  |
| Петя <u>қава гай канде шинчан</u> ўдырым йөратен шынден. | Petya fell in love with a girl <u>with eyes blue as the sky</u> . |

### 11.6.2. Denominal possessive derivational suffix *-лЕ*

Attachment to base word: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

This suffix is usually used to express the presence or possession of what the base word denotes. It is reasonably commonly used, though less productive than the aforementioned suffix *-ан*, see 11.6.1 – page 382.

|               |                                    |
|---------------|------------------------------------|
| лўм → лўмлō   | name → famous                      |
| куат → куатле | strength, power → strong, powerful |

### 11.6.3. Relational suffix *-сЕ*

Attachment to base word: generally bl-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45).

Adjectives formed with this productive suffix, from nouns and adverbs, express local and temporal characteristics derived from the base word.

|                     |                           |
|---------------------|---------------------------|
| пōрт → пōртысō      | house → (in the) house    |
| школ → школысo      | school → (in the) school  |
| август → августысo  | August → (in) August      |
| жап → жапысe        | time → of a time          |
| ўлнō → ўлнысō       | below → lower             |
| тенгече → тенгечысe | yesterday → yesterday('s) |

11.17. Attach the suffix *-cE* to the following nouns. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. вер 'place'
2. Йошкар-Ола 'Yoshkar-Ola'
3. ожно 'before'
4. тений 'this year'
5. таче 'today'

Note that some more commonly used adjectives using this suffix are formed in an irregular manner, e.g., without the insertion of *-ы* or using a form other than the nominative singular as a base form.

|       |   |         |        |   |                      |
|-------|---|---------|--------|---|----------------------|
| кызыт | → | кызытсе | now    | → | modern, contemporary |
| теле  | → | телымсе | winter | → | (of) winter          |

Some pairings with nouns:

|                           |                     |
|---------------------------|---------------------|
| <u>школысо</u> библиотеке | school library      |
| <u>ты жапысе</u> поэзий   | poetry of this time |
| <u>кызытсе</u> айдеме     | modern person       |
| <u>телымсе</u> йӱд        | winter night        |

11.18. Which derived adjective is appropriate in the following sentences?

1. Тудо пеш поро чонан/чонысо айдеме.
2. Июлян/Июльысо конференцийлан ямде улыда?
3. Суас-влак шӱран/шӱрысӱ чайым йӱаш йӱратат.
4. Одо йылмым мый Ижевскыште кенгежан/кенгежымсе школышто тунемынам.
5. Рекламылан кужу ӱпан/ӱпысӱ ӱдыр-влакым кычалына.
6. Кокай мыланна шылан/шылысе шӱрым шолтен.
7. Эрлан/Эрласе концертышке билетым налынат мо?
8. Чодыра снеге пакчан/пакчасе деч тамлырак.
9. Шулдо каза кум йолан/йолысо. (Калыкмут)
10. Олан/Оласе йоча-влак марла шуэн кутырат

Note that this derivational suffix can follow the plural suffix *-ла*, see 2.1.2.3 – page 59:

|  |  |
|--|--|
| Йошкар-Олаште <u>йотэлласе</u> студент-влакат тунемыт. | There are also students <u>from foreign countries</u> studying in Yoshkar-Ola. |
| <u>Школласе</u> хор-влак кугу концертым ямдылат.       | <u>School</u> choirs are organizing a big concert.                             |

#### 11.6.4. Denominal relational suffix *-au*

Attachment to base word: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44).

The adjectives formed by this suffix tend to denote the purpose or a designated or allotted time frame.

|        |   |         |             |   |                       |
|--------|---|---------|-------------|---|-----------------------|
| кыдал  | → | кыдалаш | middle      | → | middle                |
| тылзе  | → | тылзаш  | moon; month | → | monthly               |
| ий     | → | ияш     | year        | → | annual; ... years old |
| январь | → | январаш | January     | → | for January           |

As regards nouns formed with this suffix, see 11.5.5 – page 379. The suffix is also used in fractions, see 4.3 – page 115.



### 11.6.5. Privative suffix -дыме

Attachment to base word: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

This productive and common suffix forms adjectives from nouns. These adjectives denote the absence of the item or concept denoted by the noun.

|      |   |          |               |   |                         |
|------|---|----------|---------------|---|-------------------------|
| йоча | → | йочадыме | child         | → | childless               |
| ойго | → | ойгыдымо | grief, sorrow | → | carefree, light-hearted |
| пүй  | → | пүйдымö  | tooth         | → | toothless               |
| вуй  | → | вуйдымо  | head          | → | headless                |

11.19. Attach the suffix -дыме to the following nouns. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. вий 'strength, power'
2. шокш 'sleeve'
3. оза 'owner'
4. күсен 'pocket'
5. мучаш 'end'

This suffix can also be attached to verbal stems to create negative participles – see 7.2.6 – page 266.

11.20. What noun, or verb, are the following words derived from?

1. шоныдымо 'unexpected, sudden'
2. лумдымо 'snowless'
3. пиалдыме 'unhappy'
4. ўждымö 'uninvited, unwelcome'
5. пашадыме 'unemployed'

### 11.6.6. Denominal purposive suffix -лык

Attachment to base word: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

This suffix is used to create adjectives denoting for what or whom something is meant, intended or usable.

|       |   |          |       |   |              |
|-------|---|----------|-------|---|--------------|
| корно | → | корнылык | way   | → | for a trip   |
| шудо  | → | шудылык  | hay   | → | hay, for hay |
| конга | → | конгалык | oven  | → | for an oven  |
| кумыт | → | кумытлык | three | → | for three    |

11.21. Attach the suffix -лык to the following words. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. арня 'week'
2. кочкиш 'food'
3. пайрем 'celebration'
4. эрла 'tomorrow'
5. йолчиём 'footwear'

Note also the forms derived from the genitive forms of personal pronouns of the first and second person, singular and plural:

|        |   |           |            |   |                     |
|--------|---|-----------|------------|---|---------------------|
| мыйын  | → | мыйынлык  | my         | → | meant for me        |
| тыйын  | → | тыйынлык  | your (Sg.) | → | meant for you (Sg.) |
| мемнан | → | мемнанлык | our        | → | meant for you       |
| тендан | → | тенданлык | your (Pl.) | → | meant for you (Pl.) |

The function of such adjectives usually becomes apparent only when used with a noun:

|                      |  |
|----------------------|--|
| <u>корнылык</u> окса | <u>travel</u> money, money <u>for the trip</u>   |
| <u>билетлык</u> окса | <u>ticket</u> money, money <u>for the ticket</u> |
| <u>кумытлык</u> паша | <u>job for three</u> (people)                    |
| <u>шудылык</u> олык  | <u>hay</u> meadow                                |
| <u>эмлык</u> кушкыл  | <u>medicinal</u> plant                           |

11.22. Which derived adjective is appropriate in the following sentences?

1. Пакчаштына түрлө ... шудо кушкеш. (чаян/чайысе/чайлык)
2. Ме ... тортым нигунам она нал: авай эре шке ышта. (кевытан/кевытысе/кевытлык)
3. Йолташем Индий гыч сылне ... материалым конден. (тувыран/тувырысо/тувырлык)
4. Самырык серызе онгай ... романым возен. (сюжетан/сюжетысе/сюжетлык)
5. Чодыраште кок ... понгым погенам. (шүран/шүрысö/шүрлык)

### 11.6.7. Approximative suffix *-алге*

Attachment to base word: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44).

This suffix is productive in combination with color names, and denotes a reduced intensity.

|                   |                  |
|-------------------|------------------|
| шем(е) → шемалге  | black → blackish |
| канде → кандалге  | blue → bluish    |
| күрен → күреналге | brown → brownish |

11.23. What word are the following adjectives derived from? Translations of the base words are given in the exercise key.

1. кочалге 'bitterish'
2. йүран 'rainy'
3. шошымсо '(in) spring, vernal'
4. йөндымö 'uncomfortable, awkward; unpleasant; inadequate'
5. йолашлык 'for pants'
6. пайдале 'useful'
7. нарынчалге 'yellowish'
8. кечаш 'daily'
9. паренган 'with potatoes'
10. ушдымо 'mad, stupid, foolish'
11. тенгеаш '(costing a) ruble'
12. оласе 'urban'
13. лудымо 'boneless'
14. пөлеклык 'for a present'
15. черле 'sick, ill'
16. корнысо '(of a/on a) road'
17. ошалге 'whitish; pale'
18. вүдан 'watery'
19. арняш 'weekly'
20. тамле 'tasty'

11.24. Enter an adjective derived from the given noun into the following sentences, using an appropriate derivational suffix.

1. Ача-аватым пагалет гын, кужу ... лият. (ўмыр) (Калыкмут)
2. Шкет ең пасу ... шкет пүнчө гай. (тўр) (Калыкмут)
3. ... паша кок ўмырым ила. (чап) (Калыкмут)
4. ... кайык – кайык оғыл, памаш уке – ял оғыл. (шулдыр) (Калыкмут)
5. 2014-ше ... Олимпиадым Сочиште эртареныт. (ий)
6. Йолташем ... уверым каласен: лотерей дене тудо машинам сенген налын. (куан)
7. Имныдыме сурт ... ең гай. (вуй) (Калыкмут)
8. Тиде тумо 400 ... (ий)
9. Мыланна мотор ... кружкам пөлекленыт. (кофе)
10. Темше имне кандаш ... (йол) (Калыкмут)

## 11.7. Verbal derivation

### 11.7.1. Denominal derivational suffix -л

Attachment to base word: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

This suffix forms second conjugation verbs from nouns and adjectives. The verbs carry various meanings connected to the meaning of the base word.

|       |   |                |              |   |                     |
|-------|---|----------------|--------------|---|---------------------|
| окшак | → | окшаклаш (-ем) | lame         | → | to limp             |
| ак    | → | аклаш (-ем)    | price; value | → | to assess, to grade |
| негыз | → | негызлаш (-ем) | foundation   | → | to found            |
| ямде  | → | ямдылаш (-ем)  | ready        | → | to prepare          |

This suffix is also used in the adaptation of Russian loan words. When Russian verbs (excluding grammatically marked reflexive, reciprocal and intransitive verbs – see below) are loaned into Mari, this suffix is attached to the Russian infinitive ending (which loses its palatalization). The resulting verb belongs to the second conjugation:

| Russian     | Mari                | Translation    |
|-------------|---------------------|----------------|
| фильтровать | фильтроватлаш (-ем) | to filter      |
| страховать  | страховатлаш (-ем)  | to insure      |
| подчинять   | подчинятлаш (-ем)   | to subordinate |
| вооружать   | вооружатлаш (-ем)   | to arm         |

In Russian, an ending *-ся ~ -сь* can be attached to verbal forms, finite and non-finite, to mark the verb in question as reflexive, reciprocal or intransitive. This Russian suffix, which always follows the inflectional endings, is replaced with the derivational suffix *-алм* (see below in Mari) in Mari, which follows *-л*, and creates first-conjugation verbs.

| Russian     |                 | Mari                |                        | Translation    |                   |
|-------------|-----------------|---------------------|------------------------|----------------|-------------------|
| Base form   | Reflexive, etc. | Base form           | Reflexive, etc.        | Base form      | Reflexive, etc.   |
| фильтровать | фильтроваться   | фильтроватлаш (-ем) | фильтроватлалташ (-ам) | to filter      | to be filtered    |
| страховать  | страховаться    | страховатлаш (-ем)  | страховатлалташ (-ам)  | to insure      | to insure oneself |
| подчинять   | подчиняться     | подчинятлаш (-ем)   | подчинятлалташ (-ам)   | to subordinate | to be subordinate |
| вооружать   | вооружаться     | вооружатлаш (-ем)   | вооружатлалташ (-ам)   | to arm         | to arm oneself    |

11.25. The following Russian verbs are used as loan words in Mari. What is their infinitive in Mari?

1. звонить 'to ring, to clang; to phone, to call'
2. судиться 'to be convicted, to be sentenced (by a court)'
3. путешествовать 'to travel'
4. жариться 'to fry, to roast (intr.)'
5. участвовать 'to participate, to take part'

### 11.7.2. Denominal translativ suffix -аӧ

Attachment to base word: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44).

This suffix has a translativ meaning 'to become, to turn into; to acquire, to get'.

|     |   |               |                        |   |                      |
|-----|---|---------------|------------------------|---|----------------------|
| кӱ  | → | кӱаӧаш (-ам)  | stone                  | → | to turn to stone     |
| вий | → | вияӧаш (-ам)  | force, power, strength | → | to become stronger   |
| куп | → | купаӧаш (-ам) | swamp                  | → | to turn into a swamp |

This suffix is frequently coupled with the causative suffix -ѧ, see 11.7.14 – page 394.

11.26. Attach the suffix -аӧ to the following nouns. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. кумыл 'mood, spirits'
2. пондаш 'beard'
3. нужна 'roof'
4. лавыра 'mud, dirt'
5. еш 'family'

### 11.7.3. Translative suffix -лан

Attachment to base word: N-suffix (see 1.6.6 – page 48).

This suffix forms second conjugation verbs from nouns and adjectives. It is somewhat productive, but the exact meanings of the words created through it can vary.

|       |   |                  |                    |   |                         |
|-------|---|------------------|--------------------|---|-------------------------|
| чер   | → | черланаш (-ем)   | illness            | → | to fall ill             |
| вер   | → | верланаш (-ем)   | place              | → | to be situated / placed |
| шомак | → | шомакланаш (-ем) | word               | → | to talk                 |
| койыш | → | койышланаш (-ем) | nature, appearance | → | to pose, to flaunt      |

### 11.7.4. Denominal translativ suffix -ем

Attachment to base word: E-suffixes (see 1.6.2 – page 43).

This productive suffix forms first conjugation verbs from adjectives and nouns. The verbs derived with this suffix denote the acquisition of the property denoted by the base word.

|        |   |                  |               |   |                   |
|--------|---|------------------|---------------|---|-------------------|
| ош(о)  | → | ошемаш (-ам)     | white         | → | to become white   |
| неле   | → | нелемаш (-ам)    | heavy         | → | to grow heavy     |
| сай    | → | саемаш (-ам)     | good          | → | to get better     |
| аӧысыр | → | аӧысыремаш (-ам) | narrow        | → | to narrow (intr.) |
| изи    | → | иземаш (-ам)     | small, little | → | to shrink (intr.) |

This suffix is frequently coupled with the causative suffix -ѧ, see 11.7.14 – page 394.

11.27. Attach the suffix *-ем* to the following words. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. начар 'poor, bad'
2. кугу 'big'
3. шем(е) 'black'
4. шонго 'old'
5. пушкыдо 'soft'

### 11.7.5. Denominal translative suffix *-eum*

Attachment to base word: E-suffixes (see 1.6.2 – page 43).

This unproductive suffix forms first conjugation verbs from nouns and adjectives.

|        |   |                 |           |   |                     |
|--------|---|-----------------|-----------|---|---------------------|
| шулдо  | → | шулдешташ (-ам) | cheap     | → | to become cheap(er) |
| нечке  | → | нечкешташ (-ам) | coddled   | → | to become coddled   |
| вес(е) | → | весешташ (-ам)  | different | → | to change           |

### 11.7.6. Denominal translative suffix *-z*

This unproductive suffix forms intransitive second conjugation verbs from nouns and adjectives.

|        |   |                |       |   |                 |
|--------|---|----------------|-------|---|-----------------|
| лавыра | → | лавыргаш (-ем) | dirt  | → | to become dirty |
| сусыр  | → | сусыргаш (-ем) | wound | → | to be wounded   |

### 11.7.7. Denominal factitive suffix *-m ~ -ð*

This somewhat productive suffix forms transitive second conjugation verbs from nouns and adjectives. The resulting verbs denote the process of turning something into something. They denote that their object is assigned or given the concept denoted by the base word.

|       |   |                |            |   |            |
|-------|---|----------------|------------|---|------------|
| лўм   | → | лўмдаш (-ем)   | name       | → | to name    |
| кыл   | → | кылдаш (-ем)   | connection | → | to connect |
| ўмыл  | → | ўмылташ (-ем)  | shade      | → | to shade   |
| кадыр | → | кадырташ (-ем) | crooked    | → | to bend    |

This suffix is also attached to verbal stems to create causative verbs, see 11.7.14 – page 394.

### 11.7.8. Deverbal frequentative suffix *-л*

Attachment to verbal stem: ЫI-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45).

This productive suffix is used to form first conjugation verbs from other verbs. With regard to the base verb, the derived verb has a frequentative or momentary nature: it can express that the action takes place over a longer period of time, with interruptions and less intensity.

|                |   |                  |                  |   |                    |
|----------------|---|------------------|------------------|---|--------------------|
| ышташ (-ем)    | → | ыштылаш (-ам)    | to do            | → | to do              |
| лўмдаш (-ем)   | → | лўмдылаш (-ам)   | to name          | → | to call names      |
| чонешташ (-ем) | → | чонештылаш (-ам) | to fly           | → | to fly             |
| шындаш (-ем)   | → | шындылаш (-ам)   | to put, to place | → | to set, to arrange |

11.28. Attach the suffix *-л* to the following verbs.

1. сүретлаш (-ем) 'to draw'
2. покташ (-ем) 'to drive (e.g., animals somewhere)'
3. савырнаш (-ем) 'to turn (intr.)'
4. пөлеклаш (-ем) 'to give (as a present)'
5. төршташ (-ем) 'to jump'

11.29. In the following sentence pairs, the non-frequentative verb is appropriate in one sentence, and the frequentative verb is appropriate in the other. Which verb is appropriate where?

- 1a. Ик палымем аттракционышто пашам ышта: тудо толшо-влакым түрлө семын лүдыкта/лүдыктылеш.
- 1b. Икана мыйым чот лүдыктенит/лүдыктылыныт – тугодсек тутынен ойлем.
- 2a. Йыван мөнгышкө тылзе еда чонешта/чонештылеш.
- 2b. Эчук кызыт Хельсинкишке чонешта/чонештылеш.
- 3a. Тенгече оксам банкыште вашталтенам/вашталтылынам.
- 3b. Маша паша вержым чүчкыдын вашталта/вашталтылеш.
- 4a. У паспорттым мылам ик тылзе ыштеныт/ыштылыныт.
- 4b. Вера паша деч посна шинчен ок керт: эре ала-мом ышта/ыштылеш.
- 5a. Авамлан открыткым кажне пайремлам колтем/колтылам.
- 5b. Эрла Америкышке серышым колтем/колтылам.

### 11.7.9. Deverbal frequentative suffix *-ed*

Attachment to verbal stem: E-suffixes (see 1.6.2 – page 43).

This suffix is mainly used to form frequentative second conjugation verbs from other verbs. It is not productive.

|             |   |               |                  |   |                      |
|-------------|---|---------------|------------------|---|----------------------|
| лияш (-ям)  | → | лиедаш (-ем)  | to be, to happen | → | to be, to happen     |
| пуаш (-эм)  | → | пуэдаш (-ем)  | to give          | → | to give, to hand out |
| лудаш (-ам) | → | лудедаш (-ем) | to read          | → | to browse            |

### 11.7.10. Deverbal frequentative suffix *-кал*

This somewhat productive suffix forms frequentative second conjugation verbs from verbs.

|              |   |                 |                   |   |            |
|--------------|---|-----------------|-------------------|---|------------|
| ойыраш (-ем) | → | ойыркалаш (-ем) | to separate (tr.) | → | to sort    |
| висаш (-ем)  | → | вискалаш (-ем)  | to measure        | → | to measure |
| сераш (-ем)  | → | серкалаш (-ем)  | to write          | → | to write   |

### 11.7.11. Deverbal frequentative suffix *-eum*

Attachment to verbal stem: E-suffixes (see 1.6.2 – page 43); bl-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45) *-um* after some stems.

This somewhat productive suffix forms primarily first conjugation frequentative verbs from verbs.

|             |   |                |                   |   |                    |
|-------------|---|----------------|-------------------|---|--------------------|
| шелаш (-ам) | → | шелышташ (-ам) | to break, to chop | → | to cleave, to chop |
| колаш (-ам) | → | колышташ (-ам) | to hear           | → | to listen          |
| руаш (-эм)  | → | руэшташ (-ам)  | to cut            | → | to chop            |

### 11.7.12. Deverbal reflexive suffix *-алт*

Attachment to verbal stem: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44); BI-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45) *-лт* after some stems.

This highly productive suffix is used to form passive, intransitive, reflexive and/or impersonal verbs. Naturally, considerable overlap exists between these categories – as a simplification, one can say that this suffix reduces the number of arguments a verb has by one. It is fully productive – it can be freely attached to a very large number of verbal stems.

|                                  |                                 |
|----------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| аралаш (-ем) → аралалташ (-ам)   | to protect → to protect oneself |
| ямдылаш (-ем) → ямдылалташ (-ам) | to prepare → to prepare oneself |
| мушкаш (-ам) → мушкылташ (-ам)   | to wash (tr.) → to wash oneself |
| манаш (-ем) → маналташ (-ам)     | to say → to be said             |
| ышташ (-ем) → ышталташ (-ам)     | to do → to be done              |
| кылдаш (-ем) → кылдалташ (-ам)   | to connect → to be connected    |
| почаш (-ам) → почылташ (-ам)     | to open (tr.) → to open (intr.) |

11.30. Attach the suffix *-алт* to the following verbs. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. висаш (-ем) 'to weigh'
2. ешараш (-ем) 'to add'
3. сенгаш (-ем) 'to win; to defeat'
4. петыраш (-ем) 'to close (tr.)'
5. саламлаш (-ем) 'to greet'

Some examples illustrating different usages:

Reflexive:

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Немыч йылме дене экзаменышке октябрь тылзылан <u>возалтынам</u> . | I <u>signed myself up</u> for the German language exam in October.    |
| Ўдыр-влак театрышке каяш <u>ямдылалтыт</u> .                      | The girls <u>are getting (themselves) ready</u> to go to the theater. |
| Коля пырдыжеш чот <u>пералтын</u> .                               | Kolya <u>hit</u> against the wall hard.                               |
| Балерине-влак чўчкыдын <u>висалтыт</u> , шонем.                   | Ballerinas <u>weigh themselves</u> often, I think.                    |

Passive:

|  |   |
|--|---|
| «Салика» спектакль шуко гана <u>шыңдалтын</u> .        | The play "Salika" <u>has been staged</u> many times.          |
| Тиде книга нелын <u>кусаралтеш</u> .                   | This book is hard <u>to translate</u> .                       |
| Йошкар-Олаште шуко театр фестиваль <u>эртаралтеш</u> . | Many theater festivals <u>are carried out</u> in Yoshkar-Ola. |
| Олаште кок у школ <u>чоңалтеш</u> .                    | Two new schools <u>are being built</u> in town.               |

Note that the agent is not typically marked in such Mari sentences. One can say for example *наша ышталтеш* 'the work is being done', but *this work is being done by the children* would have to be expressed with an active construction: *Йоча-влак тиде нашам ыштам*. On occasion, the agent can be marked with the postposition *дене*. This is, however, predominantly done in connection with natural phenomena, and never with animate agents.

|                                       |   |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| Мланде <u>йўр дене</u> мушкылтеш.     | The land is being washed <u>by the rain</u> . |
| Пушенге <u>мардеж дене</u> лўнгалтеш. | The tree is swaying <u>in the wind</u> .      |
| Пасу <u>лум дене</u> леведалтын.      | The field was covered <u>by snow</u> .        |

Intransitive:

|   |  |
|---|--|
| Маша вургемым <u>мушкеш</u> .               | Masha is washing clothes.                            |
| Йошкар вино деч тамга <u>огеш мушкылт</u> . | Red wine spots <u>don't come out (in the wash)</u> . |
| Оля олмапу гыч олмам <u>күреш</u> .         | Olya is <u>picking</u> an apple from the apple tree. |
| Шүшерем <u>күрылтын</u> .                   | My pearl necklace <u>tore</u> .                      |

Impersonal: In this function, these verbs are only used in the third person singular. Whereas a rough translation could usually be given as 'one does/did (something)', in actuality and in dependence on the context there would be different possibilities for translation. Note that in this function, accusative objects can occur.

|  |   |
|--|---|
| Ала-кунам ожно суас йылмымат <u>тунемалтын</u> . | Sometime in the past, Tatar <u>was studied</u> as well. |
|--|---|

Impersonal clauses of this type on occasion have the connotation that something happened involuntarily or by chance. On occasion, a specific agent of an action is clear from context.

|   |   |
|---|---|
| Сар годым шүйшө паренгымат <u>кочкалтын</u> .   | During the war, <u>(we) had to eat</u> rotten potatoes as well. |
| Йочам ыштымеке, шагал <u>малалтын</u> .         | After having the child, <u>(I) hardly slept</u> .               |
| Сибирьыште шуко <u>кошталтын</u> .              | <u>(I/we) have been</u> to Siberia many times.                  |
| Керек лўман калык нерген <u>коалалтын</u> огыл. | <u>(I) have not heard</u> of the Kereks.                        |

11.31. Transform these sentences into passive/reflexive/intransitive/impersonal sentences using the derivational suffix *-алт*, following the pattern: *Окнам почам → Окна почылтеш*.

1. Неле жапым монденна.
2. Электрон серышым колтенам.
3. Тудо вийым ешарен.
4. Йоча жапым шарнем.
5. Кевытым петыренет.
6. Вуйлатышым алмаштеныт.
7. Пеледыш пушым шижына.
8. Шөртньым шергын аклат.
9. Парням пўчкынам.
10. Шинчалым веленат.

**11.7.13. Deverbal causative suffix -км**

Attachment to verbal stem: bl-suffix (see 1.6.4 – page 45), though in the case of some very common words derived with this suffix, the *-ы* is not realized: *шукташ (-ем)* 'to carry out' ← *шуаш (-ам)* 'to reach', *йўкташ (-ем)* 'to give to drink' ← *йўаш (-ам)* 'to drink'.

This productive suffix is used to create new second conjugation verbs from both transitive and intransitive verbs.

a) It is used to create causative verbs from transitive verbs, i.e., 'to have/make someone do something'.

|             |   |                |  |          |   |                         |
|-------------|---|----------------|--|----------|---|-------------------------|
| уграш (-ем) | → | ургыкташ (-ем) |  | to sew   | → | to have (someone) sew   |
| ышташ (-ем) | → | ыштыкташ (-ем) |  | to do    | → | to have (someone) do    |
| шонаш (-ем) | → | шоныкташ (-ем) |  | to think | → | to make (someone) think |



b) It is used to create transitive verbs from intransitive ones. In such cases, there can often be a causative undertone.

|             |   |                |                 |   |                                 |
|-------------|---|----------------|-----------------|---|---------------------------------|
| йўаш (-ам)  | → | йўкташ (-ем)   | to drink        | → | to give to drink, to make drink |
| ончаш (-ем) | → | ончыкташ (-ем) | to see          | → | to show                         |
| шочаш (-ам) | → | шочыкташ (-ем) | to be born      | → | to give birth                   |
| шулаш (-ем) | → | шулыкташ (-ем) | to melt (intr.) | → | to melt (tr.)                   |

11.32. Attach the suffix *-км* to the following verbs. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. налаш (-ам) 'to buy'
2. ўжаш (-ам) 'to invite'
3. канаш (-ем) 'to rest, to relax'
4. модаш (-ам) 'to play'
5. йўкшаш (-ем) 'to cool down (intr.)'

**Syntax:** Generally speaking, the person being made to carry out the activity is marked in the dative case, and the object of said activity is marked with the accusative case.

|                                  |                                |
|----------------------------------|--------------------------------|
| книгам лудаш (-ам)               | to read a book                 |
| книгам лудыкташ (-ем)            | to make (someone) read a book. |
| тунемшылан лудыкташ (-ем)        | to make a student read         |
| тунемшылан книгам лудыкташ (-ем) | to make a student read a book  |

There is a smaller number of verbs created by this suffix for which the causative meaning has been obscured, and which are used as transitive verbs governing the accusative: e.g., *йўкташ (-ем)* 'to give to drink' (← *йўаш (-ем)* 'to drink'), *шочыкташ (-ем)* 'to give birth, to bear' (← *шочаш (-ам)* 'to be born').

|                          |                                    |
|--------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Йоча шочын.              | A child was born.                  |
| Мый ик эргым шочыктенам. | I gave a birth to one son.         |
| Йоча чайым йўэш.         | The child drinks tea.              |
| Мый йочам йўктем.        | I give the child to drink.         |
| Мый чайым йўктем.        | I'm giving tea to drink.           |
| Рвезе чия.               | The boy is getting dressed.        |
| Ава эргыжым чикта.       | The mother dresses her son.        |
| Аваже курткым чикта.     | Mother puts a jacket on (him/her). |
| Вўд ыра.                 | The water is warming up.           |
| Мый вўдым ырыктем.       | I am warming up the water.         |

Note, however, that double accusative marking is not permissible in literary language. If one wishes to mark both a person and the object of an activity, the person is marked in the dative case, the object in the accusative case.

|                             |                                  |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------------|
| Ава эргыжлан курткым чикта. | Mother puts a jacket on her son. |
|-----------------------------|----------------------------------|

In the case of some verbs, either the person being made to carry out the activity or the object of said activity can be marked with the accusative case, if only one object is explicitly named. If the person being made to carry out an activity is marked in the accusative, the causative aspect of this derivational suffix can be said to be obscured. If both objects are named, the person must, however, be in the dative case; two accusative objects are not permissible.

|                           |                                 |
|---------------------------|---------------------------------|
| унам йўкташ (-ем)         | to give a guest to drink        |
| кофем йўкташ (-ем)        | to give coffee to drink         |
| уналан кофем йўкташ (-ем) | to give a guest coffee to drink |

This suffix is recursive, i.e., it can be connected to a stem multiple times: *ыраш (-ем)* 'to warm up (intr.)' → *ырыкташ (-ем)* 'to warm up (tr.)' → *ырыктыкташ (-ем)* 'to have someone warm something up'.

11.33. What is appropriate in the following sentences, a reflexive form in *-алт*, or a causative form in *-кт*?

1. Тиде муро лұмын тылат шокталтеш/шоктыкта.
2. Сұан кече нигунам огеш мондалт/мондыкто.
3. Окса маскамат кушталтеш/куштыкта. (Калыкмут)
4. Авторын у романже ик тылзыште возалтын/возыктен.
5. Шикш пуш ялым шарналтеш/шарныкта.

11.34. Make causative sentences from the given non-causative sentence. The indicated person should make the subject of the non-causative sentence do something, for example: *Йоча чайым йўэш + мый* → *Мый йочалан чайым йўктем.*

1. Уныка кўварым мушкеш + кова
2. Йолташ Марий Эл гыч марий мўйым конден + Питер
3. Мурызо эше ик мурым мурен + ончышо-влак
4. Ёдыр музыкальный школыш коштеш + ача-ава
5. Ача мороженныйым налын + изи ёдыр
6. Секретарь кофем шолта + вуйлатыше
7. Тунемше-влак англичан йылме дене диалог-влакым колыштыт + туныктышо
8. Пашазе-влак мўрым погат + ферме оза
9. Коча математике дене урокым терга + Петя
10. Иза шампанскийым почеш + Галя

#### 11.7.14. Deverbal causative suffix *-m ~ -d*

This suffix forms transitive second-conjugation verbs from other generally intransitive verbs. It is especially productive, in the form *-d*, in combination with the translative suffixes *-ан* (see 11.7.2 – page 388) and *-ем* (see 11.7.4 – page 388).

|               |   |                |                    |   |                           |
|---------------|---|----------------|--------------------|---|---------------------------|
| шолаш (-ам)   | → | шолташ (-ем)   | to boil (intr.)    | → | to boil (tr.)             |
| пураш (-ем)   | → | пурташ (-ем)   | to enter           | → | to bring in, to lead into |
| виянҥаш (-ам) | → | вияндаш (-ем)  | to become stronger | → | to make stronger          |
| нелемаш (-ам) | → | нелемдаш (-ем) | to grow heavy      | → | to make heavier           |

11.35. Attach the suffix *-d* to the following verbs. Translations are given in the exercise key.

1. шовынаҥаш (-ам) 'to soap oneself'
2. иземаш (-ам) 'to abate, to decrease'
3. пураканҥаш (-ам) 'to get dusty'
4. сақыраҥаш (-ам) 'to become sugared'
5. весемаш (-ам) 'to change (intr.)'

11.36. What is appropriate in the following sentences, a causative or non-causative form?

1. Петя кровать йымаке шылын/шылтен да мален колтен.
2. Йылмызе лияш тендам кў кумыланҥын/кумыланҥден?
3. Тиде актёр Чарли Чаплин гай калыкым воштылын/воштылтен мошта.
4. Тыгай вургем тыйым шонгемеш/шонгемда.
5. Инфляций кугемын/кугемден, а пашадар иземян/иземден.

This suffix is also attached to nominal stems to create factitive verbs, see 11.7.7 – page 389.

### 11.7.15. Deverbal causative suffix *-map ~ -dap*

This somewhat productive suffix forms second conjugation causative verbs from verbs.

|              |   |                 |  |                   |   |                      |
|--------------|---|-----------------|--|-------------------|---|----------------------|
| йомаш (-ам)  | → | йомдараш (-ем)  |  | to become lost    | → | to lose              |
| шижаш (-ам)  | → | шижтараш (-ем)  |  | to feel, to sense | → | to notify, to inform |
| умылаш (-ем) | → | умылтараш (-ем) |  | to understand     | → | to explain           |

### 11.7.16. Deverbal momentary suffix *-алт*

Attachment to verbal stem: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44).

This suffix is used to form momentary verbs that denote short or repeated actions. It is not as productive as its first conjugation counterpart (see 11.7.12 – page 391), but is fairly common.

|              |   |                 |  |             |   |                       |
|--------------|---|-----------------|--|-------------|---|-----------------------|
| канаш (-ем)  | → | каналташ (-ем)  |  | to rest     | → | to rest, to relax     |
| шокташ (-ем) | → | шокталташ (-ем) |  | to be heard | → | to sound              |
| шонаш (-ем)  | → | шоналташ (-ем)  |  | to think    | → | to think, to consider |

11.37. In the following sentence pairs, the non-momentary verb is appropriate in one sentence, and the momentary verb is appropriate in the other. Which verb is appropriate where?

- 1a. Кенезым те кушто канеда/каналтеда?
- 1b. Паша деч вара изиш каненам/каналтенам.
- 2a. Вован логарже корштен, садлан тудо ик мурым веле мурен/муралтен.
- 2b. Тудын йүкшө мотор: сылнын мур.
- 3a. Вует коршта гын, пел шагат кий/киялте.
- 3b. Ольош черле: эмлымерыште кия/киялта.
- 4a. Те могай йылме дене кутыреда/кутыралтеда?
- 4b. Паша нерген кутыраш/кутыралташ изиш жапет уло мо?
- 5a. Визым кок арня вученам/вучалтенам.
- 5b. Иван Петрович вашке толеш, вич минут вучыза/вучалтыза.

11.38. Insert a properly inflected form of the verb in the simple past tense II. Note that since the conjugation class is not indicated, you must determine if a reflexive form (first conjugation) or momentary form (second conjugation) is appropriate in the given sentence.

1. Диетым кучымо годым мый эр еда ... (висалташ)
2. Вургемым чемоданышке ... да вик вокзалыш каенам. (погалташ)
3. Ме йолташем дене университетыште тунемме жапым чўчыкыдын ... (шарналташ)
4. Тиде книга кунам ... , могай курымышто? (сералташ)
5. Таче йўдым ала-кў окнашке ... , но мый почын омыл. (пералташ)

### 11.7.17. Deverbal momentary suffix *-ал*

Attachment to verbal stem: A-suffix (see 1.6.3 – page 44).

This productive suffix forms momentary first conjugation verbs – i.e., verbs that denote actions viewed as punctual, taking place at one moment in time.

|              |   |                |  |          |   |                 |
|--------------|---|----------------|--|----------|---|-----------------|
| шўраш (-ем)  | → | шўралаш (-ам)  |  | to smear | → | to smear        |
| шогаш (-ем)  | → | шогалаш (-ам)  |  | to stand | → | to stand up     |
| вучаш (-ем)  | → | вучалаш (-ам)  |  | to wait  | → | to wait (a bit) |
| тошкаш (-ем) | → | тошкалаш (-ам) |  | to tramp | → | to step         |

11.39. In the following sentence pairs, the non-momentary verb is appropriate in one sentence, and the momentary verb is appropriate in the other. Which verb is appropriate where?

- 1a. Тый пушенгым ик ганат руэн/руал от сене: виет ок сите.
- 1b. Күсотышто пушенгым руаш/руалаш огеш лий.
- 2a. Тый мом тыге кычкырет/кычкыралат? Мый сонгыра омыл.
- 2b. «Шогыза! Ида кудал!» – кычкырыш/кычкырале поездыш вараш кодшо пörьен.
- 3a. Нелеш ида нал, тиде троллейбус вокзал дене шога/шогалеш?
- 3b. Ёстембалне вазе шоген/шогалын.
- 4a. Эрдене окнашке ончышым/ончалыым – а тушто икымше лум возеш.
- 4b. Окнашке кужун онченам/ончалынам: унам вученам.
- 5a. Маша – весела ёдыр, эре шыргыжеш/шыргыжалеш.
- 5b. Ивукын мыскаражлан чылан шыргыжыныт/шыргыжалыч.

11.40. In the following sentence pairs, the momentary verb is appropriate in one sentence, and the frequentative verb is appropriate in the other. Which verb is appropriate where?

- 1a. Тиде пеледышыш вёдым кажне кечын опталаш/оптылаш кёлеш.
- 1b. Чайышке сакырым тыланда опталаш/оптылаш мо?
- 2a. Ёлем пеш коршта – тошкалын/тошкыштын ом керт.
- 2b. Рвезе ала-кём вуча: лу минут ик верыштак тошкалеш/тошкыштеш.
- 3a. Студент годым университетесе газетыш чёккыдын сералтенам/серкаленам.
- 3b. Жапет лиеш гын, мыланна ик-кок мутым сералте/серкале.
- 4a. Омса огеш почылт гын, тудым чотрак шёкалаш/шёкедылаш кёлеш.
- 4b. Уремыште калык пеш шуко лийын: чылан ала-кушко вашкат, шёкалыт/шёкедылыт.
- 5a. Ёлташем-влак Байкал деке каяш темленыт. Мый изиш шоналтышым/шонкалышым да кёненам.
- 5b. Экзаменыште Коля кужун шоналтен/шонкален.

11.41. What word are the following verbs derived from? Translations of the base words are given in the exercise key.

1. моторешташ (-ам) 'to grow in beauty'
2. почылташ (-ам) 'to open (intr.)'
3. каласалташ (-ам) 'to be said'
4. мутланаш (-ем) 'to talk, to discuss'
5. куштыкташ (-ем) 'to make somebody dance'
6. возкалаш (-ем) 'to write (freq.), to scribble'
7. волташ (-ем) 'to lower, to let down'
8. воштылалаш (-ам) 'to smile'
9. шемемдаш (-ем) 'to blacken'
10. йынгырташ (-ем) 'to call, to phone'
11. наледаш (-ам) 'to buy (freq.)'
12. куптыграш (-ем) 'to wrinkle, to get wrinkly'
13. йодышташ (-ам) 'to inquire, to ask questions'
14. ёянгаш (-ам) 'to become oily'
15. куандараш (-ем) 'to delight'
16. коштедаш (-ем) 'to travel, to go (around)'
17. полшыкташ (-ем) 'to make somebody help'
18. самырыкемаш (-ам) 'to be rejuvenated'
19. каласкалаш (-ем) 'to talk'
20. шолташ (-ем) 'to boil, to cook (tr.)'

### 11.8. Adverbial derivation

Various mechanisms of deriving adverbs were discussed in 8 – page 307.

## 12.     The sentence and its constituents

### 12.1. General remarks

[...]

### 12.2. The constituents of simple sentences

[...]

### 12.3. The order of constituents and adverbials

[...]

### 12.4. Sentence types

[...]

#### **12.4.1. Declarative sentences (statements)**

[...]

#### **12.4.2. Interrogative sentences (questions)**

[...]

##### 12.4.2.1. Alternative questions

[...]

##### 12.4.2.2. Constituent questions

[...]

#### **12.4.3. Imperative sentences (commands, orders)**

[...]

#### **12.4.4. Exclamative sentence**

[...]

## 13. Phrases

[...]

### 13.1. Verb phrase

[...]

### 13.2. Noun phrase

[...]

### 13.3. Adjective phrase

[...]

### 13.4. Postpositional phrase

[...]

### 13.5. Coordination of phrases

[...]

## 14.     Clausal coordination

### 14.1. Juxtaposition

[...]

### 14.2. “Overt” coordination

[...]



## 15. Clausal subordination

[...]

### 15.0. General remarks

[...]

### 15.1. Nominal clauses

[...]

### 15.2. Relative clauses

[...]

#### **15.2.1. Relative participles**

[...]

#### **15.2.2. Finite relative clauses with relative pronouns**

[...]

##### *15.2.2.1. Constructions of the type *Kö ... / Mo ... , myðo ...**

[...]

##### *15.2.2.2. Constructions of the type *kyðo + noun ... , myðo + noun ...**

[...]

##### *15.2.2.3. Postposed relative clauses referring to full nouns in the superordinate clause*

[...]

### 15.3. Conditional clauses

[...]

### 15.4. Concessive clauses

[...]

### 15.5. Causal clauses

[...]

### 15.6. Consecutive clauses

[...]

### 15.7. Final clauses

[...]

#### **15.7.1. Finite final clauses**

[...]

**15.7.2. Non-finite final clauses with the infinitive in -аш**

[...]

**15.7.2.1. -аш + Dative -лан**

[...]

**15.7.2.2. -аш + маньн**

[...]

**15.7.3. Non-finite final clauses with the future-necessitive participle in -шаш**

[...]

**15.7.3.1. Future-necessitive participle in -шаш + dative in -лан**

[...]

**15.7.3.2. Future-necessitive participle in -шаш + маньн**

[...]

**15.7.4. Final constructions with postpositions**

[...]

Other adverbial clauses

[...]

**15.8. Comparative clauses**

[...]

## A. Exercise key

### A.1. Introduction

#### 1.1.

2. sovaš, 6. mondaš, 7. kâlmaš, 10. čarnaš

#### 1.2.

1. магнат
2. тенор
3. тротуар
4. макияж
5. дьякон
6. телефон
7. экватор
8. июнь
9. ефрейтор
10. съезд

#### 1.3.

1. манеш
2. мане
3. маньым
4. вий
5. виян
6. вием
7. пуэм
8. еш
9. эн
10. оръен

#### 1.4.

1. шӧрын
2. пече
3. коча
4. тўнгалтыш
5. тулартыше
6. торешлык
7. шошо
8. ынже
9. ваштареш
10. йӧсӧ

#### 1.5.

1. kut
2. kudât
3. kutlo
4. peletše
5. vütlan
6. krabet
7. fagotem
8. švet
9. ut'ukla
10. gitna

**1.6.**

1. sovlage
2. lijde
3. ješke
4. lūmdaš
5. lūttāmō

**1.7.**

1. māj denem
2. pōrt teke
3. joltašem dene
4. joća-vlak tene
5. vūd kâč

**1.8.**

1. ылыжташ
2. лугкалаш
3. монча
4. негызше
5. кўмыжшö

**1.9.**

1. пашаште
2. мутышто
3. пōртыштö
4. пōлемыште
5. чōгытыштö

**1.10.**

1. Мюнхеныште
2. Гамбургышто
3. Вильнюсышто
4. Сомбатхейыште
5. Маардушто

**1.11.**

1. теле
2. тунемше
3. янлык
4. ең
5. имне

**1.12.**

1. йолташем
2. шуэм
3. телем
4. шергем
5. таксиэм
6. варен'ем
7. авам
8. аваем
9. кўртн'ем
10. юл'ем

**1.13.**

1. ака
2. вате
3. тенге
4. вургем
5. мут
6. арня
7. куку
8. шўльö
9. апрель
10. марий

**1.14.**

1. йолташат
2. шуэат
3. шергат
4. шергеат
5. таксиат
6. варенят
7. ават
8. аваят
9. кўртнят
10. юлят

**1.15.**

1. мут
2. шуэ
3. вуй
4. тошто
5. апрель
6. кугу
7. коля
8. жюри
9. кинде
10. когыльо

**1.16.**

1. йолташын
2. шуэн
3. телын
4. шерген
5. таксин
6. вареньын
7. аван
8. авайын
9. кўртньын
10. июльын

**1.17.**

1. метро
2. коча
3. пошкудо
4. рушарня
5. ең
6. мый
7. нуно
8. поян
9. туныктышо
10. еш

**1.18.**

1. йодышышто
2. шуэште
3. кечыште
4. шергеште
5. таксиште
6. вареньыште
7. пушто
8. ешыште
9. кўртныштö
10. июльышто

**1.19.**

1. олма
2. толмаш
3. чодыра
4. вуй
5. Норвегий
6. арня
7. шудо
8. кид
9. шўльö
10. июнь

**1.20.**

1. йолташлан
2. шуэлан
3. шергылан
4. шергелан
5. таксилан
6. вареньылан
7. авалан
8. авайлан
9. кўртныылан
10. июльлан

**1.21.**

1. паша
2. тунемше
3. лу
4. тул
5. айдеме
6. менге
7. тенге
8. имн'е
9. вуй
10. апрель

**1.22.**

1. аваже ~ аваж
2. шуэже ~ шуэж
3. кечыже ~ кечыж
4. шергеже ~ шергеж
5. лумжо
6. шотшо
7. рожшо
8. йолташыже ~ йолташыж ~ йолташше
9. кўртныжō ~ кўртныж
10. июльжо

**1.23.**

1. вер
2. иза
3. ший
4. йўд
5. йылме
6. ожо
7. пуш
8. кўртньо
9. пальто
10. йōратымаш

**1.24.**

1. PX1SG ~ ACC
2. PX1SG
3. PX1SG
4. PX1SG
5. ACC
6. PX1SG ~ ACC
7. ACC
8. PX1SG
9. PX1SG
10. PX1SG

**1.25.**

1. ENC
2. PX2SG
3. PX2SG
4. PX2SG ~ ENC
5. PX2SG
6. ENC
7. ENC
8. ENC
9. PX2SG ~ ENC
10. ENC

**1.26.**

1. GEN
2. GEN ~ DERIV
3. DERIV
4. DERIV
5. GEN
6. DERIV
7. GEN
8. GEN ~ DERIV
9. DERIV
10. GEN ~ DERIV

**1.27.**

| <b>Nominative</b> | <b>PX1SG<br/>-ем</b> | <b>Clitic -ат<br/>'and, also'</b> | <b>Genitive<br/>-н</b> | <b>Inessive<br/>-ште</b> | <b>PX1PL<br/>-на</b> |
|-------------------|----------------------|-----------------------------------|------------------------|--------------------------|----------------------|
| тумо              | тумем                | тумат                             | тумын                  | тумышто                  | тумына               |
| паша              | пашам                | пашат                             | пашан                  | пашаште                  | пашана               |
| шуэ               | шуэм                 | шуэат                             | шуэн                   | шуэште                   | шуэна                |
| метро             | метроэм              | метроат                           | метрон                 | метрошто                 | метрона              |
| стерео            | стереоэм             | стереоат                          | стереон                | стереошто                | стереона             |
| шөртньö           | шөртн'ем             | шөртнят                           | шөртньын               | шөртньышто               | шөртньына            |
| шампунь           | шампунь              | шампунят                          | шампуньын              | шампуньышто              | шампуньна            |
| кофе              | кофем                | кофеат                            | кофен                  | кофеште                  | кофена               |
| Заполярье         | Заполярьем           | Заполярьеат                       | Заполярьен             | Заполярьеште             | Заполярьена          |
| Австрий           | Австрием             | Австрият                          | Австрийын              | Австрийыште              | Австрийна            |
| толмаш            | толмашем             | толмашат                          | толмашын               | толмашыште<br>~ толмаште | толмашна             |
| Рига              | Рига                 | Ригат                             | Ригын                  | Ригыште                  | Ригына               |



## A.2. Nouns

### 2.1.

1. шагат
2. кем
3. маска
4. ужалыше
5. лум
6. пире
7. эстон
8. снеге
9. йӧратымаш
10. пижерге

### 2.2.

1. ял-влак
2. ола-влак
3. рвезе-влак
4. ўдыр-влак
5. йылме-влак

### 2.3.

1. Турист-влак унагудышто илат.
2. Изам-влак спортсмен улыт.
3. Катян кидше кылма.
4. Шуко еҥ англичанла кутыра.
5. Йоча-влак кудывечыште модыт.
6. Пакчаштына мӧр кўэш.
7. Марий Элыште пеш яндар энгер-влак йогат.
8. Тиде арняште онай концерт-влак лийыт.
9. Ленан йолжо коршта.
10. Стадионышто куд йоча куржталеш.

### 2.4.

1. тунуктышо-шамыч
2. пий-шамыч
3. омса-шамыч
4. ўстел-шамыч
5. ужалыше-шамыч

### 2.5.

1. пакчалаште
2. тылзылаште
3. кўварлашке
4. курымлашке
5. уремлаште

### 2.6.

1. ийлашке
2. концертлашке
3. тылзылаште
4. интернет-лаштыклашке
5. олалашке

**2.7.**

1. Анямыт
2. театр-влак
3. Саша-влак
4. Васлиймыт
5. ава-влак

**2.8.**

1. кидем, кидет
2. күтүэм, күтүэт
3. колям, колят
4. ачам, ачат
5. родем, родет
6. шўжарем, шўжарет
7. күзем, күзет
8. кечем, кечет
9. вуем, вует
10. метроэм, метроэт

**2.9.**

1. ўдырем
2. эргым, эргем
3. изам
4. шольым, шолем
5. шўжарем

**2.10.**

1. уныкат
2. чўчўч, чўчўэт
3. ватет
4. шешкыч, шешкет
5. венгыч, венгет

**2.11.**

1. кидше
2. йолжо
3. шўргыжō
4. шинчаже
5. нерже
6. пылышыже
7. тупшо
8. вачыже
9. шўмжō
10. парняже

**2.12.**

1. ўпшö
2. ялже
3. тунуктышыжо
4. книгаже
5. компьютерже
6. илышыже
7. пöртшö
8. пошкудыжо
9. шўжарже
10. йочаже

**2.13.**

1. кочана, кочада
2. чўчўна, чўчўда
3. шольына, шольыда
4. йолташна, йолташда
5. пийна, пийда
6. пашана, пашада
7. университетна, университетда
8. мландына, мландыда
9. элна, элда
10. пачерна, пачерда

**2.14.**

1. республикна
2. энгерна
3. йылмыда
4. рўдолада
5. кочкишда

**2.15.**

1. суртышт
2. кудышт
3. кудывечышт
4. пакчашт
5. тавышт
6. мончашт
7. коңгашт
8. пöлемышт
9. ўстелышт
10. пўкенышт

**2.16.**

1. ялышт
2. уремышт
3. капкашт
4. олмапушт
5. паренгышт

**2.17.**

1. лүмем, лүмет, лүмжө, лүмна, лүмда, лүмышт
2. йылмем, йылмет, йылмыже, йылмына, йылмыда, йылмышт
3. пашам, пашат, пашаже, пашана, пашада, пашашт
4. ешем, ешет, ешыже, ешна, ешда, ешышт
5. пөртем, пөртет, пөртшө, пөртна, пөртда, пөртышт
6. авам, ават, аваже, авана, авада, авашт
7. марием, мариет, марийже, марийна, марийда, марийышт
8. ватем, ватет, ватыже, ватына, ватыда, ватышт
9. ўдырем, ўдырет, ўдыржө, ўдырна, ўдырда, ўдырышт
10. йолташем, йолташет, йолташыже, йолташна, йолташда, йолташышт

**2.18.**

1. пөлекет
2. пеледышыже
3. туныктышына
4. книгада
5. изашт
6. шольым/шодем
7. шўжарет
8. имнына
9. пырысше
10. пием

**2.19.**

1. сумкам-влак, сумкат-влак, сумкаже-влак, сумкана-влак, сумкада-влак, сумкашт-влак
2. тувырем-влак, тувырет-влак, тувыржо-влак, тувырна-влак, тувырда-влак, тувырышт-влак
3. пырысем-влак, пырысет-влак, пырысше-влак, пырысна-влак, пырысда-влак, пырысышт-влак
4. пошкудем-влак, пошкудет-влак, пошкудыжо-влак, пошкудына-влак, пошкудыда-влак, пошкудышт-влак
5. шергашем-влак, шергашет-влак, шергашыже-влак, шергашна-влак, шергашда-влак, шергашышт-влак

**2.20.**

1. пий-влакем, пий-влакет, пий-влакше, пий-влакна, пий-влакда, пий-влакышт
2. ручка-влакем, ручка-влакет, ручка-влакше, ручка-влакна, ручка-влакда, ручка-влакышт
3. туныктышо-влакем, туныктышо-влакет, туныктышо-влакше, туныктышо-влакна, туныктышо-влакда, туныктышо-влакышт
4. йодыш-влакем, йодыш-влакет, йодыш-влакше, йодыш-влакна, йодыш-влакда, йодыш-влакышт
5. вашмут-влакем, вашмут-влакет, вашмут-влакше, вашмут-влакна, вашмут-влакда, вашмут-влакышт

**2.21.**

1. тунемшына-влак
2. тетрадь-влакше
3. мутерда-шамыч
4. книгашт-влак
5. почеламут-шамычет
6. муро-влакем
7. йонгылышна-влак
8. кусарызе-шамычышт
9. пашаже-влак
10. серыш-влакда

**2.22.**

1. тудын туныктышыжо
2. мыйын жапем
3. тендан пашада
4. мемнан элна
5. нунын ялышт
6. тендан авада
7. тыйын илышет
8. тендан лумда
9. мемнан пошкудына
10. тыйын кокат

**2.23.**

1. тендан мörда
2. нунын пакчашт
3. мыйын пачерем
4. нунын телевизорышт
5. мемнан удрына
6. тудын статьяже
7. мыйын компьютерем
8. тыйын мариет
9. тендан театрда
10. мемнан верна

**2.24.**

1. фотосүретче
2. ужалыше
3. йылмызе
4. мурызо
5. возышо

**2.25.**

1. сүретче
2. композитор
3. шымлызе
4. возышо
5. актёр

**2.26.**

1. киндым
2. вўдым
3. муным
4. ўйым
5. шōрым
6. олмам
7. пўрым
8. печенъым
9. мелнам
10. когыльым

**2.27.**

1. пире-влакым
2. рывыж-влакым
3. пўчō-влакым
4. пий-влакым
5. комбо-влакым
6. чыве-влакым
7. имне-влакым
8. ушкал-влакым
9. сōсна-влакым
10. каза-влакым

**2.28.**

1. авамым, аватым, аважым, аванам, авадам, аваштым
2. ўдыремым, ўдыретым, ўдыржым, ўдырнам, ўдырдам, ўдырыштым

**2.29.**

1. йолташем-влакым, йолташет-влакым, йолташыже-влакым, йолташна-влакым, йолташда-влакым, йолташышт-влакым
2. йолташ-влакемым, йолташ-влакетым, йолташ-влакшым, йолташ-влакнам, йолташ-влакдам, йолташ-влакыштым

**2.30.**

1. шўрым
2. сырам
3. подкогыльым
4. мўйым
5. пўртўсым
6. мурым
7. ватым
8. тўвырам
9. кукум
10. тылзым

**2.31.**

1. почеламутым
2. йўлам
3. шылым
4. тамакым
5. йылмым
6. пашам
7. еңым
8. телевизорым
9. книгам
10. мутым

**2.32.**

1. шошым
2. идалыкым
3. телым
4. менгым
5. йўдым

**2.33.**

1. пакчан
2. паренгын
3. вишньын
4. шудын
5. куэн
6. мёрын
7. ковыштан
8. пеледышын
9. трайын
10. мландын

**2.34.**

1. йоча-влакын
2. рвезе-влакын
3. ўдыр-влакын
4. родо-влакын
5. уна-влакын
6. йолташ-влакын
7. палыме-влакын
8. туныктышо-влакын
9. студент-влакын
10. вуйлатыше-влакын

**2.35.**

1. акамын, акатын, акажын, аканан, акадан, акаштын
2. шўжаремын, шўжаретын, шўжаржын, шўжарнан, шўжардан, шўжарыштын

**2.36.**

1. унам-влакын, унат-влакын, унаже-влакын, унана-влакын, унада-влакын, унашт-влакын
2. уна-влакемын, уна-влакетын, уна-влакшын, уна-влакнан, уна-влакдан, уна-влакыштын

**2.37.**

1. возышын романже
2. поэтын ылышыже
3. мурызын йӱкшӧ
4. сӱретчын кидше
5. йочан модышыжо
6. йолташын пӧлекше
7. ӱдырын телефонжо
8. пошкудын пачерже
9. кован ялже
10. ачан пашаже

**2.38.**

1. ӱдырын вургемже
2. бизнесъенгын фирмыже
3. рвезын ӱпшӧ
4. южын температуржо
5. кован мелнаже
6. элын президентше
7. аван кангашыже
8. школын тунемшыже
9. туныктышын йодышыжо
10. театрын сӱретчыже

**2.39.**

1. ешлан
2. марийлан
3. ватылан
4. эргылан
5. ӱдырлан
6. изалан
7. шольылан
8. акалан
9. чӱчӱлан
10. чӱчӱнылан

**2.40.**

1. пашазе-влаклан
2. ургызо-влаклан
3. ужалыше-влаклан
4. сӱретче-влаклан
5. бизнесъенг-влаклан
6. шанчыенг-влаклан
7. йылмызе-влаклан
8. кусарызе-влаклан
9. эмлызе-влаклан
10. мурызо-влаклан

**2.41.**

1. приемлан, пиетлан, пийжылан, пийналан ~ пийланна, пийдалан ~ пийланда, пийыштан
2. пырысемлан, пырысетлан, пырысшылан, пырысналан ~ пырысланна, пырысдалан ~ пырысланда, пырысыштан



**2.42.**

1. ялем-влаклан, ялет-влаклан, ялже-влаклан, ялна-влаклан, ялда-влаклан, ялышт-влаклан
2. ял-влакемлан, ял-влакетлан, ял-влакшылан, ял-влакналан/ял-влакланна, ял-влакдалан/ял-влакланда, ял-влакыштан

**2.43.**

1. юмылан
2. синоптик-влаклан
3. попугайлан
4. ўдыремлан
5. сенгышылан
6. комбылан
7. ачамлан
8. уныка-влакшылан
9. журналист-влаклан
10. студентлан

**2.44.**

1. эргыжлан
2. кувалан
3. лудшыжо-влаклан
4. студент-влаклан
5. Йўштö Кугызалан
6. турист-влаклан
7. колыштшо-влаклан
8. артист-влаклан
9. уна-влаклан
10. тунемше-влаклан

**2.45.**

1. ужалышылан
2. чоңгышылан
3. менеджерлан
4. депутатлан
5. кусарызылан

**2.46.**

1. рушарнялан
2. телылан
3. У ийлан
4. ныл шагатлан
5. кум арнялан

**2.47.**

1. канышлан
2. аваштлан
3. йылмызылан
4. конференцийлан
5. ийлан
6. шинчаллан
7. килограммлан
8. коважлан
9. мурылан
10. археологлан

**2.48.**

1. ялыште
2. корнышто
3. олаште
4. вокзалыште
5. трамвайыште
6. унагудышто
7. пörтыштö
8. аптекыште
9. тоштерыште
10. кевытыште

**2.49.**

1. уремлаште
2. площадьлаште
3. кўварлаште
4. кафелаште
5. кочмыверлаште
6. книгагудылаште
7. театрлаште
8. почтылаште
9. школлаште
10. черкылаште

**2.50.**

1. пачерыштем, пачерыштет, пачерыштыже, пачерыштына, пачерыштыда, пачерыштышт
2. сумкаштем, сумкаштет, сумкаштыже, сумкаштына, сумкаштыда, сумкаштышт

**2.51.**

мыйын серышлаште, тыйын серышлаште, тудын серышлаште, мемнан серышлаште, тендан серышлаште, нунын серышлаште

**2.52.**

1. киношто
2. Йошкар-Олаште
3. Сибирьыште
4. Японийыште
5. йылмыште
6. кундемлаште
7. интернетыште
8. йот эллаште
9. омышто
10. Марсыште

**2.53.**

1. Египетыште
2. хорышто
3. эмлымверыште
4. мӱнгыштӧ
5. паркыште
6. чодыраште
7. унагудыштыда
8. циркыште
9. компьютерыштет
10. Юлышто

**2.54.**

1. кечыште
2. ийыште
3. йӱдыштӧ
4. жапыште
5. январьыште

**2.55.**

1. йочаште
2. салтакыште
3. йодышышто
4. тунемшыште
5. пашаеныште

**2.56.**

1. чодырашке
2. пасушко
3. корнышко
4. курыкышко
5. тавышке
6. вӱдышкӧ
7. кудышко
8. тӱнныкышкӧ
9. леведышышке
10. печышке

**2.57.**

1. пачерыш
2. омсаш
3. қухныйыш
4. ванныйыш
5. ўстелыш
6. лампыш
7. пўкеныш
8. вазыш
9. пырдыжыш
10. окнаш

**2.58.**

1. Юлыш
2. Москош
3. куэш
4. пасуш
5. пўяш

**2.59.**

1. пёлемышке
2. капкашке
3. метрошко
4. киндышке
5. мёнгышкө

**2.60.**

1. сумкалашке, сумкалаш
2. серышлашке, серышлаш
3. фотолашке, фотолаш
4. кўсенлашке, кўсенлаш
5. рожлашке, рожлаш
6. ручкалашке, ручкалаш
7. корнылашке, корнылаш
8. таксилашке, таксилаш
9. кафелашке, кафелаш
10. унагудылашке, унагудылаш

**2.61.**

1. школышкеш, школышкет, школышкыжо, школышкына, школышкыда, школышкышт
2. шинчашкеш, шинчашкет, шинчашкыже, шинчашкына, шинчашкыда, шинчашкышт

**2.62.**

мыйын кўсенлаш(ке), тыйын кўсенлаш(ке), тудын кўсенлаш(ке), мемнан кўсенлаш(ке), тендан кўсенлаш(ке), нунын кўсенлаш(ке)

**2.63.**

1. школыш(ко)
2. пашаш(ке)
3. Ханты-Мансийскыш(ке)
4. Хельсинкиш(ке)
5. менгыш(ке)
6. корныш(ко)
7. зоопаркыш(ке)
8. оперыш(ке)
9. уремыш(ке)
10. пазарыш(ке)

**2.64.**

1. космосыш(ко)
2. вўдыш(кө)
3. тоштерлаш(ке)
4. стадионыш(ко)
5. капкаш(ке)
6. тенгызыш(ке)
7. мландыш(ке)
8. кўмыжыш(ке)
9. тенгеш(ке)
10. кўварыш(ке)

**2.65.**

1. шошыш(ко)
2. принцессыш(ке)
3. ийыш(ке)
4. еңгыш(ке)
5. блузкыш(ко)
6. рушыш(ко)
7. йомакыш
8. окмакыш(ке)
9. идалыкыш(ке)
10. мучашыш(ке) ~ мучашке

**2.66.**

1. йолеш
2. вуеш
3. вачеш
4. кастрюлеш
5. салмаш
6. кўэш
7. метроэш
8. куэш
9. отеш
10. мөнгеш

**2.67.**

1. сумка-влакеш
2. мешак-влакеш
3. пырдыж-влакеш
4. пӱкен-влакеш
5. полко-влакеш
6. окна-влакеш
7. кудывече-влакеш
8. ял-влакеш
9. корно-влакеш
10. автобус-влакеш

**2.68.**

1. кӱсенешем, кӱсенешет, кӱсенешыже, кӱсенешна, кӱсенешда, кӱсенешышт
2. сумкашем, сумкашет, сумкашыже, сумкашна, сумкашда, сумкашышт

**2.69.**

1. окнам-влакеш, окнат-влакеш, окнаже-влакеш, окнана-влакеш, окнада-влакеш, окнашт-влакеш
2. окна-влакешем, окна-влакешет, окна-влакешыже, окна-влакешна, окна-влакешда, окна-влакешышт

**2.70.**

1. вуеш
2. унагудеш
3. классеш
4. омсашыже
5. тӱреш
6. йолешыже
7. чонешыже
8. остановкеш
9. кундемеш
10. кӱмыжеш

**2.71.**

1. таксиэш
2. иеш
3. тулеш
4. мешакешыже
5. егеш

**2.72.**

1. пирыла
2. мераҥла
3. маскала
4. шордыла
5. пӱчыла
6. имньыла
7. шопкела
8. пийла
9. кукула
10. лывыла

**2.73.**

1. йоча-влакла
2. рвезе-влакла
3. ўдыр-влакла
4. родо-влакла
5. куэ-влакла
6. пўнчў-влакла
7. тумо-влакла
8. кож-влакла
9. коля-влакла
10. чыве-влакла

**2.74.**

1. ўдыремла, ўдыретла, ўдыржыла, ўдырнала, ўдырдала, ўдырыштла
2. ковамла, коватла, коважла, кованала, ковадала, коваштла

**2.75.**

родем-влакла, родет-влакла, родыжо-влакла, родына-влакла, родыда-влакла, родышт-влакла

**2.76.**

1. йолташла
2. колла
3. коважла
4. рывыжла
5. маскала
6. пырысла
7. шўшпыкла
8. рвезе-влакла
9. тылзыла
10. марий-влакла

**2.77.**

1. имньыла
2. пеледышла
3. йомакла
4. мут-влакла
5. тенгызла
6. сока
7. семла
8. кочажла
9. мўйла
10. полатла

**2.78.**

1. олаге
2. ялге
3. родыге
4. чўчўге
5. чўчўнныге
6. ватыге
7. марийге
8. йочаге
9. йолташге
10. палымыге

**2.79.**

1. кўмыж-влакге
2. совла-влакге
3. кўзё-влакге
4. вилке-влакге
5. каструль-влакге

**2.80.**

родемге, родетге, родыжге, родынаге, родыдаге, родыштге

**2.81.**

йолташем-влакге, йолташет-влакге, йолташыже-влакге, йолташна-влакге, йолташда-влакге, йолташышт-влакге

**2.82.**

1. ватыштге
2. принтерге
3. янлык-влакге
4. кичкыге
5. вазыге
6. пырысыштге
7. луге
8. дискге
9. пёртге
10. туныктышышт-влакге

**2.83.**

1. ешге
2. кечыге-йўдге
3. тунемшыге
4. пёртге, кудывечыге
5. мелнаге



### A.3. Adjectives

#### 3.1.

1. изиште
2. у жаргышке
3. Марий Элысылан
4. кўжгым
5. шемым

#### 3.2.

1. самырык-влак
2. олесе-влаклан
3. шерым
4. поянын, нужнан
5. йўштыштö

#### 3.3.

1. йўштыш(кö), шокшыш(ко)
2. волгыдышто
3. йошкаргын, ошын
4. тоштым
5. кўчыклан

#### 3.4.

1. ош
2. у жарге
3. кошар
4. ныжылгым
5. ошо
6. йошкар
7. кошарге
8. шем
9. у жар
10. йошкаргым

#### 3.5.

1. Шинчат кава гай канде.
2. Нуно рывыж гай чоя улыт.
3. Эвика аваж гаяк ушан кушкеш.
4. Тазалыкда тумо гай пенгыде лийже.
5. Илышда мўй гай шере лийже.

#### 3.6.

1. Классыштына кум икгай/ик фамилиян рвезе уло.
2. Эрге ден ачаже икгай/ик койышан улыт.
3. Чемоданем-влак икгай/ик нелытан улыт.
4. Тендан ужга-влакда икгай/ик кўжгытан улыт?
5. Тыште чылан икгай/ик праван улына.

**3.7.**

1. изирак
2. нелырак
3. йўштырак
4. шемырак
5. лавыранрак
6. кужурак
7. ошырак
8. яндаррак
9. куштылгырак
10. поянрак
11. кўчыкрак
12. йошкаргырак
13. порырак
14. нужнарак
15. кугурак

**3.8.**

1. йўштырак
2. шулдырак
3. тамлырак
4. кужурак
5. нелырак, оңайрак

**3.9.**

1. Козьмодемьянск Йошкар-Ола деч тоштырак ~ тошто.
2. Шольо иза деч самырыкрак ~ самырык.
3. Миллиардер миллионер деч поянрак ~ поян.
4. Урал курык Марий Элысе курык деч кўкшырак ~ кўкшө.
5. Ий вўд деч куштылгырак ~ куштылго.

**3.10.**

1. шергырак
2. шокшырак
3. кугурак
4. волгыдырак
5. шерырак
6. шулдырак
7. пенгыдырак
8. кужурак
9. нелырак
10. оңайрак

**3.11.**

1. сылнырак, эн сылне
2. пушкыдырак, эн пушкыдо
3. начаррак, эн начар
4. осалрак, эн осал
5. шонгырак, эн шонго
6. шопырак, эн шопо
7. кумдарак, эн кумда
8. йӧсырак, эн йӧсӧ
9. веселарак, эн весела
10. кӱренрак, эн кӱрен

**3.12.**

1. эн йӧратыме
2. эн тора
3. эн свежа
4. эн кумда
5. эн ушан
6. эн кӱшыл
7. эн пайдале
8. эн вяян
9. эн лишыл
10. эн писе

## A.4. Quantifiers

### 4.1.

1. коло шым / коло шымыт
2. кудло вич / кудло визыт
3. латныл / латнылыт
4. индеш / индеше
5. индешле
6. латкандаш / латкандаше
7. вич / визыт
8. нылле шым / нылле шымыт
9. кудло
10. кумло кум / кумло кумыт

### 4.2.

1. кумшүдө коло
2. шымшүдө индешле индеш / шымшүдө индешле индеше
3. түжем нылшүдө витле шым / түжем нылшүдө витле шымыт
4. латик түжем кудшүдө кумло кандаш / латик түжем кудшүдө кумло кандаше
5. коло кум миллион индешшүдө түжем нылшүдө коло ик / коло кум миллион индешшүдө түжем нылшүдө коло икте

### 4.3.

1. Марий театрыште тений кум у спектакль лектеш.
2. Вес ий гыч мемнан университетыште шымле кандаш йотэлысе студент тунемаш тўгалеш.
3. Марий Элыште шүдо лу түрлө калык ила.
4. «Изи мör пеледыш» конкурсыш түжем вичшүдө школ тунемше ушнен.
5. Чавайн лүмеш книгагудышто миллион кокшүдө марий да руш книга аралалтеш.

### 4.4.

1. икте
2. кандашшүдө кудло кокыт
3. кум
4. нылыт
5. латвич/лучко
6. нылшүдө шымле кудыт
7. шымле шымыт
8. латкандаш
9. кокшүдө шымле индеш
10. лу

### 4.5.

1. латшымытым
2. Шүдө коло иктылан
3. кокытышко
4. Латкудытлан
5. кумло индешыште
6. шүдө индешле кумытым
7. Нылытеш
8. шымытыште
9. Кокшүдө нылле визыт
10. Кандашым

**4.6.**

1. ныллымше
2. шымле индешымше
3. нылымше
4. латкумшо
5. шымле икымше
6. тўжем вичшўдымшө
7. индешле кокымшо
8. шўдө кумло кудымшо
9. кудшўдө витлымше
10. икымше / первый

**4.7.**

1. латкудымшо
2. коло кокымшо
3. тўжем индешшўдө визымше
4. шўдө витле кумшо
5. луымшо

**4.8.**

1. луымшым
2. тўжем индешшўдө кандашле икымшыште
3. кокымшын
4. латнылымшышке
5. нылле кандашымшылан

**4.9.**

1. кум кудыташ
2. индешле индеш шўдаш
3. ныл тичмашат ик кумыташ
4. индеш тичмашат кум нылыташ
5. индешле индеш тичмашат индеш луаш

**4.10.**

1c, 2d, 3a, 4e, 5b

**4.11.**

1. нылытын
2. Кеч-мынярын
3. Коктынат
4. Нылытын
5. чылан
6. шагалракын/шагалынрак
7. шукын
8. кумытын
9. кумытын
10. шўдын

**4.12.**

1. кумыньнам
2. нылындам
3. когында
4. кумынышт
5. когыньнан
6. кумыныштынат
7. когылянышт
8. визыныштын
9. кумылянда
10. когыньнам

**4.13.**

1. Шуматкечын
2. кушкыжмо
3. Шочмо
4. Рушарнян
5. кугарня

**4.14.**

1. июнышто
2. сорла тылзыште
3. ноябрь
4. майыште
5. идым тылзе

**4.15.**

1. кенжежым
2. шыжым
3. теле
4. телым, шошым
5. шошо

**4.16.**

1. 961-ше ийыште
2. 1867-ше ийыште
3. 1907-ше ий
4. 1929-ше ий
5. 1963-шо ийыште

**4.17.**

1. 1970–1980-ше ийлаште
2. 50-ше ийла
3. 1990-ше ийлаште
4. 20-шо ийлаштыже
5. 60-шо ийла

**4.18.**

1. IX–XI курымла
2. XIII–XVI курымлаште
3. XII курым
4. XVII курым
5. XI–XV курымлаште

**4.19.**

1. 24-ше январьыште/24-ше шорыкйол тылзын/шорыкйол тылзын 24-ше кечынже
2. 10-шо декабрь/10-шо теле тылзе/теле тылзын 10-шо кечыже
3. 15-ше сентябрьыште/15-ше идым тылзын/идым тылзын 15-ше кечынже
4. 2-шо август/2-шо сорла тылзе/сорла тылзын 2-шо кечыже
5. 18-ше июньышто/18-ше пеледыш тылзын/пеледыш тылзын 18-ше кечынже

**4.20.**

1. 1991-ше ий апрель/1991-ше ий апрель тылзе/1991-ше ий вӱдшор тылзе
2. 1997-ше ий сентябрьыште/1997-ше ий сентябрь тылзыште/1997-ше ий идым тылзыште
3. 2005-ше ий июль/2005-ше ий июль тылзе/2005-ше ий сӱрем тылзе
4. 2015-ше ий августышто/2015-ше ий август тылзыште/2015-ше ий сорла тылзыште
5. 2016-шо ий октябрьыште/2016-шо ий октябрь тылзыште/2016-шо ий шыжа тылзыште

**4.21.**

1. 1978-ше ий 31-ше декабрь/1978-ше ий 31-ше теле тылзе/1978-ше ий теле тылзын 31-ше кечыже
2. 1981-ше ий 8-ше майыште/1981-ше ий 8-ше ага тылзын/1981-ше ий ага тылзын 8-ше кечынже
3. 1992-шо ий 26-шо мартыште/1992-шо ий 26-шо ӱярня тылзын/1992-шо ий ӱярня тылзын 26-шо кечынже
4. 2010-шо ий 24-ше июль/2010-шо ий 24-ше сӱрем тылзе /2010-шо ий сӱрем тылзын 24-ше кечыже
5. 2015-ше ий 17-ше мартыште/2015-ше ий 17-ше ӱярня тылзын/2015-шо ий ӱярня тылзын 17-ше кечынже

**4.22.**

1. 1919-ше ий теле
2. 1928-ше ий телым
3. 1931-ше ий шыжым
4. 1960-шо ий кенгеж
5. 2008-ше ий шошым

**4.23.**

1. (эрдене) шымытат лучкылан/ (эрдене) шым шагатат латвич/лучко минутлан
2. (кечывалым) латкокытат пелылан/ (кечывалым) латкок шагатат кумло минутлан / (кечывалым) латкок шагатат пелылан
3. Латвич шагатат нылле минутлан / латвизытат ныллылан/ (кечывалым/кечывал деч вара) кум шагатат нылле минутлан /(кечывалым/кечывал деч вара)) кумытат ныллылан
4. (Кастене) кудытат колылан/ (кастене) куд шагатат коло минутлан / латкандашат колылан/ латкандаш шагатат коло минутлан
5. (йӱдым/кастене) латиктылан/ (йӱдым/кастене) латик шагатлан/ коло кум шагатлан

**4.24.**

1.  $13 + 7 = 20$  (қоло)
2.  $56 \div 2 = 28$  (қоло кандаше)
3.  $8 \times 6 = 48$  (нылле кандаше)
4.  $35 + 48 = 83$  (кандашле кумыт)
5.  $91 - 19 = 72$  (шымле кокыт)
6.  $500 \div 25 = 20$  (қоло)
7.  $1800 - 315 = 1485$  (тўжем нылшўдө кандашле визыт)
8.  $124 + 776 = 900$  (индешшўдө)
9.  $30 \times 4 = 120$  (шўдө қоло)
10.  $10 - 2 = 8$  (кандаше)



## A.5. Pronouns

### 5.1.

1. Тый шуматкечын мом ыштет?
2. Тый мом ышташ йöратет?
3. Те мылам полшен кертыда?
4. Те ода пале, Ивук кызыт кушто?
5. Те могай киндым налаш темледа?

### 5.2.

1. Тиде
2. Тудо
3. Нине (Тиде)
4. Тудо
5. Нине (Тиде)

### 5.3.

1. Тиде
2. Ту
3. Нине
4. Тудо
5. Тиде

### 5.4.

1. тудо
2. Ты/Тиде
3. Тиде
4. Ту/Тудо
5. тудо

### 5.5.

1. тидын
2. нунылан
3. тудым
4. нунын
5. тудлан

### 5.6.

1. тушеч
2. тыгай
3. тысе
4. Тунар
5. Тыште
6. тунарлан
7. тышан
8. тынарын
9. тушко
10. тыге



**5.13.**

1. шкаланна
2. икте-весеынам
3. шкендан
4. икте-весеыштлан
5. икте-весеыдам

**5.14.**

1. кушто
2. кушеч
3. кунамсек
4. мынярылан/кунам
5. могай

**5.15.**

1. мода
2. мона
3. кӧжӧ
4. мошт
5. кӧна

**5.16.**

1. Кунар
2. мыняре
3. мыняр
4. Мыняр
5. кунаре

**5.17.**

1. Нигушто./Кенгежым нигушто канен онал.
2. Нигӧм./ Нигӧм она/огына вучо.
3. Нимогайым./Нимогай вином ом йӧрате.
4. Нимынярым./ Нимыняр йонгылышым ыштен отыл/одал.
5. Нимо нерген./ Нимо нерген она/огына шоно.
6. Нигудо./Нигудо сумка мылам ок/огеш келше.
7. Нигушан./Шке ўмылет деч нигушан шылаш ок/огеш лий. / Шке ўмылет/ўмылда деч нигушан от/ода/огыда шыл.
8. Нигузе./Ерыште шергашым нигузе муаш ок/огеш лий./ Ерыште шергашым нигузе от/ода/огыда му.
9. Нигушеч./ Миллион тенгем нигушеч налаш ок/огеш лий./ Миллион тенгем нигушеч от/ода/огыда нал.
10. Нигунам./ Те сандалыкыш нигунам ода/огыда чонеште.

**5.18.**

1. кеч-мом/керек-мом
2. кеч-кӧм /керек-кӧм
3. кеч-кушто/керек-кушто
4. кеч-кунам/керек-кунам
5. кеч-мыняр(е)/кеч-кунар(е)/керек-мыняр(е)/керек-кунар(е)

**5.19.**

1. ала-кушко
2. ала-кӧ
3. ала-кунам

4. ала-кузе/ала-мо дене
5. ала-мыняр/ала-кунар

**5.20.**

1. иктаж-мом
2. иктаж-мыняр/иктаж-кунар
3. иктаж-кӧ
4. иктаж-могай
5. иктаж-молан

**5.21.**

1. керек-кушко
2. ала-молан
3. иктаж-кушто
4. иктаж-мыняр
5. керек-мом
6. ала-могай
7. иктаж-кӧм
8. ала-кушеч
9. кеч-кузе
10. ала-кунам

**5.22.**

1. мыняр-гынат/кунар-гынат
2. кузе-гынат
3. кӧ дене гынат
4. кушто-гынат
5. мом-гынат

**5.23.**

1. южо
2. икмыняр
3. кажне, кажне
4. чумыр
5. чылан

## A.6. Postpositions

### 6.1.

ваштарешем, ваштарешет, ваштарешыже, ваштарешна, ваштарешда, ваштарешышт

### 6.2.

мыйын годым, тыйын годым, тудын годым, мемнан годым, тендан годым, нунын годым

### 6.3.

мый денем, тый денет, тудын дене, мемнан дене, тендан дене, нунын дене

### 6.4.

1. тый декет
2. тудын марте
3. мый дечем
4. мемнан коклаште
5. тыйын почешет (тыйын почеш / тый почешет)
6. тендан дене
7. мыйын наре
8. тыйын йотке
9. нунын самынышт (нунын самын)
10. мыйын пеленем (мыйын пелен / мый пеленем)

### 6.5.

1. икте-весе
2. тидын
3. Кӧ/Кӧн
4. тудын
5. мо

### 6.6.

1. вере
2. верчын
3. вачын
4. виса
5. вашеш
6. гай
7. ваштареш
8. водын
9. вереш
10. вошт

### 6.7.

1. тендан деке
2. Мый декем
3. тый декет
4. мемнан деке
5. тый декет

**6.8.**

1. тоштер дене
2. пу дене
3. пошкудо дене
4. историй дене
5. тўжем дене
6. воштылмо дене
7. олма дене
8. тылзе дене
9. машина дене
10. бульвар дене

**6.9.**

1. коля деч
2. аваж деч
3. мотор деч
4. Юл деч
5. кумыл деч
6. кочмо деч
7. тигр деч
8. йолташем деч
9. марийже деч
10. экзамен деч

**6.10.**

1. деч
2. гыч
3. дене
4. деч
5. гыч
6. деч
7. деке
8. дене
9. деке
10. дене

**6.11.**

1. гана
2. годым
3. годсек
4. дангыт
5. гоч

**6.12.**

1. йөре
2. келгыт
3. еда
4. келшышын
5. ияшын
6. кōра
7. йөршан
8. йотке
9. жапыште
10. йыр

**6.13.**

1. кутынек/кутынъ
2. кўжгыт
3. кужыт
4. кўдынъ
5. кумдык
6. кут/кутыш
7. кўкшыт
8. кўшеш
9. кумдыкеш
10. кутышеш/кутышын

**6.14.**

1. мучаште
2. мучко
3. лийын
4. лугыч
5. лўмеш
6. мучкылан
7. мелын
8. марте
9. мучашеш
10. манмаште

**6.15.**

1. нерген
2. олмеш
3. наре
4. поче/почела
5. ончыде
6. пелен
7. осыгечын
8. нерген
9. пачаш
10. ожно

**6.16.**

1. кокла гыч
2. йымалан/йымак(е)
3. көргыштө
4. велке/век(е)/вельш(ке)
5. воктен(е)
6. көргыш(кө)/көргеш
7. воктелан/воктен(е)
8. йымач(ын)
9. коклаште
10. веч(ын)/вел гыч

**6.17.**

1. могырым/могыр гыч
2. кўдылан
3. лонгаште
4. кыдалне
5. (деке) лиш(ке)
6. кыдалан/кыдалне
7. лонга гыч
8. лишне
9. кўдылнө
10. могырыш(ко)

**6.18.**

1. покшелан/покшек(е)
2. өрдыжеш/өрдыжан/өрдыжтө
3. мўндырнө
4. ончык(о)
5. покшеч(ын)
6. өрдыжкө
7. ончыч(ын)
8. покшелне
9. ончылан/ончылно
10. мўндыркө



## A.7. Verbs

### 7.1.

1. мод-
2. му-
3. кой-
4. лукт- (лук-)
5. колышт-
6. йӱ-
7. кушк- (куш-)
8. кудаал-
9. шӱй-
10. керт-
11. камвоз- (камвоч-)
12. кӱ-
13. ий-
14. тӱрвынч- (тӱрвыч-)
15. пӱчк- (пӱч-)

### 7.2.

1. пойо-
2. кӱзӱ-
3. пӱтырӱ-
4. кусаре-
5. возо-
6. мие-
7. нойо-
8. сӱрӱ-
9. тӱйӱ-
10. муро-
11. нангае-
12. йӱрате-
13. кушто-
14. пӱйӱ-
15. чонеште-

### 7.3.

1. курж
2. пӱч
3. уж
4. вашлий
5. лӱд
6. ӱпшыч
7. ший
8. камвоч
9. йӱ
10. лук
11. кол
12. мушкылт
13. шӱш
14. му
15. воштыл

**7.4.**

1. каласе
2. пу/пуо
3. шоно
4. шымле
5. ру/руо
6. кӧнӧ
7. чий/чие
8. пуро
9. мешай/мешае
10. шокто
11. гуляй/гуляе
12. кутыро
13. кӱнчӧ
14. намий/намие
15. сӱретле

**7.5.**

1. лудам, лудат, лудеш, лудына, лудыда, лудыт
2. тунемам, тунемат, тунемеш, тунемына, тунемыда, тунемыт
3. колыштам, колыштат, колыштеш, колыштына, колыштыда, колыштыт
4. налам, налат, налеш, налына, налыда, налыт
5. иям, ият, иеш, ийына, ийыда, ийыт
6. вашлиям, вашлият, вашлиеш, вашлийына, вашлийыда, вашлийыт
7. муам, муат, муэш, муына, муыда, муыт
8. йӱам, йӱат, йӱэш, йӱына, йӱыда, йӱыт
9. лектам, лектат, лектеш, лектына, лектыда, лектыт
10. мушкам, мушкат, мушкеш, мушкына, мушкыда, мушкыт

**7.6.**

1. илем, илет, ила, илена, иледа, илат
2. кутырем, кутырет, кутыра, кутырена, кутыреда, кутырат
3. умылем, умылет, умыла, умылена, умыледа, умылат
4. ыштем, ыштет, ышта, ыштена, ыштеда, ыштат
5. возем, возет, воза, возена, возеда, возат
6. мурем, мурет, мура, мурена, муреда, мурат
7. пуэм, пуэт, пуа, пуэна, пуэда, пуат
8. каем, кает, кая, каена, каеда, каят
9. киём, киет, кия, киена, киеда, кият
10. ноем, ноет, ноя, ноена, ноеда, ноят

**7.7.**

1. ончем, ончет, онча, ончена, ончеда, ончат
2. мушкылтам, мушкылтат, мушкылтеш, мушкылтына, мушкылтыда, мушкылтыт
3. йӧратем, йӧратет, йӧрата, йӧратена, йӧратеда, йӧратат
4. йодам, йодат, йодеш, йодына, йодыда, йодыт
5. туныктем, туныктет, туныкта, туныктена, туныктеда, туныктат
6. ужам, ужат, ужеш, ужына, ужыда, ужыт
7. кудалам, кудалат, кудаlesh, кудалына, кудадыда, кудадыт
8. малем, малет, мала, малена, маледа, малат
9. миём, миет, мия, миена, миеда, мият
10. коштам, коштат, коштеш, коштына, коштыда, коштыт

**7.8.**

1. тўғалыт
2. ошкылеш
3. шонеда
4. кынелама
5. шолтат
6. чиена
7. шоктет
8. ойлат
9. толына
10. йўштылат
11. ужалем
12. кычалеш
13. модына
14. куштат
15. лўеда
16. куржат
17. келшена
18. кертам
19. мошта
20. пўртылыда

**7.9.**

1. ом шиж, от шиж, ок/огеш шиж, она/огына шиж, ода/огыда шиж, огыт шиж
2. ом шич, от шич, ок/огеш шич, она/огына шич, ода/огыда шич, огыт шич
3. ом кол, от кол, ок/огеш кол, она/огына кол, ода/огыда кол, огыт кол
4. ом шу, от шу, ок/огеш шу, она/огына шу, ода/огыда шу, огыт шу
5. ом ўж, от ўж, ок/огеш ўж, она/огына ўж, ода/огыда ўж, огыт ўж
6. ом куш, от куш, ок/огеш куш, она/огына куш, ода/огыда куш, огыт куш
7. ом йў, от йў, ок/огеш йў, она/огына йў, ода/огыда йў, огыт йў
8. ом кынел, от кынел, ок/огеш кынел, она/огына кынел, ода/огыда кынел, огыт кынел
9. ом лек, от лек, ок/огеш лек, она/огына лек, ода/огыда лек, огыт лек
10. ом вашлий, от вашлий, ок/огеш вашлий, она/огына вашлий, ода/огыда вашлий, огыт вашлий

**7.10.**

1. ом пале, от пале, ок/огеш пале, она/огына пале, ода/огыда пале, огыт пале
2. ом кондо, от кондо, ок/огеш кондо, она/огына кондо, ода/огыда кондо, огыт кондо
3. ом кўнчө, от кўнчө, ок/огеш кўнчө, она/огына кўнчө, ода/огыда кўнчө, огыт кўнчө
4. ом кай/кае, от кай/кае, ок/огеш кай/кае, она/огына кай/кае, ода/огыда кай/кае, огыт кай/кае
5. ом пого, от пого, ок/огеш пого, она/огына пого, ода/огыда пого, огыт пого
6. ом шарне, от шарне, ок/огеш шарне, она/огына шарне, ода/огыда шарне, огыт шарне
7. ом кучо, от кучо, ок/огеш кучо, она/огына кучо, ода/огыда кучо, огыт кучо
8. ом нөрө, от нөрө, ок/огеш нөрө, она/огына нөрө, ода/огыда нөрө, огыт нөрө
9. ом пу/пуо, от пу/пуо, ок/огеш пу/пуо, она/огына пу/пуо, ода/огыда пу/пуо, огыт пу/пуо
10. ом вашеште, от вашеште, ок/огеш вашеште, она/огына вашеште, ода/огыда вашеште, огыт вашеште

**7.11.**

1. ом тунем, от тунем, ок/огеш тунем, она/огына тунем, ода/огыда тунем, огыт тунем
2. ом муро, от муро, ок/огеш муро, она/огына муро, ода/огыда муро, огыт муро
3. ом чонгеште, от чонгеште, ок/огеш чонгеште, она/огына чонгеште, ода/огыда чонгеште, огыт чонгеште
4. ом луд, от луд, ок/огеш луд, она/огына луд, ода/огыда луд, огыт луд
5. ом ий, от ий, ок/огеш ий, она/огына ий, ода/огыда ий, огыт ий
6. ом кутыро, от кутыро, ок/огеш кутыро, она/огына кутыро, ода/огыда кутыро, огыт кутыро
7. ом кошт, от кошт, ок/огеш кошт, она/огына кошт, ода/огыда кошт, огыт кошт
8. ом иле, от иле, ок/огеш иле, она/огына иле, ода/огыда иле, огыт иле
9. ом муш, от муш, ок/огеш муш, она/огына муш, ода/огыда муш, огыт муш
10. ом туныкто, от туныкто, ок/огеш туныкто, она/огына туныкто, ода/огыда туныкто, огыт туныкто

**7.12.**

1. ок/огеш ыште
2. ом мий/мие
3. она/огына пӱч
4. от кушто
5. ом му
6. огыт мошто
7. от нойо
8. ом воч
9. ода/огыда мале
10. от лий
11. огыт колышт
12. ок/огеш лӱй/лӱйӧ
13. от мод
14. ок/огеш кӱ
15. она/огына шоно
16. ода/огыда шӱш
17. ом йӧрате
18. она/огына кудал
19. ок/огеш йод
20. огыт кане

**7.13.**

1. воза
2. модына
3. кочкыт
4. ыштет
5. каена
6. куржталеш
7. йынгыртем
8. кынелыда
9. вучем
10. кушталтена

**7.14.**

1. ок/огеш шинче
2. от кучо
3. она/огына кудал
4. ом кол
5. от йӱ
6. ода/огыда тол
7. она/огына шоно
8. ок/огеш кошт
9. она/огына кычкыре
10. ом пале

**7.15.**

1. Финн студент-влак Йошкар-Олашке каяш огыт шоно.
2. Юха визылан документым ок/огеш пого.
3. Ме финн уна-влакым вокзалыште она/огына вашлий.
4. Тый нунылан олам от ончыкто.
5. Мый марла тунемше-влак деч интервьюм ом нал.

**7.16.**

1. Мый уна-влаклан команмелнам пукшем.
2. Айста шокшо мончаш пурена!
3. Йотэлысе студент-влак Юлышто йӱштылыт.
4. Кумышто марий кумалтышым ужат.
5. Юха Марий Элыште илаш кодеш.

**7.17.**

1. Шӱжарем венгр мурым мураш тӱнгалеш.
2. Рвезе-влак футболла модаш тӱнгалыт.
3. Йолташем-влак дене мыйын шочмо кечым пайремлаш тӱнгалына.
4. Телевизор дене марий сериалым ончыкташ тӱнгалыт.
5. Мый кусарышылан пашам ышташ тӱнгалам.

**7.18.**

1. лӱдым, лӱдыч, лӱдӱ, лӱдна, лӱдда, лӱдыч
2. койым, койыч, койо, койна, койда, койыч
3. ӱрым, ӱрыч, ӱрӱ, ӱрна, ӱрда, ӱрыч
4. модым, модыч, модо, модна, модда, модыч
5. муым, муыч, муо, муна, муда, муыч
6. мушкылтым, мушкылтыч, мушкылто, мушкылтна, мушкылтда, мушкылтыч
7. почым, почыч, почо, почна, почда, почыч
8. вашлийым, вашлийыч, вашлие, вашлийна, вашлийда, вашлийыч
9. коштым, коштыч, кошто, коштна, коштда, коштыч
10. кӱым, кӱыч, кӱӱ, кӱна, кӱда, кӱыч

**7.19.**

1. кушкым, кушкыч, кушко, кушна, кушда, кушкыч
2. луктым, луктыч, лукто, лукна, лукда, луктыч
3. тӱрвынчым, тӱрвынчыч, тӱрвынчӱ, тӱрвычна, тӱрвычда, тӱрвынчыч
4. пӱчкым, пӱчкыч, пӱчкӱ, пӱчна, пӱчда, пӱчкыч
5. нушкым, нушкыч, нушко, нушна, нушда, нушкыч

**7.20.**

1. нальым, нальыч, нале, нална, налда, нальыч
2. кредалым, кредалыч, кредале, кредална, кредалда, кредалыч
3. кудалым, кудалыч, кудале, кудална, кудалда, кудалыч
4. логалым, логалыч, логале, логална, логалда, логалыч
5. шульым, шульыч, шульо, шулна, шулда, шульыч

**7.21.**

1. кертым
2. вурседылыыч
3. коштыч
4. койо
5. ужна
6. кольым
7. шўйда
8. шўшна
9. муо
10. ўпшычда
11. кочда
12. шуым
13. мане
14. йодыч
15. йўна
16. ие
17. камвочда
18. лийым
19. кўыч
20. кылнелна

**7.22.**

1. илышым, илышыч, илыш, илышна, илышда, илышт
2. пуышым, пуышыч, пуыш, пуышна, пуышда, пуышт
3. кутырышым, кутырышыч, кутырыш, кутырышна, кутырышда, кутырышт
4. ыштышым, ыштышыч, ыштыш, ыштышна, ыштышда, ыштышт
5. шонышым, шонышыч, шоныш, шонышна, шонышда, шонышт
6. палышым, палышыч, палыш, палышна, палышда, палышт
7. мийышым, мийышыч, мийыш, мийышна, мийышда, мийышт
8. вашештышым, вашештышыч, вашештыш, вашештышна, вашештышда, вашештышт
9. руышым, руышыч, руыш, руышна, руышда, руышт
10. шолтышым, шолтышыч, шолтыш, шолтышна, шолтышда, шолтышт
11. ончышым, ончышыч, ончыш, ончышна, ончышда, ончышт
12. нойышым, нойышыч, нойыш, нойышна, нойышда, нойышт
13. кийышым, кийышыч, кийыш, кийышна, кийышда, кийышт
14. канышым, канышыч, каныш, канышна, канышда, канышт
15. чийышым, чийышыч, чийыш, чийышна, чийышда, чийышт

**7.23.**

1. умылышым
2. шарныш
3. мондышна
4. шуышт
5. сүретлыш
6. келшышыч
7. йöратышда
8. мурыш
9. куштышна
10. пайремлышыч
11. чонгештышыч
12. куанышт
13. ойгырышна
14. ужалышыч
15. лүйышым
16. пурышда
17. шинчыш
18. вучышда
19. шоктышт
20. шуйышым

**7.24.**

1. шым колышт, шыч колышт, ыш колышт, ышна колышт, ышда колышт, ышт колышт
2. шым шич, шыч шич, ыш шич, ышна шич, ышда шич, ышт шич
3. шым лек, шыч лек, ыш лек, ышна лек, ышда лек, ышт лек
4. шым пöртыл, шыч пöртыл, ыш пöртыл, ышна пöртыл, ышда пöртыл, ышт пöртыл
5. шым ий, шыч ий, ыш ий, ышна ий, ышда ий, ышт ий
6. шым кошт, шыч кошт, ыш кошт, ышна кошт, ышда кошт, ышт кошт
7. шым коч, шыч коч, ыш коч, ышна коч, ышда коч, ышт коч
8. шым йў, шыч йў, ыш йў, ышна йў, ышда йў, ышт йў
9. шым воштыл, шыч воштыл, ыш воштыл, ышна воштыл, ышда воштыл, ышт воштыл
10. шым шорт, шыч шорт, ыш шорт, ышна шорт, ышда шорт, ышт шорт

**7.25.**

1. шым ойло, шыч ойло, ыш ойло, ышна ойло, ышда ойло, ышт ойло
2. шым сийле, шыч сийле, ыш сийле, ышна сийле, ышда сийле, ышт сийле
3. шым пуро, шыч пуро, ыш пуро, ышна пуро, ышда пуро, ышт пуро
4. шым күзö, шыч күзö, ыш күзö, ышна күзö, ышда күзö, ышт күзö
5. шым воло, шыч воло, ыш воло, ышна воло, ышда воло, ышт воло
6. шым кай/кае, шыч кай/кае, ыш кай/кае, ышна кай/кае, ышда кай/кае, ышт кай/кае
7. шым пу/пуо, шыч пу/пуо, ыш пу/пуо, ышна пу/пуо, ышда пу/пуо, ышт пу/пуо
8. шым лүйö, шыч лүйö, ыш лүйö, ышна лүйö, ышда лүйö, ышт лүйö
9. шым кондо, шыч кондо, ыш кондо, ышна кондо, ышда кондо, ышт кондо
10. шым нангай/нангае, шыч нангай/нангае, ыш нангай/нангае, ышна нангай/нангае, ышда нангай/нангае, ышт нангай/нангае

**7.26.**

1. ышна ужалe
2. шым нал
3. ыш чоґо
4. ышда куш
5. ышт ру/руо
6. шыч йом
7. шым йынгырте
8. ышна кычал
9. ышт му
10. шыч нойо
11. шыч кий/киe
12. ыш кў
13. ышна вучо
14. шым кынел
15. ышт мушкылт
16. ышда шолто
17. шым пыште
18. ышт камвоч
19. ышда вашлий
20. ыш кутыро

**7.27.**

1. ода/огыда пале, ышда пале
2. ом тунем, шым тунем
3. она/огына туныкто, ышна туныкто
4. от кусаре, шыч кусаре
5. ода/огыда мод, ышда мод
6. ок/огеш шокто, ыш шокто
7. она/огына муш, ышна муш
8. от йод, шыч йод
9. огыт вашеште, ышт вашеште
10. ок/огеш лий, ыш лий
11. она/огына шоно, ышна шоно
12. ок/огеш ончо, ыш ончо
13. ом кой, шым кой
14. она/огына шымле, ышна шымле
15. огыт ўж, ышт ўж
16. от поч, шыч поч
17. ом петыре, шым петыре
18. ок/огеш лук, ыш лук
19. огыт колто, ышт колто
20. она/огына курж, ышна курж



**7.28.**

1. ўжым
2. тўнгале
3. пуышт
4. кондыш
5. кочкич
6. куштышна
7. саламлышт.
8. войзышым
9. кайышда
10. теме

**7.29.**

1. ышна куда
2. шым вучо
3. ышна вашлий
4. ышт умыло
5. шыч му
6. ышда уж
7. шыч мий/мие
8. шым пале
9. ыш кол
10. ыш сите

**7.30.**

1. Кенжежым ме Венгрийышке ышна мий/мие.
2. Тушто мемнам венгр палымына-влак ышт вашлий.
3. Нуно мыланна Будапештым ышт ончыкто.
4. Иштван венгр историй нерген ыш каласкале.
5. Ме тудым тўткын ышна колышт.
6. Рестораныште мый гуляш шўрым шым тамле.
7. Тый ош вином шыч йў.
8. Те Балатон ерыште ышда йўштыл.
9. Сомбатхей олаште Йошкар-Ола микрорайоным шым му.
10. Мемнан канышна онгайын ыш эрте.

**7.31.**

1. Мыланна ўжмашым колтышт.
2. Васлийын адресшым мондышыч?
3. Зонтиким пеленем нальым.
4. Йоча-влаклан спектакль келшыш.
5. Палыдыме енлан омсам почна.
6. Те мыйын электрон серышым лудда мо?
7. Йолташем йынгыртыш.
8. Ер воктелан малаш кодна.
9. Тиде йодышлан молан вашештышда?
10. Кочкишлан ак-влак кўзышт.

**7.32.**

1. модынам, модынат, модын, модынна, модында, модыныт
2. колыштынам, колыштынат, колыштын, колыштынна, колыштында, колыштыныт
3. колынам, колынат, колын, колынна, колында, колыныт
4. ужнынам, ужнынат, ужын, ужынна, ужында, ужныныт
5. койынам, койынат, койын, койынна, койында, койыныт
6. кынелынам, кынелынат, кынелын, кынелынна, кынелында, кынелыныт
7. мушкынам, мушкынат, мушкын, мушкынна, мушкында, мушкыныт
8. кычалынам, кычалынат, кычалын, кычалынна, кычалында, кычалыныт
9. муынам, муынат, муын, муынна, муында, муыныт
10. налынам, налынат, налын, налынна, налында, налыныт
11. коштынам, коштынат, коштын, коштынна, коштында, коштыныт
12. куржынам, куржынат, куржын, куржынна, куржында, куржыныт
13. ийынам, ийынат, ийын, ийынна, ийында, ийыныт
14. кочкынам, кочкынат, кочкын, кочкынна, кочкында, кочкыныт
15. йўынам, йўынат, йўын, йўынна, йўында, йўыныт

**7.33.**

1. кутыренам, кутыренат, кутырен, кутыренна, кутыренда, кутыреныт
2. умыленам, умыленат, умылен, умыленна, умыленда, умыленыт
3. паленам, паленат, пален, палаенна, плаенда, паленыт
4. шоненам, шоненат, шонен, шоненна, шоненда, шоненыт
5. возенам, возенат, возен, возенена, возенда, возеныт
6. муренам, муренат, мурен, муренна, муренда, муреныт
7. куштенам, куштенат, куштен, куштенна, куштенда, куштеныт
8. сўретленам, сўретленат, сўретлен, сўретленна, сўретленда, сўретленыт
9. шинченам, шинченат, шинчен, шинченна, шинченда, шинченыт
10. маленам, маленат, мален, маленна, маленда, маленыт
11. каненам, каненат, канен, каненна, каненда, каненыт
12. пуэнам, пуэнат, пуэн, пуэнна, пуэнда, пуэныт
13. каенам, каенат, каен, каенна, каенда, каеныт
14. чиенам, чиенат, чиен, чиенна, чиенда, чиеныт
15. пытаренам, пытаренат, пытарен, пытаренна, пытаренда, пытареныт

**7.34.**

1. вашкенда
2. ыштеныт
3. койынам
4. миенна
5. воштылын
6. онченам
7. вашлийын
8. лектынна
9. киенат
10. мушкылтыныт
11. пörтылынат
12. йодынна
13. руэн
14. лўдынам
15. шолтенда
16. ужаленыт
17. шогенам
18. кўынат
19. чоҥештеныт
20. манында

**7.35.**

1. шочын омыл, шочын отыл, шочын огыл, шочын онал/огынал, шочын одал/огыдал, шочын огытыл
2. кушкын омыл, кушкын отыл, кушкын огыл, кушкын онал/огынал, кушкын одал/огыдал, кушкын огытыл
3. лийын омыл, лийын отыл, лийын огыл, лийын онал/огынал, лийын одал/огыдал, лийын огытыл
4. тўҥалын омыл, тўҥалын отыл, тўҥалын огыл, тўҥалын онал/огынал, тўҥалын одал/огыдал, тўҥалын огытыл
5. налын омыл, налын отыл, налын огыл, налын онал/огынал, налын одал/огыдал, налын огытыл
6. кертын омыл, кертын отыл, кертын огыл, кертын онал/огынал, кертын одал/огыдал, кертын огытыл
7. шинчын омыл, шинчын отыл, шинчын огыл, шинчын онал/огынал, шинчын одал/огыдал, шинчын огытыл
8. кудалын омыл, кудалын отыл, кудалын огыл, кудалын онал/огынал, кудалын одал/огыдал, кудалын огытыл
9. йўын омыл, йўын отыл, йўын огыл, йўын онал/огынал, йўын одал/огыдал, йўын огытыл
10. йўштылын омыл, йўштылын отыл, йўштылын огыл, йўштылын онал/огынал, йўштылын одал/огыдал, йўштылын огытыл

**7.36.**

1. полшен омыл, полшен отыл, полшен огыл, полшен онал/огынал, полшен одал/огыдал, полшен огытыл
2. ойырен омыл, ойырен отыл, ойырен огыл, ойырен онал/огынал, ойырен одал/огыдал, ойырен огытыл
3. терген омыл, терген отыл, терген огыл, терген онал/огынал, терген одал/огыдал, терген огытыл
4. тамлен омыл, тамлен отыл, тамлен огыл, тамлен онал/огынал, тамлен одал/огыдал, тамлен огытыл
5. келшен омыл, келшен отыл, келшен огыл, келшен онал/огынал, келшен одал/огыдал, келшен огытыл
6. түлен омыл, түлен отыл, түлен огыл, түлен онал/огынал, түлен одал/огыдал, түлен огытыл
7. вашталтен омыл, вашталтен отыл, вашталтен огыл, вашталтен онал/огынал, вашталтен одал/огыдал, вашталтен огытыл
8. кылмен омыл, кылмен отыл, кылмен огыл, кылмен онал/огынал, кылмен одал/огыдал, кылмен огытыл
9. черланен омыл, черланен отыл, черланен огыл, черланен онал/огынал, черланен одал/огыдал, черланен огытыл
10. төрланен омыл, төрланен отыл, төрланен огыл, төрланен онал/огынал, төрланен одал/огыдал, төрланен огытыл

**7.37.**

1. миен огытыл
2. вашлийын омыл
3. поген огыл
4. почын одал/огыдал
5. пыштен отыл
6. мушкын онал/огынал
7. шортын омыл
8. куанен огытыл
9. чоҥен онал/огынал
10. йодын огыл
11. шылын огыл
12. йомын огытыл
13. шымлен одал/огыдал
14. йўын отыл
15. корштен огыл
16. кусарен омыл
17. пеледын онал/огынал
18. руэн онал/огынал
19. коштын отыл
20. лўен одал/огыдал

**7.38.**

1. ийын, ийын оғыл
2. маленда, мален одал/огыдал
3. налынат, налын отыл
4. шонен, шонен оғыл
5. тунемынам, тунемын омыл
6. ойленна, ойлен онал/огынал
7. куржыныт, куржын огытыл
8. ыштенам, ыштен омыл
9. йӧратеныт, йӧратен огытыл
10. муынна, муын онал/огынал
11. лектынат, лектын отыл
12. иленам, илен омыл
13. модында, модын одал/огыдал
14. онченат, ончен отыл
15. пуэнда, пуэн одал/огыдал
16. воштылынам, воштылын омыл
17. муреныт, мурен огытыл
18. кочкынна, кочкын онал/огынал
19. каенат, каен отыл
20. колыштын, колыштын оғыл

**7.39.**

1. колтен
2. каенам
3. ужаленыт
4. налынна
5. кодын
6. темленам
7. пӧртылынна
8. вученыт
9. коштында
10. пӧлекленат

**7.40.**

1. тунемын огытыл
2. лӱштен онал/огынал
3. мален одал/огыдал
4. кочкын онал/огынал
5. солен оғыл
6. ужын оғыл
7. шонен омыл
8. ийын отыл
9. лийын омыл
10. тӧрштен огытыл

**7.41.**

1. Май тылзыште Марий кугыжаныш университетыште финн-угор конференций эртаралтын огыл.
2. Тушко шуко шымлызе погынен огыл.
3. Мый тиде конференцийыште докладым лудын омыл.
4. Докладлан материалым кужун поген омыл, шуко интервьюм войзен омыл.
5. Интервью-влак онгай лийын огытыл.
6. Доклад деч вара колыштшо-влак йодышым пуэн огытыл.
7. Тый теорий нерген йодын отыл.
8. Кастене ме рестораныште кочкын онал/огынал.
9. Те у проект-влак нерген шуко кутырен одал/огыдал.
10. Конференций деч вара ме Козьмодемьянскыш экскурсийыш миен онал/огынал.

**7.42.**

1. Тений кенгежым ме ялышке миенна.
2. Коча-ковам мемнам вученыт.
3. Мый нунылан пакчаште полшенам.
4. Ме чодырашке снегылан коштынна.
5. Шольым кочам дене колым кучен.
6. Нуно ерыште йӱштылыныт.
7. Мый ковам дене вареньым шолтенам.
8. Теат тений ялыште лийында.
9. Тый у мончам чоненат.
10. Ялысе йолташет-влак дене вашлийынат.

**7.43.**

1. лудам ыле, лудат ыле, лудеш ыле, лудына ыле, лудыда ыле, лудыт ыле
2. тунемам ыле, тунемат ыле, тунемеш ыле, тунемына ыле, тунемыда ыле, тунемыт ыле
3. коштам ыле, коштат ыле, коштеш ыле, коштына ыле, коштыда ыле, коштыт ыле

**7.44.**

1. илем ыле, илет ыле, ила ыле, илена ыле, иледа ыле, илат ыле
2. ончем ыле, ончет ыле, онча ыле, ончена ыле, ончеда ыле, ончат ыле
3. мурем ыле, мурет ыле, мура ыле, мурена ыле, муреда ыле, мурат ыле

**7.45.**

1. модыда ыле
2. погет ыле
3. колыштам ыле
4. кутырена ыле
5. ият ыле
6. сӱретлат ыле
7. шымла ыле
8. кудагына ыле
9. ыштем ыле
10. кычалат ыле

**7.46.**

1. ом уж ыле, от уж ыле, ок/огеш уж ыле, она/огына уж ыле, ода/огыда уж ыле, огыт уж ыле
2. ом муш ыле, от муш ыле, ок/огеш муш ыле, она/огына муш ыле, ода/огыда муш ыле, огыт муш ыле
3. ом вашлий ыле, от вашлий ыле, ок/огеш вашлий ыле, она/огына вашлий ыле, ода/огыда вашлий ыле, огыт вашлий ыле

**7.47.**

1. ом возо ыле, от возо ыле, ок/огеш возо ыле, она/огына возо ыле, ода/огыда возо ыле, огыт возо ыле
2. ом кай/кае ыле, от кай/кае ыле, ок/огеш кай/кае ыле, она/огына кай/кае ыле, ода/огыда кай/кае ыле, огыт кай/кае ыле
3. ом келше ыле, от келше ыле, ок/огеш келше ыле, она/огына келше ыле, ода/огыда келше ыле, огыт келше ыле

**7.48.**

1. ом ужале ыле
2. она/огына нал ыле
3. от шотло ыле
4. ок/огеш йӱ ыле
5. она/огына кий/кие ыле
6. огыт лӱй/лӱйӱ ыле
7. от кой ыле
8. ок/огеш кушто ыле
9. ода/огыда куржтал ыле
10. ом тӱнал ыле

**7.49.**

1. йӱратем ыле
2. кычалына ыле
3. модеш ыле
4. малет ыле
5. куржталеш ыле

**7.50.**

1. она/огына воч ыле
2. от ыште ыле
3. огыт туныкто ыле
4. ом кошт ыле
5. ок/огеш коч ыле

**7.51.**

1. Изина годым ялышке кажне кенжежым она/огына кошт ыле.
2. Ковам тунам кече еда мелнам да когылым ок/огеш кӱэшт ыле.
3. Помыжалтмына годым ковам ден кочам пакчаште пашам огыт ыште ыле.
4. Эр кочкыш деч вара мый сурт коклаште ом полшо ыле.
5. Те тунам мемнан деке чӱчкыдын унала ода/огыда пуро ыле.

**7.52.**

1. Ту жапыште Санкт-Петербургышто илем ыле.
2. Йолташем дене кок тылзе еда Финляндийышке кудалыштына ыле.
3. Финн йылмым тунам тунемат ыле.
4. Финнла пелештымет годым финн-влак тыйым умылат ыле.
5. Гидлан пашам ышташ тылат келша ыле.

**7.53.**

1. куржталам улмаш, куржталат улмаш, куржталеш улмаш, куржталына улмаш, куржталыда улмаш, куржталыт улмаш
2. лектам улмаш, лектат улмаш, лектеш улмаш, лектына улмаш, лектыда улмаш, лектыт улмаш
3. йӱам улмаш, йӱат улмаш, йӱэш улмаш, йӱына улмаш, йӱыда улмаш, йӱыт улмаш

**7.54.**

1. палем улмаш, палет улмаш, пала улмаш, палена улмаш, паледа улмаш, палат улмаш
2. миём улмаш, миет улмаш, мия улмаш, миена улмаш, миеда улмаш, мият улмаш
3. пуэм улмаш, пуэт улмаш, пуа улмаш, пуэна улмаш, пуэда улмаш, пуат улмаш

**7.55.**

1. киена улмаш
2. тунемеш улмаш
3. вашештем улмаш
4. йӧратат улмаш
5. ийына улмаш
6. йодам улмаш
7. шонет улмаш
8. муыда улмаш
9. кушта улмаш
10. коштат улмаш

**7.56.**

1. ом кудал улмаш, от кудал улмаш, ок/огеш кудал улмаш, она/огына кудал улмаш, ода/огыда кудал улмаш, огыт кудал улмаш
2. ом муш улмаш, от муш улмаш, ок/огеш муш улмаш, она/огына муш улмаш, ода/огыда муш улмаш, огыт муш улмаш
3. ом вашлий улмаш, от вашлий улмаш, ок/огеш вашлий улмаш, она/огына вашлий улмаш, ода/огыда вашлий улмаш, огыт вашлий улмаш

**7.57.**

1. ом кутыро улмаш, от кутыро улмаш, ок/огеш кутыро улмаш, она/огына кутыро улмаш, ода/огыда кутыро улмаш, огыт кутыро улмаш
2. ом умыло улмаш, от умыло улмаш, ок/огеш умыло улмаш, она/огына умыло улмаш, ода/огыда умыло улмаш, огыт умыло улмаш
3. ом чий/чие улмаш, от чий/чие улмаш, ок/огеш чий/чие улмаш, она/огына чий/чие улмаш, ода/огыда чий/чие улмаш, огыт чий/чие улмаш

**7.58.**

1. ода/огыда мод улмаш
2. ом кай/кае улмаш
3. огыт кусаре улмаш
4. от куш улмаш
5. ок/огеш пу улмаш
6. она/огына ўж улмаш
7. ом кў улмаш
8. от пыште улмаш
9. она/огына куане улмаш
10. ок/огеш кой улмаш

**7.59.**

1. коштыда улмаш
2. модеш улмаш
3. ямдылат улмаш
4. пуэт улмаш
5. туныкта улмаш



**7.60.**

1. ок/огеш колышт улмаш
2. огыт ыште улмаш
3. ок/огеш коч улмаш
4. от шупш улмаш
5. огыт иле улмаш

**7.61.**

1. Ожно марий-влак тистым огыт кучылт улмаш.
2. Йынгыртымем годым нуно пашашке огыт вашке улмаш.
3. Миклай школышто тунеммыж годымак детективым лудаш ок/огеш йöрате улмаш.
4. Тудо ончычат мыланна ок/огеш шойышт улмаш.
5. Валямыт ўмаште кажне кечын огыт куржтал улмаш.

**7.62.**

1. Изида годым те йочасадыш коштыда улмаш.
2. Тый ончычат кочкаш шолтет улмаш.
3. Ожно марий-влак сöснам ашнат улмаш.
4. Марием дене ялыште лиймына годым эргына олаште пöртым эрыкта улмаш.
5. Ончыч тудо кофем йўэш улмаш.

**7.63.**

1. лудынам ыле, лудынат ыле, лудын ыле, лудынна ыле, лудында ыле, лудыныт ыле
2. вашлийынам ыле, вашлийынат ыле, вашлийын ыле, вашлийынна ыле, вашлийында ыле, вашлийыныт ыле
3. йўынам ыле, йўынат ыле, йўын ыле, йўынна ыле, йўында ыле, йўыныт ыле

**7.64.**

1. ойленам ыле, ойленат ыле, ойлен ыле, ойленна ыле, ойленда ыле, ойленыт ыле
2. каенам ыле, каенат ыле, каен ыле, каенна ыле, каенда ыле, каеныт ыле
3. пуэнам ыле, пуэнат ыле, пуэн ыле, пуэнна ыле, пуэнда ыле, пуэныт ыле

**7.65.**

1. вученна ыле
2. йодын ыле
3. келшенам ыле
4. куржында ыле
5. ийынам ыле
6. руэныт ыле
7. киенат ыле
8. кўынна ыле
9. мален ыле
10. почынат ыле

**7.66.**

1. кынелын омыл ыле, кынелын отыл ыле, кынелын огыл ыле, кынелын онал/огынал ыле, кынелын одал/огыдал ыле, кынелын огытыл ыле
2. муын омыл ыле, муын отыл ыле, муын огыл ыле, муын онал/огынал ыле, муын одал/огыдал ыле, муын огытыл ыле
3. кочкын омыл ыле, кочкын отыл ыле, кочкын огыл ыле, кочкын онал/огынал ыле, кочкын одал/огыдал ыле, кочкын огытыл ыле

**7.67.**

1. кутырен омыл ыле, кутырен отыл ыле, кутырен огыл ыле, кутырен онал/огынал ыле, кутырен одал/огыдал ыле, кутырен огытыл ыле
2. миен омыл ыле, миен отыл ыле, миен огыл ыле, миен онал/огынал ыле, миен одал/огыдал ыле, миен огытыл ыле
3. шонен омыл ыле, шонен отыл ыле, шонен огыл ыле, шонен онал/огынал ыле, шонен одал/огыдал ыле, шонен огытыл ыле

**7.68.**

1. модын огытыл ыле
2. воштылын огыл ыле
3. мурен отыл ыле
4. койын онал/огынал ыле
5. пуэн омыл ыле
6. вашештен одал/огыдал ыле
7. ўжын отыл ыле
8. чиен онал/огынал ыле
9. канен огыл ыле
10. мушкын омыл ыле

**7.69.**

1. шуктенам (гына) ыле
2. возенат ыле
3. шинчын (веле) ыле
4. кудалынна ыле
5. тўнгалыныт ыле

**7.70.**

1. шуын огыл ыле
2. пытарен одал/огыдал ыле
3. лийын онал/огынал ыле
4. толын огытыл ыле
5. шымлен огыл ыле

**7.71.**

1. Аня эрдене будильник кычкырыме деч ончыч кынелын огыл ыле.
2. Марий оперым ужын отыл ыле мо?
3. У ий деч ончыч ме йолташланна откыркым колтен онал/огынал ыле.
4. Тыгай марий сувенирым «Эн сай» кевытыште ужален огытыл ыле.
5. Паша кече деч ончыч электрон почтым терген омыл ыле.

**7.72.**

1. Украинысе чемерис-влак нерген колынат ыле мо?
2. Машалан 18 ий темын ыле, тудо Москош пашам ышташ каен.
3. Ымаште кенгежым ялышке миенна ыле.
4. Мый тудым конгресс деч ончыч паленам ыле.
5. Йываным вашлиймешке, Галя марлан лектын ыле.

**7.73.**

1. коштынам улмаш, коштынат улмаш, коштын улмаш, коштынна улмаш, коштында улмаш, коштыныт улмаш
2. вашлийынам улмаш, вашлийынат улмаш, вашлийын улмаш, вашлийынна улмаш, вашлийында улмаш, вашлийыныт улмаш
3. муынам улмаш, муынат улмаш, муын улмаш, муынна улмаш, муында улмаш, муыныт улмаш

**7.74.**

1. паленам улмаш, паленат улмаш, пален улмаш, паленна улмаш, паленда улмаш, паленыт улмаш
2. миенам улмаш, миенат улмаш, миен улмаш, миенна улмаш, миенда улмаш, миеныт улмаш
3. пуэнам улмаш, пуэнат улмаш, пуэн улмаш, пуэнна улмаш, пуэнда улмаш, пуэныт улмаш

**7.75.**

1. тўғалынат улмаш
2. каненам улмаш
3. кочкынна улмаш
4. шолтен улмаш
5. киеныт улмаш
6. лудын улмаш
7. койында улмаш
8. каенат улмаш
9. йўынам улмаш
10. пытаренна улмаш

**7.76.**

1. ужын омыл улмаш, ужын отыл улмаш, ужын огыл улмаш, ужын онал/огынал улмаш, ужын одал/огыдал улмаш, ужын огытыл улмаш
2. ийын омыл улмаш, ийын отыл улмаш, ийын огыл улмаш, ийын онал/огынал улмаш, ийын одал/огыдал улмаш, ийын огытыл улмаш
3. кўын омыл улмаш, кўын отыл улмаш, кўын огыл улмаш, кўын онал/огынал улмаш, кўын одал/огыдал улмаш, кўын огытыл улмаш

**7.77.**

1. ойлен омыл улмаш, ойлен отыл улмаш, ойлен огыл улмаш, ойлен онал/огынал улмаш, ойлен одал/огыдал улмаш, ойлен огытыл улмаш
2. вучен омыл улмаш, вучен отыл улмаш, вучен огыл улмаш, вучен онал/огынал улмаш, вучен одал/огыдал улмаш, вучен огытыл улмаш
3. чиен омыл улмаш, чиен отыл улмаш, чиен огыл улмаш, чиен онал/огынал улмаш, чиен одал/огыдал улмаш, чиен огытыл улмаш

**7.78.**

1. мушкылтын огыл улмаш
2. шонен отыл улмаш
3. почын огытыл улмаш
4. лектын онал/огынал улмаш
5. кутырен огыл улмаш
6. колыштын омыл улмаш
7. йöратен одал/огыдал улмаш
8. йодын отыл улмаш
9. мурен омыл улмаш
10. келшен онал/огынал улмаш

**7.79.**

1. лўдынат улмаш
2. коштында улмаш
3. эртен улмаш
4. монденна улмаш
5. ондаленыт улмаш

**7.80.**

1. ўжын отыл улмаш
2. умылен огытыл улмаш
3. пален одал улмаш
4. ужын огыл улмаш
5. саламлен онал/огынал улмаш

**7.81.**

1. Изат каласыш, те уремыште пел миллион тенге оксам муын одал/огыдал улмаш.
2. Кызыт мондалтын, но лу ий ончыч ме тиде актрисе дене чынак вашлийын онал/огынал улмаш.
3. Студент-влак туныктышым экзаменыште вученыт, а тудо экзамен нерген монден огыл улмаш.
4. Ольош ойлыш, тый у машинам налын отыл улмаш.
5. Ивановмыт деке унала миенна. Омсашкышт пел шагат тўкалтенна, а нуно мален огытыл улмаш.

**7.82.**

1. Университет деч ончыч тый англичан йылмым тунемынат улмаш.
2. Урокышто Петя гына начар вашештен: мөнгыштö ямдылалтын улмаш.
3. Авайын мутшо почеш, изиэм годым мушкылташ йöратенам улмаш.
4. Йолташет ойлыш, Ханты-Мансийскыште те лийында улмаш.
5. Йотэлысе студент-влак шуко йодыштыныт: марий йўла нерген нунылан каласкаленыт улмаш.

**7.83.**

1. кынел
2. колышт
3. шич
4. коч
5. йӱ
6. тол
7. му
8. курж
9. муш
10. лий

**7.84.**

1. пуро
2. кӱзӧ
3. ончо
4. ўшане
5. кай/кае
6. ужале
7. пу/пуо
8. туныкто
9. чий/чие
10. мале

**7.85.**

1. каласе
2. вашлий
3. сӧрӧ
4. лек
5. мий/мие
6. луд
7. шоно
8. кане
9. тунем
10. ўж

**7.86.**

1. почса
2. пӧртылза
3. йодса
4. колыштса
5. лука
6. йӱза
7. манза
8. вашлийза
9. кушса
10. муза

**7.87.**

1. кутырыза
2. кайыза
3. йӧратыза
4. куштыза
5. пуыза
6. сӱретлыза
7. возыза
8. лӱйыза
9. кусарыза
10. кийыза

**7.88.**

1. тӱнгалза
2. мийыза
3. коштса
4. шӱшса
5. ямдылыза
6. ийза
7. кондыза
8. ўжса
9. шолтыза
10. руыза

**7.89.**

1. камвочшо
2. налже
3. лӱдшӧ
4. йомжо
5. лийже
6. мужо
7. шочшо
8. кӱржӧ
9. кӱжӧ
10. кушшо

**7.90.**

1. кӧныжӧ
2. чийыже
3. вучыжо
4. йынгыртыже
5. вӱдыжӧ
6. колтыжо
7. кайыже
8. ойлыжо
9. полшыжо
10. пуыжо

**7.91.**

1. кўзыжө
2. ужшо
3. мийыже
4. йўжө
5. палыже
6. лукшо
7. шоктыжо
8. кынелже
9. руыжо
10. вашлийже

**7.92.**

1. почышт
2. луктышт
3. койышт
4. йодышт
5. куржышт
6. муышт
7. кушкышт
8. йўышт
9. мушкылтышт
10. воштылышт

**7.93.**

1. вашештышт
2. кийышт
3. ыштышт
4. ужалышт
5. нойышт
6. шолтышт
7. пуышт
8. ончышт
9. шуйышт
10. пытарышт

**7.94.**

1. умылышт
2. пўчкышт
3. руышт
4. ужышт
5. палышт
6. коштышт
7. кычалышт
8. лўйышт
9. вашкышт
10. ийышт

**7.95.**

1. ит тол
2. ит төрлө
3. ит йӱ
4. ит мий/мие
5. ит пыште
6. ит муш
7. ит пу/пуо
8. ит шого
9. ит вашлий
10. ит мод

**7.96.**

1. ынже му
2. ынже муро
3. ынже лек
4. ынже кусаре
5. ынже кай/кае
6. ынже йод
7. ынже кой
8. ынже ру/руо
9. ынже ий
10. ынже сӧрӧ

**7.97.**

1. ида кане
2. ида камвоч
3. ида ончо
4. ида лий
5. ида луд
6. ида кӱзӧ
7. ида лук
8. ида чий/чие
9. ида пӧртыл
10. ида пуро

**7.98.**

1. ынышт шӱш
2. ынышт төрштӧ
3. ынышт помыжалт
4. ынышт ойгыро
5. ынышт вӱдӧ
6. ынышт кӱ
7. ынышт кудал
8. ынышт мале
9. ынышт кой
10. ынышт кий/кие



**7.99.**

1. Ит колышт!
2. Ит ойло!
3. Ит ий!
4. Ит тырше!
5. Ит кынел!
6. Ит кай!
7. Ит луд!
8. Ит пу!
9. Ит тўлө!
10. Ит шич!

**7.100.**

1. Ынже вашке!
2. Ынже төчө!
3. Ынже вашлий!
4. Ынже шу/шуо!
5. Ынже пелед!
6. Ынже вучо!
7. Ынже лўд!
8. Ынже муш!
9. Ынже мий/мие!
10. Ынже му!

**7.101.**

1. Ида йод!
2. Ида вашеште!
3. Ида тунем!
4. Ида шоно!
5. Ида возо!
6. Ида лек!
7. Ида кий/кие!
8. Ида йў!
9. Ида пу/пуо!
10. Ида воч!

**7.102.**

1. Ынышт кошт!
2. Ынышт ру/руо!
3. Ынышт вашлий!
4. Ынышт кў!
5. Ынышт сўретле!
6. Ынышт уж!
7. Ынышт кўзө!
8. Ынышт кушто!
9. Ынышт муш!
10. Ынышт кай/кае!

**7.103.**

1. пагалыже
2. ыште
3. кутырышт
4. лийза
5. кычалже
6. колышт
7. илыза
8. аралалтышт
9. тунем
10. йӧратыза

**7.104.**

1. ынже ўшт
2. ит муро
3. ида коч
4. ит ойло
5. ынышт шўведе
6. ит воштыл
7. ынже пу/пуо
8. ида пыште
9. ынышт шич
10. ида муш

**7.105.**

1. Кевытыште киндым ит нал.
2. Пӧлемышке ида эрте.
3. Ондакрак малаш ынже воч.
4. Эше ик пӱкеным ынышт кондо.
5. Кидетым ит муш.
6. Варарак ынже йынгырте.
7. Кочкаш ида шич.
8. Шинчалым мыланем ида пу/пуо.
9. Шокшын ит чий/чие.
10. Эрла 6 шагатлан ынышт кынел.

**7.106.**

1. Шўкым уремыште ынже шуо.
2. Лифтыште ида тӧрштӧ.
3. Шоколадым шукым ит коч.
4. Интернетыште кужун ит шинче.
5. Машинаштым еҥ капка ончылан ынышт шогалте.
6. Йӱдым тўмыр дене ида шокто.
7. Йӱр чот йӱреш. Зонтик деч посна ынышт лек.
8. Тыште корным ит вончо.
9. Кафеште тамакым ынже шупш.
10. Тиде лавыран ерыште ида йӱштыл.

**7.107.**

1. тунемнем, тунемнет, тунемнеже, тунемнена, тунемнеда, тунемнешт
2. кочнем, кочнет, кочнеже, кочнена, кочнеда, кочнешт
3. йўнем, йўнет, йўнеже, йўнена, йўнеда, йўнешт
4. мушкылтнем, мушкылтнет, мушкылтнеже, мушкылтнена, мушкылтнеда, мушкылтнешт
5. мунем, мунет, мунеже, мунена, мунеда, мунешт
6. вашлийнем, вашлийнет, вашлийнеже, вашлийнена, вашлийнеда, вашлийнешт
7. лекнем, лекнет, лекнеже, лекнена, лекнеда, лекнешт
8. налнем, налнет, налнеже, налнена, налнеда, налнешт
9. йоднем, йоднет, йоднеже, йоднена, йоднеда, йоднешт
10. ужном, ужнет, уждеже, ужнена, ужнеда, ужнешт

**7.108.**

1. кайынем, кайынет, кайынеже, кайынена, кайынеда, кайынешт
2. ончынем, ончынет, ончынеже, ончынена, ончынеда, ончынешт
3. кутырынем, кутырынет, кутырынеже, кутырынена, кутырынеда, кутырынешт
4. полшынем, полшынет, полшынеже, полшынена, полшынеда, полшынешт
5. малынем, малынет, малынеже, малынена, малынеда, малынешт
6. канынем, канынет, канынеже, канынена, канынеда, канынешт
7. ыштынем, ыштынет, ыштынеже, ыштынена, ыштынеда, ыштынешт
8. пуынем, пуынет, пуынеже, пуынена, пуынеда, пуынешт
9. чийынем, чийынет, чийынеже, чийынена, чийынеда, чийынешт
10. каласынем, каласынет, каласынеже, каласынена, каласынеда, каласынешт

**7.109.**

1. вучынеже
2. мушнем
3. моднешт
4. лийнеже
5. куштынем
6. толнена
7. шоктынеда
8. ўжнет
9. мурынена
10. мийынет

**7.110.**

1. ынем кынел, ынет кынел, ынеж кынел, ынена кынел, ынеда кынел, ынешт кынел
2. ынем муш, ынет муш, ынеж муш, ынена муш, ынеда муш, ынешт муш
3. ынем ий, ынет ий, ынеж ий, ынена ий, ынеда ий, ынешт ий
4. ынем кў, ынет кў, ынеж кў, ынена кў, ынеда кў, ынешт кў
5. ынем кошт, ынет кошт, ынеж кошт, ынена кошт, ынеда кошт, ынешт кошт
6. ынем курж, ынет курж, ынеж курж, ынена курж, ынеда курж, ынешт курж
7. ынем пörтыл, ынет пörтыл, ынеж пörтыл, ынена пörтыл, ынеда пörтыл, ынешт пörтыл
8. ынем шич, ынет шич, ынеж шич, ынена шич, ынеда шич, ынешт шич
9. ынем лўд, ынет лўд, ынеж лўд, ынена лўд, ынеда лўд, ынешт лўд
10. ынем колышт, ынет колышт, ынеж колышт, ынена колышт, ынеда колышт, ынешт колышт

**7.111.**

1. ынем шого, ынет шого, ынеж шого, ынена шого, ынеда шого, ынешт шого
2. ынем кий/кие, ынет кий/кие, ынеж кий/кие, ынена кий/кие, ынеда кий/кие, ынешт кий/кие
3. ынем ойло, ынет ойло, ынеж ойло, ынена ойло, ынеда ойло, ынешт ойло
4. ынем пале, ынет пале, ынеж пале, ынена пале, ынеда пале, ынешт пале
5. ынем мондо, ынет мондо, ынеж мондо, ынена мондо, ынеда мондо, ынешт мондо
6. ынем пуро, ынет пуро, ынеж пуро, ынена пуро, ынеда пуро, ынешт пуро
7. ынем ондале, ынет ондале, ынеж ондале, ынена ондале, ынеда ондале, ынешт ондале
8. ынем кўзё, ынет кўзё, ынеж кўзё, ынена кўзё, ынеда кўзё, ынешт кўзё
9. ынем вашеште, ынет вашеште, ынеж вашеште, ынена вашеште, ынеда вашеште, ынешт вашеште
10. ынем сөрө, ынет сөрө, ынеж сөрө, ынена сөрө, ынеда сөрө, ынешт сөрө

**7.112.**

1. ынем лук
2. ынет ужале
3. ынеда кудал
4. ынена мий/мие
5. ынеж помыжалт
6. ынем шоно
7. ынет йў
8. ынешт вашлий
9. ынеда шарне
10. ынеж пу/пуо

**7.113.**

1. ынена кой
2. ынем воч
3. ынеж воштыл
4. ынена кусаре
5. ынем кондо
6. ынеж шымле
7. ынет чонеште
8. ынеда тўнгал
9. ынешт пыtare
10. ынет шорт

**7.114.**

1. коднена
2. возынеже
3. камвочнем
4. колтынена
5. маннет
6. пыштынем
7. кычалнешт
8. лийнеже
9. лўйынет
10. келшынеда

**7.115.**

1. почнешт
2. тунемнем
3. кудалнена
4. кўзынет
5. лийнеда
6. илынеже
7. тёрштынет
8. налнеже
9. чонгештынеда
10. вашталтынешт

**7.116.**

1. ынеда ыште
2. ынена вашлий
3. ынем кутыро
4. ынешт ойло
5. ынет кошт
6. ынеж йў
7. ынем кудал
8. ынена шого
9. ынешт тунем
10. ынеж кусно

**7.117.**

1. Тиде кенжежым те кузе ынеда эртаре?
2. Мый тенгыз воктене ынем кане.
3. Ме ялышке кована деке ынена кай/кае.
4. Оля мёнгыштö ынеж код.
5. Эстон студент-влак марий йўлам шымлаш ынешт тўнал.
6. Мери марий романым финн йылмышке ынеж кусаре.
7. Мый эр еда ынем куржтал.
8. Арнялан кок-кум гана Юлышто ынена йўштыл.
9. Россий мучко мый денем пырля ынет кудалышт мо?
10. Йолташем-влак книгаг ынешт возо.

**7.118.**

1. ынешт кычал
2. ынеж пу/пуо
3. ынена мий/мие
4. ынеда йод
5. ынеда полшо
6. ынет ўж
7. ынем ончыкто
8. ынеж мод
9. ынешт иле
10. ынем колышт

**7.119.**

1. ужнем ыле, ужнет ыле, ужнеже ыле, ужнена ыле, ужнеда ыле, ужнешт ыле
2. кочнем ыле, кочнет ыле, кочнеже ыле, кочнена ыле, кочнеда ыле, кочнешт ыле
3. вашлийнем ыле, вашлийнет ыле, вашлийнеже ыле, вашлийнена ыле, вашлийнеда ыле, вашлийнешт ыле

**7.120.**

1. ынем пале ыле, ынет пале ыле, ынеж пале ыле, ынена пале ыле, ынеда пале ыле, ынешт пале ыле
2. ынем ончо ыле, ынет ончо ыле, ынеж ончо ыле, ынена ончо ыле, ынеда ончо ыле, ынешт ончо ыле
3. ынем тўлө ыле, ынет тўлө ыле, ынеж тўлө ыле, ынена тўлө ыле, ынеда тўлө ыле, ынешт тўлө ыле

**7.121.**

1. шичнена ыле
2. шымлынешт ыле
3. толнеда ыле
4. кодне ыле
5. каласынеже ыле

**7.122.**

1. ынешт вучо ыле
2. ынет ончо ыле
3. ынем лий ыле
4. ынена кай/кае ыле
5. ынеж ўж ыле

**7.123.**

1. ынеж тунем ыле
2. ынена йў ыле
3. ынешт мий/мие ыле
4. ынет йынгырте ыле
5. ынем пу/пуо ыле

**7.124.**

1. ынешт код ыле
2. ынет мутлане ыле
3. ынем кай/кае ыле
4. ынеж кынел ыле
5. ынена йод ыле

**7.125.**

1. йўнем улмаш, йўнет улмаш, йўнеже улмаш, йўнена улмаш, йўнеда улмаш, йўнешт улмаш
2. лекнем улмаш, лекнет улмаш, лекнеже улмаш, лекнена улмаш, лекнеда улмаш, лекнешт улмаш
3. вашлийнем улмаш, вашлийнет улмаш, вашлийнеже улмаш, вашлийнена улмаш, вашлийнеда улмаш, вашлийнешт улмаш

**7.126.**

1. ынем ойло улмаш, ынет ойло улмаш, ынеж ойло улмаш, ынена ойло улмаш, ынеда ойло улмаш, ынешт ойло улмаш
2. ынем пуру улмаш, ынет пуру улмаш, ынеж пуру улмаш, ынена пуру улмаш, ынеда пуру улмаш, ынешт пуру улмаш
3. ынем мале улмаш, ынет мале улмаш, ынеж мале улмаш, ынена мале улмаш, ынеда мале улмаш, ынешт мале улмаш

**7.127.**

1. шымлыныже улмаш
2. коштнет улмаш
3. куснынеже улмаш
4. полшынешт улмаш
5. вочнеда улмаш

**7.128.**

1. ынет коч улмаш
2. ынешт йод улмаш
3. ынеж кутыро улмаш
4. ынеда ыште улмаш
5. ынешт кудал

**7.129.**

1. ынеж мод улмаш
2. ынеда кушто улмаш
3. ынешт шукто ыле
4. ынеж йӱ улмаш
5. ынет кане улмаш

**7.130.**

1. мурынешт улмаш
2. лийнеда улмаш
3. вончынеже улмаш
4. лекнет улмаш
5. пӧртылнешт улмаш

**7.131.**

1. чонгештыше
2. кӱэштме
3. лудшаш
4. кайымыже/кайышашыже
5. каныше
6. нойыдымо
7. коштмо
8. мурышаш
9. тунемше
10. палыдыме

**7.132.**

- |              |                          |
|--------------|--------------------------|
| 1a. лӱдшӧ    | 1b. лӱдшан (лӱдшӧ)       |
| 2a. лийдыман | 2b. лийдыме              |
| 3a. кутырышо | 3b. кутырышан (кутырышо) |
| 4a. колышаш  | 4b. колышашан            |
| 5a. возыман  | 5b. возымо               |

**7.133.**

1. шортын
2. колыштшыла/колыштын
3. лекмеке
4. лудын
5. висыде
6. кайымеке
7. вочмешке
8. йӱде
9. коштшыла/ коштын
10. шулымешке

**7.134.**

1. кутыраш
2. кынелаш
3. каяш
4. илаш
5. йӱаш
6. кӱзаш
7. мушкаш
8. пуаш
9. лекташ
10. кояш

**7.135.**

1. шупшаш
2. шинчаш
3. кудалышташ
4. куржталаш
5. пӧртылташ
6. вашлияш
7. пӧлеклаш
8. кочкаш
9. тӧршташ
10. полшаш

**7.136.**

1. муман
2. сӧрыман
3. тунемман
4. руыман
5. колыштман
6. ончыман
7. кӱман
8. палыман
9. кийыман
10. кочман



**7.137.**

1. Марий оръенлан погым ямдылыман ыле.
2. Качын родыж-влаклан пӧлекым пуыман ыле.
3. Сӱан деч вара эр эрдене оръенлан таве вӱдым кондыман.
4. Тыгак эрдене тудлан кӱварым мушман.
5. Вара оръенлан конгаште мелнам кӱэштман.

**7.138.**

1. Нунылан ялыште илыман.
2. Тылат шокшо мончашке пурыман.
3. Мыланна пӱчӧ шылым кочман.
4. Тудлан калык ончылно куштыман.
5. Тыланда сӧснам пукшыман.

**7.139.**

1. йодман
2. муаш
3. ончыман
4. колташ
5. мураш
6. кошташ
7. ўжман
8. пайремлаш
9. лекман
10. йынгыртыман

**7.140.**

1. налше
2. лекше
3. илыше
4. кайыше
5. йӱшӧ
6. шонышо
7. пуышо
8. койышо
9. лӱйышӧ
10. мушшо

**7.141.**

1. циркыш толшо Петровмыт
2. сем почеш куштышо имне-влак
3. фокусым ончыктышо клоун
4. велосипед дене кудалыштше маска
5. марла кутырышо попугай
6. бананым кочшо маймыл
7. ончышо-влакым ӧрыктарыше программе
8. пий дене модшо пырыс-влак
9. мече ўмбалне шогышо слон
10. воштылшо йоча-влак

**7.142.**

1. лүдмө
2. шонымо
3. лукмо
4. кайыме
5. петырыме
6. мумо
7. вашлийме
8. каныме
9. кынелме
10. лүйымө

**7.143.**

1. Кўварым мушмо.
2. Пайремлан ўстелым погымо.
3. Шуко унам ўжмө.
4. Ивановыт деч посна ўстел коклашке шичме огыл.
5. Ойган мурым мурымо огыл.

**7.144.**

1. шинчымылан
2. тунеммылан
3. иянҗмылан
4. ончымылан
5. лиймылан

**7.145.**

1. Юлышто йўштылмем шуэш.
2. Эчукын ныл шагат эрдене кынелмыже шуын огыл/ок шу ыле.
3. Кастене киношко кайымет ок/огеш шу?
4. Тошто йолташна-влаклан иктаж-мом онҗайым пӧлеклымына шуэш.
5. Маринан яндар йўкшым эре колыштмем шуын/шуэш ыле.

**7.146.**

1. йодшаш
2. вучышаш
3. чийышаш
4. мушаш
5. коштшаш
6. малышаш
7. пуышаш
8. кочшаш
9. колтышаш
10. лийшаш

**7.147.**

1. мыланна полшышаш еҥ
2. мушшаш кўмыж-совла
3. ужалышаш паренге.
4. тестым тергышаш туныктышо
5. кудалтышаш понго.

**7.148.**

1. палышаш огыл
2. каласышаш омыл улмаш
3. пагалышаш улыт
4. лекшаш одал/огыдал ыле
5. пурышаш огыл улмаш
6. налшаш улам
7. вашлийшаш улыт улмаш
8. кынелшаш улат ыле
9. ончыктышаш улам ыле
10. лүдшаш онал/огынал

**7.149.**

1. чийыдыме
2. мудымо
3. шотлыдымо
4. күлдымө
5. вашлийдыме
6. йөрыдымө
7. пытыдыме
8. лукдымо
9. пуыдымо
10. коштдымо

**7.150.**

1. чонлан келшыдыме паша
2. шымлыдыме темe
3. мондалтдыме вашлиймаш
4. чыташ лийдыме шокшо
5. концертышке мийыдыме рвезе

**7.151.**

1. каен
2. йўын
3. тёрштен
4. йодыштын/йодышт
5. пуэн
6. пален
7. кудалын/кудал
8. шонен
9. коштын
10. вашлийын

**7.152.**

1. Ик онгай книгаг кычал муым.
2. Ме веселан кутырен ошкылына.
3. Турист-влак олам ончен коштыт.
4. Кече мучко пашам ыштен ноенат.
5. Ёдыр-влак воштыл шогат.
6. Кастене шўрым шолтен кочкым.
7. Юля аважлан серышым возен колтен.
8. Марина кофем йўын шинча.
9. Те пеледышым куштен ужаледа.
10. Йыван музыкым колышт куржталеш.

**7.153.**

1. ошкыл эрташ
2. ийын вончаш
3. шўкен пурташ
4. шупшын волташ
5. каен ойырлаш

**7.154.**

1. воленна
2. нарийыш
3. кўзен
4. луктыныт
5. пурен

**7.155.**

1. йодде
2. сōрыде
3. мушде
4. руыде
5. муде
6. мийыде
7. мурыде
8. ийде
9. шарныде
10. шичде

**7.156.**

1. Илышын кочыжым палыде, шерыжым от умыло.
2. Олма, жап шуде, озажланат ок чеверге.
3. Маскажым ужде, кышаж деч ит лўд.
4. Мардеж пуалде, лышташ ок тарване.
5. Маскажым лўйыде, коваштыжым ит ужале.
6. Йот верыште лийде, мōнгысō илышым аклаш от тўнал.
7. Ваш-ваш энгертыде, илаш ок лий.
8. Имнўым кычкыде, орваш пурен ит шич.
9. Йōсым чытыде, сайым от уж.
10. Ик пашам пытарыде, вес пашам огыт тўнал.

**7.157.**

1. йўмеке
2. малымеке
3. пўртылмеке
4. шонымеке
5. почмеке
6. руымеке
7. вашлиймеке
8. сўрымеке
9. лукмеке
10. кийымеке

**7.158.**

1. вучымекем
2. кынелмекыже/кынелмекше
3. тунеммекына
4. ончыктымекыже/ончыктымекше
5. мушкылтмекыда
6. йўштылмекем
7. саламлымекет
8. пурымекышт
9. шочмекет
10. кутырымекына

**7.159.**

1. машина-влак шогалмеке
2. йоча шочмеке/йочан шочмекыже
3. спектакль пытымеке
4. родына-влак йынгыртымеке/родына-влакын йынгыртымекышт
5. йўр эртымеке

**7.160.**

1. Юлян йынгыртымекыже/Юля йынгыртымеке, мый вокзалыш куржынам.
2. Финн-влак, мончашке пурымеке, ерыште йўштылыт.
3. Йўштö толмеке, походыш коштын онал.
4. Английышке кайымекет, мый тыйым ужын омыл.
5. Марий Элыште илымеке, Юха марла марий гай кутыра.
6. Кином ончымеке, паркыш каена.
7. Йочан шочмекыже/Йоча шочмеке, Вера ялышке илаш куснен.
8. Кофем йўмеке, вием ешаралтын.
9. Йўр чарнымеке, йоча-влак уремыш лектыныт.
10. Школым пытарымеке, кушко тунемаш пуренат?

**7.161.**

1. ойлымешке
2. мушмешке
3. ужомешке
4. кусарымешке
5. мумешке
6. мийымешке
7. пуымешке
8. лиймешке
9. шымлымешке
10. коштмешке

**7.162.**

1. возымешкына
2. кудалмешкыже
3. мондымешкет
4. вашлиймешкем
5. нойымешкыже
6. кочмешкына
7. йынгыртымешкышт
8. йодмешкет
9. малымешкем
10. кычалмешкыда

**7.163.**

1. поезд тарванымешке
2. йолташ-влак саламлымешке/йолташ-влакын саламлымешкышт
3. вўд ырымешке
4. кевыт-влак петырымешке
5. онъава ден онъача помыжалтмешке/онъава ден онъачан помыжалтмешкышт

**7.164.**

1. Сессий тўналмешке, кок арня кодын.
2. Офисыште шинчымешке, тый мом ыштет ыле?
3. Вашмутым пуымешке, Витя кужун шонен.
4. Шўдў гана колмешке, лучо ик гана ужаш.
5. Кастене шинчам нойымешке лудам.
6. Ме кече лекмешке кынелына.
7. Малаш вочмешке, йоча-влак пўйым мушкыт.
8. Ёдыр-влак шинчавўд лекмешке воштылыт.
9. Акамын толмешкыже/Акам толмеке, мый шкетын иленам.
10. Математикым тунеммешке, лучо суахели йылме курсыш каем.

**7.165.**

1. канышыла
2. ийшыла
3. кийышыла
4. кычалшыла
5. кўзышыла
6. йўшыла
7. шинчышыла
8. шогышыла
9. кочшыла
10. колыштшыла

**7.166.**

1. воштылшыжла
2. ончышетла
3. -, куржмыда годым
4. кучышемла
5. волышыштла
6. пörтылшыжла
7. ыштышыштла
8. коштшетла
9. вашештышемла
10. -, модмына годым

**7.167.**

- 1 Його ең паша ыштышыла кылма, кочшыла ыра.
- 2 Кўшыч волышыла, шып вола, мландўмбақ шичмеке, шып шинча, а кола гын, мўгыра.  
(Вашмут: лум)
3. Кайышыла, кўсенеш нангаем, мөңтеш пар имне дене конден ом керт. (Вашмут: реве)
4. Пече воктен коштышыла, ужар шокшо вўд дене когаргышым. (Вашмут: нуж)
5. Ошкылшыла, шанчашым кышкен каем. (Вашмут: йолгыша)

**7.168.**

1. Пайрем годым, унам вашлийшыла, мурым муреныт.
2. Унам ужатымеке, пörтым вигак огыт эрыкте.
3. Мўндыр корныш тарванымешке, изиш шинчалташ кўлеш.
4. Колышо-влакым уштышыла кочкыт да «шужо» маныт.
5. Шўгарлашке мийымеке, мөңгышкө вик огыт кай: иктаж-кушко пурат.
6. Ачан ўстелтöрыш шичмешке, йоча-влак кочкын огытыл.
7. Ўстелтöрыштö шинчышыла, кугу йўкын кутырен огытыл.
8. Кўсотыш пурымешке, кидым мушкыт.
9. Эмым йўмешке, мончаш пуро! «Монча тазалыкым куча», – маныт.
10. Илян кече эртымеке огыт йўштыл.

**7.169.**

1. лудын
2. канен
3. кутыраш
4. сүретлен
5. модын
6. нумал
7. чонгештен
8. коштын
9. руаш
10. шоктен

**7.170.**

1. төчат
2. ок лий
3. огыт мошто
4. моштена
5. толашем
6. ом керт
7. лиеш
8. ок лий
9. кертыда
10. от мошто

**7.171.**

1. Университетыште тылат эше мыняр ий тунемаш кўлеш?
2. Теңгече мылам ялышке кудалаш кўлеш ыле, но вучыдымын пашашке ўжыныт.
3. Мыланна поездышке вашкаш кўлеш.
4. Изат пеш сайын пианино дене шокта – тудлан музыкант лияш кўлеш.
5. Ожно марий ўдырлан урген, тўрлен, пидын мошташ кўлын.

**7.172.**

1. возын
2. кодын
3. ила
4. кайыш
5. киенна
6. каен
7. коденыт
8. возын
9. ила
10. киём



**7.173.**

1. лектын
2. кышкеныт
3. коштыт
4. луктын
5. колтыш
6. луктыныт
7. коштын
8. колтенат
9. кудалтышт
10. лектында

**7.174.**

1. оптеныт
2. ончыза
3. пытеныт
4. мия
5. пытареныт
6. мият
7. опташ
8. пытен
9. ончаш
10. ом пыtare

**7.175.**

1. шинчын
2. темаш
3. пыштенат
4. толеш
5. шинчеш
6. сенген
7. темын
8. толеш
9. сенгаш
10. шинченам

**7.176.**

1. шуктен онал
2. шуэна
3. эртаренна
4. шогалтеныт
5. шуктен
6. шога
7. шогалын
8. шуын
9. шындат
10. шогат

**7.177.**

1. Уке, ме марий онал/огынал.
2. Уке, ўпем ужарге огыл.
3. Уке, мый шўдö ияш омыл.
4. Уке, марий-влак тюрк огытыл.
5. Уке, марий йылме йöсö огыл.

**7.178.**

1. Ме туныктышо ышна лий.
2. Йолташем-влак музыкант лийыч.
3. Эңерыште вўд йўштö ыле.
4. Тамакым шупшын, таза шыч лий.
5. Мый эмлызе лийым.
6. Циркыште йокрок ыш лий.
7. Мо пеш весела ыльда?
8. Тый поро ыльыч.
9. Те черле ышда лий.
10. Вашлиймаште нылытын ыльна.

**7.179.**

1. Те пеш оңай айдеме лийында.
2. Тый тракторист лийын отыл мо?
3. Ме пиалан лийынна.
4. Тый кушто лийынат?
5. Мый мöнгыштö шкетын лийынам.
6. Те школышто лийын одал мо?
7. Сноуборд дене мунчалташ мый коло ияш лийын омыл.
8. Акам кусарыше лийын/улмаш.
9. Вашмутет чын лийын огыл.
10. Турист-влак тоштерыште лийыныт.

**7.180.**

1. Мый президент ом лий.
2. Нине пöрт-влак олаште эн кўкшö лийыт.
3. Тый лекцийыште лият мо?
4. Тиде теме неле ок/огеш лий.
5. Ме тиде унагудын озаже лийына.
6. Киношко пырля мияш йолташем тореш ок/огеш лий.
7. Мый 27 ияш лиям.
8. Те журналист лийыда?
9. Ме миллионер она/огына лий.
10. Тўнö шокшо лиеш.

**7.181.**

1. Ик арня гыч ме Канар отрошто лийына.
2. Йолташем-влак эрла Озангыште лийыт.
3. Шӧр холодильникыште.
4. «Орӱен мелна» спектакль Шкетан театрыште лиеш.
5. Мый кызыт кевытыште улам.
6. Уна-влакда метрошто улыт.
7. Ме ала-могай пасушто улына.
8. Те Петров уремыште улыда.
9. Таче кастене мый мӧнгыштӧ лиям.
10. Те Марий Элын эн сӧрал верыштыже улыда.

**7.182.**

1. Мемнан каныш(на) ок/огеш лий.
2. Кокамын шуко груша(же) уло.
3. Нунын кумыл(ышт) лийын огыл.
4. Мыйын кок ака(м) уло.
5. Тендан сай туныктышо/туныктышыда лийын.
6. Йоча-влакын у компьютер(ышт) лиеш.
7. Юлян окса(же) уке.
8. Имне-влакын вий(ышт) лийын огыл.
9. Тыйын яра жап(ет) уке.
10. Тудын экзамен(же) лиеш.

## A.8. Adverbs

### 8.1.

1. ончыч
2. тенгече
3. але
4. чўчкыдын
5. эрдене
6. южгунам
7. кумышто
8. кастене
9. эр
10. вашке

### 8.2.

1. кенезым
2. каслан
3. тиде арняште
4. рушарнян
5. йўдым

### 8.3.

1. водынек
2. изинек
3. кўчымынек
4. йўштынек
5. кукшынек

### 8.4.

1. шукертсек
2. шангысек
3. ўмашсек
4. ожнысек
5. тенгечсек

### 8.5.

1. Кўшкө
2. тўнө
3. Ўлыкө
4. өрдыжеш
5. тора гыч

### 8.6.

1. тўжвалан
2. ўстембачын
3. корнымбалне
4. вачўмбаке
5. тўнямбалне

### 8.7.

1. йўдвелеш
2. Эрвечын
3. йўдвел-касвелне
4. кечывалвеке
5. касвелне

**8.8.**

1. йўштын
2. начарын
3. кугун
4. шулдын
5. осалын
6. кўчыкын
7. яндарын
8. сылнын
9. чеверын
10. ныжылгын

**8.9.**

1. оңайын
2. чўчкыдын
3. талын
4. вичкыжын
5. тамлын

**8.10.**

1. осалын
2. яндарын
3. ныжылгын
4. шулдын
5. кўчыкын

**8.11.**

1. поснак
2. чылт
3. моткоч
4. пырчат
5. изиш

**8.12.**

1. Ўдыр аважла порын мутлана.
2. Микко марий-влак семын сайын марла кутыра.
3. Мишук маскала нелын ошкылеш.
4. Катя акстрисе гай сылнын почеламутым лудеш.
5. Изи рвезе-влак чын спортсмен-влак гай талын футболла модыт.

**8.13.**

1. варарак
2. умбакырак
3. йымачынрак
4. ожнырак
5. чотрак
6. изинрак ~ изиракын
7. ошынрак ~ ошыракын
8. сылнынрак ~ сылныракын
9. веселанрак ~ веселаракын
10. ныжылгынрак ~ ныжылгыракын

**8.14.**

1. писынрак ~ писыракын
2. моторракын ~ моторынрак
3. кўчыкынрак ~ кўчыкракын
4. кўшкырак
5. тўткынрак ~ тўткыракын

**8.15.**

1. Миллионер миллиардер деч нужнанрак ~ нужнаракын ~ нужнан ила.
2. Сергей Валя деч сайынрак ~ сайракын ~ сайын гитарым шокта. ~  
Валя Сергей деч сайынрак ~ сайракын ~ сайын гитарым шокта.
3. Тиде йоча хор весе деч веселанрак ~ веселаракын ~ веселан мура.
4. Йолташна-влак мемнан деч тораштырак ~ тораште илат. ~  
Ме йолташна-влак деч тораштырак ~ тораште илена.
5. Шольым мый дечем варарак ~ вара лудаш тунемын. ~  
Мый шольым деч варарак ~ вара лудаш тунемынам.

**8.16.**

1. куштылгынрак ~ куштылгыракын, эн куштылгын
2. эркынрак ~ эркыракын, эн эркын
3. порынрак ~ порыракын, эн порын
4. осалынрак ~ осалракын, эн осалын
5. шулдынрак ~ шулдыракын, эн шулдын

**8.17.**

1. эн ончыко
2. эн чот
3. эн торашке
4. эн писын
5. эн кўшыч

## A.9. Particles

### 9.1.

1. меат
2. имнят
3. пият
4. пират
5. арнят
6. метроат
7. родат
8. ешат
9. кочат
10. шолят

### 9.2.

1. Ачамат, авамат школышто пашам ыштат.
2. Пөлекым налашат, пуашат йöратем.
3. Васлий школыштат, университетыштат эн сайын тунемын.
4. Йöдымат, кечывалымат эре ик тöрым тöрлат. (Мүкш)
5. Йошкар пондашан, йошкар калпакан, марий пайрем годымат, тыглай кечынат ик семын мура. (Агытан)

### 9.3.

1. Мыят
2. семянак
3. тыгаяк
4. жапыштат
5. кастенак
6. изи-влакат
7. йылмымат, йылмымат
8. Тудак
9. тыштак
10. тудымат

### 9.4.

1. Юл серышкыла
2. ончыкыла
3. пакча шенгечла
4. ял могоырышкыла
5. шолаштыла

### 9.5.

1. ўдыр-влакат
2. моторыс
3. уремыштыла
4. туштак
5. йылмымат
6. шочмынак
7. кўшычынла
8. улыс
9. кофемат, чайымат
10. öрдыжкыла

**9.6.**

1. улмаш
2. ыле
3. улмаш
4. ыле
5. ыле
6. улмаш
7. улмаш
8. улмаш
9. ыле
10. ыле

**9.7.**

1. улмаш
2. улмаш
3. ыле
4. ыле
5. ыле
6. улмаш
7. ыле
8. улмаш
9. улмаш
10. ыле

**9.8.**

1. улмаш
2. улмаш
3. ыле
4. улмаш
5. ыле
6. улмаш
7. ыле
8. ыле
9. улмаш
10. ыле

**9.9.**

1. Айда
2. Айда
3. Айста
4. Айда
5. айста



**9.10.**

1. векат
2. ала
3. аман
4. а
5. ане
6. ала мо
7. анят
8. вара
9. ала-ала
10. але

**9.11.**

1. гай
2. гын
3. веле
4. да
5. витне
6. дык
7. гына
8. гала
9. докан
10. вет

**9.12.**

1. икманаш
2. йӧра
3. керек
4. дыр
5. ик
6. кеч
7. конешне
8. иже
9. коеш
10. кернакак

**9.13.**

1. могай
2. лач
3. кузе
4. ма
5. лиеш
6. кунам
7. лийже
8. лаваса
9. ман
10. мо

**9.14.**

1. но
2. мутлан
3. можыч
4. неужели
5. моли
6. ну
7. огыл
8. на
9. монь
10. намерне

**9.15.**

1. разве
2. очыни
3. пожалуйста
4. огыла
5. садак
6. содыки
7. пуйто
8. поро лийза
9. пожале
10. просто

**9.16.**

1. туге
2. тевыс
3. тугеже
4. тевак
5. товро
6. то-то
7. тугат
8. теве
9. тудо
10. товатат

**9.17.**

1. ужат
2. уке
3. тыге
4. тушто
5. уже
6. чай
7. улыжат
8. уна
9. уж
10. ужамат

**9.18.**

1. шол
2. чуч
3. чынак
4. чылт
5. э/эй
6. эре
7. шонет
8. эсогыл
9. чынжымак
10. ялт

## A.10. Conjunctions

## A.11. Word formation

**11.1.**

1. вуйгорка 'skull'
2. казаварня 'little finger'
3. вакшъер 'millpond'
4. изарня 'Thursday'
5. шўмдувыр 'pericardium'
6. йолвундаш 'sole'
7. пашадар 'wages, salary'
8. йолъече 'ice skates'
9. книгагудо 'library'
10. эмлымвер 'hospital'

**11.2.**

1. сурт-пече 'household with outbuildings'
2. ака-шўжар 'sisters'
3. кўмыж-совла 'dishes'
4. ўдыр-рвезе 'the youth'
5. тувыр-йолаш 'clothing'

**11.3.**

- 1h. книгагудо 'library'
- 2i. пакчасаска 'vegetables'
- 3a. покшелварня 'middle finger'
- 4j. коча-кова 'grandparents'
- 5g. рушарня 'Sunday'
- 6с. шинчавўд 'tears'
- 7b. кўртньыгорно 'railroad'
- 8f. кидкопа 'hand, palm of hand'
- 9d. фотосўретче 'photographer'
- 10e. йўдвел-касвел 'northwest'

**11.4.**

1. ойленда-кутыренда
2. пукшен-чиктен
3. йўза-кочса
4. пурат-лектыт
5. илена-шўлена

**11.5.**

1. шкевуя 'to oneself'
2. кидшўма 'groping, feeling'
3. тувырмела 'dressed lightly'
4. пелйола 'on one leg'
5. ярагида 'with empty hands; with bare hands'

**11.6.**

1. лудшо-влакын
2. полшыметым
3. толшашышт
4. налшылан
5. коштдымым/коштдымо-влакым

**11.7.**

1. енгынлан
2. мемнаным
3. весыным
4. шкенжыным
5. тендан-влаклан

**11.8.**

1. шарналтенна
2. вашталтен
3. коденам
4. темын
5. шинчыныт
6. шарналтеш
7. кодын
8. шинченна
9. вашталтыныт
10. темена

**11.9.**

1. леп-леве
2. сап-сар(е)
3. яп-якте
4. юп-юалге
5. шып-шыма
6. топ-томам
7. яп-яра
8. тып-тымык
9. чап-чара
10. туп-тура

**11.10.**

1. яндарлык 'cleanliness'
2. лүддымылык 'fearlessness'
3. тазалык 'health'
4. оксадымылык 'lack of money'
5. вийдымылык 'weakness'
6. поянлык 'wealth'
7. йондымылык 'discomfort'
8. пушкыдылык 'softness'
9. икгайлык 'likeness'
10. моторлык 'beauty'

**11.11.**

1. шымлымаш 'research'
2. шонымаш 'thought'
3. вашлиймаш 'meeting'
4. моштымаш 'ability'
5. лудмаш 'reading'
6. мушмаш 'washing'
7. чийымаш 'dressing, putt on (clothes)'
8. лүдмаш 'fear'
9. йүмаш 'drinking'
10. шуымаш 'throwing'

**11.12.**

1. Ольош нигёлан сырымаш(ыже) уке.
2. Ме киношко коштмаш уке./ (Ме) киношко коштмашна уке.
3. Те рок-музыкым колыштмаш уке./ (Те) рок-музыкым колыштмашда уке.
4. Тый эр еда куржталмаш уке/(Тый) эр еда куржталмашет уке.
5. Мый телевизорым ончымаш уке/(Мый) телевизорым йөршын ончымашем уке.

**11.13.**

1. вучыдымаш 'unexpectedness'
2. вожылдымаш 'shamelessness'
3. моштыдымаш 'inability'
4. шудымаш 'inaccessibility'
5. вашкыдымаш 'not hurrying'
6. лекдымаш 'not going out'
7. үшаныдымаш 'hopelessness'
8. койдымаш 'not being visible; unseen place'
9. лүддымаш 'fearlessness'
10. шоныдымаш 'thoughtlessness'

**11.14.**

1. тўнгалаш (-ам) 'to begin'
2. куэ 'birch'
3. писе 'fast'
4. сераш (-ем) 'to write'
5. үшанаш (-ем) 'to hope'
6. сүрет 'painting, picture'
7. кугу 'big'
8. ешараш (-ем) 'to add'
9. эмлаш (-ем) 'to treat, to cure'
10. шўр 'soup'
11. лекташ (-ам) 'to go out, to leave'
12. нер 'nose; snout'
13. тумо 'oak'
14. илаш (-ем) 'to live'
15. пиалдыме 'unhappy' ← пиал 'happiness, luck'
16. неле 'heavy; difficult, hard'
17. шўй 'neck'
18. муро 'song'/мураш (-ем) 'to sing'
19. канаш (-ем) 'to rest, to relax'
20. келшаш (-ем) 'to agree'

**11.15.**

1. пунчерыште
2. йолаш
3. тошкалтыш
4. поянлык
5. ситыдымаш
6. куштызо
7. вашлиймашым
8. кукшытшо
9. шинчалык
10. йодышым

**11.16.**

1. ушан 'intelligent'
2. мӱян 'honey, with honey'
3. мардежан 'windy'
4. шудан 'grassy'
5. йочан 'with a child, with children'

**11.17.**

1. верысе 'local'
2. Йошкар-Оласе '(of/from/in) Yoshkar-Ola'
3. ожнысо 'former'
4. тенийысе 'this year's'
5. тачысе 'today's'

**11.18.**

1. чонан
2. июльысо
3. шӧран
4. кенгежымсе
5. ӱпан
6. шылан
7. эрласе
8. пакчасе
9. йолан
10. оласе

**11.19.**

1. вийдыме 'powerless, weak'
2. шокшдымо 'sleeveless'
3. озадыме 'ownerless'
4. кӱсендыме 'without pockets'
5. мучашдыме 'endless, infinite'

**11.20.**

1. шонаш (-ем) 'to think'
2. лум 'snow'
3. пиал 'happiness, luck'
4. ӱжаш (-ам) 'to invite'
5. паша 'work'



**11.21.**

1. арнялык 'for a week'
2. кочкышлык 'for food'
3. пайремлык 'for a celebration'
4. эрлалык 'for tomorrow'
5. йолчиемлык 'for footwear'

**11.22.**

1. чайлык
2. кевытысе
3. тувырлык
4. сюжетан
5. шүрлык

**11.23.**

1. кочо 'bitter'
2. йүр 'rain'
3. шошо 'spring'
4. йөн 'method, means, way'
5. йолаш 'pants' ← йол
6. пайда 'use, benefit'
7. нарынче 'yellow'
8. кече 'sun; day'
9. паренге 'potato'
10. уш 'mind, intellect'
11. тенге 'ruble'
12. ола 'city, town'
13. лу 'bone'
14. пөлек 'present, gift'
15. чер 'illness, disease'
16. корно 'road'
17. ош(о) 'white'
18. вүд 'water'
19. арня 'week'
20. там 'taste'

**11.24.**

1. ўмыран
2. тұрысө
3. чапле
4. шулдырдымо
5. ийысе
6. куанле
7. вуйдымо
8. ияш
9. кофелык
10. йолан

**11.25.**

1. звонитлаш (-ем)
2. судитлалташ (-ам)
3. путешествоватлаш (-ем)
4. жаритлалташ (-ем)
5. участвоватлаш (-ем)

**11.26.**

1. кумылангаш (-ам) 'to come into a mood'
2. пондашангаш (-ам) 'to become bearded'
3. нужнагаш (-ам) 'to grow poor'
4. лавырангаш (-ам) 'to get muddy'
5. ешангаш (-ам) 'to settle down to married life'

**11.27.**

1. начаремаш (-ам) 'to become worse'
2. кугемаш (-ам) 'to increase, to grow'
3. шемемаш (-ам) 'to turn black, to grow black'
4. шонгемаш (-ам) 'to grow old'
5. пушкыдемаш (-ам) 'to soften, to become softer'

**11.28.**

1. сүретлылаш (-ам)
2. поктылаш (-ам)
3. савырнылаш (-ам)
4. пөлеклылаш (-ам)
5. төрштылаш (-ам)

**11.29.**

- |                 |                 |
|-----------------|-----------------|
| 1a. лұдыктылеш  | 1b. лұдыктенит  |
| 2a. чонештылеш  | 2b. чонешта     |
| 3a. вашталтенам | 3b. вашталтылеш |
| 4a. ыштеныт     | 4b. ыштылеш     |
| 5a. колтылам    | 5b. колтем      |

**11.30.**

1. висалташ (-ам) 'to weigh oneself; to be weighed'
2. ешаралташ (-ам) 'to be added'
3. сенгалташ (-ам) 'to be defeated, to lose'
4. петыралташ (-ам) 'to close (intr.); to be closed'
5. саламлалташ (-ам) 'to greet (one another)'

**11.31.**

1. Неле жап мондалтын.
2. Электрон серыш колталтын.
3. Вий ешаралтын.
4. Йоча жап шарналтеш.
5. Кевыт петыралтын.
6. Вуйлатыше алмашталтын.
7. Пеледыш пуш шижалтеш.
8. Шөртнөй шергын аклалтеш.
9. Парня пүчкылтын.
10. Шинчал велалтын.

**11.32.**

1. налыкташ (-ем) 'to have someone buy something'
2. ўжыкташ (-ем) 'to have called'
3. каныкташ (-ем) 'to let someone have a break'
4. модыкташ (-ем) 'to entertain, to amuse'
5. йўкшыкташ (-ем) 'to cool down (tr.)'

**11.33.**

1. шокталтеш
2. огеш мондалт
3. куштыкта
4. возалтын
5. шарныкта

**11.34.**

1. Кова уныкалан кўварым мушкыкта.
2. Питер йолташлан Марий Эл гыч марий мўйым кондыктен.
3. Ончышо-влак мурызылан эше ик мурым мурыктеныт.
4. Ача-ава ўдырым музыкальный школыш коштыктат.
5. Изи ўдыр ачалан мороженныйым налыктен.
6. Вуйлатыше секретарьлан кофем шолтыкта.
7. Туныктышо тунемше-влаклан англичан йылме дене диалог-влакым колыштыкта.
8. Ферме оза пашазе-влаклан мўрым погыкта.
9. Петя кочалан математике дене урокым тергыкта.
10. Галя изалан шампанскийым почыкта.

**11.35.**

1. шовынангдаш (-ем) 'to soap'
2. иземдаш (-ем) 'to reduce, to decrease'
3. пуракангдаш (-ем) 'to get something dusty'
4. сакырангдаш (-ем) 'to mix with sugar'
5. весемдаш (-ем) 'to modify, to change'

**11.36.**

1. шылын
2. кумылангден
3. воштылтен
4. шонгемда
5. кугемян, иземян

**11.37.**

- |              |                |
|--------------|----------------|
| 1a. канеда   | 1b. каналтенам |
| 2a. муралтен | 2b. мура       |
| 3a. киялте   | 3b. кия        |
| 4a. кутыреда | 4b. кутыралташ |
| 5a. вученам  | 5b. вучалтыза  |

**11.38.**

1. висалтынам
2. погалтенам
3. шарналтенна
4. сералтын
5. пералтен

**11.39.**

- |              |                |
|--------------|----------------|
| 1a. руал     | 1b. руаш       |
| 2a. кычкырет | 2b. кычкырале  |
| 3a. шогалеш  | 3b. шоген      |
| 4a. ончалым  | 4b. онченам    |
| 5a. шыргыжеш | 5b. шыргыжалыч |

**11.40.**

- |                |               |
|----------------|---------------|
| 1a. оптылаш    | 1b. опталаш   |
| 2a. тошкалын   | 2b. тошкыштеш |
| 3a. серкаленам | 3b. сералте   |
| 4a. шўкалаш    | 4b. шўкедылыт |
| 5a. шоналтышым | 5b. шонкален  |

**11.41.**

1. мотор 'beautiful'
2. почаш (-ам) 'to open (tr.)'
3. каласаш (-ем) 'to say'
4. мут 'word'
5. кушташ (-ем) 'to dance'
6. возаш (-ем) 'to write'
7. волаш (-ем) 'to descend, to come down'
8. воштылаш (-ам) 'to laugh'
9. шемемаш (-ам) 'to turn black' ← шем(е) 'black'
10. йынгыр 'ring, buzz'
11. налаш (-ам) 'to buy'
12. куптыр 'wrinkle'
13. йодыш 'question'
14. ўй 'butter; oil'
15. куанаш (-ем) 'to be glad, to rejoice'
16. кошташ (-ам) 'to go'
17. полшаш (-ем) 'to help'
18. самырык 'young'
19. каласаш (-ем) 'to say'
20. шолаш (-ам) 'to boil, to cook (intr.)'

---

## A.12. The sentence and its constituents

## A.13. Phrases

---

#### A.14. Causal coordination

**A.15. Causal subordination****17.1.**

1c, 2e, 3b, 4a, 5d

**17.2.**

1. Юха марий йылмым келгынрак тунемже манын, марий йолташыже-влак туддене марла веле кутырат.
2. Эрвина школышко йолын ынже кошт манын, ачаже тудлан велосипедым (йолорвам) налын пуэн.
3. Иваномыт Японийыш кайышт манын, пашаште нунылан канышым пуэныт.
4. Бизнесым поч манын, ме тылат окса дене полшена.
5. Те ида йокроклане манын, мый тендам циркыш ўжам.

**17.3.**

1e, 2a, 3d, 4b, 5c

**17.4.**

1. Йолын каяш огыл манын, таксим ўжыктем.
2. Таче пашашке лекташ огыл манын, каныш кечым йодам.
3. Нигö дене кутыраш огыл манын, телефон трупкам ом нал.
4. Камвозаш огыл манын, эркын каем.
5. Нöраш огыл манын, пеленем зонтикым налам.

**17.5.**

1b, 2d, 3a, 4e, 5c

**17.6.**

1. Йотэлышке илаш кайышашлан Йыван шуко жап ямдылалтеш.
2. Мönгышкö вашкерак толшашлан паша гыч ондакрак лектам.
3. (Мыланна) тиде пашам ыштен пытарышашлан шуко вий кўлеш.
4. Ола пайремым эртарышашлан эн сай ансамбль-влакым ўжынна.
5. Тошто йолташ-влак дене вашлийшашлан Эчан ола гыч шочмо ялыш толын.

**17.7.**

1. Воктенем шинчыше рвезе шахмат дене сайын модеш.
2. Эрла толшаш уна-влак пакчасаскам веле кочкыт.
3. Марий йылмым тунемаш шонышо студент-влак Йошкар-Олашке каяш ямдылалтыт.
4. Тамакым шупшдымо еñ шўм чер дене шуэнрак черлана.
5. Ийын моштыдымо йоча-влак бассейныш кошташ тўнгалыт.

**17.8.**

1. Кумышто лийшаш концертнам вара телевизор дене ончыктат.
2. Уремыште мумо миллион теңгем полицийышке намиен коденна.
3. Театрыште коло ий ончыктыдымо спектакльым тиде тургымышто уэш шынденыт.
4. Вес арняште лекшаш «Шым ий Непалыште» книга интернет гочат налаш лиеш.
5. Африка гыч кондымо курчакым шўжаремлан пöлекленам.

**17.9.**

1. йöратыше
2. йомдарыме
3. таңасышаш
4. чытыше
5. Вучыдымо



**17.10.**

1. мом
2. Көн
3. Көлан
4. Мо
5. Көм

**17.11.**

1. кушко
2. кушеч
3. Кушан
4. Кушто
5. Кузе

B. Inventory of suffixes (by type)

[...]

C. Inventory of suffixes (reverse-sorted)

[...]

D. Inventory of prefixes

[...]

E. Thematic glossary

[...]